

4. KNOW YOUR CITIZENSHIP STATUS AND RIGHTS!

Page

4. KNOW YOUR CITIZENSHIP STATUS AND RIGHTS!	4-1
4.1 Natural Order	4-8
4.2 Rights v. Privileges	4-26
4.2.1 Rights Defined and Explained	4-26
4.2.2 Fundamental Rights: Granted by God and Cannot be Regulated by the Government	4-29
4.2.3 What is the Difference Between a “Right” and a “Privilege”?.....	4-32
4.3 Government	4-33
4.3.1 Biblical view of taxation and government.....	4-33
4.3.2 The purpose of government: protection of the weak from harm and evil.....	4-47
4.3.3 How government and God compete to provide “protection”	4-51
4.3.4 Separation of powers doctrine	4-53
4.3.5 The purpose of income taxes: government protection of the assets of the wealthy.....	4-57
4.3.6 Why all man-made law is religious in nature	4-58
4.3.7 The Unlimited Liability Universe.....	4-62
4.3.8 The result of violating God’s laws or putting man’s laws above God’s laws is slavery, servitude, and captivity.....	4-70
4.3.9 Government-instituted slavery using “privileges”.....	4-71
4.3.10 Our Government has become idolatry and a false religion.....	4-76
4.3.11 Socialism is Incompatible with Christianity	4-91
4.3.12 All Governments are Corporations	4-96
4.3.13 Why good government demands more than just “obeying the law”.....	4-100
4.4 The Constitution is Supposed to Make You the Sovereign and The Government Your Servant	4-101
4.4.1 The Constitution does not bind citizens.....	4-101
4.4.2 The Constitution as a Legal Contract.....	4-102
4.4.3 How the Constitution is Administered by the Government.....	4-103
4.4.4 If the Constitution is a Contract, why don’t we have to sign it and how can our predecessors bind us to it without our signature?	4-104
4.4.5 Authority delegated by the Constitution to Public Servants.....	4-105
4.4.6 Voting by Congressmen.....	4-106
4.4.7 Our Government is a band of criminal extortionists acting without legal authority!.....	4-106
4.4.8 Oaths of Public Office	4-107
4.4.9 Tax Collectors.....	4-109
4.4.10 Oaths of naturalization given to aliens.....	4-110
4.4.11 Oaths given to secessionists and corporations	4-110
4.4.12 Oaths of soldiers and servicemen	4-110
4.4.13 Treaties	4-111
4.4.14 Government Debts.....	4-111
4.4.15 Our rulers are a secret society!.....	4-112
4.4.16 The agenda of our public servants is murder, robbery, slavery, despotism, and oppression.....	4-115
4.5 The U.S.A. is a Republic, not a Democracy	4-117
4.5.1 Republican mystery	4-118

1	4.5.2	Military Intelligence	4-118
2	4.5.3	Sovereign Power.....	4-119
3	4.5.4	Government’s Purpose.....	4-119
4	4.5.5	Who holds the sovereign power?.....	4-120
5	4.5.6	Individually-held God-given unalienable Rights.....	4-121
6	4.5.7	A republic’s covenant	4-121
7	4.5.8	Divine endowment.....	4-121
8	4.5.9	Democracies must by nature be deceptive to maintain their power.....	4-122
9	4.5.10	Democratic disabilities	4-122
10	4.5.11	Collective self-destruction	4-124
11	4.5.12	The “First” Bill of Rights?.....	4-125
12	4.5.13	The mandate remains	4-126
13	4.5.14	What shall we do?.....	4-127
14	4.5.15	Sorry, Mr. Franklin, “We’re All Democrats Now”.....	4-127
15	4.5.15.1	Introduction	4-127
16	4.5.15.2	Transition to Democracy	4-129
17	4.5.15.3	Current Understanding	4-129
18	4.5.15.4	Democracy Subverts Liberty and Undermines Prosperity.....	4-130
19	4.5.15.5	Foreign Affairs and Democracy	4-132
20	4.5.15.6	Foreign Policy, Welfare, and 9/11.....	4-133
21	4.5.15.7	Paying for Democracy.....	4-134
22	4.5.15.8	Confusion Regarding Democracy.....	4-136
23	4.5.15.9	The Way Out	4-136
24	4.5.16	Summary and Conclusion.....	4-139
25	4.6	The Three Definitions of “United States”	4-141
26	4.7	Two Political Jurisdictions: “United States” the Corporation vs the 50 States	
27		of the Union.....	4-144
28	4.8	The Federal Zone	4-157
29	4.9	Police Powers	4-161
30	4.10	“Resident”, “Residence”, and “Domicile”	4-164
31	4.11	Citizenship	4-171
32	4.11.1	Sovereignty	4-177
33	4.11.2	Two Classes and Four Types of Citizens.....	4-177
34	4.11.3	Federal citizens	4-179
35	4.11.3.1	Background and history of federal citizenship	4-179
36	4.11.3.2	Constitutional Basis of federal citizenship	4-187
37	4.11.3.3	The voluntary nature of citizenship: Requirement for “consent” and “intent”	4-192
38	4.11.3.4	How you unknowingly volunteered to become a “citizen of the United States”	
39		under federal statutes.....	4-194
40	4.11.3.5	Presumptions about “citizen of the United States” status	4-196
41	4.11.3.6	Privileges and Immunities of U.S. citizens.....	4-197
42	4.11.3.7	Definitions of federal citizenship terms.....	4-200
43	4.11.3.8	Further Study	4-202
44	4.11.4	State Citizens/Nationals.....	4-203
45	4.11.5	Citizenship and all political rights are INVOLUNTARILY exercised and	
46		therefore CANNOT be taxable and cannot be called “privileges”	4-207
47	4.11.5.1	Voting.....	4-212
48	4.11.5.2	Paying taxes.....	4-215
49	4.11.5.3	Jury Service	4-217
50	4.11.5.4	Citizenship.....	4-220

1	4.11.6	“U.S. Nationals”	4-222
2	4.11.6.1	Legal Foundations of “U.S. National” Status	4-225
3	4.11.6.2	Voting as a “U.S. National”	4-235
4	4.11.6.3	Serving on Jury Duty as a “U.S. National”	4-236
5	4.11.6.4	Summary of Constraints applying to U.S. national status	4-237
6	4.11.6.5	Rebutted arguments against those who believe people born in the states of the	
7		Union are <i>not</i> “U.S. nationals”	4-237
8	4.11.7	Rights Lost By Becoming a statutory “U.S. citizen”	4-244
9	4.11.8	How Did We Lose Our Sovereignty and Become “U.S. citizens”?	4-245
10	4.11.9	Expatriation	4-255
11	4.11.10	How the Government Has Obfuscated the Citizenship Issue to Fool us into	
12		Falsely Admitting to be “U.S. citizens” under the Internal Revenue Code	4-257
13	4.11.11	Duties and Responsibilities of Citizens	4-268
14	4.11.12	Citizenship Summary	4-273
15	4.12	Two of You	4-277
16	4.13	Contracts	4-278
17	4.14	Our Rights	4-279
18	4.14.1	No forced participation in Labor Unions or Occupational Licenses	4-279
19	4.14.2	Property Rights	4-279
20	4.14.3	No IRS Taxes	4-280
21	4.14.4	No Gun Control	4-280
22	4.14.5	Motor Vehicle Driving	4-283
23	4.14.6	No Marriage Licenses	4-286
24	4.14.6.1	Reason #1: The definition of a "license" demands that we <i>not</i> obtain one to	
25		marry.	4-286
26	4.14.6.2	Reason #2: When you marry with a marriage license, you grant the State	
27		jurisdiction over your marriage.	4-287
28	4.14.6.3	Reason #3: When you marry with a marriage license, you place yourself under a	
29		body of law which is immoral.	4-287
30	4.14.6.4	Reason #4: The marriage license invades and removes God-given parental	
31		authority	4-288
32	4.14.6.5	Reason #5: When you marry with a marriage license, you are like a polygamist.	4-288
33	4.14.6.6	When Does the State Have Jurisdiction Over a Marriage?	4-288
34	4.14.6.7	History of Marriage Licenses in America	4-289
35	4.14.6.8	What Should We Do?	4-289
36	4.14.7	Church Rights	4-289
37	4.15	Sources of government authority to interfere with your rights	4-291
38	4.16	A Citizens Guide to Jury Duty	4-291
39	4.16.1	Jury Power in the System of Checks and Balances:	4-291
40	4.16.2	A Jury's Rights, Powers, and Duties:	4-292
41	4.16.3	Jurors Must Know Their Rights:	4-293
42	4.16.4	Our Defense - Jury Power:	4-293
43	4.17	The Buck Act of 1940 (4 U.S.C. Sections 105-111)	4-293
44	4.17.1	The united States of America	4-293
45	4.17.2	The "SHADOW" States of the Buck Act	4-295
46	4.18	Conflicts of Law: Violations of God’s Laws by Man’s Laws	4-296
47	4.19	How Do We Assert our First Amendment Rights and How Does the	
48		Government Undermine Them?	4-299

1
2
3

4.20 The Solution..... 4-303

1 *"To the security of a free Constitution, education contributes ... by teaching the people themselves to know and*
2 *value their own rights." - George Washington (1732-1799)*

3 *"The history of liberty is the history of the limitation of governmental power, not the increase of it." Woodrow*
4 *Wilson*

5 *"They [The makers of the Constitution] conferred, as against the government, the right to be let alone - the most*
6 *comprehensive of rights and the right most valued by civilized men." [Supreme Court Justice Louis D. Brandeis,*
7 *1928] [emphasis added]*

8 *"In the general course of human nature, A POWER OVER A MAN'S SUSTENANCE AMOUNTS TO A POWER*
9 *OVER HIS WILL." Alexander Hamilton, The Federalist, No. 79*

10 *"America is much more than a geographical fact. It is a political and moral fact --the first community in which*
11 *men set out in principle to institutionalize freedom, responsible government, and human equality."*
12 *--Adlai Stevenson*

13 After reading the previous section on the legal authority for income taxes, it ought to be pretty clear after seeing all the
14 game-playing Congress did with the tax laws that we should:

15 ***"Always question authority!"***

16 ***"Always challenge jurisdiction!"***

17 Why should we question authority and challenge jurisdiction? Because if we aren't watching the government closely and
18 keeping them accountable, responsible, and constrained in power by the law and the system of checks and balances that our
19 founders gifted us with, then tyranny is virtually guaranteed:

20 *"Single acts of tyranny may be ascribed to the accidental opinion of a day. But a series of oppressions, ...*
21 *pursued unalterably through every change of ministers, too plainly proves a deliberate systematic plan of*
22 *reducing us to slavery." -- Thomas Jefferson*

23 How do we question authority? By looking at where that authority derives and ensuring that politicians and government
24 officials, when they order us to do something, be willing and able to describe to us the laws that give them their legal
25 authority. It is then our duty, as responsible citizens, to read the laws ourselves and ensure that these officials remain
26 strictly within the legal and constitutional bounds of their authority in order to prevent or avoid abuses of their authority.
27 It is also our duty to ensure that government power and authority is restrained by proper oversight and a system of checks
28 and balances to ensure that it does not concentrate into one spot and lead to tyranny. This is because "absolute power
29 corrupts absolutely", as they say. The voting booth, the jury box, our right to own guns and to use those guns to protect
30 ourselves, and the Grand Jury are the only thing that prevents tyranny from spreading and our politicians from becoming
31 complete tyrants.

32 Knowing your constitutional, statutory, and common-law rights and the authority and jurisdiction of each government
33 organization is therefore the first major step in questioning authority, which we should all do throughout our dealings with
34 any government organization.

35 Within the court system, legal authority is summed up in one word: *jurisdiction*. A court cannot order us to do anything
36 unless and until it can establish that it has "jurisdiction" to order us, or the people or institutions that control our assets, to
37 do something.

38 This chapter therefore discusses the extent of our rights. For the record, we've included a legal definition of "rights":

39 ***"RIGHTS.*** *Individual liberties either expressly provided for in the state or federal constitutions, such as the*
40 *right to assemble or free speech, or which have been found to exist as those constitutions have been interpreted,*
41 *such as the right to an abortion; that which a person is entitled to have, or to do, or to receive from others,*
42 *within the limits prescribed by the law; an enforceable legal right; or the capacity to enforce that right; "a*

claim or title to or an interest in anything that is enforceable by law," 263 P. 2d 769, 773. See also civil rights, constitutional rights; inalienable rights; inherent right; preemptive rights"⁷¹.

These rights, in turn, circumscribe the limits of the constitutional and legal authority which any official in our federal and state governments must abide by and respect in administering and executing the laws of the Constitution, the U.S. Code, the Code of Federal Regulations, and your state statutes and regulations.

We will also clarify in this chapter that ultimately, your legal and civil rights come **not** from your citizenship primarily, but from where you live. That's right, you have been laboring under a misapprehension for most of your life. The portion of our Constitution called the Bill of Rights, from which you derive your rights, attaches to you not by virtue of your citizenship, but by virtue of where you live. Here are a few of the many examples of that:

"The very essence of civil liberty certainly consists in the right of every individual [not citizen, but individual] to claim the protection of the laws, whenever he receives an injury. One of the first duties of government is to afford that protection." *Marbury v. Madison*, 5 U.S. 137, 1 Cranch 137, 2 L.Ed. 60 (1803)

"**RIGHT:** ...Civil rights are such as belong to every citizen of the state or country, or, in a wider sense, to all its inhabitants [citizens or not], and are not connected with the organization or administration of the government." *Black's Law Dictionary*, 4th Edition, 1968, pp. 1486-1488

"In *Truax v. Raich*, supra, the people of the state of Arizona adopted an act, entitled 'An act to protect the [271 U.S. 500, 528] citizens of the United States in their employment against noncitizens of the United States,' and provided that an employer of more than five workers at any one time in that state should not employ less than 80 per cent. qualified electors or native-born citizens, and that any employer who did so should be subject upon conviction to the payment of a fine and imprisonment. It was held that such a law denied aliens an opportunity of earning a livelihood and deprived them of their liberty without due process of law, and denied them the equal protection of the laws. As against the Chinese merchants of the Philippines, we think the present law which deprives them of something indispensable to the carrying on of their business, and is obviously intended chiefly to affect them as distinguished from the rest of the community, is a denial to them of the equal protection of the laws." [*Yu Cong Eng v. Trinidad*, 271 U.S. 500 (1926)]

That's right: you don't have to be a "citizen" to have rights here in America, because God gave you those rights and they attach to the land you live on and were born on, as you will learn in section 4.11. Being an "inhabitant" is good enough to have the government's protection for most laws. This is extremely important and something that few Americans fully understand. It is also something the courts are very reluctant to tell you outright because they want you to become a "citizen" so they can induce you to trade in your rights in exchange for taxable government "privileges".

We'll start off this chapter by talking in the next section about a subject called "Natural Order", because that subject is **foundational** to understanding the rest of the chapter and forming an accurate and enlightened view of the world around us. You will not, in fact, understand most of the content of Chapter 5 unless and until you can grasp this chapter, and especially the next section. Why are this chapter and the next section so important? Because by reading and understanding them, you will understand, for instance:

- Why the source of all authority and power is not our government, but God and Nature's Laws, which are both eternal and immutable.
- Why whenever we try to deviate from the Natural Order or Natural Law that God gave to us as human beings, our government becomes corrupt and begins abusing our rights and exploiting the very people that it was instituted to help and protect.
- How government as it is practiced today has indeed become a **religion** of its own making in violation of the First Amendment (see section 4.3.10 for further details).
- Why the government can only tax the corporations that it creates.
- That "police powers" are reserved with the states under the Tenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution, and federal jurisdiction within the borders of the states are severely and necessarily limited to the specific powers delegated and enumerated to the federal government by the Constitution. Any other act or jurisdiction pursued by our federal government is "unlawful" and "illegal" and punishable by Treason against the Constitution.

⁷¹ *Law Dictionary*, Barron's, Copyright 1996, ISBN 0-8120-3096-6, pp. 445-446.

- 1 • Why “income” in a constitutional sense can only be defined as “corporate profit” anywhere and everywhere in our
- 2 tax laws. Any other design for our country’s system of taxation produces tyranny, slavery, and despotism.
- 3 • Why the government can’t tax people directly (direct taxes), because it didn’t create people: God did!
- 4 • How the ignorance that results from our youth, relative inexperience, and naïve views of the law propagated by a
- 5 corrupted media and our public/government education system has clouded our perceptions so that we cannot
- 6 effectively discern or recognize truth as a civilization and a culture, and how that ignorance and disinformation is
- 7 hurting us and bringing God’s vengeance upon our country.
- 8 • How our ignorance and inexperience has caused us to make unrealistic “presumptions” about the world and our
- 9 government that often leads us into sin and subjection and slavery to that government, which is why we
- 10 condemned ignorance earlier in section 1.8 and presumptions earlier in section 2.8.2.

11 Most of us have been making uninformed “presumptions” about our citizenship or our rights for most of our adult life
 12 without ever realizing it, as a matter of fact. The author fell in that category for literally decades before researching and
 13 writing this book, for instance. As we said earlier in section 1.8, the remedy for these errors is education and more
 14 importantly not earthly wisdom, but the pure and perfect wisdom of God as revealed in His word and through His Holy
 15 Spirit, or your conscience, whichever you prefer to call it:

16 *“The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom.” [Prov. 9:10, Bible, NKJV]*

17 *“He who gets wisdom loves his own soul; he who keeps understanding will find good.” [Prov. 19:8, Bible,*
 18 *NKJV]*

19 *“Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding.” [Prov. 4:7]*

20 The purpose of education is to train our senses and inform our discretion to recognize and discern truth and to do so free of
 21 incorrect presumptions fed to us by a corrupted media. Therefore, before we begin investigating the rights and citizenship
 22 subjects addressed in this chapter, we must first use education to calibrate our world view and undo the false presumptions
 23 we have been fed with and conditioned by for most of our lives. This will ensure that our world view is realistic and
 24 informed and consistent with Natural Law, God’s truth, and the world around us: not as we in our ignorance and
 25 inexperience perceive it, but as it really is! Our world view is of utmost importance and governs how we perceive and more
 26 importantly act and react to the world around us. From our world view comes our priorities, our goals, and the motives that
 27 govern everything we do.

28 Consequently, the subject of this next section is the single most important and fascinating part of this entire book, we
 29 believe, and we think that it will completely change your view of the world after you have read and reread and taken the
 30 time to understand it. Pray about it and think hard about it and ask the Holy Spirit or your conscience for confirmation,
 31 because it’s a fundamental and profound teaching that exposes the heart and the cause of most of the deception and tyranny
 32 that we presently live under in these great United States. You may perceive that the ideas expressed in the next section
 33 appear completely different from the mainstream media, from government propaganda, and in some cases from many
 34 churches, but we assure you that the foundation of everything in the next section comes right out of the Bible and the mouth
 35 of no less than the U.S. Supreme Court, and it isn’t likely that you’ll get a more authoritative or enlightened source than
 36 these two. So sit back and take your time and look everything up that we cite if you like in order to verify and validate
 37 what we are saying and prove to yourself that it isn’t just our opinion, but a fact that you can rely upon and build your
 38 whole life around as we have done.

39 In writing this chapter, we make frequent use of what is referred to as “moral evidence”, which is every bit as admissible
 40 and credible in a court of law as any piece of physical evidence or testimony ever might be:

41 ***Moral evidence.** As opposed to “mathematical” or “demonstrative” evidence, this term denotes that kind of*
 42 *evidence which, without developing an absolute and necessary certainty, generates a high degree of probability*
 43 *or persuasive force. It is founded upon analogy or induction, experience of the ordinary course of nature or the*
 44 *sequence of events, and the testimony of men.*

45 *[Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 1008]*

46 We encourage you to use this chapter as evidence in your own litigation to defend your God-given rights. Writing and
 47 rewriting the next section certainly has completely and permanently changed our world view for the better. ☺

1 **4.1 Natural Order**

2 "Don't go around saying the world owes you a living. The world owes you nothing. It was here first." -Mark
3 Twain

4 "Men do not make laws. They do but discover them. Laws must be justified by something more than the will of
5 the majority. They must rest on the eternal foundation of righteousness. That state is most fortunate in its form
6 of government which has the aptest instruments for the discovery of law."
7 Calvin Coolidge, to the Massachusetts State Senate, January 7, 1914.

8 "If the jury feels the law is unjust [violates God's law], we recognize the undisputed power of the jury to acquit,
9 even if its verdict is contrary to the law as given by a judge, and contrary to the evidence ... and the courts must
10 abide by that decision." [U.S. v. Moylan, 417 F.2d at 1006 (1969)]

11 "The sole end for which mankind are warranted, individually or collectively, in interfering with the liberty of
12 any of their number is self-protection." John Stuart Mill

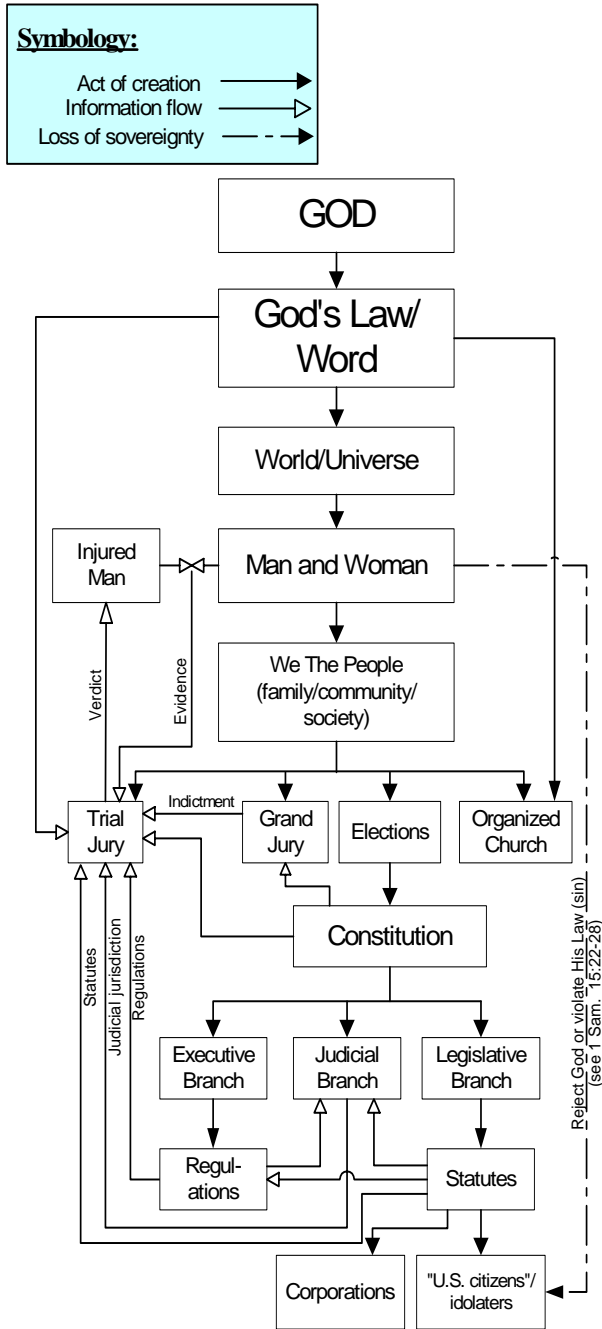
13 "I have lived, Sir, a long time, and the longer I live, the more convincing proofs I see of this truth - that God
14 governs in the affairs of men. And if a sparrow cannot fall to the ground without His notice, is it probable that
15 an empire can rise without His aid." Benjamin Franklin

16 We explained Natural Law earlier in section 3.4, and Natural Order is an extension of Natural Law. The foundation of
17 Natural Order is the notion that all creations are subject to and subservient to their Creator, who is always the sovereign
18 relative to the creation. God created man so He is the Sovereign relative to man. Man created the states of the Union, so
19 the people of the state are sovereign relative to their state government. The states of the Union then created the federal
20 government, so the states are the sovereigns relative to the federal government and the federal government is subservient to
21 and subordinate to them. The authority delegated by the states to the federal government is a definition and limitation of
22 the power of the federal (not national) government and under the Tenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution: "The powers
23 not delegated to the United States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the States, are reserved to the States
24 respectively, or to the people". Here is an example of this concept right from no less than the U.S. Supreme Court:

25 "A State does not owe its origin to the Government of the United States, in the highest or in any of its
26 branches. It was in existence before it. **It derives its authority from the same pure**
27 **and sacred source as itself: The voluntary and deliberate choice of the**
28 **people**...A State is altogether exempt from the jurisdiction of the Courts of the United States, or from any
29 other exterior authority, unless in the special instances when the general Government has power derived from
30 the Constitution itself." [Chisholm v. Georgia, 2 Dall. (U.S.) 419 (Dall.) (1793)]

31 Natural Order therefore defines the natural hierarchy of sovereignty in all of creation based on the order that all things were
32 created. In the words of former President Calvin Coolidge, Natural Law cannot be created by man: it can only be
33 discovered, and the same is true of Natural Order. Natural law is therefore a product of the following Natural Order and
34 hierarchy of sovereignty. This hierarchy of sovereignty is unchangeable and immutable and cannot be denied, denounced,
35 or legislated away by any court or government because it is a product of who and what we are as human beings. All human
36 beings instinctively understand its meaning and application. Below is a diagram of Natural Order:

37 **Figure 4-1: Natural Order Diagram**



Sovereign	References	Explanation	SOVEREIGNTY
God	John 15:20	Omnipotent, omnipresent, source of all Truth "Remember the word that I said to you, A servant is not greater than his master. "	↑ GREATEST
	John 1:1 Hebrews 11:3	"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God."	
	Gen. 1:1-25 Psalms 89:11-12	"In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth."	
	Gen. 1:26-31 Matt. 4:10	"Let Us make man in Our image" "You shall worship the Lord your God and Him ONLY you shall serve."	
We The People as <u>Individuals</u> (NOT government)	Julliard v. Greenman, 110 U.S. 421 (1884) Hale v. Henkel, 240 U.S. 43 (1906) Perry v. U.S., 394 U.S. 330 (1935)	Sovereignty resides in the people, not in the government. The People created trial by jury, and grand jury to punish/prevent sin. People created elections to organize government. Created church to promote spiritual welfare.	↑ LEAST
	Church: Gen. 3:15	These organizations prevent injustice and protect our life, liberty, and pursuit of happiness.	
	Ten Commandments: Exodus 20:1 thru 20:17	Constitution is a social contract approved through elections.	
	Gen. 11:4-9 Matt. 20:25-29 Declaration of Independence	Government created by the people. "...whoever desires to become great [in the government] among you, let him be your servant. And whoever desires to be first among you, let him be your slave."	
	U.S. v. Mersky, 361 U.S. 431 (1960)	Statutes and regulations (laws) created by government. Executive branch writes implementing regulations based on statutes passed by legislative branch.	
	Bowers v. Kerbaugh-Empire Co., 271 U.S. 170, 174, (1926)	Corporations are fictions created by law. Lies in IRS publications and treason by judiciary try to put you here.	

1
2

3 In the above diagram everyone at a particular level is a "fiduciary" of the parties above and they are bound to this position
4 by contract.

5 **fiduciary duty:** A duty to act for someone else's benefit, while subordinating one's personal interests to that of
6 the other person. It is the highest standard of duty implied by law (e.g. trustee, guardian). [Black's Law
7 Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 625]

8 A fiduciary relationship is a "master" and "servant" relationship. The fiduciary is the servant and the person receiving the
9 benefit is the master by contract. For instance, we are bound to act as fiduciaries and bondservants who serve the best
10 interests of the sovereign God who created us by the contract or the covenant that God has with us which is documented in

the Bible.⁷² Public servants in government, in turn, are contractually bound to us as the sovereigns they serve by written contracts called the U.S. Constitution and our state Constitution. The founding fathers also agreed that the Constitution was a fiduciary contract between the people and their government during the development of that instrument as documented in the Federalist Paper #78:

“No legislative act contrary to the Constitution can be valid. To deny this would be to affirm that the deputy (agent) is greater than his principal; that the servant is above the master; that the representatives of the people are superior to the people; that men, acting by virtue of powers may do not only what their powers do not authorize, but what they forbid...[text omitted] It is not otherwise to be supposed that the Constitution could intend to enable the representatives of the people to substitute their will to that of their constituents. It is far more rational to suppose, that the courts were designed to be an intermediate body between the people and the legislature, in order, among other things, to keep the latter within the limits assigned to their authority. The interpretation of the laws is the proper and peculiar province of the courts. A Constitution is, in fact, and must be regarded by judges, as fundamental law. If there should happen to be an irreconcilable variance between the two, the Constitution is to be preferred to the statute.” - Alexander Hamilton (Federalist Paper # 78)

We talked about the terms of the fiduciary duty that exists between the people and their government when we talked about the Code of Ethics for Government service earlier in section 2.1. This Government Code of Ethics embodies and implements the terms of that fiduciary contract between the sovereign people and their servant government. Incidentally, Alexander Hamilton’s very words from the Federalist Paper #78 echo those of God Himself, who through His son Jesus said the following:

“Remember the word that I said to you: ‘A servant is not greater than his master.’” [Bible, John15:20]

Below is what the Bible says about the duties of “servants”, which describe our duties toward God and government’s duties towards us:

“Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh, not with eyeservice, as men-pleasers, but in sincerity of heart, fearing God. And whatever you do, do it heartily, as to the Lord and not to men, knowing that from the Lord you will receive the reward of the inheritance; for you serve the Lord Christ. But he who does wrong will be repaid for the wrong which he has done, and there is no partiality.” [Col. 3:22-25, Bible, NKJV]

The Bible covenant between us and our sovereign God also has all the attributes of a valid legal contract:

1. An offer: God’s Love and forgiveness
2. Acceptance: Our acceptance of God’s love and forgiveness and sovereignty over our spiritual lives.
3. Consideration: We commit our time, our life, our families, and our affections to serving and loving and thanking God for his grace and mercy toward us, who are sinners.
4. Mutual assent: God understands us better than we understand ourselves, and we must understand the commitment and the covenant He makes to us by reading the Bible daily.

In many cases, you can confirm the existence of this contract with God by looking in the Bible for the word “yoke” or “covenant”. Here is the definition of “yoke” out of Easton’s Bible Dictionary:

YOKE — (1.) Fitted on the neck of oxen for the purpose of binding to them the traces by which they might draw the plough, etc. (Num. 19:2; Deut. 21:3). It was a curved piece of wood called ‘ol.

(2.) In Jer. 27:2; 28:10, 12 the word in the Authorized Version rendered “yoke” is motah, which properly means a “staff,” or as in the Revised Version, “bar.”

These words in the Hebrew are both used figuratively of severe bondage, or affliction, or subjection (Lev. 26:13; 1 Kings 12:4; Isa. 47:6; Lam. 1:14; 3:27). In the New Testament the word “yoke” is also used to denote servitude (Matt. 11:29, 30; Acts 15:10; Gal. 5:1).

⁷² See 1 Peter 2:13-17.

1 (3.) In 1 Sam. 11:7, 1 Kings 19:21, Job 1:3 the word thus translated is tzemed, which signifies a pair, two oxen
 2 yoked or coupled together, and hence in 1 Sam. 14:14 it represents as much land as a yoke of oxen could
 3 plough in a day, like the Latin jugum. In Isa. 5:10 this word in the plural is translated "acres."

4 To be "yoked" means to be contractually or spiritually bound to God: to be figuratively married to Him as His bride. Here
 5 is an example from Jesus' mouth:

6 "Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you and
 7 learn from Me, for I am gentle and lowly in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. For My yoke is easy
 8 and My burden is light." [Matt. 11:28-30, Bible, NKJV]

9 This contract or covenant we have with God makes us superior to any government or ruler and makes us the sovereign over
 10 everyone in government:

11 "You have delivered me from the strivings of the people [democratic mob rule];
 12 You have made me the head of the nations [and the government of the nations];
 13 A people I have not known [in Washington, D.C., the District of Criminals] shall serve me;
 14 The foreigners [Washington, D.C. is foreign to states of the Union] submit to me;
 15 The foreigners fade away,
 16 And come frightened from their hideouts [on every election day]."
 17 [Psalms 18:43-45, Bible, NKJV]

18 Incidentally, without this yoke or covenant between us and God, without our unflinching allegiance to Him over and above
 19 that of any government or state, and without our adherence to this Sacred contract as evidenced by our steadfast obedience
 20 to God's laws and His commandments (called "fearing God"), we fall from grace, lose our sovereignty, and are then put
 21 into subjection and bondage to man's laws and to government, who then become our new false god and idol. This is God's
 22 sovereign punishment for our disobedience:

23 "The wicked shall be turned into hell,
 24 And all the nations that forget God." [Psalms 9:17, Bible, NKJV]

25

26 "Behold, to obey [God and His Law] is better than sacrifice, and to heed than the fat of rams. For
 27 rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is an iniquity and
 28 idolatry. Because you have rejected the word of the Lord, He also has
 29 rejected you from being king [or sovereign over government]."

30 Then Saul [the king] said to Samuel, "I have sinned, for I have transgressed the commandment of the Lord
 31 and your words, because I feared the people [wanted to be politically correct instead of right with God] and
 32 obeyed their voice [instead of God's voice]. Now therefore, please pardon my sin and return with me, that I
 33 may worship the Lord." But Samuel said to Saul [the king], "I will not return with you, for you have rejected
 34 the word of the Lord, and the Lord has rejected you from being king over Israel"

35 And as Samuel turned around to go away, Saul seized the edge of his robe, and it tore. So Samuel said to him,
 36 "The Lord has torn the kingdom of Israel from you today and has given it to a neighbor of yours, who is better
 37 than you."

38 [1 Sam. 15:22-28, Bible, NKJV]

39 The diagram at the beginning of this section reflects the above reality with an arrow showing our fall from grace and
 40 sovereignty as a "man" to become "U.S. citizens/idolators", which is the price for disobedience to God's commandments
 41 and laws. When that happens, we become "subjects" of the federal government and our own ignorance and sin has
 42 voluntarily transformed a constitutional republic into a totalitarian "monarchy" or "oligarchy":

43 "citizen. 1: an inhabitant of a city or town; esp: one entitled to the rights and privileges of a freeman. 2 a: a
 44 member of a state b: a native or naturalized person who owes allegiance to a government and is entitled to
 45 protection from it 3: a civilian as distinguished from a specialized servant of the state—citizenly

1 *syn* CITIZEN, SUBJECT, NATIONAL mean a person owing allegiance to
 2 and entitled to the protection of a sovereign state. CITIZEN is preferred
 3 for one owing allegiance to a state in which sovereign power is retained
 4 by the people and sharing in the political rights of those people;
 5 **SUBJECT implies allegiance to a personal sovereign such as a**
 6 **monarch;** NATIONAL designates one who may claim the protection of a
 7 state and applies esp. to one living or traveling outside that state.”

8 [Webster's Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 243; Emphasis added]

9 Another important thing to learn from the above scripture is that Saul fell because he was a man-pleaser. He “feared the
 10 people” more than he feared God (see Eccl. 12:13-14). This is a polite way to say that he was more concerned with being
 11 “politically correct” than in obeying God and His Laws. The Lord was essentially second on Saul’s priority list and so Saul
 12 fell from grace and was dethroned as the king and sovereign over his people. The same fate awaits all who do the same,
 13 including us as Americans. God made us the kings and the sovereigns over our *servant* government, and this sovereignty is
 14 a *privilege* that results from our faith and obedience to God’s Laws and our worship of Him through our righteous actions.
 15 That privilege may be revoked at any time if we cease to trust in the Lord and put Him first, no matter the consequence.
 16 The following scripture makes this point abundantly clear:

17 **“Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He will lift you up [above your government].”** [James 4:10,
 18 Bible, NKJV]

19 The punishment for our disobedience and our failure to humble ourselves towards God as our King, our Ruler, and our
 20 Lawgiver is a tyrannical and dictatorial government that we become enslaved to and oppressed by because of our sin and
 21 our consequent inability to govern ourselves because of the sin. We explained why this was the case earlier in section 2.8.1
 22 when we talked about the book of Judges.

23 Since the Bible is a valid legal contract between us and God just as much as the federal constitution is a contract between
 24 “We The People” (as individuals) and their government, then one interesting outcome is that the Constitution forbids states
 25 from interfering with such contracts:

26 **United States Constitution, Article I, Section 10**

27 *No State shall...pass any Bill of Attainder, ex post facto Law, or Law impairing the Obligation of Contracts,*
 28 *or grant any Title of Nobility.*

29 So not even the government can remove God from His sovereign role over both us and the government, and the Bible
 30 confirms that we cannot be separated from the love of God, which is the essence of our faith⁷³:

31 **“For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor angels nor principalities nor powers [governments or**
 32 **rulers], nor things present nor things to come, nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able**
 33 **to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.”** [Romans 8:38-39, Bible, NKJV,
 34 *emphasis added*]

35 The Ten commandments say that our top priority is to love God, and by implication, obeying His commandments, His
 36 statutes, His Law, and His Word.

37 **“He who has My commandments and keeps them, it is he who loves Me.** *And he who loves Me will be loved*
 38 *by my Father, and I will love him and manifest Myself to him.”* [John 14:21, Bible, NKJV]

39 We have taken the time to actually catalog on our website many but not all of God’s laws at the web address below for your
 40 reference:

41 http://famguardian.org/Subjects/LegalGovRef/Education/BibleLawIndex/bl_index.htm

⁷³ See Matt. 22:36-40

1 The implications of these revelations are that since God says He and His Law/Word in the Bible are to be first on our
 2 priority list, then when or if the vain government of man or its laws attempt to conflict with or supercede the authority of
 3 God, we must remind the state that it cannot lawfully interfere with our First Amendment religious views by putting itself
 4 above God and in charge of our life or making human laws that conflict with God's laws which are in the Bible. That very
 5 calling and moral obligation of reconciling God's laws with man's laws, in fact, is the sole duty of the Trial Jury in the
 6 diagram. We even took this argument so far as to PROVE later in section 4.3.10 from a legal perspective using evidence
 7 exactly how our government has made itself into a religion and a false god to show just how bad this conflict between God
 8 and man has become.

9 God's laws, however, must always supercede man's laws because He is the Creator of Heaven and Earth, which makes
 10 Him Sovereign over all existence, and we are His sovereign delegates and ambassadors on the earth from whom the
 11 government derives ALL of its sovereignty over the finite stewardship which we have entrusted to it through our
 12 Constitution. Our obedience to God's laws, which sometimes puts us in conflict with man's laws, is what sanctifies us and
 13 sets us apart.

14 "Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their trouble,
 15 and to keep oneself unspotted from the world [and the corrupted governments and laws of the world]."
 16 [[James 1:27](#), Bible, NKJV]

17 "Come out from among them [the unbelievers]
 18 And be separate, says the Lord.
 19 Do not touch what is unclean,
 20 And I will receive you.
 21 I will be a Father to you,
 22 And you shall be my sons and daughters,
 23 Says the Lord Almighty."
 24 [[2 Corinthians 6:17-18](#), Bible, NKJV]

25 This faith and sanctification and obedience and joyful service to God makes us into "ministers of a foreign state" while we
 26 are here on earth from a legal perspective, and the "foreign state" in this case is "heaven" and "God's kingdom". Our
 27 ministry is for the glory of God and the love of our fellow man, in satisfaction of the two great commandments of Jesus
 28 found in Matt. 22:36-40. No less than the Supreme Court in *U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark*, 169 U.S. 649 (1898) said that the
 29 phrase "and subject to the jurisdiction of the United States" found in Section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment excludes
 30 "ministers of foreign states" from being "U.S. citizens". That's right: we can't be "U.S. citizens" and thereby make
 31 government into our false god because we are only "pilgrims and strangers"⁷⁴ on a foreign mission while we are
 32 temporarily here. The only place that Christians can really intend or realistically expect to return permanently to is heaven
 33 because nothing here on earth is permanent for us anyway, and life would be miserable indeed if it were! I'd like to see
 34 someone litigate that in a state court. Wouldn't it be fun to watch?

35 Here, in fact, is what God thinks about human governments and the nations created by man:

36 "Arise, O Lord,
 37 Do not let man prevail;
 38 Let the nations be judged in Your sight.
 39 Put them in fear, O Lord,
 40 That the nations may know themselves to be but men."
 41 [[Psalms 9:19-20](#), Bible, NKJV]

42 "Behold, the nations are as a drop in the bucket, and are counted as the small dust on the scales." [Isaiah
 43 40:15, Bible, NKJV]

44 "All nations before Him are as nothing, and they are counted by Him less than nothing and worthless."
 45 [[Isaiah 40:17](#), Bible, NKJV]

46 "He brings the princes to nothing; He makes the judges of the earth useless." [Isaiah 40:23, Bible, NKJV]

47 "Indeed they are all worthless; their works are nothing; their molded images are wind and confusion."
 48 [[Isaiah 42:29](#), Bible, NKJV]

⁷⁴ See Phil. 3:20, Hebrews 11:13, 1 Peter 2:1, and James 4:4 for biblical foundation for this fact.

1 **Worthless!** Now do you understand why the Jews were hated, why Christians are persecuted to this day, and why
 2 Jesus was crucified and Paul was executed by the Roman government? The same thing happened to the early Jews, who
 3 refused to bow to man's law and held steadfastly to God's law:

4 *Then Haman said to King Ahasuerus, "There is a certain people scattered and dispersed among the people in
 5 all the provinces of your kingdom; their laws are different from all other people's, and they do not keep the
 6 king's laws. Therefore it is not fitting for the king to let them remain. If it pleases the king, let a decree be
 7 written that they be destroyed, and I will pay ten thousand talents of silver into the hands of those who do the
 8 work, to bring it into the king's treasuries."*

9 *[Esther 3:8-9, Bible, NKJV]*

10 Christians who are doing what God commands are basically ungovernable unless you put *them* in charge as the sovereigns
 11 and give them a *servant* government. Remember, ours is a government "of the people, by the people, and for the people",
 12 as Abraham Lincoln said in his famous Gettysburg Address. That means that we have a moral duty to God to govern
 13 ourselves and not have a king or any government above us. Government can only *serve* us and we are to lead and control it
 14 through frequent elections that keep our servants in government accountable. This is confirmed in Prov. 6:6-11:

15 *Go to the ant, you sluggard!*
 16 *Consider her ways and be wise,*
 17 *Which, having no captain,*
 18 *Overseer or ruler,*
 19 *Provides her supplies in the summer,*
 20 *And gathers her food in the harvest.*
 21 *How long will you slumber, O sluggard?*
 22 *When will you rise from your sleep?*
 23 *A little sleep, a little slumber,*
 24 *A little folding of the hands to sleep--*
 25 *So shall your poverty come on you like a prowler,*
 26 *And your need like an armed man.*
 27 *[Prov. 6:6-11, Bible, NKJV]*

28 Any attempt to put anyone in government above us as a king or ruler amounts to idolatry and violates the first
 29 commandment (see Matt. 22:36-38). A jealous God (see Exodus 20:5) simply won't allow the government to compete with
 30 Him for the affections and the worship of His people, who He calls His "bride" in Rev. 21:9 and Rev. 22:17.

31 *Do not fear, for you will not be ashamed; neither be disgraced, for you will not be put to shame; for you will
 32 forget the shame of your youth, and will not remember the reproach of your widowhood anymore. For your
 33 Maker is your husband, the Lord of hosts is His name; and your Redeemer is the Holy One of Israel; He is
 34 called the God of the whole earth, for the Lord has called you like a woman forsaken and grieved in spirit, like
 35 a youthful wife when you were refused," says your God. "For a mere moment I have forsaken you, but with
 36 great mercies I will gather you. With a little wrath I hid My face from you for a moment; but with everlasting
 37 kindness I will have mercy on you," says the Lord, your Redeemer. [Isaiah 54:4-8, Bible, NKJV]*

38 When we do God's will and obey His commandments and His laws, we become His bride and an important part of His
 39 family!:

40 *"For whoever does the will of God is My brother and My sister and mother." [Jesus, in Mark 3:35, NKJV]*

41 When we as God's *bride* (yes, we're already married, you *fornicators* and *idolaters* in government looking for an easy lay!)
 42 and body of His believers and His children and family commit idolatry by selling ourselves into slavery and subjection to
 43 the government in exchange for their protection and privileges and a sense of false security, we are physically and
 44 spiritually united with and become "Babylon the Great Harlot" described in Revelations 17:5 of the Bible. The Bible
 45 reminds us, as a matter of fact, that it is a *SIN* to demand an earthly king or ruler and that we instead should by implication
 46 be self-governing men and women who are guided by the Holy Spirit to do God's will and who are *servants* to His personal
 47 and spiritual leadership in our daily lives. He communicates His sovereign will to us daily through our prayers and His
 48 word, the Bible. Below is one example where seeking an earthly king instead of God's leadership is described as a sin:

1 “Then all the elders of Israel gathered together and came to Samuel at Ramah, and said to him, ‘Look, you are
2 old, and your sons do not walk in your ways. Now make us a king to judge us like all the nations [and be
3 OVER them].’

4 “But the thing displeased Samuel when they said, ‘Give us a king to judge us.’ So Samuel prayed to the Lord.
5 And the Lord said to Samuel, ‘Heed the voice of the people in all that they say to you; for they have rejected
6 Me, that I should not reign over them. According to all the works which they have done since the day that I
7 brought them up out of Egypt, even to this day—with which they have forsaken Me and served other gods—so
8 they are doing to you also [government becoming idolatry].” [1 Sam. 8:4-8, Bible, NKJV]

9
10 “And when you saw that Nahash king of the Ammonites came against you, you said to me, ‘No, but a king shall
11 reign over us,’ when the Lord your God was your king.

12

13 And all the people said to Samuel, “Pray for your servants to the Lord your God, that we may not die; for we
14 have added to all our sins the evil of asking a king for ourselves.” [1 Sam. 12:12, 19, Bible, NKJV]

15 The king referred to above was Saul and that king was described in 1 Sam. chapters 12 through 15 as selfish and vain, and
16 who did not serve God or follow His commandments, but instead served himself, like most of our current politicians as a
17 matter of fact. The consequence of Saul the king’s selfishness and disobedient and sinful leadership was harm to his people
18 and a violation of his oath and commission of office direct from God at the time he was appointed by Samuel:

19 “Now therefore, here is the king whom you have chosen and whom you have desired. And take note, the
20 Lord has set a king over you. If you fear the Lord and serve Him and obey His voice, and do not rebel against
21 the commandment of the Lord, then both you and the king who reigns over you will continue following the Lord
22 your God. However, if you do not obey the voice of the Lord, but rebel against the commandment of the
23 Lord, then the hand of the Lord will be against you, as it was against your fathers.” [1 Sam. 12:13-15, Bible,
24 NKJV]

25 No doubt, people working in government don’t like being called worthless as the scriptures above indicate nor do they
26 enjoy being reminded that they are recruiting prostitutes (harlots) and fornicators from the flock of sheep that are God’s,
27 even though it’s true, and those Christians who reveal this profound truth are likely to be persecuted by their government
28 like Jesus was:

29 “And you will be hated by all for My name’s sake.” [Luke 21:17, Bible, NKJV]

30 Once again to our government servants [of which I am one, by the way]: God Himself says YOUR power and the
31 organization YOU serve is WORTHLESS, with a capital “W”! Did you get that Mr. President and Mr. Congressman and
32 Mr. Supreme Court Justice and Mr. Secretary of the Treasury and Mr. IRS Commissioner, and other arrogant tyrant
33 dictators? God says your job and your authority is “worthless” and “less than nothing”. Put your tail between your legs,
34 take a big gulp and swallow that pride of yours, grovel in the sand, get on your knees and bow, and lick the very Hand, the
35 ONLY Hand that feeds your pitiful mouth because:

36 “As I live, says the Lord, every knee shall bow to Me, and every tongue shall confess to God.’ So then, each of
37 us shall give account of himself to God.” [Romans 14:11, Bible, NKJV]

38 “For what is highly esteemed among men is an abomination in the sight of God.” [Luke 16:15, Bible, NKJV]

39 “Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He will lift you up.” [James 4:10, Bible, NKJV]

40 The only reason anyone therefore has to call your profession or your life’s work as a politician or public servant
41 “honorable” is because you are servants of the sovereign people and because you are doing the will of God as their agent
42 and fiduciary in protecting innocent people from harm and exploitation and crime. This very calling, as a matter of fact, is
43 the only authority justifying the existence of civil government because it is a fulfillment of the second greatest command to
44 love our neighbor found in Matt. 22:39. Can a “worthless” organization, as God calls a nation or political party, or the
45 people working in that “worthless” organization write laws that are any more valuable or important than “worthless”?

1 **NOT!** Here is what God says He will do when we elect or allow corrupt politicians governing a “worthless” organization
2 called a “nation” to write vain laws that supercede His law and His Bible:

3 *But to the wicked, God says:*

4 **“What right have you to declare My statutes [write man’s vain law], or take My covenant [the Bible] in your**
5 **mouth, seeing you hate instruction and cast My words behind you?** *When you saw a thief, you consented with*
6 *him, and have been a partaker with adulterers. You give your mouth to evil, and your tongue frames deceit.*
7 *You sit and speak against your brother; you slander your own mother’s son. These things you have done, and I*
8 *kept silent; you thought that I was altogether like you; but I will reprove you, and set them in order before your*
9 *eyes. **Now consider this, you who forget God, lest I tear you in pieces, and there be none to deliver: Whoever***
10 **offers praise glorifies Me; and to him who orders his conduct aright I will show the salvation of God.**”
11 *[Psalms 50:16-23, Bible, NKJV]*
12
13

14 **“Shall the throne of iniquity, which devises evil by law, have fellowship with You?** *They gather*
15 *together against the life of the righteous, and condemn innocent blood. But the Lord has been my defense, and*
16 *my God the rock of my refuge. He has brought on them their own iniquity, and shall cut them off in their own*
17 *wickedness; **the Lord our God shall cut them off.**”* *[Psalms 94:20-23, Bible, NKJV]*

18 It is precisely the above words by God Himself that explain why we have a duty to elect Godly and moral people to public
19 office: so that we don’t have corrupt people in there writing our laws as unjust substitutes for God’s laws and suffer God’s
20 wrath for their misdeeds as our agents and fiduciaries.

21 *“The people of this State do not yield their sovereignty to the agencies which **SERVE** them. The people, in*
22 *delegating authority, do not give their public servants right to decide what is good for the people to know and*
23 *what is not good for them to know. **The people insist on remaining informed***
24 **so that they may retain control over the instruments they have**
25 **created.**” *[California Government Code, §54950]*

26 We must therefore conclude that the vain promise of earthly security that comes from giving a government or a king
27 authority over us is a downright fraud and a farce as we clearly explain in our coverage of the Social Security program
28 earlier in section 2.9. Our one and only source of security is God, the creator of all things, and substituting anything else in
29 His place is idolatry. The book of Isaiah chapter 46 and 47 describe what happens to those who elevate government above
30 God and it’s not pretty, folks. For a Satanic lie and a false promise of man-made security by an idolatrous government, we
31 have in effect sold or exchanged our precious birthright from God, our sovereignty, and our greatest gift, to Satan and a
32 covetous government for 20 pieces of silver, like Judas did to Jesus and like Esau did to Jacob in the Bible.

33 *“As it is written, ‘Jacob I have loved, but **Esau I have hated**.’”* *[Romans 9:13, Bible, NKJV]*

34 *“Again, **the kingdom of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field,** which a man found and hid; and for joy over*
35 *it he goes and sells all that he has and buys that field.”* *[Matt. 13:44, Bible, NKJV]*

36 Our government has conspired with Satan to hide the treasure spoken of above from our view by taking over our education
37 in the public schools and removing all mentions of God from the classroom, from the textbooks, and the pledge of
38 allegiance, and thereby making us ignorant of the value of our birthright and ripe for selling it for pennies on the dollar.

39 *“Shake yourself from the dust, arise; sit down, O Jerusalem! Loose yourself from the bonds of your neck*
40 *[government slavery!], O captive [slave to your sin] daughter of Zion! For thus says the Lord: **You have sold***
41 **yourselves for nothing and you shall be redeemed without money.**” *[Isaiah 52:2-3, Bible, NKJV]*

42 The Apostle Paul warned us of such abuses when he said:

43 *“But know this, that **in the last days perilous times will come: For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of***
44 **money,** *boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, unloving, unforgiving,*
45 *slanders, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good, traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure*
46 *rather than lovers of God, **having a form of godliness but denying the power [sovereignty of God].** And from*
47 *such people turn away!”* *[2 Tim. 3:1-5, Bible, NKJV]*

1 The kinds of people described above worship the creation but deny the Sovereignty and existence and the power of the
2 Creator, who is God.

3 *"Therefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, in the lusts of their hearts, to dishonor their bodies among
4 themselves, who exchanged the truth of God for the lie, and worshipped and served the creature rather than
5 the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen" [Rom. 1:24-25, Bible, NKJV]*

6 By allowing these kinds of idolatrous, godless, and arrogant people to be stewards and leaders over our children in the
7 public schools, we have then become friends of the world and enemies of God.

8 THE NEW SCHOOL PRAYER

9 *Your laws ignore our deepest needs*
10 *Your words are empty air*
11 *You've stripped away our heritage*
12 *You've outlawed simple prayer*
13 *Now gunshots fill our classrooms*
14 *And precious children die*
15 *You seek for answers everywhere*
16 *And ask the question "Why"*
17 *You regulate restrictive laws*
18 *Through legislative creed*
19 *And yet you fail to understand*
20 *That God is what we need!*

21 Our ignorance and disobedience to God then causes us to commit fornication with Satan by joining ourselves to and
22 becoming unequally yoked with an atheistic and in many cases downright evil government.

23 *"Do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend
24 of the world makes himself an enemy of God."—James 4:4*

25 Now do you fully understand why the founding fathers gave us the kind of government that they did? It was the ONLY
26 thing that was compatible with their Christian beliefs! If you belong to God and He is your King (Isaiah 33:22), then man
27 and man's vain laws have no dominion over you, according to the Apostle Paul:

28 *"Therefore, if you died with Christ from the basic principles of the world, why, as though living in the world, do
29 you subject yourselves to [government] regulations..." [Colossians 2:20, Bible, NKJV]*

30 Likewise, the Apostle Paul removed all doubt that we shouldn't serve anyone but God and His law, when he said:

31 *"But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law [man's law]." [Gal. 5:18, Bible, NKJV]*

32 *"...the law is not made for a righteous person, but for the lawless and insubordinate, for the ungodly and for
33 sinners, for the unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, for
34 fornicators, for sodomites, for kidnappers, for liars, for perjurers, and if there is any other thing that is contrary
35 to sound doctrine, according to the glorious gospel of the blessed God which has committed to my trust." [1
36 Tim. 1:9-11, Bible, NKJV]*

37 *"You were bought at a price; do not become slaves of men [and remember that
38 government is made up of men]." [1 Cor. 7:23, Bible, NKJV]*

39 And when Christ's Apostles were told by the government not to preach His word in conflict with what God told them, look
40 what one the Apostles said:

41 *"We ought to obey God rather than men." [Acts 5:27-29, Bible, NKJV]*

42 Interestingly, even our pledge of allegiance validates the Natural Order diagram:

43 *"I pledge allegiance to the flag of the United States of America, and to the Republic, for which is stands, one
44 nation, under God, indivisible, with liberty and justice for all."*

If our *whole nation* is under God, then so are its rulers! In this case the rulers are under the people and the people are under God just as the diagram shows. The above diagram is also based on the following four U.S. Supreme Court rulings:

- **Juilliard v. Greenman, 110 U.S. 421 (1884)**: “There is no such thing as a power of inherent sovereignty in the government of the United States...In this country sovereignty resides in the people, and Congress can exercise no power which they have not, by their Constitution entrusted to it. All else is withheld.”
- **Hale v. Henkel, 201 U.S. 43 (1906)**: “His [the individual’s] rights are such as existed by the law of the land long antecedent to the organization of the State, and can only be taken from him by due process of law, and in accordance with the Constitution. Among his rights are a refusal to incriminate himself, and the immunity of himself and his property from arrest or seizure except under a warrant of the law. He owes nothing to the public so long as he does not trespass upon their rights.”
- **Perry v. U.S., 294 U.S. 330 (1935)**: “In the United States, sovereignty resides in the people...the Congress cannot invoke sovereign power of the People to override their will as thus declared.”
- **Yick Wo v. Hopkins, 118 U.S. 356 (1886)**: “Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law...While sovereign powers are delegated to...the government, sovereignty itself remains with the people.”

Our founding fathers had equally enlightening things to say that also validated the above diagram:

“The ultimate authority...resides in the people alone...” - James Madison, Federalist Paper No. 46

“It is when a people forget God that tyrants forge their chains ...” -- Patrick Henry

“Those people who are not governed by GOD will be ruled by tyrants.” William Penn (after which Pennsylvania was named)

“A free people [claim] their rights as derived from the laws of nature, and not as the gift of their chief magistrate.” --Thomas Jefferson: Rights of British America, 1774. ME 1:209, Papers 1:134

“Can the liberties of a nation be thought secure when we have removed their only firm basis, a conviction in the minds of the people that these liberties are of the gift of God? That they are not to be violated but with His wrath?” --Thomas Jefferson: Notes on Virginia Q.XVIII, 1782. ME 2:227

“Resistance to tyrants is obedience to God.” Benjamin Franklin

“Propitious smiles of heaven can never be expected on a nation that disregards the eternal rules of order and right which heaven itself has ordained.” - George Washington (1732-1799)

God’s law and His word must therefore always supercede government laws or we will suffer God’s wrath. Jesus made this very clear when he said:

“No one can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.” [Matt. 6:24, Bible, NKJV]

In the above scripture, we believe “mammon” refers to wealth or government or commerce. Section 4.3.10 entitled “Government as Idolatry/Religion” extensively reveals based on the Bible why it must be that God has to be first, because if He isn’t then we violate the First Commandment in Exodus 20:1-11 and Matt. 22:36-38 to love our God with all our heart, mind, and soul. Failing to observe this maxim is like declaring the law of gravity null and void, which is an insane proposition indeed! The bible in Jeremiah chapters 16 and 17 describes what happens when a nation and a people deny this fundamental principle and make government or any other idol into a counterfeit god. Here is an excerpt from that part of the Bible:

“Cursed is the one who trusts in man [or governments made up of men], who depends on flesh for his strength and whose heart turns away from the Lord. He will be like a bush in the wastelands; he will not see prosperity when it comes. He will dwell in the parched places of the desert, in a salt land where no one lives. But blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord, whose confidence is in Him. He will be like a tree planted by the

1 water that sends out its roots by the stream. It does not fear when heat comes; its leaves are always green. It
2 has no worries in a year of drought and never fails to bear fruit." [Jeremiah 17:5-8, Bible, NIV]

3 The Apostle Paul in the Bible also confirmed that God and His laws always supercede man and their vain laws when he
4 said:

5 "...there is no authority except from God." [Romans 13:1, Bible, NKJV]

6 "...you are complete in Him [Christ], who is the head of all principality and power." [Colossians 2:10, Bible,
7 NKJV]

8 Why is God the only authority and the source of all authority? The root of the word "authority" is "author". Because God
9 created us, he is the "author" of our existence, and therefore the only entity in authority over us. He is our only "Lawgiver"
10 and anything else is a cheap, man-made substitute:

11 "For the Lord is our Judge, the Lord is our Lawgiver, the Lord is our King; He will save us." [Isaiah 33:22,
12 Bible, NKJV]

13 This is similar to how the government handles patents and copyrights. The creator or author of the writing or invention is
14 the person who has "rights" over the thing he or she created.

15 "The heavens are Yours, the earth also is Yours; the world and all its fullness, You have founded them;..."
16 [Psalms 89:11-12, Bible, NKJV]

17 "And having been perfected, He [Jesus] became the author of eternal salvation to all who obey Him."
18 [Hebrews 5:9, Bible, NKJV]

19 Likewise, the creator of legal fictions called "corporations" is the government, which is why they can tax and regulate
20 them. Because God is the author of our existence, He endowed us with a natural, instinctive understanding of His law and
21 His sovereignty through the Holy Spirit. Even those who don't believe in God are endowed with this awareness and sense
22 of morality, in which case it is called "conscience" instead of "Holy Spirit". This notion of the Holy Spirit is the origin of
23 the whole concept of Natural Law, Natural Order, morality, and Justice. The Bible again confirms this natural gift of the
24 Holy Spirit and the faith that results from it:

25 "...let us run with endurance the race that is set before us, looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our
26 faith, who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the same, and has sat down at the
27 right hand of the throne of God." [Hebrews 12:2, Bible, NKJV]

28 Some people point to Romans 13:1 cited above and say that we should be subject to or subservient to our government, even
29 if that government is corrupt. Here is the scripture they will cite again:

30 "Let every soul be subject to the governing authorities. For there is no authority except from God, and the
31 authorities are appointed by God." [Romans 13:1, Bible, NKJV]

32 What we believe the "governing authorities" as used above by Apostle Paul means is "sovereigns". Paul was saying that
33 we should be subject to the sovereigns within whatever system of government we are a part. As you will learn later in
34 section 4.5, our system of government is unique in all the world because it is a Republic founded on individual rather than
35 collective rights and all individuals are sovereigns who are individually in charge of the government as a "king" or
36 "governing authority" as the Apostle Paul says here. The people created the government and they existed before the
37 government so they are the sovereigns. Government and public servants within government are there to serve you and me
38 as the individual sovereigns and they must be subject to us and subservient to us, according to Paul's words above. As we
39 say later in section 4.3.12, the people are the sovereigns rather than the government or anyone working in the government,
40 and the U.S. supreme Court and various state courts agree with this concept as shown below:

41 "Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law; but in our system,
42 while sovereign powers are delegated to the agencies of government, sovereignty itself remains with the
43 people, by whom and for whom all government exists and acts." Yick Wo v. Hopkins, 118 U.S. 356; 6 S.Ct.
44 1064 (1886)

"The people of this State, as the successors of its former sovereign, are entitled to all the rights which formerly belonged to the King by his prerogative. Through the medium of their Legislature they may exercise all the powers which previous to the Revolution could have been exercised either by the King alone, or by him in conjunction with his Parliament; subject only to those restrictions which have been imposed by the Constitution of this State or of the U.S." *Lansing v. Smith, 21 D. 89., 4 Wendel 9 (1829) (New York)*

The real "king" in our society is not the government or anyone servicing the sovereign people as government employees, but the PEOPLE! That's you! So even if you misinterpret Jesus' words to mean that we should render to a corrupt government that which it illegally asks for and demands, since your own government calls you the king, then your public servants are the ones who should be "rendering" to you, who your own government calls the sovereign. Render to the king (Caesar, that's you) his due, which is everything that is his property and his right, including 100% of his earned wage. What our dishonorable "servant" politicians and lawyers in government have been doing to destroy this natural order is to dumb you down using the public education system and steal your sovereign birthright by legal treachery and trickery hidden in the laws they write, but we as the sovereigns shouldn't allow them to get away with this fraud and extortion.

The implications of the Natural Order diagram are profound. First of all, the diagram can be very useful as documentation of our religious belief about the authority of government. We can use our First Amendment Right of freedom of religion to put government inside the box where they belong and keep them there. The biggest implication is that we are not to work for or be slaves of our government. Our government is our slave, we are the masters and it has no business dictating anything to us, stealing our money through direct taxes, forcing us to work for them (slavery), or using government licenses, such as marriage licenses, to impinge on our rights. We are sovereigns relative to it. In the words of Jesus Himself:

"Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him ONLY [NOT the government!] you shall serve.'" [Bible, Matt. 4:10]

However, if you want to have rights, then you have to act like you have them and know what they are. If you don't know what they are and don't insist on them in all your interactions with government dis-servants, then we can guarantee that the government will pretend like you don't have any because they want to be in charge.

"Ask not and ye shall definitely receive not!" Chris Hansen

One of our readers (Clyde Hyde, <mailto:candz@mail.ru>) has extended this concept of sovereignty and natural order so far as to litigate in a federal court to request the court to make a declaratory judgment either pronouncing him a slave, or a sovereign, and the courts and the government hate him for it, because he backs them into a corner where they have no choice but to declare the truth about his sovereignty. His efforts were the inspiration behind making the above diagram, and he provided to us a similar but less complete version of the above diagram that inspired this section. Way to go, Clyde! See section 9.14.13 of our Tax Freedom Solutions Manual, which contains a "Declaratory Judgment to Become a Sovereign" for an example of how he traps the court with this argument into admitting the truth about his sovereignty. It's fascinating and funny!

The above system of government based on Natural Law and Natural Order is self-regulating and self-balancing. Each entity has a proper role as follows:

Table 4-1: Entities within Natural Order and Their Proper Roles

#	Entity	Role
1	God	Sovereign, omniscient source of absolute truth, mercy, justice.
2	Man/woman	Created in God's image. Accountable to God for their stewardship over the world. If Christian, have one chance to get it "right", or will suffer eternal damnation on judgment day (see book of Revelations, the Holy Bible).
3	We the People/family	Voluntary association of persons formed for mutual protection and benefit. Can not and should not impose force on any member of society, except to prevent injustice or harm from occurring. Every member of the society must have equal rights by Nature's law. Unequal rights are a sign of government tyranny and use of the government for class warfare and oppression by special interest groups.

#	Entity	Role
4	Governing entities:	These entities act as the interface between “We the People” and their servant government. They ensure accountability of the government to the <i>social contract</i> called the <i>Constitution</i> from which the government derives all of its delegated powers.
4.1	Grand Jury	Implement criminal enforcement of the laws of the society within their jurisdiction. Decide who to indict, and on what criminal charges. Interface most often with the Attorney General, the District Attorney, or the Department of Justice within their jurisdiction. Prosecute corrupt public servants for wrongdoing and violation of Constitutional rights. In the case of bad laws, such as those on taxation, refuse to indict persons under such laws, thereby rendering the laws as ineffective as if they were never passed. Also initiate prosecution of citizens who have injured the interests of fellow citizens in violation of criminal laws. The output of the decision-making process for Grand Juries is an indictment, that is filed within the jurisdiction covered by their charter. Proceedings are generally very secretive, and the government often tries to unduly influence grand juries by not allowing accused persons to meet with or submit evidence to the grand jury before indictments are filed.
4.2	Elections	Method of expressing the sovereign will of the people to their government servants. Ensure that all persons serving in government are ultimately and continually accountable to the people for their performance or lack thereof. Ensure that laws passed by the legislative branch are consistent with the Constitution and reinforce the sovereignty of the will of We the People.
4.3	Trial jury	Directed by judge of the court as to their roles and responsibilities and proper court procedure. Ordinarily determine only facts necessary to convict, based on the law as interpreted and explained by the judge. However, can also judge and nullify the law if it is a <i>bad</i> law that is inconsistent with the written Constitution or if the judge misinterprets or refuses to discuss the law. Are seldom informed by anyone in government of their right to judge and nullify the effect of the law because government doesn’t want them to know they have that kind of power. Receive as input for their decision: <ul style="list-style-type: none"> 5. Jury instructions from the judge. 6. The statute that is being violated. 7. The regulation that implements the statute that is being violated. 8. Evidence submitted by the injured party and third party witnesses.
4.4	Organized church	Agents of social and moral responsibility within organized society. Focus on charity, grace, ministry, and spiritual issues, which are not easily or effectively dealt with by governments. Contribute to proper socialization of children and young adults. Provide stability and order to an otherwise chaotic lifestyle. Hold families together by encouraging commitment. Teach and reinforce love, personal responsibility, and respect for authority. Should encourage change if government becomes tyrannical and provide a pulpit and an audience to organize and effect that change. Cannot function effectively with government intervention, taxation, or regulation. The doctrine of separation of church and state demands that governments not tax or interfere with churches in any way.
5	Constitution	A written social contract between the people and the government who serves them. Purpose is to limit and define the delegated authority possessed by the persons serving in government. Prevents tyranny by distributing powers evenly among independent branches of government so that too much power doesn’t concentrate in any one place, where it would likely be abused.
6	Branches of government:	Alexander Hamilton, one of our founding fathers, said the following about the relation of various branches of government to each other: <p style="text-align: center;"><i>"The Executive not only dispenses the honors, but holds the</i></p>

#	Entity	Role
		<p><i>sword of the community. The legislature not only commands the purse, but prescribes the rules by which the duties and rights of every citizen are to be regulated. The judiciary, on the contrary, has no influence over either the sword or the purse; no direction either of the strength or of the wealth of the society; and can take no active resolution whatever. It may truly be said to have neither force nor will, but merely judgment..."</i></p> <p><i>"...This simple view of the matter suggests several important consequences. It proves incontestably, that the judiciary is beyond comparison the weakest of the three departments of power*; that it can never attack with success either of the other two; and that all possible care is requisite to enable it to defend itself against their attacks..."</i></p> <p>We can say that the legislature represents the heart and emotions of the people. And the executive branch represents strength and muscle of the people, and we would suggest that the judiciary represents the rational mind of the people.</p>
6.1	Executive Branch	<p>Role is to execute the day-to-day functions of the government based on the laws passed by the Legislative branch. Carry the “sword” and have the authority to implement and enforce public policy documented in the laws passed by the Legislative branch.</p>
6.2	Legislative Branch	<p>Role is to pass laws, which in most cases take the form of statutes and public law.</p> <p>Responsible for writing laws on taxation and for collecting taxes. These two functions must reside together in order to truthfully say that there is taxation with representation, which was what our country was founded on. Cannot therefore delegate their authority to collect taxes to an executive agency.</p> <p>Control the public “purse” (revenue sources) and spending of these revenues by the Executive Branch.</p>
6.3	Judicial Branch	<p>Responsible for interpreting and applying laws written by the Legislative branch in the event of disputes which cannot be resolved cooperatively among citizens. Only enforce laws and statutes passed by the Legislative branch that are consistent with the written Constitution. This ensures that the Legislative branch does not usurp power or exceed the authority delegated to it by the people. Instruct juries as to the law. Implement courtroom protocol based on Court Rules they write. Develop forms of pleading and practice used to ensure an orderly and repeatable process of justice. Judges often appointed for life and a Constitutional requirement that their salary cannot be reduced by the legislature in order to ensure independence from the Legislative Branch. Can be indicted for wrongdoing by the Grand Jury if they become corrupt or tyrannical.</p>
7	Statutes	<p>Laws written by the Legislative Branch, usually taking the form of written statutes and Public Laws. These laws express the will of the people and must be consistent with the written Constitution and God’s Law. The extent to which the laws created by the Legislative branch are inconsistent with Natural Law/God’s Law is the extent to which the Trial Jury and the Grand Jury can and often will nullify or refuse to enforce such a law.</p>
8	Regulations	<p>Regulations are written by the Executive Branch of the government in order to implement or enforce the statutes written by the Legislative branch. They are the agency’s official interpretation of the statutes. Since the Executive</p>

#	Entity	Role
		Branch of the government is not a legislative body, the scope of the regulations may NOT exceed the authority or the scope of the statutes they implement. The absence of an implementing regulation also makes the statute unenforceable in most courts.
9	Corporations	Artificial entities created by operation of laws passed by the Legislative branch. Members of this “corpus” or “body” of persons agree to receive government privileges in the form of limited personal liability in the courts in exchange for an agreement to be bound by the laws of the state and pay taxes to that state. The decision to become a corporation is a <i>voluntary act</i> , and therefore taxes paid by corporations can be mandated and still not violated rights in a free country.
10	“U.S. citizen”/idolater	Subjects and serfs of the federal government. Rights and privileges are created and enforced via federal statutes rather than being granted by the Bill of Rights or the Constitution. Are <i>not</i> Sovereigns, but subject citizens of a totalitarian socialist democracy. See section 4.11.3 later for details.

1 In the above system, the government benefits most and makes its power greatest by having misinformed, ignorant, or
 2 passive grand jurists and trial jurists who will be good government puppets and not ask too many probing questions. The
 3 ideal candidate for this role as far as the government is concerned is someone who graduated from the “public fool system”,
 4 I mean public school system, that THEY (the government) were in charge of. Never forget the following:

5 *“Politicians prefer unarmed and illiterate peasants!”*

6 Do you smell a conflict of interest here? This “victim” of the public fool [I mean school] system is legally and socially
 7 illiterate and makes a good “sheep” who is easy for the District Attorney (D.A.) to boss around and who will ignorantly
 8 enforce unjust and unethical tax laws that will maximize the government’s take from the institutionalized plunder and theft
 9 called the income tax. Consequently, it is the goal of this document to provide a “civics lesson” in the hope of atoning for
 10 the sins of the public fool, I mean “school” system in encouraging this kind of ignorance about our political process.

11 Some people, when they read this section, respond to it by saying the following:

12 *“What you are trying to develop and establish is God’s kingdom here on earth. You are trying to impose your*
 13 *religious views on the government and the citizens and expecting them to operate under God’s laws instead of*
 14 *man’s laws. We live in a diverse culture and although a vast majority of Americans do profess a belief in God,*
 15 *you will encounter much resistance to this idea.”*

16 We respond to this comment by saying that we are *not* insisting that the government do *anything* other than provide equal
 17 and complete protection to *everyone* for their constitutional rights and their liberties and nothing more. We don’t want to
 18 dictate how individuals run their lives or what they can or cannot say. We only wish to ensure that the government fulfills
 19 its *only* legitimate function, which is to *prevent injustice* rather than to *promote justice* as we indicated earlier in section 3.3
 20 and to leave people otherwise fully sovereign over their own person and labor and property. These ingredients are the
 21 essence of good, wise, and frugal government. Thomas Jefferson agreed with these conclusions:

22 *“With all [our] blessings, what more is necessary to make us a happy and a prosperous people? Still one thing*
 23 *more, fellow citizens--a wise and frugal Government, which shall restrain men from injuring one another,*
 24 *shall leave them otherwise free to regulate their own pursuits of industry and improvement, and shall not*
 25 *take from the mouth of labor the bread it has earned. This is the sum of good government, and this is*
 26 *necessary to close the circle of our felicities.”* --Thomas Jefferson: 1st Inaugural, 1801. ME 3:320

27 We believe that separation *between* church and state is important. We also think the Constitution gives us freedom **OF**
 28 religion, but *not* freedom **FROM** religion, and those persons who are nonreligious, and especially gays, liberals, and
 29 homosexuals, ought to learn to be *much* more tolerant of the views of Christians than they are today. It is the height of
 30 hypocrisy for them on the one hand to be telling Christians they are intolerant, and on the other hand being totally intolerant
 31 of Christians themselves. Such left wing groups have become the Nazi’s of our modern era by trying to pass hate crime
 32 laws and government regulations to *discriminate* against Christians who are exercising their First Amendment right to
 33 freedom of religious expression. They have done so in an apparent effort to eliminate what they call discrimination on the

1 part of Christians, even though in most cases the only injury they have suffered came not from the person making the
 2 statement or committing an alleged act, but from the conviction of the Holy Spirit acting on their consciousness. We
 3 believe that persons of any religion should be free exercise their rights to follow their religion and to talk freely in public
 4 settings about what God's law says about the sins of abortion, homosexuality, and fornication.

5 What does the Bible say that we should do with government *servants* who are bad stewards who have abused the authority
 6 entrusted to them by their masters? The answer is found in the Parable of the Faithful Steward in Luke 12:41-48. We cite
 7 from that passage below:

8 *"But if that servant says in his heart 'My master is delaying his coming,' and begins to beat the male and*
 9 *female servants, and to eat and drink and be drunk, the master of that servant will come on a day when he is*
 10 *not looking for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in two and appoint him his portion*
 11 *with the unbelievers. And that servant who knew his master's will, and did not prepare himself or do*
 12 *according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes." [Luke 12:45-47, Bible, NKJV]*

13 Our government is the "servant" of the sovereign people. This "servant" has:

- 14 • Kicked the master out of his own house and through eminent domain and taken it, our income, and all our property
- 15 rights over.
- 16 • Is beating not only the male and female servants, but making the *master* into a servant as well and then beating
- 17 him too under the color of law but without any lawful authority whatsoever!
- 18 • Has abused his authority and stewardship to punish and control the master by claiming falsely to be acting under
- 19 the authority of law
- 20 • Has turned the servants on each other and created a police state by appointing some servants in the financial
- 21 community to "snitch" on all the other servants so that NO ONE has privacy or sovereignty. The motto is: "*If*
- 22 *you're not going to be a snitch, then you will be my bitch (prostitute).*" as one of our readers puts it. This tactic,
- 23 incidentally, is the same tactic the communists used in creating informants to snitch on anti-communists.
- 24 • Has made it impossible to call himself to account in the courts because the servant has replaced all the judges with
- 25 his own cronies and threatened those who might convict or persecute him. Every once in a while, they will lynch a
- 26 sheep like Congressman Traficant or Congressman George Hansen to keep the rest of the sheep in line.

27 *According to the Bible, this wicked servant (our public servants in Congress and the IRS in this case) should be cut in*
 28 *two and flogged and beaten with many stripes.* By Natural Law, this would be divine justice for them according to the
 29 Bible. Why aren't we doing this to the corrupt tyrants who have taken over our government if Natural Law demands it?

30 Another interesting fact is revealed by examining the natural order diagram: That governments invented corporations as
 31 creatures of law so that they could become a god and an object of slavery and idol worship for that corporation. People in
 32 government simply love being treated as gods and they will make laws to encourage such idol worship. Consider the
 33 following evidence in support of such a conclusion:

- 34 1. *The Bible and our Christian God hold us individually and personally responsible (liable) for our acts during this*
 35 *lifetime.* See [Rev. 20:11-15](#) and [Romans 14:10-12](#), which says that we will be judged and held accountable by God
 36 individually for what we did or didn't do during our lifetime.

37 *For we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ. For it is written:*

38 *"As I live, says the Lord,*
 39 *Every knee shall bow to Me,*
 40 *And every tongue shall confess to God."*

41 *So then each of us shall give account of himself to God.*

42 *[Romans 14:10-12, Bible, NKJV]*

- 43 2. *The fundamental advantage of forming a corporation is limited personal liability.* This means at least during our
 44 lifetime, that we won't be held personally responsible as an individual for our wrongdoing so long as we did it as an
 45 agent of a corporation. The price we pay for this limited liability is to pay taxes on the profits of the corporation to the
 46 federal government, on whom we depend entirely for our existence as an artificial legal entity.

- 1 3. The problem with corporations is that when people intend to sin or commit crimes, then corporations provide a
 2 convenient legal vehicle to escape personal liability for the crimes. One could therefore quite reasonably say that the
 3 government (federal mafia) courts become a protection racket for criminals in exchange for the right to collect
 4 revenues from them! Is it then any wonder we hear so much of late about corporations cooking the books? Does
 5 Enron, MCI Worldcom, Arthur Anderson, Martha Stewart, etc. ring a bell, folks?
- 6 4. Because our God is viewed by atheists and sinners as a harsh God who hates sin and whom they would rather avoid
 7 accountability to, then a common approach among these people is to try to replace God with government and then get
 8 the government to legalize sinful or formerly criminal activity. This approach only works, however, if God can be
 9 removed both from the schools, government, and public life, or Christian morality and God's laws will condemn them
 10 anyway for their acts.
- 11 5. When the government wishes to tax natural persons (biological people), its most common approach is to deceive them
 12 using "words of art" and tricky legal definitions into thinking that they are taxable corporations involved in foreign
 13 commerce or the officers of such corporations. Even the U.S. Supreme Court agrees that "income" within the meaning
 14 of the Constitution means "corporate profit" for the purpose of Subtitle A federal income taxes. See the following
 15 cases for verification of this fact:
- 16 5.1. *Eisner v. Macomber*, 252 U.S. 189, 40 S.Ct. 189, 9 A.L.R. 1570 (1920).
 17 5.2. *Stratton's Independence v. Howbert*, 231 U.S. 399, 415, 34 S.Sup.Ct. 136, 140 [58 L.Ed. 285]
 18 5.3. *Doyle v. Mitchell Bros. Co.*, 247 U.S. 179, 185, 38 S.Sup.Ct. 467, 469, 62 L.Ed. 1054

19 Along the lines of corporations, here's a funny satire one of our readers sent us highlighting the fundamental problems with
 20 corporations we just pointed out above and showing just how badly man screws things up when he tries to improve on what
 21 God gave us:

22 **REMAINING U.S. CEOs MAKE A BREAK FOR IT! - - Band of Roving Chief**
 23 **Executives Spotted Miles from Mexican Border**
 24 July 17, 2002

25 San Antonio, Texas(Rooters)

26 *Unwilling to wait for their eventual indictments, the 10,000 remaining CEOs of public U.S. companies made a*
 27 *break for it yesterday, heading for the Mexican border, plundering towns and villages along the way, and*
 28 *writing the entire rampage off as a marketing expense.*

29 *"They came into my home, made me pay for my own TV, then double-booked the revenues," said Rachel*
 30 *Sanchez of Las Cruces, just north of El Paso. "Right in front of my daughters."*

31 *Calling themselves the CEOnistas, the chief executives were first spotted last night along the Rio Grande River*
 32 *near Quemado, where they bought each of the town's 320 residents by borrowing against pension fund gains.*
 33 *By late this morning, the CEOnistas had arbitrarily inflated Quemado's population to 960, and declared a 200*
 34 *percent profit for the fiscal second quarter.*

35 *This morning, the outlaws bought the city of Waco, transferred its underperforming areas to a private*
 36 *partnership, and sent a bill to California for \$4.5 billion.*

37 *Law enforcement officials and disgruntled shareholders riding posse were noticeably frustrated.*

38 *"First of all, they're very hard to find because they always stand behind their numbers, and the numbers keep*
 39 *shifting," said posse spokesman Dean Levitt. "And every time we yell 'Stop in the name of the shareholders!'*
 40 *they refer us to investor relations. I've been on the phone all damn morning."*

41 *"YOU'LL NEVER AUDIT ME ALIVE!"*

42 *The pursuers said they have had some success, however, by preying on a common executive weakness. "Last*
 43 *night we caught about 24 of them by disguising one of our female officers as a CNBC anchor," said U.S. Border*
 44 *Patrol spokesperson Janet Lewis. "It was like moths to a flame."*

45 *Also, teams of agents have been using high-powered listening devices to scan the plains or telltale sounds of*
 46 *the CEOnistas. "Most of the time we just hear leaves rustling or cattle flicking their tails," said Lewis, "but*
 47 *occasionally we'll pick up someone saying, 'I was totally out of the loop on that.'"*

1 Among former and current CEOs apprehended with this method were Computer Associates' Sanjay Kumar,
2 Adelpia's John Rigas, Enron's Ken Lay, Joseph Nacchio of Qwest, Joseph Berardino of Arthur Andersen, and
3 every Global Crossing CEO since 1997. Since, due to his contacts to Telmex, his knowledge of local geography
4 is claimed to be outstanding, mPhase's Ron Durando was elected to act as the group's pathfinder. ImClone
5 Systems' Sam Waksal and Dennis Kozlowski of Tyco were not allowed to join the CEONistas as they have
6 already been indicted.

7 So far, about 50 chief executives have been captured, including Martha Stewart, who was detained south of El
8 Paso where she had cut through a barbed-wire fence at the Zaragosa border crossing off Highway 375.

9 "She would have gotten away, but she was stopping motorists to ask f or marzipan and food coloring so she
10 could make edible snowman place settings, using the cut pieces of wire for the arms," said Border Patrol officer
11 Jennette Cushing. "We put her in cell No. 7, because the morning sun really adds texture to the stucco walls."

12 While some stragglers are believed to have successfully crossed into Mexico, Cushing said the bulk of the
13 CEONistas have holed themselves up at the Alamo.

14 "No, not the fort, the car rental place at the airport," she said. "They're rotating all the tires on the minivans
15 and accounting for each change as a sales event."

16 The IRS has sent recruiters to accompany law enforcement and disgruntled shareholders in the chase, and has
17 publicly announced that it is offering the CEOs jobs as IRS collection agents and criminal investigators once
18 captured. Charles Rossotti, the IRS commissioner, has offered them anonymity under the FBI's witness
19 protection program. Apparently, the IRS has been having trouble finding employees, since all the honest ones
20 already resigned to seek more honorable employment.

21 In conclusion, we have a very good video on our website regarding Jury Nullification that was put together by Red
22 Beckman which unifies the lessons in this section. It thoroughly explains the proper role of each major entity in our
23 Natural Order diagram in detail and is very enlightening to civic minded citizens. You can watch this video at:

24 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/taxes.htm>

25 Go to the "Educational Resources" heading in the white area and click on "Red Beckman's Fully Informed Jury Training".

26 4.2 Rights v. Privileges

27 "This nation, as experience has proved, cannot always remain at peace, and has no right to expect that it
28 always will have wise and humane rulers, sincerely attached to the principles of the Constitution. **Wicked men,**
29 **ambitious of power, with hatred of liberty and contempt of law,** may fill the place once occupied by
30 Washington and Lincoln; and if this right is conceded, and the calamities of war again befall us, **the dangers to**
31 **human liberty are frightful to contemplate.** ... For this, and other equally weighty reasons, they secured the
32 inheritance they had fought to maintain, by incorporating in a written Constitution **the safeguards which time**
33 **had proven were essential to its preservation. Not one of these safeguards can the President or Congress or**
34 **the Judiciary disturb, except the one concerning the writ of habeas corpus.** [Ex Parte Milligan, 71 U.S. 2, 18
35 L.Ed 281, 297 (1866)]

36 This section concerns itself with the origin and nature of rights and privileges. We discuss the subject both from a biblical
37 as well as a legal/civil perspective. The subject of rights and privileges is of utmost important in understanding our role in
38 society and the relationship that government has to us as the sovereign people that they serve. Failure to fully understand
39 this subject can result in making you into a government slave and signing away all your rights and sovereignty without even
40 realizing it.

41 4.2.1 Rights Defined and Explained

42 "The people...are the only sure reliance for the preservation of our liberty." --Thomas Jefferson to James
43 Madison, 1787. ME 6:392

44 "The people of every country are the only safe guardians of their own rights." --Thomas Jefferson to John
45 Wyche, 1809.

46 Black's Law Dictionary (6th edition) defines our Constitutional Rights:

1 “... Natural rights are those which grow out of the nature of man [the Creator] and depend upon personality, as
2 distinguished from such as are created by law and depend upon civilized society; or those which are plainly
3 assured by natural law;...”

4 In other words, Natural Rights or Natural Laws come from nature [the Creator] and are separate and distinct from those
5 laws derived by man. Our Constitution not only recognizes these Natural Rights (Natural Laws), but guarantees them as
6 individual Rights. The Constitution recognizes that they are superior to all other laws, including the laws made by man
7 (any level of government). That is, unless of course you freely waive your Rights, which is exactly what you do under
8 compulsion every time you file an income tax return. It is likely, however, that you didn't know that is what you were
9 doing. Hence, this section.

10 Possession of a legal right conveys certain advantages upon us in a court of law as revealed by the U.S. supreme Court,
11 *Marbury v. Madison*, 5 U.S. 137, 1 Cranch 137, 2 L.Ed. 60 (1803):

12 *The very essence of civil liberty certainly consists in the right of every individual [note that he said individual*
13 *and not citizen, since you don't have to be a citizen to have the protection of government] to claim the*
14 *protection of the laws, whenever he receives an injury. One of the first duties of government is to afford that*
15 *protection. In Great Britain the king himself is sued in the respectful form of a petition, and he never fails to*
16 *comply with the judgment of his court.*

17 *In the 3d vol. of his Commentaries, p. 23, Blackstone states two cases in which a remedy is afforded by mere*
18 *operation of law.*

19 “*In all other cases,*” he says, “*it is a general and indisputable rule, that where there is a*
20 *legal right, there is also a legal remedy by suit, or action at law, whenever that right is*
21 *invaded.*”

22 And afterwards, p. 109, of the same vol. he says,

23 “*I am next to consider such injuries as are cognizable by the court of the common law.*
24 *And herein I shall for the present only remark, that all possible injuries whatsoever, that*
25 *did not fall within the exclusive cognizance of either the ecclesiastical, military, or*
26 *maritime tribunals, are, for that very reason, within the cognizance of the common law*
27 *courts of justice; for it is a settled and invariable principle in the laws of England, that*
28 *every right, when withheld, must have a remedy, and every injury its proper redress.*

29 *The government of the United States has been emphatically termed a government of laws, and not of men. It*
30 *will certainly cease to deserve this high appellation, if the laws furnish no remedy for the violation of a vested*
31 *legal right.*”

32 The above case is often cited as an authority on the subject of rights, even by the government, and makes mandatory
33 reading for the budding freedom fighter.

34 The supreme Court has said repeatedly that governments may not tax or regulate the exercise of rights. Here is but one
35 example:

36 “*A state may not impose a charge for the enjoyment of a right granted by the Federal Constitution.*” *Murdock*
37 *v. Commonwealth of Pennsylvania*, 319 U.S. 105; 63 S.Ct. 870 (1943)

38 However, governments can regulate the exercise of “privileges”:

39 “*The power to tax the exercise of a privilege is the power to control or suppress its enjoyment.*” *Murdock v.*
40 *Commonwealth of Pennsylvania*, 319 U.S. 105; 63 S.Ct. 870 (1943)

41 The key to having rights is to *avoid* the government trap of becoming a person in receipt of government privileges. Even
42 the U.S. Supreme court admitted this, when it said:

43 “*The rights of sovereignty extend to all persons and things not privileged, that are within the*
44 *territory. They extend to all strangers resident therein; not only to those who are naturalized, and to those who*
45 *are domiciled therein, having taken up their abode with the intention of permanent residence, but also to those*
46 *whose residence is transitory. All strangers are under the protection of the sovereign while they are within his*

1 territory and owe a temporary allegiance in return for that protection." *Carlisle v. United States*, 83 U.S. 147,
2 154 (1973)

3 Keep in mind that being a "U.S. citizen", in receipt of the "privileges and immunities" of federal citizenship derived from 8
4 U.S.C. §1401 is the very privilege that in effect, denies you your other Constitutionally guaranteed rights and personal
5 sovereignty. Therefore, the key to having rights is also to not be a privileged "U.S. citizen" or a "citizen of the United
6 States" under 8 U.S.C. §1401, but instead to be a "U.S. national" defined in [8 U.S.C. §1408](#) and the Fourteenth
7 Amendment. You don't need statutory federal citizenship found in 8 U.S.C. §1401 to have rights. As we said at the
8 beginning of this chapter and will say again in section 4.11, your rights come from the land you live on and not your
9 citizenship status. The only thing that being a "U.S. citizen" under 8 U.S.C. §1401 does is take away rights, not endow you
10 with rights. "U.S. citizen" status under 8 U.S.C. §1401 was invented only to regulate and enslave people born in and
11 occupying territories and possessions of the United States and has absolutely no bearing upon persons born in states of the
12 Union. Everyone else who was born in a state of the Union already had the rights of kings!

13 "No white person born within the limits of the United States, and subject to their [the states, and not the federal
14 government] jurisdiction, or born without those limits, and subsequently naturalized under their laws, owes the
15 status of citizenship to the recent amendments [Thirteenth and Fourteenth Amendments] to the Federal
16 Constitution." *Van Valkenburg v. Brown*, 43 Cal. 43 (1872)

17 The various articles contained within this chapter will demonstrate to you the facts and the proof, not only that these things
18 are true, but just how they are used to infringe upon your Unalienable Rights as Sovereign Citizens and "natural persons" of
19 the several Union states. These Sovereign Citizens of the several Union states are the only People who have Constitutional
20 (Natural) Rights. No other status of "citizenship" or "residency" has these Natural Rights, yet you claim these other forms
21 of citizenship everyday, and as you do so, you are unknowingly waving your Natural Rights for the illusion of benefits and
22 privileges from the federal government. In effect, you have exchanged your own Natural Rights for mere "government
23 privileges" and thereby irreparably compromised your personal liberty and sovereignty [Whoops.]

24 It is all a matter of perspective and choice. The problem is, you probably don't know or understand that there are two sides
25 to this coin - and more importantly, that you have a choice. If you don't know how or when to "Reserve your Rights" then
26 you become prey to oppression and tyranny by any one, including the various levels of government, who might wish to take
27 advantage of you for their own sake or their notions of what is best for you. It is time to take charge of your own destiny
28 and stop being so casual about your Rights. You do have them, in that they do still exist. The question is do you have
29 access to them, when you need them the most. Not likely, unless you understand and use this valuable information at every
30 turn in your involvement with all levels of government.

31 So, please, take the time to read, study and verify this information thoroughly for yourself. And please, feel free to share it
32 with others. Organize discussion groups with your friends, relatives, and with your various clubs and organizations. The
33 more people who become enlightened, the sooner we can stop the insanity of oppression and tyranny, by any one,
34 especially our own government.

35 Time after time we have all heard the expression, "*The People have the power.*" Probably more times than any one of us
36 can count. We have heard that "We the People..." are the masters and the federal government is the servant of the People.
37 Today, most of us would agree that it is the other way around. Yet few of us can explain how or why this has come to be
38 true. While most of us understand these powers are actually our Rights as they were known, understood and written into the
39 Declarations of Independence, the Constitution of the United States of America and the Bill of Rights, few of us understand
40 how to use and enforce these Rights. The majority of us are unaware of how to protect these rights and ourselves from
41 those who would choose to usurp them, entrapping us into a web of deceit and misleading us to believe we must obey what
42 are obviously laws which function outside our protections under the Constitution.

43 We often hear speakers proclaim "*The people must protect (reserve) their Rights or they won't have any.*" Yet, few actually
44 know how. Of course every elected official is required to take an oath of office, which includes the statement "... to protect
45 and defend the Constitution of the United States of America...". As we all have come to realize, we are gradually losing our
46 Rights with each passing year, as the government continues to erode them away with still more federal regulation being
47 imposed.

48 In paraphrasing Supreme Court Justice Clarence Thomas (well known for his conservative views), he said:

1 "... I promise to fight federalism at ever turn. But, the People must first 'reserve' their 'Rights' or I can do
2 nothing ..."

3 We have all heard other notable people make similar statements in the past, and yet I have found that very few of us
4 actually know and understand what is meant by these words. Most of us assume that the government itself is waging the
5 battle to protect our Rights, or simply believe that these Rights we have are just there and known to all. So, who in their
6 right mind would, or even could, get away with denying them? As you read this section, not only will you come to know
7 exactly what Justice Thomas meant in those few words, but you will also understand precisely how to go about "reserving
8 your Rights." You will learn that there is a lot more going on here than first meets the eye.

9 So, how do we protect and enforce these Unalienable Rights granted to us by our Creator, from those who would steal them
10 away? Who are those that would trick us into being unknowing and unwilling victims of what seems to be unconstitutional
11 laws that violate our natural rights?

12 Most would agree that it is the government and big business which seek to usurp our rights. The government on all levels
13 (local, county, state and federal) operates on a system that is actually outside the protections of the Constitution, which is a
14 little known and even less understood conspiracy perpetrated on the American People to control their lives and their money
15 (property and other assets). Meanwhile, big business lobbies congress to the point that "We the People..." have little if any
16 input or affect in the legislative process. So, it is our elected officials in government who have betrayed both their oaths of
17 office, and our faith that they will do what they promised during the election process.

18 It is out goal, as set forth in this book, to inform you as to precisely how government and big business accomplish these
19 deeds of deception, trickery and fraud. Then, to further instruct you, we will educate you as to how to overcome these
20 obstacles and barriers to the freedoms we were granted by our Creator, and guaranteed by our Constitution, for which so
21 many have fought and died to preserve and protect for ourselves and for our posterity.

22 We have the power - we always have! It is time then to reeducate ourselves, getting away from the leftist rhetoric and back
23 to the simple facts of the matter in an effort to save our Constitution and our Individual Freedoms. Our tolerance and
24 silence has too long been mistaken for ignorance, and the faith we have entrusted in our elected officials has certainly been
25 betrayed.

26 *"No legislative act contrary to the Constitution can be valid. To deny this would be to affirm that the deputy
27 (agent) is greater than his principal; that the servant is above the master; that the representatives of the people
28 are superior to the people; that men, acting by virtue of powers may do not only what their powers do not
29 authorize, but what they forbid. It is not to be supposed that the Constitution could intend to enable the
30 representatives of the people to substitute their will to that of their constituents. A Constitution is, in fact, and
31 must be regarded by judges, as fundamental law. If there should happen to be an irreconcilable variance
32 between the two, the Constitution is to be preferred to the statute." - Alexander Hamilton (Federalist Paper #
33 78)*

34 *"Where rights secured by the Federal Constitution are involved, there can be no rule-making or legislation
35 which would abrogate them."
36 [Miranda v. Arizona, 384 U.S. 436 (1966)]*

37 *"Truth is incontrovertible, ignorance can deride it, panic may resent it, malice may destroy it, but there it is."
38 Winston Churchill*

39 **4.2.2 Fundamental Rights: Granted by God and Cannot be Regulated by the Government**

40 It is disturbing to read that the IRS can come to someone's door to demand to see personal documents, which in some cases
41 are private even to members of our own family. It is also embarrassing to see that so many of us are not willing to do more
42 than "bitch a little" when we hear or read about these encroachments.

43 Obviously, in the case of filing government forms, once we volunteer, we usually use whatever means at our disposal to cut
44 down the amount of theft and plunder by the government, even at the further expense of our rights and liberty. Since
45 deductions are a matter of legislative grace, the burden of proof shifts to "we the people" to verify the claims taken on the
46 forms, which were signed under penalty of perjury.

1 Simply stated, once we allowed ourselves to get involved in this taxing scheme, it puts us in the position of having to strip
2 before a government agent, who at his discretion will tell us how close to naked we have to get. To be quite frank, there is
3 nothing stopping him from saying, "OK. now bend over."

4 Once compromised, we're on that "slippery slope," having exchanged our status as master over government for that of
5 being subject to and subservient to government. In effect, we are transformed into government slaves and prostitutes when
6 natural persons volunteer to become "privileged taxpayers".

7 Each of us needs to just stop and take a little time to analyze just how far down the path of subject status we have come.
8 Just how much farther are we willing to go before we say, "Enough" or are we willing to even say "Enough"?

9 We should be asking ourselves: Just how sacred are our God given constitutionally protected rights? Have we lost sight of
10 our objective of restoring liberty for ourselves and family? And even if we know something is wrong, and we start to do
11 something about it, are we standing on solid ground?

12 There are a lot of theories on why we shouldn't be obligated to file tax forms. To me the number one position, in a class of
13 its own, is the required waiver of fundamental rights. The whole income tax battle is a rights issue.

14 We are the masters over our government and not its subjects. We are the sovereigns! We should not allow ourselves to be
15 compelled to waive fundamental rights to comply with some taxing scheme, merely for exercising my right to work and
16 exist.

17 We absolutely have no "legal duty" to waive our fundamental rights to speak or not to speak, as protected under the First
18 amendment, my right to be secure in my personal home, papers and effects, as protected under the Fourth amendment, my
19 right not to be compelled to be a witness against myself and my right to due process of law, as protected under the Fifth and
20 Fourteenth Amendments, my right to an impartial judge and jury, as protected under the Sixth amendment or any other
21 rights protected under the Ninth amendment.

22 This is not a wild theory claim. We don't need to claim rights under the state Uniform Commercial Code. Our rights are
23 God given, not commercially given. Neither do I need to fear waiving a right because I use a "zip code" as part of my
24 mailing address.

25 The Supreme Court of the United States has already ruled on the standard for waiver of rights.

26 *"Waivers of constitutional rights not only must be voluntary but must be knowing, intelligent acts done with*
27 *sufficient awareness of the relevant circumstances and likely consequences." Brady v. U.S., 397 U.S. at 749, 90*
28 *S.Ct. 1463 at 1469 (1970).*

29 See also the following cases:

30 *Fuentes v. Shevin, 407 U.S. 67 (1972);*
31 *Brookhart v. Janis, 384 U.S. 6 (1966);*
32 *Empsak V. U.S., 349 U.S. 190 (1955);*
33 *Johnson v. Zerbst, 304 U.S. 58 (1938).*

34 The issue of protection of rights has a track record 10 miles long. We should be able to confidently say:

35 *"We got em, they are ours, you (government) can't take em. If you (government) say that we lost them or waived*
36 *them, the burden of proof is on you (government) to show us how we lost them or waived them or where you*
37 *have the authority to take them."*

38 Let us cite an example that establishes a standard for the protection of rights, so you can see some of these cases that
39 establish that track record. Back in the 60's, there was a voting rights case down in Texas. The state of Texas was imposing
40 a poll tax on the voters prior to letting them vote. The Texas U.S. District Court said in *U.S. v. Texas*, 252 F.Supp 234, 254,
41 (1966):

"Since, in general, only those who wish to vote pay the poll tax, the tax as administered by the State, is equivalent to a charge or a penalty imposed on the exercise of a fundamental right. If the tax were increased to a high degree, as it could be if valid, it would result in the destruction of the right to vote. See *Grosjean v. American Press Co.*, 297 U.S. 233, 244, 54 S.Ct. 444 (1936)."

[Note that the court reiterated the fundamental premise of law expressed by Chief Justice John Marshall in the landmark decision of *McCulloch v. Maryland*, 4 Wheat 418 at.431 (1819), that "the power to tax is the power to destroy."]

The Texas district court went on to quote from the Supreme Court case of *Harman v. Forssenius*, 380 U.S 528 at 540, 85 S.Ct. 1177, 1185 (1965):

"It has long been established that a State may not impose a penalty upon those who exercise a right guaranteed by the Constitution." *Frost & Frost Trucking Co. v. Railroad Comm'n of California*, 271 U.S. 583. "Constitutional rights would be of little value if they could be indirectly denied," *Smith v. Allwright*, 321 US. 649, 644, or manipulated out of existence," *Gomillion v. Lightfoot*, 364 U.S. 339, 345."

That Texas federal district court held the poll tax unconstitutional and invalid and enjoined the state of Texas from requiring the payment of a poll tax as a prerequisite to voting.

Now a rare legal procedure followed that ruling. The state of Texas appealed. Not to the court of appeals, but directly to the Supreme Court. And in an equally rare circumstance, the Supreme Court took the district court's opinion as its own and affirmed the Judgment based on the facts and opinion stated by the district court. See *Texas v. U.S.*, 384 U.S. 155 (1966).

When the Amendments to the Constitution for the United States were ratified, they were considered a bill of restrictions on the government, not a grant of rights that could be taken from "we the people." The courts have upheld this premise many times, so if you're going to take a stand, it would be wise to base that stand on a position that has, at the minimum, the track record established for the guarantee of fundamental rights. There is none better!!

The conclusion of this exercise then, is that the government cannot tax or penalize the exercise of a right. You might then ask yourself:

1. Why does the IRS impose a \$500 fine for filing a so-called "frivolous" tax return that exercises our Fifth Amendment right not to incriminate oneself and doesn't have one's signature? (this is called a Jurat violation)
2. Why does the IRS impose a \$50 fine upon employers or individual who file a 1099 form that does not have a social security number if the party we employed wants his or her 5th Amendment right not to incriminate him/herself respected?
3. Why can the state require individuals to provide their social security number in order to get a driver's license that allows them to exercise their RIGHT to drive?
4. Why can the government impose penalties on individuals for the exercise of rights when the Constitution in Article 1, Section 9, Clause 3 specifically forbids the federal government to impose Bills of Attainder, which are penalties not imposed by a jury trial? Likewise, Article 1, Section 10 also forbids states to impose penalties without a judicial trial?

The answer is that neither the state nor federal governments are legally allowed to do any of the above in a state of the union where the Bill of Rights apply, because they amount to a tax or a penalty on the exercise of a God-given right! On the other hand, they are perfectly entitled to do all of the above as long as they are doing so within the federal zone, where the Bill of Rights do *not* apply, which is why we say throughout this book that the Internal Revenue Code and most state income tax laws can only apply within the federal zone. If you look for the implementing regulations that authorize any of the above actions, they don't exist. Because implementing regulations are not required for laws that only apply to government employees, then this is a strong clue that Subtitle A of the Internal Revenue Code can ONLY apply to federal employees who are elected or appointed officers of the United States government in receipt of taxable privileges of public office. Applying any of the penalties mentioned above to anyone but appointed or elected officers of the United States government and who reside in states of the Union are ILLEGAL and constitute a tort that you can sue for in court. These are the very illegal actions that convert our glorious republic into a relativistic, totalitarian socialistic democracy where the collective as a whole is the sovereign and no individuals have rights. They continue to be perpetrated because of fundamental ignorance about the separation of powers and sovereignty between the state and federal governments.

1 4.2.3 What is the Difference Between a “Right” and a “Privilege”?

2 A right is a behavior or a choice, the exercise of which can't be taken away, fined, taxed, or regulated by anyone, including
 3 the government. A privilege, is something that can be taken away at any moment, usually at the discretion of the entity
 4 providing it, subject only to the contractual and legal constraints governing your relationship with that entity. For instance,
 5 it is unconstitutional for the government to tax or fine you for exercising your right to free speech guaranteed by the First
 6 Amendment to the Constitution. To give another example, no one, including the government, your employer, or another
 7 human being can fine or penalize you for exercising your right to vote, for instance, by taxing you or charging you a fee. If
 8 voting were a privilege then they could, but it is a right, so they can't. Such a fee is called a “poll tax” and the courts have
 9 repeatedly held that poll taxes are illegal, no matter who charges them.

10 You can't be fined you for exercising the right not to incriminate yourself guaranteed by the 5th Amendment, by, for
 11 instance, fining you \$500 (under the “Jurat” amendment and 26 U.S.C. §6702) for refusing to sign your 1040 income tax
 12 return “under penalty of perjury”. The government also should never be permitted to fine you for your right under the
 13 Petition clause of the constitution to correct a government wrongdoing (the First Amendment states that we have a right “to
 14 petition the Government for a redress of grievances.”), but in fact the courts routinely do this anyway, in violation of the
 15 Constitution. This tactic is part of the “judicial conspiracy to protect the income tax” defined elsewhere in this document,
 16 including in section 6.6. The fact that most Americans allow and tolerate this kind of injustice, abuse, and violation of their
 17 God-given rights confounds us and simply reveals how apathetic and indifferent we have become about our heritage and
 18 our treasured rights under the Constitution of the United States.

19 Privileges, however, are much different from rights. Privileges we want are how the government, our employer, and others
 20 we know enslave and coerce us into giving up our rights voluntarily. Giving up a right is an injury, and as one shrewd
 21 friend frequently said:

22 *“The more you want, the more the world can hurt you.”*

23 The more needy and desperate we allow ourselves to become, the more susceptible we become to being abused by
 24 voluntarily jeopardizing our rights and becoming willing slaves to others. There is nothing unconstitutional or illegal about
 25 giving away our rights in exchange for benefits in this way, so long as we do it voluntarily. Situations where we surrender
 26 rights in exchange for privileges are commonplace and actually are the foundation of the commercial marketplace. This
 27 exchange is referred to as a business transaction and is usually governed by some contractual or legal vehicle in order to
 28 protect the property interests of the parties to the transaction. This legal vehicle is the Uniform Commercial Code, or UCC.
 29 An example of a privilege we give up our property rights to exercise is legalized gambling. If a person is a compulsive
 30 gambler and they lose their whole life savings and gamble themselves into massive debt, they in effect have sold
 31 themselves into legalized financial slavery to the casino. That's perfectly legal, and the laws will protect the property
 32 interest of the casino and the right of the casino to collect on the debt. Even though the Thirteenth Amendment outlawed
 33 slavery and even though the gambler might be a slave in this circumstance, because it was his choice and he wasn't
 34 compelled to do it, then it isn't illegal or unconstitutional.

35 Another example of privileges being exchanged for rights is when we obtain a state marriage license. When we voluntarily
 36 get a marriage license, we basically surrender our God-given right to control the fruit of our marriage, including our
 37 children and all our property, and give jurisdiction to the government to control every aspect of our lives. Many people do
 38 this because their hormones get the better of them and they aren't practical or rational enough to negotiate the terms of their
 39 marriage and won't sit down with their spouse and write down an agreement that will keep the government out of their
 40 lives. Marriage is supposed to be a confidential spiritual and religious union between a man and a woman, but when we get
 41 a marriage license, we violate the separation of church and state and actually get married not only to our spouse, but also to
 42 the government. We become, in effect, a polygamist! A marriage license is a license to the government, not to us, that
 43 allows them to invade our lives any way they see fit at anytime at the request of either spouse and based on the presumption
 44 that they are furthering the “public good”, whatever that is! If couples get married in the church and get a marriage
 45 certificate but don't get a marriage license from the state, then the government has no jurisdiction over the spouses, the
 46 children, or the property of the marriage. If divorce results, the parties can litigate if need be, but the government has to
 47 stay within the bounds of any written or verbal agreement that the spouses have between them.

The government can't take away rights against your will but it can definitely take away privileges, often indiscriminately. For instance, receiving social security checks is a privilege, and not a right. The courts have repeatedly ruled that social security is not a contract or a right, but a privilege. See section 2.9.1 entitled "Social Security Is NOT a contract" for further details on this subject. We can only earn that privilege by "volunteering" to be a U.S. or "federal" citizen and paying into the Social Security System. Paying into the Social Security System means we have to waive our right to not be taxed on our income with direct taxes, which the Constitution forbids. Same thing for Medicare and disability insurance. There is nothing immoral or unethical or illegal with being taxed on our income to support these programs provided:

1. We are informed prior to joining that participation was voluntary and that we could not be coerced to join.
2. There is some measure of accountability and fiduciary duty associated with the government in managing and investing our money. Good stewardship of our contributions by the government is expected and bad stewardship is punished by the law and those who enforce the law.
3. We are informed frequently by the fiduciary that we can leave the program at any time, and that our benefits will be proportional to our contributions.
4. We made a conscious, informed decision on a signed contract to sacrifice our rights to qualify to receive the benefit or privilege.
5. If you die young or never collect benefits, your contributions plus interest should be given to your relatives.
6. There is no unwritten or invisible contract that binds us, and nothing will be expected of us that wasn't clearly explained up front before we signed the contract.

However, the problem is that our federal government has mismanaged the funds put into the Social Security System and squandered the money. This has led them to violate their fiduciary duties and the above requirements as follows:

1. The government refuses to be accountable or to notify us of the benefits we have earned. They also don't tell us on their statements how much we would earn if we quit contributing today and only drew benefits based on what we paid in the past.
2. The federal government won't tell us that participation is voluntary and they provide no means on the social security website (<http://www.ssa.gov>) to de-enroll from the program. Instead, they try to fool us all into thinking that the program is mandatory when in fact it is entirely voluntary. The reason the U.S. Government won't tell us that participation is voluntarily is that so many people would leave such an inefficient and poorly managed system to start their own plans when they find this out that the Ponzi scheme it has become would suffer instant meltdown and would turn into a big scandal!
3. If you never collect benefits or you die young, all the money you paid in and the interest aren't given to your relatives as an inheritance. The government keeps EVERYTHING, and this is a BIG injustice that would not occur if the program were run more like the annuity that it should be.
4. There is no written agreement or contract, so they have no obligation or liability to be good stewards over our contributions.
5. Our kids are coerced into joining the system when they are born under the Enumeration At Birth program and the decision is made by their parents and not by them directly. This is unethical and immoral. See section 2.8.7.1 for details on this type of scamming by the government.
6. We are also coerced by our parents to join because the IRS deceives us into thinking that we are obligated to get Socialist Security Numbers for each of our children in order to qualify to use them as deductions on our taxes. In effect, they bribe us with our own money to sell our children into slavery into this inept and poorly managed system.

For all the above reasons and many more, we recommend expatriating out of this bankrupt system as quickly as you can! It's a "privilege" you can't be coerced to participate in anyway. We have to ask ourselves: Is a compelled benefit really a benefit, or just another form of slavery? The trick is determining how to escape, because you will get absolutely NO help from the Social Security Administration or the government! We provide answers to this dilemma of how to abandon the Social Security Program and your federal citizenship in Chapter 3 of our Tax Freedom Solutions Manual.

4.3 Government

4.3.1 Biblical view of taxation and government

1 "The reward of energy, enterprise and thrift is taxes." -- William Feather

2 "I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy,
3 acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. And do not be conformed to this world, but be
4 transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is the good and acceptable and perfect
5 will of God." [Romans 12:1-2, Bible, NKJV]

6 There are several new testament verses that are quoted out of context by alleged government authorities and false churches
7 in order to deceive people into believing that they should support their man-made governments and obey their man-made
8 law. This, however, is not the case, as God has never given His people authority to make their own law or to walk in the
9 statutes of men. Therefore, a more detailed look is necessary regarding these scriptures so that the deception can clearly be
10 seen.

11 One verse that is relentlessly misquoted is "...render unto Caesar!" found in Mark 12:14-17, where Jesus said:

12 "Render unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's and unto God the things that are God's." [Mark 12:14-17,
13 Bible, NKJV].

14 When Jesus said this, He was totally aware of God's Law, and we can be sure that He was not telling the teachers of the law
15 to do contrary to God's Law. Let's see just exactly what Jesus meant by "the things which are Caesar's" when he said this.

16 First of all, who was this "Caesar" that Jesus was referring to, but the equivalent of a king? Let's see who the king is in our
17 society according to the supreme Court:

18 "Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law; but in our system,
19 while sovereign powers are delegated to the agencies of government, sovereignty itself remains with the
20 people, by whom and for whom all government exists and acts." *Yick Wo v. Hopkins*, [118 U.S. 356](#); 6 S.Ct.
21 1064 (1886)

22 "The people of this State, as the successors of its former sovereign, are entitled to all the rights which formerly
23 belonged to the King by his prerogative. Through the medium of their Legislature they may exercise all the
24 powers which previous to the Revolution could have been exercised either by the King alone, or by him in
25 conjunction with his Parliament; subject only to those restrictions which have been imposed by the Constitution
26 of this State or of the U.S." *Lansing v. Smith*, 21 D. 89., 4 Wendel 9 (1829) (New York)

27 The real "king" in our society is not the government or anyone serving the sovereign people in the government, but the
28 PEOPLE! That's you! So even if you misinterpret Jesus' words to mean that we should render to corrupt government
29 "servants" that which it illegally asks for and demands, since your own government calls you the king, then your public
30 servants are the ones who should be "rendering"! Render to the king (Caesar, that's you) his due, which is everything that
31 is his property and his right, including 100% of his earned wage.

32 "Remember the word that I said to you, 'A servant is not greater than his master.'" [Jesus in the Bible, John
33 15:20]

34 Why does the IRS insist on arguing with their "King" (which is you) and violating this scripture? Therefore, covetous
35 public servants in the government, from a Biblical perspective, simply can't be greater than the sovereigns they serve in the
36 public at large or they are violating God's law. Plain and simple, isn't it?

37 The other thing that people often overlook in interpreting Jesus passage above regarding taxes is the following question:

38 "What exactly does belong to Caesar?"

39 As we pointed out earlier in section 4.1 and as we will point out again later in section 5.1.1, the only thing that a sovereign
40 (such as a government or a biological person) can "own" and control is that which he creates. Below is a list of the many
41 things that God created, direct from the Bible. He "owns" all these things by implication, which means everything else
42 belongs to "Caesar":

43 "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth." [Gen. 1:1, Bible, NKJV]

44

1 ¹¹The heavens are Yours [God's], the earth also is Yours;
 2 The world and all its fullness, You have founded them.
 3 The north and the south, You have created them;
 4 Tabor and Hermon rejoice in Your name.
 5 You have a mighty arm;
 6 Strong is Your hand, and high is Your right hand."
 7 [Psalms 89:11-13, Bible, NKJV]

8
 9 "I have made the earth,
 10 And created man on it.
 11 I—My hands—stretched out the heavens,
 12 And all their host I have commanded."
 13 [Isaiah 45:12, Bible, NKJV]

14 Well, if God created the heavens and the earth, then *what else is there?* What is it that Caesar can "own" if he can't own
 15 these and didn't create these? ***Even the U.S. Supreme Court confirms that a sovereign cannot destroy that which it did***
 16 ***not create, and that the power to tax is the power to destroy. Another way of saying this is that the creation cannot be***
 17 ***greater than its Creator.***

18 "***Woe to him who strives with his Maker!*** Let the potsherd strive with the potsherds of the earth! Shall the
 19 clay say to him who forms it, 'What are you making?' Or shall your handiwork say, 'He has no hands?' Woe to
 20 him who says to his father, 'What are you begetting?' Or to the woman, 'What have you brought forth?'"
 21 [Isaiah 45:9-10, Bible, NKJV]

22 "What is a Constitution? It is the form of government, delineated by the mighty hand of the people, in which
 23 certain first principles of fundamental laws are established. **The Constitution** is certain and fixed; it contains
 24 the permanent will of the people, and is the supreme law of the land; it **is paramount to the power of the**
 25 **Legislature, and can be revoked or altered only by the authority that made it. The life-giving principle**
 26 **and the death-doing stroke must proceed from the same hand.**" [VanHorne's Lessee v.
 27 [Dorrance, 2 U.S. 304 \(1795\)](#)]

28 The cite below from the U.S. Supreme Court proves the above conclusion. The court was ruling on whether the federal
 29 government, which was a creation of the sovereign states, can tax it's creator: a state of the Union. The conclusion was
 30 absolutely NOT!

31 "The taxing power of the federal government does not therefore extend to the means or agencies through or by
 32 the employment of which the states perform their essential functions; since, if these were within its reach, they
 33 might be embarrassed, and perhaps wholly paralyzed, by the burdens it should impose. ***That the power to tax***
 34 ***involves the power to destroy; that the power to destroy may defeat and render useless the power to create;***
 35 ***that there is a plain repugnance in conferring on one government a power to control the constitutional***
 36 ***measures of another, which other, in respect to those very measures, is declared to be supreme over that***
 37 ***which exerts the control,-are propositions not to be denied."*** [Pollock v. Farmers Loan and Trust, 157 U.S.
 38 429 (1895)]

39 The government cannot tax the labor of a natural person because it didn't create people -God did! For government to
 40 tax/destroy people who were made in the image of God and are therefore servants of God is an affront to the Creator. It
 41 also amounts to adultery by those who allow themselves to be so enslaved, because they are fornicating outside of marriage
 42 with a false idol or god called government:

43 "**For your Maker is your husband, the Lord of hosts is His name; and your Redeemer is the Holy One of**
 44 **Israel; he is called the God of the whole earth, for the Lord has called you like a woman forsaken and**
 45 **grieved in spirit, like a youthful wife when you were refused."** [Isaiah 54:5-6, Bible, NKJV]

46 The definition of "commerce" in the legal dictionary confirms that serving the government or sending it our money is
 47 "intercourse". Intercourse is illegal outside of marriage. When we commit "intercourse" with government by sending our
 48 money to it or serving it, then we are committing adultery, because government is not our husband: only God is.

49 "**Commerce**. ...**Intercourse** by way of trade and traffic between different peoples or states and the
 50 citizens or inhabitants thereof, including not only the purchase, sale, and exchange of commodities, but also the
 51 instrumentalities [governments] and agencies by which it is promoted and the means and appliances by which it
 52 is carried on..." [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 269]

1 The concept of commerce with government being a form of adultery ties back to the theme we will mention later in section
2 4.3.9, where we say that the government wants you to believe that the status of being a “citizen” is just like marrying the
3 government, and God plainly doesn’t allow that.

4 Extending these timeless principles to the matter above of “Rendering to Caesar”: The only thing Caesar “created” was the
5 money with his image on it, so the only thing he has the moral authority to destroy or harm using the money is only the
6 creation itself, which is the money. For instance, we cannot allow the use of Caesar’s money to destroy, harm, enslave, or
7 control the people who are compelled to use it or we will violate the rulings of the Supreme Court above. The only way
8 that result can be guaranteed is for us to give back to Caesar’s all of his fake fiat paper money and to barter with gold and
9 silver instead. That, in fact, is exactly what the original founding fathers did! We started out with currency based on gold
10 that had value independent of the government. This is what Jesus was indirectly implying here, and it is the only
11 conclusion consistent with the rulings of the U.S. Supreme Court above and with Natural Order described in section 4.1.

12 The context for the “Render to Caesar” quote above was that the Pharisees wanted to trap Jesus. They were the teachers of
13 the Law, and knew full well what God’s word says about laws and governments other than God’s. The Pharisees knew
14 ALL of the following:

15 They knew that even their own Israelite kings could not make any law, but could only administer God’s law, not turning
16 aside from God’s commandments, to the right hand, or to the left:

17 *[Deut 17:14] [The word of the Lord through his servant Moses]: When thou [Israel] art come unto the land*
18 *which the LORD thy God gives thee, and shalt possess it, and shalt dwell therein, and shalt say, I will set a king*
19 *over me, like as all the nations that are about me;*

20 *[Deut 17:18] And it shall be, when he sitteth upon the throne of his kingdom, that he shall write him a copy of*
21 *this law in a book out of that which is before the priests the Levites: [17:19] and it shall be with him, and he*
22 *shall read therein all the days of his life: that he may learn to fear the LORD his God, to keep all the words of*
23 *this law and these statutes, to do them: [17:20] That his heart be not lifted up above his brethren, and that he*
24 *turn not aside from the commandment, to the right hand. Or to the left: to the end that he may prolong his days*
25 *in his kingdom, he, and his children, in the midst of Israel.*

26 Not adding to it, or diminishing from it:

27 *[Deut 12:32] What thing soever I command you [all Israel], observe to do it: thou shalt not add thereto, nor*
28 *diminish from it.*

29 The Pharisees knew that it was a sin to walk in the statutes of the heathen, and that if their OWN ISRAELITE KINGS made
30 any statutes, it was a SIN to walk in their statutes as well:

31 *[2 Ki 17:6] In the ninth year of Hoshea the king of Assyria took Samaria, and carried Israel away into Assyria,*
32 *and placed them in Halah and in Habor by the river of Gozan, and in the cities of the Medes. [17:7] for so it*
33 *was, that the children of Israel had sinned against the LORD their God, which had brought them up out of*
34 *the land of Egypt, from under the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and had feared other gods, [17:8] And*
35 *walked in the statutes of the heathen, whom the LORD cast out from before the children of Israel, and of the*
36 *kings of Israel, which they had made. [2Ki 17:18] Therefore the LORD was very angry with Israel, and*
37 *removed them out of his sight: there was none left but the tribe of Judah only. [17:19] Also Judah kept not the*
38 *commandments of the LORD their God, but walked in the statutes of Israel which they made.*

39 The Pharisees knew that God’s people have laws that are different from all other people’s [God’s Laws] and that even in
40 foreign lands they do not keep the king’s [man’s] laws:

41 *[Est 3:8] Then Haman [the highest prince in the kingdom of the Medes and the Persians] said to King Hauser’s*
42 *[the king of the Medes and the Persians who reigned from India to Ethiopia], “There is a certain people [The*
43 *Jews; Judeans who were obedient to God’s Law] scattered and dispersed among the people in all the provinces*
44 *of your kingdom; their laws are different from all other people’s, and they do not keep the king’s laws. . .”*

45 The Pharisees knew the principle that consenting with a thief, be he king or commoner, makes one a partaker with that thief
46 –and an apostate:

47 *[Ps 50:18] When thou sawest a thief then thou consentedst with him, and hast been partaker with adulterers.*

1 Adulterers—Strong’s reference number: 5003

2 Hebrew: na’aph

3 Definition: to commit adultery; fig. to apostatize

4 The Pharisees knew that those who participate in evil through the use of an agent are guilty of the act themselves:

5 [2 Sa 11:14] And it came to pass in the morning, that David wrote a letter to Joab [his agent], and sent it by the
6 hand of Uriah. [11:15] And he wrote in the letter, saying, Set ye Uriah in the forefront of the hottest battle, and
7 retire ye from him, that he may be smitten, and die. [11:16] And it came to pass, when Joab observed the city,
8 that he assigned Uriah unto a place where he knew that valiant men were. [11:17] And the men of the city went
9 out, and fought with Joab: and there fell some of the people of the servants of David; and Uriah the Hittite died
10 also.

11 [2 Sa 11:26] And when the wife of Uriah heard that Uriah her husband was dead, she mourned for her
12 husband. [11:27] And when the mourning was past, David sent and fetched her to his house, and she became
13 his wife, and bare him a son. But the thing that David had done displeased the LORD.

14 [2 Sa 12:9] [Then Nathan said to David] Wherefore hast thou despised the commandment of the LORD, to do
15 evil in his sight? thou hast killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword, [through the use of an agent] and hast taken
16 his wife to be thy wife, and hast slain him with the sword of the children of Ammon.

17 Therefore, by the same principle, the Pharisees knew that participating in a heathen government by financing a heathen an
18 agent of the government to enforce heathen laws makes the one who pays the tribute guilty of the acts of the heathen
19 government.

20 The Pharisees knew that those who are obedient to God’s laws only will **not** pay toll, tribute, and custom to a heathen king
21 [“Caesar”]:

22 [Ezr 4:6] Now in the reign of Ahasuerus [a heathen king (“Caesar”)], in the beginning of his reign, they [the
23 king’s people through their agents, the counselors] wrote an accusation [to the king] against the inhabitants of
24 Judah and Jerusalem. [saying the following:] [4:12] Let it be known to the king that the Jews [who obey God’s
25 law, not the king’s law] who came up from you have come to us at Jerusalem, and are building the rebellious
26 and evil city, [from the king’s point of view only; righteous and obedient from God’s point of view] and are
27 finishing its walls and repairing the foundations. [4:13] Let it now be known to the king that, if this city is built
28 and the walls completed, they will not pay tax, tribute, or custom, and the king’s treasury will be diminished.
29 [They will pay no tribute to “Caesar”]. [NKJ]

30 [4:16] We certify the king that, if this city be builded again, and the walls thereof set up, by this means thou
31 shalt have no portion [no tribute to “Caesar”] on this side the river. [KJV]

32 The Pharisees knew that the throne of iniquity cannot have fellowship with God:

33 [Ps 94:20] Shall the throne of iniquity [wicked rulers] have fellowship with thee, which frameth mischief by a
34 law? [make enactments or decrees which condemn innocent blood by adding to or diminishing from God’s
35 Law]

36 The Pharisees knew that the people in whose heart is God’s law are to obey His Law and are not to fear the reproach of
37 men:

38 [Is 51:7] Hearken unto me [the Lord], ye that know righteousness, the people in whose heart is my law; fear ye
39 not the reproach of men, neither be ye afraid of their revilings.

40 [Is 51:12] I, even I, am he that comforteth you: who art thou, that thou shouldst be afraid of a man that shall
41 die, and of the son of man which shall be made as grass...”

42 The Pharisees knew God’s admonition about not following after the manners of the heathen:

43 [Eze 11:10] Ye [Israel] shall fall by the sword; I [the Lord] will judge you in the border of Israel; and ye shall
44 know that I am the LORD.

1 [Eze 11:12] And ye shall know that I am the LORD: for ye have not walked in my statutes, neither executed my
2 judgments, but have done after the manners of the heathen that are round about you.

3 Note: The Hebrew word translated to “manners” speaks specifically of governmental and judicial activity.
4 Here, Ezekiel is not speaking of “ways or customs” of the heathen, he is speaking about the “statutes,
5 ordinances, judgments, laws and government” of the heathen.

6 Manners—Strong’s reference number: 4941

7 Hebrew: mishpat

8 Derivation: Derived from 8199

9 Definition: prop. a verdict (favorable or unfavorable) pronounced judicially, espec. A sentence or formal
10 decree (human or [partic.] divine law, individual or collect.) include. The act, the place, the suit, the crime, and
11 the penalty; abstr. justice, include. right, or privilege (statutory or customary), or even a style

12 Manners—Strong’s reference number: 8199

13 Hebrew: shaphat

14 Derivation: A primary word.

15 Definition: to judge, i.e., pronounce sentence (for or against); impl. vindicate or punish; by extens. To govern;
16 pass. To litigate (lit. or fig.)

17 The Pharisees knew that God’s people do not obey wicked governments that have other gods even if they are thrown into a
18 fiery furnace:

19 [Dan 3:16] Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego replied to the king, “O Nebuchadnezzar, we do not need to
20 defend ourselves before you in this matter. [3:17] If we are thrown into the blazing furnace, the God we serve is
21 able to save us from it, and he will rescue us from your hand, O king.

22 [3:18] But even if he does not, we want you to know, O king, that we will not serve your gods or worship the
23 image of gold you have set up.” [NIV]

24 [3:19] Then Nebuchadnezzar was full of fury, and the expression on his face changed toward Shadrach,
25 Meshach, and Abed-Nego. Therefore he spoke and commanded that they heat the furnace seven times more
26 than it was usually heated. [3:20] And he commanded certain mighty men of valor who were in his army to bind
27 Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-Nego, and cast them into the burning fiery furnace. [NKJ]

28 The Pharisees knew that God’s people do not obey wicked governments even if they are thrown into a lion’s den:

29 [Dan 6:7] All the presidents of the kingdom, the governors, and the princes, the counselors, and the captains,
30 have consulted together to establish a royal statute, and to make a firm decree, that whosoever shall ask a
31 petition of any god or man for thirty days, save of thee, O king, he shall be cast into the den of lions. [Dan
32 6:10] Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open
33 in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks
34 before his God, as he did aforesaid.

35 [Dan 6:16] Then the king commanded, and they brought Daniel, and cast him into the den of lions. . .”

36 The Pharisees knew that those who have set up kings and princes [governments] but not by God’s hand, have trespassed
37 against His law:

38 [Hos 4:1] [The word of the LORD through the prophet Hosea]: Hear the word of the LORD, ye children of
39 Israel: for the LORD hath a controversy with the inhabitants of the land, because there is no truth, nor mercy,
40 nor knowledge of God in the land.

41 [Hos 8:1] Set the trumpet to thy mouth. He [the enemy] shall come as an eagle against the house of the LORD,
42 because they [Israel] have transgressed my covenant, and trespassed against my law.

43 [Hos 8:4] They have set up kings, but not by me: they have made princes, and I [the Lord] knew it not: of their
44 silver and their gold have they made them idols, that they may be cut off.

1 The Pharisees knew that it is a sin to keep statutes made by Israelite kings, let alone a heathen “Caesar”:

2 *[Mic 6:13] [The warning of the Lord through his servant Micah]: Therefore also will I [the Lord] make thee*
3 *[Israel] sick in smiting thee, in making thee desolate because of your sins.*

4 *[Mic 6:16] For the statutes of Omri are kept, and all the works of the house of Ahab [kings of Israel who made*
5 *their own statutes], and ye walk in their counsels; that I should make thee a desolation, and the inhabitants*
6 *thereof an hissing: therefore ye shall bear the reproach of my people.*

7 The Pharisees were fully aware that God only allowed “Caesar” to be in power to prove Israel to see whether they would
8 keep the way of the LORD to walk therein, as their fathers did keep it, or not:

9 *[Jdg 2:21] I [the Lord] also will not henceforth drive out any from before them [Israel] of the nations [heathen*
10 *Caesars, etc.] which Joshua left [unvanquished] when he died: [2:22] That through them [the heathen*
11 *governments] I may prove Israel, whether they will keep the way of the LORD to walk therein, as their fathers*
12 *did keep it, or not.*

13 *[Jdg 3:4] and they [the nations which the LORD left] were to prove Israel by them, to know whether they*
14 *[Israel] would hearken unto the commandments of the LORD, which he commanded their fathers by the hand of*
15 *Moses.*

16 And the Pharisees were aware of the conclusion of the whole matter:

17 *[Ecc 12:13] Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: **Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this***
18 *is the whole duty of man.*

19 And finally, the Pharisees knew that when a people, and especially believers, refuse to correct or rebuke sin in their society,
20 then the unrebuked sin of even one evil man could curse the whole society and separate that society from the blessings of
21 the Lord. In the Pharisees time, the evil was that of the King named Caesar, which they could not and would not rebuke
22 and thus became hypocrites, as Jesus called them.

23 *[Matt. 23:23, Bible] “**Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you pay tithes of mint and anise and***
24 *cummin, and **have neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith. These you ought***
25 ***to have done, without leaving the others undone.**”*

26 The Pharisees knew their hypocrisy in the matter of rebuking sin at the time they asked the question of Jesus about
27 rendering taxes to Caesar because the Book of Joshua, Chapter 7, written 1400 years earlier, tells the story about Moses’
28 successor Joshua, who lost a war with the Amorites and the blessings of God because one of his men illegally stole a
29 treasure that was the spoils of war and hid it under his tent and would not confess or right his wrong before God and his
30 people, and preferred to lie about it. The result was that the people felt guilty and cowardly in battle and ran away from the
31 enemy to become the laughing stock of the land. They were cursed by God because they would not confront and correct
32 this evil in their society, which consisted of theft and deceit:

33 *[Joshua 7:11-13] “**Israel has sinned**, and they have also transgressed My covenant which I commanded them.*
34 ***For they have even taken some of the accursed things, and have both stolen and deceived [the IRS]; and they***
35 *have also put it among their own stuff.*

36 *“Therefore, the children of Israel could not stand before their enemies, but turned their backs before their*
37 *enemies, because they have become doomed to destruction. **Neither will I be with you anymore, unless you***
38 ***destroy the accursed [the IRS and the Federal Reserve in our day and age] from among you.**”*

39 *Get up, sanctify the people [clean up this mess!], and say ‘Sanctify yourselves for tomorrow, because thus says*
40 *the Lord God of Israel; “There is an accursed thing in your midst, O Israel; you cannot stand before your*
41 *enemies until you take away the accursed thing from among you.”.*

42 Therefore, knowing all of the above scriptures, the Pharisees laid a trap for Jesus similar to the question: “Have you
43 stopped beating your wife yet?” They were certain that they could trap Jesus into affirming that either: it was lawful to pay
44 tribute to “Caesar”, which they knew to be against God’s Law, and thereby condemning him under God’s Law to pay
45 tribute to a heathen government [Caesar], thereby condemning him under “Caesar’s” “law”. Then the Pharisees could go
46 tell “Caesar”, and thereby get rid of Jesus with the sword of Caesar:

1 [Mat 22:17] [The Pharisees sent their disciples to Jesus, who said,] Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it
2 lawful to give tribute unto Caesar, or not?

3 Jesus was also versed in the above scriptures. He was fully aware that it is against God's Law to give tribute to a heathen
4 "Caesar". He also knew that it would enrage "Caesar" for him to say so. Jesus knew that giving the correct answer was a
5 trap laid for him by the Pharisees, and he evaded their trap by the following: He didn't define what was or was not
6 "Caesar's. He didn't even affirm that the penny with "Caesar's" image and superscription was to be rendered to "Caesar".
7 Jesus' answer was that the Pharisees should render to "Caesar", a heathen who did not know or obey God's Law, exactly
8 what was due to any heathen or Israelite who did not obey God's Law:

9 [Num 15:15] One ordinance shall be both for you of the congregation [of Israel], and also for the stranger
10 [foreigner; non Israelite] that sojourneth with you, an ordinance for ever in your generations: as ye are, so
11 shall the stranger be before the LORD. [15:16] One law and one manner shall be for you, and for the stranger
12 that sojourneth with you. (i.e.: death for breaking God's Law:

13 [Deu 27:26] Cursed be he that confirmeth not all the words of this law [God's Law, not Caesar's law] to do
14 them. And all the people shall say, Amen.)

15 Therefore, the Pharisees knew that what they had just been told was to render unto "Caesar" what God's Law required:
16 death, and since they were declining to carry out the sentence of the law, they were hypocrites, since they were the
17 enforcement officials of God's Law and knew what "Caesar" was due under God's Law. They had also been told that they
18 were doing presumptuously by not harkening to carry out the sentence of the law and they themselves should be put to
19 death along with "Caesar" in order to put their own evil away from Israel:

20 [Deu 17:11] According to the sentence of the law which they shall teach thee, and according to the judgment
21 which they shall tell thee, thou shalt do: **thou shalt not decline from the sentence which they shall shew thee,**
22 **to the right hand, nor to the left.** [17:12] **And the man that will do presumptuously, and will not hearken**
23 **unto the priest that standeth to minister there before the LORD thy God, or unto the judge, [and render unto**
24 **Caesar what Caesar was due, death in this particular case] even that man shall die [the Pharisees, for not**
25 **carrying out the sentence in this particular case]: and thou shalt put away the evil from Israel.**

26 This is obviously why the Pharisees marveled at Jesus. They were not about to tell "Caesar" that God's Law required him
27 to be put to death, because "Caesar" would have then come after the Pharisees. In addition, Jesus had just rebuked both
28 "Caesar" and the Pharisees by stating publicly that both "Caesar" and the Pharisees should be put to death, and the
29 Pharisees who hated Jesus knew it but couldn't go tell "Caesar" in order to get Jesus in trouble. Also, "Caesar" and his
30 agents didn't know enough about God's Law to realize that Jesus said that "Caesar" should be put to death, and "Caesar"
31 thinks to this very day that Jesus was saying to pay tribute. Checkmate. Jesus will, incidentally, render to "Caesar" what is
32 "Caesar's" at His coming:

33 [Luk 19:27] [Jesus, speaking of himself in a parable said,] but those mine enemies, which would not that I
34 should reign over them [kings, "Caesars", judges of the earth and their followers at His coming], bring hither,
35 and slay them before me.

36 [Psalms 2:7] [The psalmist foretelling that Jesus will "render unto Caesar what is Caesar's at his coming]: I
37 will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou art my Son [Jesus]; this day have I begotten thee.

38 [2:9] **Thou [Jesus] shalt break them [the heathen kings (Caesars) and judges] with a rod of iron; thou shalt**
39 **dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel.** [2:10] **Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: ["Caesars"] be**
40 **instructed, ye judges of the earth.** [Note: These verses in Psalm 2 are confirmed to be about Jesus in Acts
41 13:33; Heb 1:1-5; Heb 5:5, and by Jesus Himself in Rev 2:26-27].

42 [Zec 14:9] [Zechariah prophesying that Jesus will "render unto Caesar what is Caesar's" at His coming]: And
43 the LORD [Jesus] shall be king over all the earth: in that day shall there be one LORD, and his name one.

44 [14:12] **And this shall be the plague wherewith the LORD [Jesus] will smite all the people [kings, "Caesars",**
45 **judges of the earth and all who follow them] that have fought against Jerusalem [Jesus' capital city when He**
46 **comes with his saints]; Their flesh shall consume away while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall**
47 **consume away in their holes, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth.** [Note: These verses can
48 be seen to be about Jesus in Mat 25:31-32; Mat 28:18; Joh 18:37; 1Ti 6:13-15; Rev 11:15; Rev 19:14; Rev
49 20:4-6].

50 Continuing with Jesus' answer to the Pharisees:

1 [Mat 22:18] But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites? [22:19] Shew me
 2 the tribute money. And they brought unto him a penny. [22:20] And he saith unto them, Whose is this image
 3 and superscription? [22:21] They say unto him, Caesar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto
 4 Caesar the things which are Caesar's, and unto God the things that are God's.

5 [Mar 12:14] And when they [certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians] were come, they say unto him,
 6 Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but
 7 teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Caesar, or not? [12:15] Shall we give, or shall
 8 we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? Bring me a penny, that I may
 9 see it. [12:16] and they brought it. And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they
 10 said unto him, Caesar's [12:17] and Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Caesar the things that are
 11 Caesar's and to God the things that are God's. And they marveled at him.

12 [Luke 20:22] [The chief priests and scribes asked Jesus,] Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Caesar, or no?
 13 [20:23] but he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me? [20:24] shew me a penny.
 14 Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Caesar's. [20:25] and he said unto them,
 15 Render therefore unto Caesar the things which be Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's.

16 From that day forward, the Pharisees and the Sadducees would not ask Jesus any further questions:

17 [Mat 22:46] And no one was able to answer Him a word, nor from that day on did anyone dare question Him
 18 anymore. [NKJ]

19 [Luk 20:39] Then some of the scribes answered and said, "Teacher, You have spoken well." [20:40] but
 20 after that they dared not question Him anymore. [NKJ]

21 The silence of the Pharisees from that point on spoke volumes about their sin. The Bible explains that those who are silent,
 22 such as the Pharisees and Saducees who tried to trap Jesus, **do NOT** praise Him, which by implication means that they
 23 dishonor God:

24 "The dead **do not praise the LORD, Nor any who go down into silence.**" [Psalms 115:17, Bible, NKJV]

25 "Out of the mouth of babes [Jesus never attended a man-made school] and nursing infants
 26 You have ordained strength,
 27 Because of Your enemies,
 28 That You may silence the enemy and the avenger." [Psalms 8:2, Bible, NKJV]

29 "For this is the will of God, that by doing [or saying] good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish
 30 men" [1 Peter 2:15, Bible, NKJV]

31 "For the LORD our God has put us to silence And given us water of gall to drink, Because we have sinned
 32 against the LORD." [Jeremiah 8:14, Bible, NKJV]

33 Jesus was not calling for revolution against Rome, even though it was an oppressive conqueror of Israel. On the other
 34 hand, his apostles refused to obey a government order not to preach and teach in Jesus' name (Acts 5:27-29). On that
 35 occasion, one of Jesus' apostles said:

36 "We ought to obey God rather than men."

37 The same admonition to obey God rather than man is found in Psalms 118:8-9

38 "It is better to trust the Lord
 39 Than to put confidence in man.
 40 It is better to trust in the Lord
 41 Than to put confidence in princes."
 42 [Psalms 118:8-9, Bible, NKJV]

43 Finally, the Apostle Paul agreed with and reiterated these conclusions by saying that that it is scandalous for Christians to
 44 use civil rather than ecclesiastical courts in order to settle our disputes:

45 1Corinthians 6:1 Dare any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before
 46 the saints?

1 [1Corinthians 6:7](#) Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law [in a civil rather than
 2 ecclesiastical court] one with another. Why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather [suffer
 3 yourselves to] be defrauded?

4 The Roman Tribute Coin

5 5. Tiberius; 14 - 37 A.D.; AR denarius; the "Tribute Penny" of the Bible. In Mark 12:14-17 the Temple priests, testing
 6 Jesus, asked Him:

7 *And when they were come, they say unto him, "Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for*
 8 *thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Caesar,*
 9 *or not? Shall we give, or shall we not give?"*

10 *But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, "Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny (denarius), that I may*
 11 *see [it]."*

12 *And they brought [it]. And he saith unto them, "Whose [is] this image and superscription?" And they said unto*
 13 *him, "Caesar's."*

14 *And Jesus answering said unto them, "Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that*
 15 *are God's." And they marveled at him.*

16 Obv: Laureate head of Tiberius, r. Rev: Livia, as Pax, seated on the reverse.

17

18 **Figure 4-2: Roman tribute coin**



19

20 The account of the Tribute to Caesar is more extensively covered in Matthew, chapter 22. In this account, and others, the
 21 bible clearly shows that as soon as the Herodians understood the answer that they received, they marveled at the answer,
 22 and went on their way. After that time, they ceased to question Him any more.

23 When you research out the origin and lineage of the term "Pontifus Maximus", you find the Babylonian origin. Essentially,
 24 it is saying that "Caesar is God." This title was later adopted by the Roman Popes.

25 Conclusions

1 Aren't we supposed to obey the authority over us? Yes, as long as there is no conflict with God's law. Blind obedience to
 2 all civil authority dictates, wishes, whims etc. is not always necessary though. Furthermore, if blind obedience to civil
 3 authority is really the rule to live by, I have some thought provoking questions for those who preach that false doctrine to
 4 answer:

- 5 1. Was it right for Moses parents to disobey the civil authority over them and not kill their baby? The Hebrew
 6 midwives disobeyed the civil authority and God blessed them. See Ex. 1.
- 7 2. Was it right for Peter and the disciples to disobey civil authority and keep preaching Christ? See Acts 5.
- 8 3. Was it right for Samson to disobey the civil authority (the Philistines ruled the land)? See Judges 16.
- 9 4. Was it right for the prophets to disobey the civil authority and proclaim their message at the risk of life, limb and
 10 property? See Hebrews 11.
- 11 5. Was it right for Daniel to disobey the civil authority and pray to God in spite of the command by the absolute
 12 dictator not to do so? See Daniel 6.
- 13 6. Was it right for the founding fathers like Patrick Henry, George Washington, etc. to disobey King George, the civil
 14 authority over them, and begin this great land we now freely enjoy? I suggest you re-read the Declaration of
 15 independence and try to see the motive of those great and godly men.
- 16 7. If tyranny is not the government ordained by God, is it right to resist tyranny? See the entire history of the nation
 17 of Israel in their struggle against various tyrants.
- 18 8. Was it right for the Germans at the concentration camps to obey their elected or appointed civil authority and kill
 19 the Jews?
- 20 9. Have the IRS's chains of slavery become comfortable to you and you prefer them and the peace and safety of not
 21 standing for what is right over liberty? See Patrick Henry's famous speech. It applies very well here.
- 22 10. Was it right for the French underground to disobey the civil authority and blow up German tanks, bridges etc
 23 during WW II?
- 24 11. Was it right for the men in the book of Judges to disobey the civil authority over them and rebel against their
 25 rulers?
- 26 12. Was it right for the united States to oppose the aggression of Hitler? Sadam Hussein? Japan at Pearl Harbor? Etc.
- 27 13. If someone steals your car, kidnaps your kids or rapes your wife will you call the police (use the civil authorities
 28 and legal system) and/or defend your family physically and legally?
- 29 14. If the pacifist position is what some are now preaching, should Bible colleges and churches expel students and
 30 church members who go into the military or refuse entrance or membership to those who are in or have been in the
 31 military in order to be consistent?
- 32 15. Was it right for Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego to disobey the civil authority by not bowing on command? See
 33 Daniel 3.
- 34 16. In Acts 5 and 12 Peter disobeyed the civil authorities over him. He walked past the sleeping guards, out of jail and
 35 fled the country. This was illegal for him to do. Is this the same Peter who wrote the I Peter passage we preach
 36 from about obeying authority?

37 When one understands that the answer Jesus gave to whether we should pay taxes was given under Hebrew law, then they
 38 understand that the same fate awaits all who pay the tribute to Caesar that God will mete out for Caesar, then we can see
 39 that Jesus was clearly saying, "Do not pay taxes unto Caesar", as was alleged at His trial. See Luke 23:2, where the people
 40 accused Jesus of forbidding the payment of taxes to Caesar, which said:

41 *[Luke 23:2, KJV] And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this [fellow] perverting the nation, and*
 42 *forbidding to give tribute to Caesar, saying that he himself is Christ a King.*

43 See also: First Samuel 8:7-19 in which we learn God's displeasure with those who refused to be governed by Him and
 44 instead decided to elect their own King [government], who God said would oppress them.

45 *And the Lord said to Samuel, "Heed the voice of the people in all that they say to you; for they have not rejected*
 46 *you, but they have rejected Me, that I should not reign over them.*

47 *"According to all the works which they have done since the day that I brought them up out of Egypt, even to this*
 48 *day—with which they have forsaken Me and served other gods—so they are doing to you also.*

49 *"Now therefore heed their voice, **However, you shall solemnly forewarn them, and show them the behavior of***
 50 ***the king who will reign over them."***

1 So Samuel told all the words of the Lord to the people who asked him for a king. And he said, "This will be the
2 behavior of the king who will reign over you: He will take your sons and appoint them for his own chariots and
3 to be his horsemen, and some will run before his chariots.

4 "He will appoint captains over his thousands and captains over his fifties, will set some to plow his ground and
5 reap his harvest, and some to make his weapons of war and equipment for his chariots.

6 "He will take your daughters to be perfumers, cooks, and bakers.

7 "And he will take the best of your fields, your vineyards, and your olive groves, and give them to his servants.

8 "He will take a tenth of your grain and your vintage, and give it to his officers and servants.

9 "And he will take your male servants, your female servants, your finest young men, and your donkeys, and put
10 them to his work.

11 "He will take a tenth of your sheep. **And you will be his servants.**

12 "And you will cry out in that day because your king whom you have chosen for yourselves, and the Lord will
13 not hear you in that day."

14 Nevertheless the people refused to obey the voice of Samuel; and they said, "No, but we will have a king over
15 us, that we also may be like all the nations and that our king may judge us and go out before us and fight our
16 battles."

17 What God was saying is that we should not appoint our government to rule over us, but to have them servicing us and for
18 God to rule over us as the sovereigns in charge of the government.

19 "Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him **ONLY** [NOT the
20 government!] you shall serve.'
21 [Matt. 4:10, Bible, NKJV]

22 He was saying this because he knew that tyranny and a dictatorship would be the ultimate result, which would be
23 oppressive and sinful.

24 "You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and those who are great exercise authority over
25 them. **Yet it shall not be so among you; but whoever desires to become great among you, let him be your**
26 **servant. And whoever desires to be first among you, let him be your slave**--just as the Son of Man did not
27 come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many." [Matthew 20:25-28, Bible, NKJV]

28 Is our present government our servant? Does the Internal Revenue **SERVICE** serve you? Our founding fathers ensured
29 that the U.S. government started out in 1776 as our servant by limiting its power with a masterful system of checks and
30 balances. They did this because the abuses and tyranny of the British king were fresh in their minds. But since then, we
31 have forgotten what God told us and looked the other way while our Congress [who has unlawfully made itself into the
32 equivalent of the king in biblical times] and its henchmen in the IRS [the king's tax collectors] have transformed themselves
33 from servants to tyrannical dictators by slowly but systematically rewriting the laws because the apathetic populace they
34 created using the public education system let them get away with it. Revelation 18:3-8 describes what the reward is to be
35 for those who seek to be part of such a corrupt government or those who trust in and do not rebel against such a
36 government: God is talking below about Babylon, which is a metaphor for all the graft and corruption that results from
37 human government unrestricted by the checks and balances that our founding fathers put into the U.S. Constitution and
38 unaccountable to God. Earlier in Revelations 17, Babylon the Great is described as "The Great Harlot who sits on many
39 waters with whom the kings of the earth committed fornication" (Rev. 17:1-2). We believe that this great Harlot is really
40 the bride of Christ (his church/people) described by Paul in Eph. 5:22-24 which never married her husband, Christ, and
41 therefore becomes a harlot and commits fornication with Satan. Here's Rev. 18:3-8:

42 "For all the nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, the kings of the earth have
43 committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth have become rich through the abundance of her
44 luxury."

45 And I heard another voice from heaven saying, "**Come out of her, my people, lest you share in her sins, and**
46 **lest you receive of her plagues.**

1 "For her sins have reached to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities.

2 "Render to her just as she rendered to you, and repay her double according to her works; in the cup which
 3 she has mixed, mix double for her.

4 "In the measure that she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, in the same measure give her torment and
 5 sorrow; for she says in her heart, 'I sit as queen, and am no widow, and will not see sorrow.'

6 "Therefore her plagues will come in one day—death and mourning and famine. And she will be utterly
 7 burned with fire, for strong is the Lord God who judges her." [Rev. 18:3-8, Bible, NKJV]

8 Look above again at what is REALLY supposed to be "rendered to Caesar [Babylon]" in Revelations 18:6-8:

9 "Render to her just as she rendered to you, and repay her double according to her works; in the cup which
 10 she has mixed, mix double for her.

11 "In the measure that she glorified herself and lived luxuriously, in the same measure give her torment and
 12 sorrow; for she says in her heart, 'I sit as queen, and am no widow, and will not see sorrow.'

13 "Therefore her plagues will come in one day—death and mourning and famine. And she will be utterly
 14 burned with fire, for strong is the Lord God who judges her."

15 Notice above the phrase: "in the cup which she has mixed, mix double for her." That phrase ought to look very familiar to
 16 those who have read the Bible. In particular, we believe it refers to the following Bible passage, which talks about how to
 17 discipline a THIEF. Babylon the Great Harlot is simply an ignorant people who consented with a thief called government.
 18 That thief was empowered to commit its deplorable acts of injustice by two things: 1. The vote of the democratic majority;
 19 2. The collective indifference of the people towards the criminal acts of their government.

20 "If a man delivers to his neighbor money or articles to keep, and it is stolen out of the man's house, if the thief
 21 is found, he shall pay double. If the thief is not found, then the master of the house shall be brought to the
 22 judges to see whether he has put his hand into his neighbor's goods." [Exodus 22:7-8, Bible, NKJV]

23 The phrase "his neighbor's goods" above, by the way, includes both the labor and the property of your neighbor. If the
 24 government as your agent pilfers or steals the labor of your neighbor to support you by misrepresenting what the tax laws
 25 say, then it is a thief and you are consenting with a thief by receiving such stolen property. Consequently, you are part of
 26 Babylon the Great Harlot, and you will get a double dose of the abuse you heaped on others in the process according to the
 27 above!

28 Based on Rev. 18:6-8, the ultimate reward for trusting government to rule us or allowing a king to rule over us instead of
 29 God is death and famine.

30 "For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord." [Romans 6:23,
 31 Bible, NKVJ]

32 Why is this the reward to be rendered to Caesar? Because the idolatry represented by making Caesar into a false god
 33 violates the first and most important commandment!:

34 You shall have no other gods before Me. You shall not make for yourself a carved image—any likeness of
 35 anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth; you
 36 shall not bow down or serve them. For I, the Lord your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the
 37 fathers upon the children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me, but showing mercy to
 38 thousands, to those who love Me and keep My commandments. [Exodus 20:3-6, NKVJ]

39 The Bible is replete with examples of those who were killed at the command or with the blessing of God for the idolatry of
 40 worshipping other gods, including government. Below are just a few examples:

41 Ezekiel 9:5 "And I heard God say to the other men, 'Follow him through the city and kill. Spare no one.'"

42 Ezekiel 9:6 "Kill the old men, young men, young women, mothers and children."

Ezekiel 9:7 "God said to them, 'Defile the Temple. Fill its courtyards with corpses. Get to work!' So they began to kill the people in the city."

Ezekiel 9:11 "Then the man wearing linen clothes returned and reported to the Lord, 'I have carried out your orders.'"

CONTEXT FOR WHY GOD COMMANDED THE KILLING IN THE ABOVE FOUR VERSES:

Ezekiel 8:17: "Have you seen this, O son of man? Is it a trivial thing to the house of Judah to commit the **abominations** which they commit here? For **they have filled the land with violence**; then they have returned to provoke Me to anger. Indeed they put the branch to their nose. Therefore I also will act in fury. My eye will not spare nor will I have pity: and though they cry in My ears with a loud voice, I will not hear them."

The people were:

- Committing acts of violence (Ezekiel 8:17)
- Worshipping idols (Eze. 8:10-12)
- Women were weeping for an idol called Tammuz (Ezekiel 8:14)
- Priests were worshipping the sun God. (Ezekiel 8:16)

The killing was God's judgment and wrath against His own people, not those of other races in a Zionist plot. God disciplined His own children in this case for violating the greatest and the first of the ten commandments found in Exodus 20:3-11.

God simply fulfilled justice by punishing His own people for violating the first commandment and committing idolatry. If He hadn't done this, He would not have maintained the sanctity of His children at the time (His family now includes everyone, not just Israel) or allowed the truth of His word, recorded in their writings, to be passed down through the generations so we could enjoy it today. The greater good was thereby accomplished, because God through the Israelites allowed His word and His truth to be revealed to us in what later became the Bible. No other culture or race has been able, through so many generations, to record the history and divine intervention of God in the lives of men better or in a more inspiring way than the writings of the Jews about God, and God apparently wanted to protect this, or His message of truth to us, and His love letter to the world, the Holy Bible, would be lost forever if He allowed His messenger, the Israelites, to be corrupted and to renounce their heritage and their history and the writings of the Bible they authored.

"As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten. Therefore be zealous and repent."
[Rev. 3:19]

The only thing the Bible says is to be rendered to Caesar is death and mourning and famine. Render to him his due! Now do you understand what Jesus was saying and why both the Government and the Pharisees wanted to crucify Him? We aren't suggesting here that you should take the law into your own hands and subvert the sovereignty of God through vigilante justice in fulfilling Jesus' command above, but we are showing you what God says Caesar really deserves and what only God in His righteousness can give him. Note that Jesus also took the trouble here to hide or encrypt His subtle message, so that it would survive the ages and time and appear in the version of the Bible we have today. Otherwise, the government would have destroyed the Bible message long ago.

Luke 10:21, "In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, **I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent** [of the world], and hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight."

The Bible is radical and revolutionary when the Holy Spirit illuminates for us what God is really saying. Is it any wonder our Christian founding fathers rebelled against the King of Britain so they could restore God to His rightful role over them? Those who truly believe that we should "render unto Caesar that which is Caesar's" can't in good conscience support the notion of the American Revolution, which at the time accomplished the opposite goal and was an armed rebellion against "Caesar".

1 4.3.2 The purpose of government: protection of the weak from harm and evil⁷⁵

2 The U.S. Supreme Court confirmed that the purpose of government was protection when it said:

3 *"In the formation of a government, the people may confer upon it such powers as they choose. The*
 4 *government, when so formed, may, and when called upon should, exercise all the powers it has for the*
 5 *protection of the rights of its citizens and the people within its jurisdiction; but it can exercise no other.*"
 6 *[United States v. Cruikshank, 92 U.S. 542 (1875)]*

7 The important aspect of the above is *consent*. The Declaration of Independence says that all just powers of government
 8 derive from the *consent* of the governed. Every power *not* originating from explicit consent is *unjust* by implication and
 9 amounts to tyranny. The people have to consent to delegate authority to protect them to the government that they
 10 collectively form. Those powers they do *not* explicitly consent to delegate to government and that protection which they do
 11 *not* want or do *not* consent to receive from government, they should *not* be forced to either cooperate with or to pay for.

12 The jurisdiction that government has to protect the people is completely devoid of any moral or lawful authority to dictate
 13 to a man how he must use his property so long as doing so does not injure his neighbor. Here is how the Supreme Court
 14 describes it:

15 *"Surely the matters in which the public has the most interest are the supplies of food and clothing; yet can it be*
 16 *that by reason of this interest the state may fix the price at which the butcher must sell his meat, or the vendor of*
 17 *boots and shoes his goods? Men are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights, -'life, liberty, and*
 18 *the pursuit of happiness;' and to 'secure,' not grant or create, these rights, governments are instituted. That*
 19 *property which a man has honestly acquired he retains full control of, subject to these limitations: First, that*
 20 *he shall not use it to his neighbor's injury, and that does not mean that he must use it for his neighbor's*
 21 *benefit; second, that if he devotes it to a public use, he gives to the public a right to control that use; and*
 22 *third, that whenever the public needs require, the public may take it upon payment of due compensation.*
 23 *[Budd v. People of State of New York, 143 U.S. 517 (1892)]*

24 Based on the above, the government cannot compel you to use your property for your neighbor's benefit. Consequently,
 25 the government cannot compel you to participate in any social program, including Unemployment Insurance, Social
 26 Security, Medicare, food stamps, or any other program.

27 Now let's look at the purpose of government from a spiritual perspective. According to the Bible, the purpose of
 28 government is to reward good and punish evil. This responsibility on the part of government can be summarized in one
 29 word: protection. Government is there to protect us from evil on the part of fellow citizens and nations. This commission
 30 derives directly from the second great commandment to love our neighbor as ourselves found in Romans 13:9 and Matt.
 31 29:39.

32 *"Master, which is the greatest commandment in the law? Jesus said to him, **Thou shalt love the Lord thy God***
 33 ***with all thy heart, and with all thy soul and with all thy mind.** This is the first and great commandment. (39)*
 34 *And the second is like unto it, Though shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. On these two commandments hang*
 35 *all law..." [Matthew 22:36-40, Bible, NKJV]*

36 The Apostle Paul even said that loving our neighbor fulfilled ALL the law:

37 *"For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this: 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.'"*
 38 *[Gal 5:14, Bible, NKJV]*

39 To be more specific, that which the government is protecting in the process of "loving" us, according to Thomas Jefferson
 40 in our Declaration of Independence, is our "life, liberty, and our pursuit of happiness". The Supreme Court has said that
 41 "pursuit of happiness" equates with our property rights. Here is an example:

42 *"By that portion of the fourteenth amendment by which no State may make or enforce any law which shall*
 43 *abridge the privileges and immunities of citizens of the United States, or take life, liberty, or property, without*
 44 *due process of law, it has now become the fundamental law of this country that life, liberty, and property*
 45 *(which include 'the pursuit of happiness') are sacred rights, which the Constitution of the United States*

⁷⁵ Adapted from *Constitutional Income: Do You Have Any?*, Phil Hart, 2001, Morris Publishing, pp. 88-94.

1 guarantees to its humblest citizen against oppressive legislation, whether national or local, so that he cannot
 2 be deprived of them without due process of law." [Bartemeyer v. State of Iowa, 85 U.S. 129 (1873)]

3 That is why we say:

4 "Liberty, man's highest value, is simply love disguised." Chris Hansen

5 We emphasize that fear and love, by the way, are *mutually exclusive*:

6 "There is no fear in love, but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not
 7 made perfect in love." [1 John 4:18, Bible, NKJV]

8 Therefore, if there is any aspect of what government does that makes us *fearful* or *afraid* even though we are diligently
 9 doing our best to follow God's law in its entirety and loving our neighbor according to the standards that God set down in
 10 the Ten Commandments, then our government has violated its commission and its authority delegated from God, because it
 11 is *not* fulfilling the second great commandment to "love our neighbor" as the Bible requires. Instead, it has become a
 12 terrorist organization that makes us afraid for our lives and our liberties. We will expand upon this point further later on in
 13 section 7.1.7, where we will establish from a legal perspective that the IRS is indeed a terrorist organization.

14 Governments based on fear are Satanic while governments based on love and respect for our neighbor are godly. Most of
 15 the governments throughout the world are based on fear and not love, and therefore most of them are Satanic, which is to
 16 say that they are controlled by Satan himself. They are Satan's property. Jesus, after all, referred to Satan as "the ruler of
 17 the world," the one whom mankind in general obeys by heeding his urgings to ignore God's requirements (John 14:30; Eph.
 18 2:2). The Bible also calls Satan "the god of this system of things," who is honored by the religious practices of people who
 19 adhere to this system of things. See 2 Cor. 4:4; 1 Cor. 10:20.

20 When endeavoring to tempt Jesus Christ, the Devil brought him up and showed him all the kingdoms, also called
 21 "governments" of the inhabited earth in an instant of time; and the Devil said to him: "I will give you all this authority and
 22 the glory of them, because it has been delivered to me, and to whomever I wish I give it. You, therefore, if you do an act of
 23 worship before me, it will all be yours." (Luke 4:5-7). If the governments of the world both present as well as past were
 24 not under Satan's authority and rulership he could never have offered them to Christ in the first place. Revelation 13:1-2
 25 reveals that Satan gives "power, throne and great authority" to the global political system of rulership. Daniel 10:13, 20
 26 discloses that Satan has had demonic princes over principal kingdoms of the earth. Ephesians 6:12 refers to these as
 27 constituting "governments, authorities, world rulers of this darkness, wicked spirit forces in heavenly places." No wonder
 28 that 1 John 5:19 says: "The whole world is lying in the power of the wicked one." But his power is only for a limited period
 29 of time and is only by the toleration of God Almighty.

30 When we love our neighbor (our fellow Americans) the way that God intends, we would certainly *never* hurt them or make
 31 them afraid like our government does and if *everyone* loved them, then they wouldn't need protection or government to
 32 begin with! In that ideal state, we would be a country (but *not* a nation, see section 4.6) without a need for a government,
 33 which is exactly how Adam and Eve were before their fall. It is also the type of government the founding fathers intended:
 34 "A government of the people, for the people, and by the people", as Abraham Lincoln said at his famous Gettysburg
 35 address. A government of the people, by the people, and for the people is a government where the people rule themselves
 36 *without* a king and are aided in doing that through their public servants, who represent and execute but not usurp the
 37 people's will.

38 Our biblical response to godly government is found in the same passage as God's purpose for government.

39 "Submit yourself to every ordinance of man [which is] for the Lord's sake, whether it be to the king, as
 40 supreme, or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the
 41 praise of them that do well." [1 Peter 2:13-14, Bible, KJV]

42 Our duty to submit to godly authority has a qualifier attached to it, and that is that the authority be godly, that it "praises
 43 good and punishes evil." The Apostle Paul even said that all authority comes from God:

44 "Let every soul be subject to the governing authorities. For there is no authority except from God, and the
 45 authorities that exist are appointed by God." [Romans 13:1, Bible, NKJV]

1 Therefore, when “authority” ceases to be godly, then we cease to have a duty to submit to it. The implication is that any act
 2 by a government employee that does not have authority that comes from God’s law ceases to have any authority at all, and
 3 by implication becomes the act of a private and not a government authority undertaken for personal gain. After all, how
 4 can you claim that you are a servant of God as we showed earlier in section 4.1 if you follow a government that disrespects
 5 or disobeys or rebels against God? This would lead to an absurd consequence indeed!

6 *“No one can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the*
 7 *one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.” [Matt. 6:24, Bible, NKJV]*

8 Those people who founded America found themselves in exactly that position above where they could not please both God
 9 and the British government and their reaction was to rebel and not obey.

10 If God is who He says He is, then He is the ultimate designer of all that exists in the universe. The scriptures identify four
 11 types of government: personal government, family government, church government and civil government. If God is God
 12 then only He has the authority (the author) to set the jurisdictional boundaries between each type of government because
 13 only He created them all:

14 *The heavens are Yours, the earth also is Yours;*
 15 *The world and all its fullness, You have founded them.*
 16 *The north and the south, You have created them;*
 17 *Tabor and Hermon rejoice in Your name.*
 18 *You have a mighty arm;*
 19 *Strong is Your hand, and high is Your right hand.*
 20 *Righteousness and justice are the foundation of Your throne;*
 21 *Mercy and truth go before Your face*
 22 *[Psalms 89:11-14, Bible, NKJV]*

23 For example, God delegated to families the teaching of children, not to government. The entire system of government
 24 schools is a violation of God’s design. A civil government limited in jurisdiction to only the purposes identified in scripture
 25 would need very little money to operate. There would be no need to tax a man’s right to exist. No need to tax his wages or
 26 salary, because people would be presumed to govern their own affairs and delegate to government only those things that
 27 they cannot do for themselves, like a military, a court system, and jails.

28 Protection of its weaker citizens is therefore the only source of moral authority for anything that government does. But
 29 exactly who is it that government has the greatest and most sacred duty to protect? The strong or the wealthy or the
 30 educated in any society don’t need protection because they can fend for themselves. The reason we even have a public
 31 education system is to make citizens better able to fend for themselves to begin with. With their wealth and education and
 32 influence, the strong of society can:

- 33 1. Hire the best lawyers to defend them.
- 34 2. Bribe politicians.
- 35 3. Use their influence to coerce others to do their bidding.
- 36 4. Hire bodyguards.
- 37 5. Install alarm systems to protect their property.
- 38 6. Pay expensive talent to manage their assets to eliminate taxes altogether using trusts and exotic tax shelters.
- 39 7. Form cartels and monopolies to coerce the people to pay higher prices.

40 So the real people who the government is there to protect are the weak and defenseless of our society: those with so little
 41 money and so little influence and education that no one else would even bother come to their aid and protection. These
 42 people include:

- 43 • Widows
- 44 • Adolescents
- 45 • Aged and retired people
- 46 • Immigrants who can’t speak the language
- 47 • The poor
- 48 • The ignorant or undereducated

- Those who can't afford legal counsel of their own if prosecuted wrongfully

Lysander Spooner explained the purpose of Government as follows:

"Government is established for the protection of the weak against the strong. This is the principal, if not the sole motive for the establishment of all legitimate government. It is only the weaker party that lose their liberties, when a government becomes oppressive. The stronger party, in all governments are free by virtue of their superior strength. They never oppress themselves. Legislation is the work of this stronger party; and if, in addition to the sole power of legislation, they have the sole power of determining what legislation shall be enforced, they have all power in their hands, and the weaker party are the subjects of an absolute government. Unless the weaker party have a veto, they have no power whatever in the government and...no liberties... The trial by jury is the only institution that gives the weaker party any veto upon the power of the stronger. Consequently it is the only institution that gives them any effective voice in the government, or any guaranty against oppression." [Lysander Spooner in his short essay entitled "Trial by Jury"]

Is government living up to its calling to defend and protect the above types of people? Well, for starters, we show you later in section 7.12.1 that the IRS focuses the vast majority of its audit activity and expenditures on low income people, who are least able to afford to pay taxes or litigate to defend their rights when abused. That is a massive injustice because as we just pointed out, the weak and the poor are the ones who need government's protection the most! Abortion falls in the same category. Who defends the speechless and the most vulnerable members of society like unborn children? Our government certainly isn't doing it! Here is what the Bible says about what we are supposed to do for all the babies who are being murdered by abortionists:

*"Open your mouth for the speechless,
In the cause of all [unborn children] who are appointed to die.^[1]
Open your mouth, judge righteously,
And plead the cause of the poor and needy."
[Prov. 31:8-9, Bible, NKJV]*

Our government is failing miserably at the only job that it has to protect the most defenseless members in society, folks! God said abortion is the weapon of choice that He would use against a wicked and defiant people who rebel against Him and His Law and who refuse to defend the weak of society. Here is an example:

*"All the kings of the nations,
All of them, sleep in glory,
Everyone in his own house;
But you are cast out of your grave
Like an abominable branch,
Like the garment of those who are slain,
Thrust through with a sword,
Who go down to the stones of the pit,
Like a corpse trodden underfoot.
**You will not be joined with them in burial,
Because you have destroyed your land
And slain your [unborn] people,
The brood of evildoers shall never be named.
Prepare slaughter for his children
Because of the iniquity of their fathers,**
Lest they rise up and possess the land,
And fill the face of the world with cities."*

***"For I will rise up against them," says the LORD of hosts,
And cut off from Babylon the name and remnant,
And offspring and posterity," says the LORD.**
"I will also make it a possession for the porcupine,
And marshes of muddy water;
I will sweep it with the broom of destruction," says the LORD of hosts.
[Isaiah 14:18-23, Bible, NKJV]*

Our birth rate has gone so low because of abortion that we aren't even replacing the people we have, and God is thereby using abortion to extinct a selfish and wicked and rebellious people from their own land. Couples who should be having babies are so worried about their personal standard of living and civil status and keeping up with the Joneses that we aren't having any more children because they cost too much money. Instead, we are sucking babies brains out (partial birth

1 abortion) and throwing them in the garbage can! Those societies and peoples who don't allow the murder of abortion are
 2 the ones who will eventually inherit our land, which right now looks like it will be the Mexicans and Blacks. God is doing
 3 this because in Genesis 1:28, He told us to "be fruitful and multiply" and we are disobeying and defying His command, so
 4 He is disciplining us. We have forgotten what God said about children, and how they are a gift from Him. God is angry
 5 with us because we won't accept His gift!

6 *Behold, children are a heritage from the LORD,*
 7 *The fruit of the womb is a reward.*
 8 *Like arrows in the hand of a warrior,*
 9 *So are the children of one's youth.*
 10 *Happy is the man who has his quiver full of them;*
 11 *They shall not be ashamed,*
 12 *But shall speak with their enemies in the gate." [Psalms 127:3-5, Bible, NKJV]*

13 As of 1909, when the Sixteenth Amendment was proposed, the federal government had yet to become the great nanny in
 14 the sky (the political corporation, or *Parens Patriae*) solving everybody's problems from cradle to grave. Instead, our
 15 government largely followed the Biblical mandate just mentioned. Government's fundamental duty to protect life and
 16 property can also be found at Romans 13:3-4.

17 The Geneva Bible, which is the Bible the Pilgrims used, states:

18 *"For princes are not to be feared for good works, but for evil. Wilt you then be without fear of the power? Do*
 19 *well. For shalt though have praise of the same. For he is the minister of God for thy wealth. But if though do*
 20 *evil, fear: for he beareth not the sword for nought: for he is the minister of God to take vengeance on him that*
 21 *doth evil." [Geneva Bible, 1st Edition, 1560]*

22 When government takes one-third or more of a man's yearly earnings, using as its authority to do so a law that is many
 23 thousands of pages long and so complicated that virtually no one can understand it, is government doing good? Or is
 24 government doing evil?

25 The way to make people respect the law is to make the law respectable. The way to make the law respectable, in turn, is to
 26 keep it short and simple and comprehensible by the common man, who is the person it was intended to apply to. The
 27 extent to which only judges and lawyers can understand the law is the extent to which the law is no longer respectable.

28 Adam Smith, in his famous book entitled "Wealth of Nations," upon which our founders heavily relied when they wrote
 29 our Constitution, espoused this same general concept of government described above:

30 *"The first duty of the sovereign is, that of protecting the society from the violence and invasion of other*
 31 *independent societies...The second duty of the sovereign is, that of protecting, as far as possible, every member*
 32 *of the society from the injustice or oppression of every other member of it... The third duty and last duty of the*
 33 *sovereign or commonwealth is that of erecting and maintaining those public institutions and those public works,*
 34 *which, though they may be in the highest degree advantageous to a great society..."*
 35 *[Adam Smith, Wealth of Nations, book V, pp. 468-473, (1776); Prometheus Books, Amherst, New York, 1991]*

36 When Jesus said, "Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's: and to God the things that are God's," (Matt. 22:21) notice
 37 that He did not say, "Give Caesar everything he asks you for." Inherent in the former statement is the idea that there are
 38 limits on what belongs to Caesar. In God's world view, civil government has limited jurisdiction. If government asks you
 39 to render to it the mind of your child, will you obey or object?

40 **4.3.3 How government and God compete to provide "protection"**

41 We stated in the previous section that the goal of government is protection of the liberties of the sovereign public from evil
 42 and harm. Here is an example from the Declaration of Independence:

43 *"We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator*
 44 *with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness.--That to*
 45 *secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men, deriving their just powers from the consent of*
 46 *the governed. --That whenever any Form of Government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the*
 47 *People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new Government, laying its foundation on such principles and*
 48 *organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their Safety and Happiness."*

1 Because God loves us, He has exactly the same purpose and goal as any just government should have. Here are a few
2 examples of how the purpose of God is protection, and there are many more in the book of Psalms:

3 *"O you afflicted one, tossed with tempest, and not comforted, behold, I will lay your stones with colorful gems,
4 and lay your foundations with sapphires. I will make your pinnacles of rubies, your gates of crystal, and all
5 your walls of precious stones. All your children shall be taught by the Lord, and great shall be the peace of
6 your children. In righteousness you shall be established; you shall be far from oppression, for you shall not
7 fear; and from terror, for it shall not come near you. Indeed they shall surely assemble, but not because of Me.
8 Whoever assembles against you shall fall for your sake.*

9 *"Behold, I have created the blacksmith who blows the coals in the fire, who brings forth an instrument for his
10 work; and I have created the spoiler to destroy. No weapon formed against you shall prosper, and every tongue
11 which rises against you in judgment you shall condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, and
12 their righteousness is from Me," says the Lord.* [Isaiah 54:11-17, Bible, NKJV]

13 As Christians, we should prefer God's protection over government's protection at all times. This is because we should trust
14 the Lord and not man:

15 *"It is better to trust the Lord
16 Than to put confidence in man.
17 It is better to trust in the Lord
18 Than to put confidence in princes."
19 [Psalms 118:8-9, Bible, NKJV]*

20 Here is another example of why we should trust the Lord instead of government for our protection, right from the Bible:

21 *"For I was ashamed to request of the king an escort of soldiers and horsemen to help us against the enemy on
22 the road, because we had spoken to the king, saying 'The hand of our God is upon all those for good who seek
23 Him, but His power and His wrath are against all those who forsake Him.' So we fasted and entreated our God
24 for this, and He answered our prayer."* [Ezra 8:21-22, Bible, NKJV]

25 When governments have the same loving goals as God in terms of protecting us (His children and His sheep/ flock) from
26 evil and harm, then we are to submit to them. When they cease to be ministers of God's justice or turn against God, then
27 we should disobey those government laws that conflict with God's laws or natural law.

28 *"We ought to obey God rather than men."* [Acts 5:27-29, Bible, NKJV]

29 This must be so because we have a fiduciary duty to God himself to keep justice, and when our *servants* in government
30 don't do it, then it becomes our job as the sovereigns to do the job they have failed to do as our agents:

31 *"Keep justice, and do righteousness, for My salvation is about to come, and My righteousness is revealed.
32 Blessed is the man who does this, and the son of man who lays hold of it; who keeps from defiling the Sabbath,
33 and keeps his hand from doing any evil."* [Isaiah 56:1-2, Bible, NKJV]

34 If we sit idly by and do nothing while our servants in government breach their fiduciary duty to protect us, then we become
35 accountable to God for the acts and omissions of our agents and the harm that causes to our neighbor and our fellow man.
36 This is vividly illustrated by the story of David and Bathsheeba in the Bible found in 2 Samuel Chapters 11 and 12. In that
37 story, king David lusted after a beautiful married woman named Bathsheeba and had his servant send Bathsheeba's husband
38 Uriah into battle to be killed (See 2 Sam. 11:14-25). After Uriah was killed and David married Bathsheeba, first the Lord
39 killed the child born of adultery and then here is what the Lord said to David about the acts of his servant/agent, and note
40 that God held David, not his servant, responsible for the murder:

41 *[Then Nathan said to David] "Why have you despised the commandment of the Lord, to do evil in His sight?
42 You have killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword; you have taken his wife to be your wife, and you have killed
43 him with the sword of the people of Ammon. Now therefore, the sword shall never depart from your house,
44 because you have despised Me, and have taken the wife of Uriah the Hittite to be your wife."*

45 *[2 Sa 12:9, Bible, NKJV]*

46 Because both God and government have as their goal protection of their subjects or believers, you could say that both God
47 and government are competitors for the affections of the people. This has been so throughout history. The whole notion

1 behind the separation of church and state is aimed at making this competition fair and equal between these two competing
 2 sovereigns. That is why churches are not supposed to involve themselves in politics if they want to maintain their tax
 3 exempt status and why governments may not tax churches: because taxation by government of churches or political
 4 advocacy against government by churches would destroy that perfect separation of powers.

5 When government becomes too oppressive, then the healthy competition between church and state ensures a steady
 6 convergence back to the perfect balance of powers that Natural Law requires. For instance, if government raises its tax
 7 rates too high, then everyone will either donate everything they have to the church or become churches (Corporation Sole,
 8 for instance) in order to avoid government taxes and control. Likewise, when church gets to be too big, then the
 9 government tries to step in and pass laws and ordinances to limit its power or worse yet, creates its own state-sanctioned
 10 church, as the kings of England did with the Anglican church. In that case, the church becomes another means of state
 11 control. America was founded by Quakers in the 1600's who were trying to escape the control of the Anglican church and
 12 worship freely according to their conscience and without government interference. See section 5.2.1 for a fascinating
 13 history of the creation and founding of America.

14 When governments grow too big, the competition between church and state for the affections and loyalty of the public
 15 favors government. This imbalance is perpetuated by a combination of: 1. Media advocacy; 2. Unjust laws that
 16 discriminate against religious activities; 3. Dumbing down of the population in regards to religious issues and legal issues.
 17 Government thus becomes a substitute for God or an idol in this case, and this violates the First Commandment to put God
 18 first and have no other gods (see Exodus 20:1-11, Bible, NKJV). The focus of section 4.3.10 is to then prove from a legal
 19 perspective using evidence that our contemporary government has indeed replaced God and become an idol, and that this
 20 condition poses a great threat to our freedoms and liberties, and invites the wrath of God. Ultimately, the result will be
 21 subjection and slavery of the people to their rulers and a police state the likes of which this country has never seen. The
 22 people will be lead like lemmings into captivity and slavery because of their ignorance and lack of faith or trust in God.

23 *"The Gentiles shall know that the house of Israel went into captivity for their iniquity: because they were*
 24 *unfaithful to Me, therefore I hid My face from them. I gave them into the hand of their enemies, and they all fell*
 25 *by the sword. According to their uncleanness and according to their transgressions I have dealt with them, and*
 26 *hidden My face from them." [Ezekiel 39:23-24, Bible, NKJV]*

27 How has God "hidden his face"? By the outlawing of simple prayer in the schools, by the removal of the ten
 28 commandments and crosses from public buildings and parks, by the removal of religious teachings from our classrooms,
 29 and by the passing of government laws that clearly violate God's laws. See section 4.18 later, for instance, for further
 30 details on man's laws conflict with God's laws.

31 **4.3.4 Separation of powers doctrine**

32 The foundation of our republican form of government is the notion of "separation of powers". In the legal field, this is
 33 called "the separation of powers doctrine". The U.S. Supreme Court confirmed the purpose of the separation of powers
 34 doctrine in the case of *U.S. v. Lopez, 514 U.S. 549 (1995)* :

35 *"We start with first principles. The Constitution creates a Federal Government of enumerated powers. See U.S.*
 36 *Const., Art. I, 8. As James Madison wrote, "[t]he powers delegated by the proposed Constitution to the federal*
 37 *government are few and defined. Those which are to remain in the State governments are numerous and*
 38 *indefinite." The Federalist No. 45, pp. 292-293 (C. Rossiter ed. 1961). **This constitutionally***
 39 ***mandated division of authority "was adopted by the Framers***
 40 ***to ensure protection of our fundamental liberties."** *Gregory v. Ashcroft,*
 41 *501 U.S. 452, 458 (1991) (internal quotation marks omitted). "Just as the separation and independence of*
 42 *the coordinate branches of the Federal Government serves to prevent the accumulation of excessive power in*
 43 *any one branch, a healthy balance of power between the States and the Federal Government will reduce the*
 44 *risk of tyranny and abuse from either front."* *Ibid.* " [U.S. v. Lopez, 514 U.S. 549 (1995)]*

45 The founders believed that men were inherently corrupt. They believed that where power concentrates, so does tyranny.
 46 To prevent tyranny, they separated our government in the following ways:

- 1 1. **Separation of church (God) and state.** The state and God (the church) are in competition with each other to protect
- 2 the people, as we showed in the previous section. Guaranteed by the First Amendment to the Constitution.
- 3 2. **Separation of money and state.** Guaranteed by Article 1, Section 10, Clause 1 of the Constitution, which required
- 4 that no State shall make anything but gold and silver money. See also section 2.8.9.2 later.
- 5 3. **Separation of marriage and state.** At the time, there were no marriage licenses and everyone got married in their
- 6 church. Their marriage certificate was the family bible, because that is where they recorded the ceremony.
- 7 4. **Separation of education and state.** The Constitution did not authorize the federal government to get involved in
- 8 education, and since everything not mentioned in the Constitution was reserved to the states under the Tenth
- 9 Amendment, we also had separation of education and state.
- 10 5. **Separation of media and state:** The founders always believed that a free and independent media was a precursor to
- 11 an accountable and moral government and they wrote the requirement for freedom of the press into the First
- 12 Amendment to the U.S. Constitution.
- 13 6. **Separation of the people and the government.** The founders gave the people equal footing with the state
- 14 governments by giving them the House of Representatives. The House of Representatives is equal in legislative power
- 15 to the Senate, which represents the state governments.
- 16 7. **State v. Federal separation.** The states had complete sovereignty *internal* to their border over everything except taxes
- 17 on foreign commerce, mail fraud, and counterfeiting. Slavery was later added to that by the Thirteenth Amendment.
- 18 The federal government had jurisdiction over all *external* or foreign matters *only*. Guaranteed by Art. IV of the
- 19 Constitution.
- 20 8. **Separation of powers within the above two distinct governments.** Guaranteed by Art. 1, Art. II, and Art. III of the
- 21 Constitution:
- 22 8.1. Executive
- 23 8.2. Legislative
- 24 8.3. Judicial

25 The founders implemented separation between the federal and state governments to put the states in competition with each
 26 other for citizens and commerce, so that when one state became too oppressive by having taxes that were too high or too
 27 many laws, people would move to a better state where they had more freedom and lower taxes. This would ensure that the
 28 states that were most oppressive would have the fewest citizens and the worst economy. They also put the federal
 29 government in charge of foreign commerce *only*, so that the only way it could increase its revenues was to promote, not
 30 discourage or restrict, commerce with foreign nations. If the taxes on foreign commerce were too high, people would
 31 simply buy more domestic goods and the federal government would shrink. It was naturally self-balancing.

32 The founders also put branches within each government in competition with each other: Executive, Legislative, and
 33 Judicial. They ensured that each branch had distinct functions that could *not* be delegated to another branch of government.
 34 Each branch would then jealously guard its power and jurisdiction to ensure that it was not invaded or undermined by the
 35 other branch. This ensured that there would always be a balance of powers so that the system was self-regulating and the
 36 balance of powers would be maintained.

37 The founders put the states in charge of the federal government by filling the senate with delegates from each state and by
 38 giving each state full and complete and exclusive control over all taxation within its borders, with the exception of taxes on
 39 foreign commerce, which is commerce *external* to states of the Union and among foreign countries.

40 *"In the states, there reposes the sovereignty to manage their own affairs except only as the requirements of the*
 41 *Constitution otherwise provide. **Within these constitutional limits the power of the state over taxation is***
 42 ***plenary.**" [Madden v. Commonwealth of Kentucky, 309 U.S. 83 (1940)]*

43 The states gave the federal government control *only* over taxes on *foreign commerce* under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 3 of
 44 the Constitution.⁷⁶ The states ensured this result by mentioning in *two* places in the Constitution, Article 1, Section 2,
 45 Clause 3 and Article 1, Section 9, Clause 4, that all direct taxes had to be apportioned to the legislatures of each state. The
 46 requirement to apportion direct taxes is the only mandate that appears twice in the Constitution, because they wanted to
 47 emphasize this limit on federal taxing powers. This ensured that the federal government could *never* burden or
 48 economically enslave individual citizens within each state or tax state governments directly:

⁷⁶ See Federalist Paper #45 for confirmation of this fact.

"The difficulties arising out of our dual form of government and the opportunities for differing opinions concerning the relative rights of state and national governments are many; but for a very long time this court has steadfastly adhered to the doctrine that the taxing power of Congress does not extend to the states or their political subdivisions. The same basic reasoning which leads to that conclusion, we think, requires like limitation upon the power which springs from the bankruptcy clause. *United States v. Butler*, supra." [Ashton v. Cameron County Water Improvement District No. 1, 298 U.S. 513; 56 S.Ct. 892 (1936)]

The founders imposed these restrictions on direct taxation because they knew that direct taxes amounted to slavery and they didn't want to become slaves to the federal government. Through the requirement for apportionment, state legislatures became the intermediaries for all federal appropriations that depended on other than indirect taxes on foreign commerce. Any other approach would require citizens in the states to serve two masters: state and federal, for the income they earn. This is a fulfillment of the Bible, which said on this subject:

"No one can serve two masters [state and federal]: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon." [Matt. 6:24, Bible, NKJV]

Thomas Jefferson, one of our most important founding fathers, confirmed the purpose of the separation of powers between state and federal governments. He confirmed that the purpose of the federal government was to regulate commerce and interaction with foreign countries and that it never had the authority or jurisdiction to invade within states, either through legislation or through police powers:

"The extent of our country was so great, and its former division into distinct States so established, that we thought it better to confederate [U.S. government] as to foreign affairs only. Every State retained its self-government in domestic matters, as better qualified to direct them to the good and satisfaction of their citizens, than a general government so distant from its remoter citizens and so little familiar with the local peculiarities of the different parts." --Thomas Jefferson to A. Coray, 1823. ME 15:483

"I believe the States can best govern our home concerns, and **the General Government our foreign ones.**" -- Thomas Jefferson to William Johnson, 1823. ME 15:450

"My general plan [for the federal government] would be, to make the States one as to everything connected with foreign nations, and several as to everything purely domestic." --Thomas Jefferson to Edward Carrington, 1787. ME 6:227

"Distinct States, amalgamated into one as to their foreign concerns, but single and independent as to their internal administration, regularly organized with a legislature and governor resting on the choice of the people and enlightened by a free press, can never be so fascinated by the arts of one man as to submit voluntarily to his usurpation. Nor can they be constrained to it by any force he can possess. While that may paralyze the single State in which it happens to be encamped, [the] others, spread over a country of two thousand miles diameter, rise up on every side, ready organized for deliberation by a constitutional legislature and for action by their governor, constitutionally the commander of the militia of the State, that is to say, of every man in it able to bear arms." --Thomas Jefferson to A. L. C. Destutt de Tracy, 1811. ME 13:19

You can read the above quotes from Thomas Jefferson on our website at:

<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Politics/ThomasJefferson/jeff1050.htm>

Note that Jefferson said that the federal government was given jurisdiction over foreign affairs only, which includes foreign commerce. The only exception to this general rule is subject matter within the states over the following:

1. Slavery under the Thirteenth Amendment.
2. Counterfeiting under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 5 of the Constitution.
3. Mail under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 7 of the Constitution.
4. Assaults and infractions against its own officers under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 18 of the Constitution.
5. Treason under Article 3, Section 3, Clause 2 of the Constitution.

Every other type of subject matter jurisdiction exercised by the federal government within the states is not authorized by the Constitution, and therefore can only be undertaken with the voluntary consent and participation of the state governments and the people within them. This type of consensual jurisdiction is called "comity".

1 Jefferson's quotes are also fully consistent with our system of federal taxation. For instance, Article 1, Section 8, Clause 3
 2 of the U.S. Constitution limits federal taxation powers to commerce with foreign nations and *between*, but not *within*,
 3 states. 26 CFR § 1.861-8(f) also reveals that the only specific sources of "gross income" that are taxable under Subtitle A
 4 of the Internal Revenue Code are those associated with Domestic International Sales Corporations (DISC) and Foreign
 5 Sales Corporations (FSCs), both of whom are involved in commerce with foreign countries *only*. Even the IRS' own
 6 publications in the Federal Register confirm that this was the original intent of the founders. Below is an excerpt from the
 7 Federal Register, Volume 37, page 20960 dated October 5, 1972:

8 *"Madison's Notes on the Constitutional Convention [see [Federalist Paper #45](#)] reveal clearly that the*
 9 *framers of the Constitution believed for some time [and wrote this permanent requirement into the*
 10 *Constitution] that the principal, if not sole, support of the new Federal Government would be derived from*
 11 *customs duties and taxes connected with shipping and importations. Internal taxation would not be resorted*
 12 *to except infrequently, and for special [emergency] reasons. The first resort to internal taxation, the*
 13 *enactment of internal revenue laws in 1791 and in the following 10 years, was occasioned by the exigencies of*
 14 *the public credit. These first laws were repealed in 1802. Internal revenue laws were reenacted for the period*
 15 *1813-17, when the effects of the war of 1812 caused Congress to resort to internal taxation. From 1818 to*
 16 *1861, however, the United States had no internal revenue laws and the Federal Government was supported by*
 17 *the revenue from import duties and the proceeds from the sale of public lands. In 1862 Congress once more*
 18 *levied internal revenue taxes. This time the establishment of an internal revenue system, not exclusively*
 19 *dependent upon the supplies of foreign commerce, was permanent."*

20 What the IRS doesn't tell you in the above is that the resort to internal taxation under Subtitle A of the Internal Revenue
 21 Code was only authorized against officers of the United States government and not against private citizens living in the
 22 states of the Union. According to the U.S. Supreme Court, the enactment of the Sixteenth Amendment didn't change that
 23 Constitutional requirement one iota either. You can view this document on our website at:

24 <http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Evidence/OrgAndDuties/37FR20960-20964-OrgAndFunctions.pdf>

25 Those federal politicians, legislators, and judges intent on becoming tyrants or expanding their power must break down the
 26 separation of powers established by the founders above if they want to concentrate power or take away powers from the
 27 states. They have done this over the years mainly by the following means, which we devote nearly the entirety of this book
 28 to exposing and explaining:

- 29 1. Deliberately deceiving people about the intent and result of ratifying the Sixteenth Amendment. According to the U.S.
 30 Supreme Court, the Sixteenth Amendment "conferred no power of taxation" upon the federal government, but simply
 31 reinforced the idea that federal income taxes are indirect excise taxes only on businesses.⁷⁷ Yet, to this day, your
 32 dishonest Congressman and the IRS itself both insist that the Sixteenth Amendment is the basis for their authority to
 33 tax the labor of a natural person, in spite of the fact that these kind of taxes violate the Thirteenth Amendment and
 34 constitute slavery and involuntary servitude.
- 35 2. Eliminating separation of church and state by either taxing churches or using the IRS to terrorize and gag them for their
 36 political activities. This is already happening. See the following website for details: <http://www.hushmoney.org/>
- 37 3. Eliminating separation of money and state by eliminating the gold standard and transitioning to a fiat paper currency.
 38 This was done in 1913 with the introduction of the Federal Reserve Act on Dec. 23, 1913, shortly after the ratification
 39 of the Sixteenth Amendment in February 1913.
- 40 4. Eliminating separation of marriage and state by introducing marriage licenses. This was done in a large scale starting
 41 in 1923, with the Uniform Marriage and Divorce Act of 1929. See section 4.14.6.7 later for further details.
- 42 5. Confusing the definitions of words to make the separation of powers between state and federal unclear. For instance:
 43 5.1. Confusing the definitions of "state" and "State".
 44 5.2. Confusing the definition of "United States"
 45 5.3. Not defining the word "foreign" in the Internal Revenue Code
- 46 6. Obfuscating the distinctions between "U.S. citizen" and "U.S. national" status within federal statutes. "U.S. citizens"
 47 were born in the federal United States while "U.S. nationals" were born in states of the Union.
- 48 7. Judges violating the due process rights of the accused by making frequent use of false presumption against litigants
 49 regarding citizenship and "taxpayer" status without documenting in their rulings what presumptions they are making or

⁷⁷ See *Stanton v. Baltic Mining*, 240 U.S. 103 (1916), *Peck v. Lowe*, 247 U.S. 165 (1918), and many others.

- 1 having to defend with evidence why such presumptions are warranted. Remember that “presumption” is the opposite
 2 of due process and also happens to be a sin in the Bible. Refer to section 2.8.2 earlier for details.
- 3 8. Refusing to acknowledge or recognize the limits of federal jurisdiction within federal courtrooms. We have been
 4 informed of many individuals being brutalized and abused by itinerant federal judges whose jurisdiction was
 5 challenged.
- 6 9. Suppressing any evidence or debate in courtrooms on the nature of separation of powers. Doing so by complicating
 7 rules of evidence, and making citizens meet a higher standard for evidence than the government.
- 8 10. Using the proceeds of extorted or illegally-collected federal income tax revenues to break down the separation of
 9 powers between states and the federal government. For instance, depriving states of federal revenues who do not do
 10 what the federal government wants them to do. This is called “privilege-induced slavery”. We explain later in section
 11 6.1 that this kind of artifice has been thoroughly exploited to create a de facto government that is completely at odds
 12 with the de jure separation of powers required by our Constitution.
- 13 11. Discrediting and slandering legal professionals who bring attention to the separation of powers between state and
 14 federal jurisdiction by calling them “frivolous” or “incompetent” and/or pulling their license to practice law. The
 15 framing of Congressman Traficant and Congressman George Hansen are examples of this kind of political persecution
 16 by abusing the legal system as a tool of persecution.
- 17 12. Paying people in the legal publishing business to obfuscate the definitions of words. We show later in section 6.8
 18 several instances of such corruption.
- 19 13. Making the laws found in the U.S. Code so confusing that the average American can’t rely on his own understanding
 20 of them to know what the law requires. Instead, he must be compelled to rely on a high-paid expert, such as a judge or
 21 lawyer, both of whom have a conflict of interest in expanding their power, to say what the law really requires. This
 22 transforms our society from a “society of laws and not men” into a “society of men”.⁷⁸
- 23 14. Suppressing and oppressing the Right to Petition guaranteed to We the People in the [First Amendment](#). The Founders
 24 believed that the people had an inalienable right to withhold payment of taxes until their petitions were heard and
 25 responded to. Federal courts have evaded and avoided upholding this requirement, in what amounts to treason against
 26 the Constitution punishable by death. See the article on our website about this subject at:

27 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/LegalEthics/RightToPet-031002.pdf>

28 **4.3.5 The purpose of income taxes: government protection of the assets of the wealthy**

29 Since those Americans who have accumulated great wealth benefit more from government than those who have little, it is
 30 logical to assume that the wealthy should pay more for government than the poor as the former enjoy a greater benefit. It is
 31 the “no free lunch” principle:

32 *“Mr. COX. It is not my intention to belittle wealth, but, on the other hand, I believe it should be the duty of all*
 33 *to uphold it where it is honestly procured. The idea that men like Carnegie, now the holder of more than*
 34 *\$300,000,000 worth of the bonds of the United States steel trust, escape federal taxation is indeed absurd...and*
 35 *then, to realize that all of these enormous fortunes are escaping their just and proportionate share of taxation*
 36 *while the people themselves are staggering under our present system of indirect taxation, it is no wonder to me*
 37 *they cry for relief. If it be the determination of the so-called ‘business interests’ in this country to maintain an*
 38 *enormous navy at a cost of hundreds of millions of dollars annually, as well as an army, to protect and defend*
 39 *their various business interests, I insist that this part of the wealth of the country ought to stand its*
 40 *proportionate share of taxation, and I know of no way to compel them to do it as justly and equitably as an*
 41 *income tax. [Loud applause]” [44 Cong.Rec. 4424 (1909)]*

42 If you give it some thought, you’ll realize that it would be impossible to accumulate a lot of wealth if it were not for the
 43 institution of civil government. What if we lived in anarchy? How much would your stocks and bonds be worth? How
 44 much would your vacation home be worth that was hundreds of miles away from where you live? These things would be
 45 worth nothing. And what about your overseas investments in oil wells in Africa? If there were no United States navy, air
 46 force, or army to protect them, these investments would be worthless too.

47 So those corporations or businesses that have accumulated a level of wealth beyond what they can personally protect have
 48 received an extra benefit from civil government. In this case, the amount of benefit can be measured by the amount of
 49 property that has been accumulated. A tax on the income of this property could fairly accurately coincide with the degree

⁷⁸ See *Marbury v. Madison*, [5 U.S. 137](#); 1 Cranch 137, 2 L.Ed. 60 (1803)

1 of the benefit received. This was the original purpose of the income tax: to tax income from property of corporations and
 2 businesses so that the property paid for the support of the government in proportion to the benefit property received from
 3 the existence of civil government. Sounds reasonable to us:

4 *“Taxation is the equivalent for the protection which the government affords to the persons and property of its*
 5 *citizens; and as all are alike protected, so all alike should bear the burden, in proportion to the interests*
 6 *secured. [Cooley’s Constitutional Limitations, 6th ed., 598, 607, 608, 615.]” [Rehearing, Brief for Appellants*
 7 *at 79, Pollock v. Farmers’ Loan and Trust Co., 158 U.S. 601 (1895)]*

8 There is also an element of charity inherent in an income tax system that seeks to make property pay for the support of
 9 government. The charity involves property that is not productive and not producing income. This would be the family
 10 farm that was inherited by beneficiaries who were unable to work it for whatever reason. The farm would pay no income
 11 tax as it earned no income, thus allowing the new owners to keep the farm and not lose it to the tax man as they might
 12 under a direct tax.

13 Because the Constitution has always authorized an indirect, unapportioned income tax on corporations involved in foreign
 14 and interstate trade under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 3, the means has always been available for the federal government to
 15 institute income taxes, with or without the Sixteenth Amendment. If you read the Congressional debates on the Sixteenth
 16 Amendment in 1909, you will find that the Sixteenth Amendment was originally introduced by Congress to make the “rich”
 17 pay their fair share of the cost of supporting the government. In most cases, the “rich” referred to were the large
 18 corporations and trusts that had formed as a result of the gigantic industrial monopolies in the oil, steel, and railroad
 19 businesses. The Democrats appealed to people’s jealousies by proposing to institute an income tax on the very rich owners
 20 of these trusts and corporations through a direct, unapportioned tax on property while the Republicans proposed higher
 21 indirect excise taxes in the Corporate Tax Act of 1909 to appease the Democrats. That Corporate Tax Act of 1909 wasn’t
 22 enough to appease the Democrats and the American people so the Sixteenth Amendment was proposed as a solution.
 23 Several versions of the Sixteenth Amendment were proposed during the Congressional debates in 1909, including a direct,
 24 unapportioned income tax. However, the version that included direct, unapportioned taxes was soundly defeated and the
 25 version we have today which survived, according to several rulings of the U.S. Supreme Court, continues to be an indirect
 26 excise tax on federal corporations only. The Sixteenth Amendment, as a matter of fact, conferred no new powers of
 27 taxation, according to the Supreme Court in *Stanton v. Baltic Mining*, 240 U.S. 103 (1916). See the following for
 28 additional details on the nature of the income tax as an indirect excise tax:

29 <http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/CitesByTopic/income.htm>

30 **4.3.6 Why all man-made law is religious in nature**

31 A fascinating book on the subject of Biblical Law entitled *Institutes of Biblical Law* by Rousas John Rushdoony irrefutably
 32 establishes that all law is religious, and that it represents a covenant between man and God which is characterized as divine
 33 revelation. When we consider that government is founded exclusively on law, government itself then becomes a religion to
 34 implement or execute or enforce divine revelation. When government abuses the authority delegated by God through
 35 God’s law, then it also becomes a false religious cult. This exposition will set the stage for section 4.3.10 later, which
 36 establishes that our present day government is nothing but a cult surrounding the false religion it created with its own unjust
 37 law because this law has become a vain substitute and an affront to God’s Law found in the Bible. Here are some very
 38 insightful quotes from pp. 4-5 of that wonderful book:

39 *Law is in every culture religious in origin. Because law governs man and society, because it establishes and*
 40 *declares the meaning of justice and righteousness, law is inescapably religious, in that it establishes in*
 41 *practical fashion the ultimate concerns of a culture. Accordingly, a fundamental and necessary premise in*
 42 *any and every study of law must be, first, a recognition of this religious nature of law.*

43 *Second, it must be recognized that in any culture the source of law is the god of that society. If law has its*
 44 *source in man’s reason, then reason is the god of that society. If the source is an oligarchy, or in a court,*
 45 *senate, or ruler, then that source is the god of that system. Thus, in Greek culture law was essentially a*
 46 *religiously humanistic concept,*

47 *In contrast to every law derived from revelation, nomos for the Greeks originated in the*
 48 *mind (nous). So the genuine nomos is no mere obligatory law, but something in which an*

1 entity valid in itself is discovered and appropriated...It is "the order which exists (from
2 time immemorial), is valid and is put into operation."⁷⁹

3 Because for the Greeks mind was one being with the ultimate order of things, man's mind was thus able to
4 discover ultimate law (nomos) out of its own resources, by penetrating through the maze of accident and matter
5 to the fundamental ideas of being. As a result, Greek culture became both humanistic, because man's mind was
6 one with ultimacy, and also neoplatonic, ascetic, and hostile to the world of matter, because mind, to be truly
7 itself, had to separate itself from non-mind.

8 **Modern humanism, the religion of the state, locates law in the state and thus makes the state, or the people**
9 **as they find expression in the state, the god of the system.** As Mao Tse-Tung has said, "Our God is none other
10 than the masses of the Chinese people."⁸⁰ In Western culture, law has steadily moved away from God to the
11 people (or the state) as its source, although the historic power and vitality of the West has been in Biblical faith
12 and law.

13 **Third, in any society, any change of law is an explicit or implicit change of religion. Nothing more clearly**
14 **reveals, in fact, the religious change in a society than a legal revolution. When the legal foundations shift**
15 **from Biblical law to humanism, it means that the society now draws its vitality and power from humanism,**
16 **not from Christian theism.**

17 Fourth, no disestablishment of religion as such is possible in any society. A church can be disestablished, and a
18 particular religion can be supplanted by another, but the change is simply to another religion. Since the
19 foundations of law are inescapably religious, no society exists without a religious foundation or without a law-
20 system which codifies the morality of its religion.

21 **Fifth, there can be no tolerance in a law-system for another religion. Toleration is a device used to introduce**
22 **a new law-system as a prelude to a new intolerance. Legal positivism, a humanistic faith, has been savage in**
23 **its hostility to the Biblical law-system and has claimed to be an "open" system. But Cohen, by no means a**
24 **Christian, has aptly described the logical positivists as "nihilists" and their faith as "nihilistic absolutism."⁸¹**
25 **Every law-system must maintain its existence by hostility to every other law-system and to alien religious**
26 **foundations or else it commits suicide.**

27 In analyzing now the nature of Biblical law, it is important to note first that, for the Bible, law is revelation. The
28 Hebrew word for law is torah which means instruction, authoritative direction.⁸² The Biblical concept of law is
29 broader than the legal codes of the Mosaic formulation. It applies to the divine word and instruction in its
30 totality:

31 ...the earlier prophets also use torah for the divine word proclaimed through them (Is.
32 viii. 16, cf. also v. 20; Isa. xxx. 9 f.; perhaps also Isa. i. 10). Besides this, certain
33 passages in the earlier prophets use the word torah also for the commandment of Yahweh
34 which was written down: thus Hos. viii. 12. Moreover there are clearly examples not only
35 of ritual matters, but also of ethics.

36 Hence it follows that at any rate in this period torah had the meaning of a divine
37 instruction, whether it had been written down long ago as a law and was preserved and
38 pronounced by a priest, or whether the priest was delivering it at that time (Lam. ii. 9;
39 Ezek. vii. 26; Mal. ii. 4 ff.), or the prophet is commissioned by God to pronounce it for a
40 definite situation (so perhaps Isa. xxx. 9).

41 Thus what is objectively essential in torah is not the form but the divine authority.⁸³

42 The law is the revelation of God and His righteousness. There is no ground in Scripture for despising the law.
43 Neither can the law be relegated to the Old Testament and grace to the New:

44 The time-honored distinction between the OT as a book of law and the NT as a book of
45 divine grace is without grounds or justification. Divine grace and mercy are the
46 presupposition of law in the OT; and the grace and love of God displayed in the NT
47 events issue in the legal obligations of the New Covenant. Furthermore, the OT contains

⁷⁹ Hermann Kleinknecht and W. Gutbrod, *Law* (London: Adam and Charles Black, 1962), p. 21

⁸⁰ Mao Tse-Tung, *The foolish Old Man Who Removed Mountains* (Peking: Foreign Languages Press, 1966), p. 3.

⁸¹ Morris Raphael Cohen, *Reason and Law* (New York: Collier Books, 1961), p. 84 f.

⁸² Ernest F. Kevan, *The Moral Law* (Jenkintown, Penna.: Sovereign Grace Publishers, 1963) p. 5 f. S.R. Driver, "Law (In Old Testament)," in James Hastings, ed., *A Dictionary of the Bible*, vol. III (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), p. 64.

⁸³ Keleinknecht and Gutbrod, *Law*, p. 44

1 evidence of a long history of legal developments which must be assessed before the place
2 of law is adequately understood. Paul's polemics against the law in Galatians and
3 Romans are directed against an understanding of law which is by no means
4 characteristic of the OT as a whole.⁸⁴

5 There is no contradiction between law and grace. The question in Jame's Epistle is faith and works, not faith
6 and law.⁸⁵ Judaism had made law the mediator between God and man, and between God and the world. It was
7 this view of law, not the law itself, which Jesus attacked. As Himself the Mediator, Jesus rejected the law as
8 mediator in order to re-establish the law in its God-appointed role as law, the way of holiness. He established
9 the law by dispensing forgiveness as the law-giver in full support of the law as the convicting word which makes
10 men sinners.⁸⁶ The law was rejected only as mediator and as the source of justification.⁸⁷ Jesus fully
11 recognized the law, and obeyed the law. It was only the absurd interpretations of the law He rejected.
12 Moreover,

13 We are not entitled to gather from the teaching of Jesus in the Gospels that He made any
14 formal distinction between the Law of Moses and the Law of God. His mission being not
15 to destroy but to fulfil the Law and the Prophets (Mt. 5:17), so far from saying anything
16 in disparagement of the Law of Moses or from encouraging His disciples to assume an
17 attitude of independence with regard to it, He expressly recognized the authority of the
18 Law of Moses as such, and of the Pharisees as its official interpreters. (Mt. 23:1-3).⁸⁸

19 With the completion of Christ's work, the role of the Pharisees as interpreters ended, but not the authority of the
20 Law. In the New Testament era, only apostolically received revelation was ground for any alteration in the law.
21 The authority of the law remained unchanged.

22 St. Peter, e.g. required a special revelation before he would enter the house of the
23 uncircumcised Cornelius and admit the first Gentile convert into the Church by baptism
24 (acts 10:1-48) --a step which did not fail to arouse opposition on the part of those who
25 "were of the circumcision" (cf. 11:1-18).⁸⁹

26 The second characteristic of Biblical law is that it is a treaty or covenant. Kline has shown that the form of the
27 giving of the law, the language of the text, the historical prologue, the requirement of imprecations and
28 benedictions, and much more, all point to the fact that the law is a treaty established by God with His people.
29 Indeed, "the revelation committed to the two tables was rather a suzerainty treaty or covenant than a legal
30 code."⁹⁰ The full covenant summary, the Ten Commandments, was inscribed on each of the two tables of stone,
31 one table or copy of the treaty for each party in the treaty, God and Israel.⁹¹

32 The two stone tables are not, therefore, to be likened to a stele containing one of the half-
33 dozen or so known legal codes earlier than or roughly contemporary with Moses as
34 though God had engraved on these tables a corpus of law. The revelation they contain is
35 nothing less than an epitome of the covenant granted by Yahweh, the sovereign Lord of
36 heaven and earth, to his elect and redeemed servant, Israel.

37 Not law, but covenant. That must be affirmed when we are seeking a category
38 comprehensive enough to do justice to this revelation in its totality. At the same time, the
39 prominence of the stipulations, reflect in the fact that "the ten words" are the element
40 used as pars pro toto, signifies the centrality of law in this type of covenant. There is
41 probably no clearer direction afforded the biblical theologian for defining with biblical
42 emphasis the type of covenant God adopted to formalize his relationship to his people
43 than that given in the covenant he gave Israel to perform, even "the ten commandments."

⁸⁴ W.J. Harrelson, "Law in the OT," in *The Interpreter's Dictionary of the Bible*, (New York: Abingdon Press, 1962), III, 77.

⁸⁵ Kelinknecht an Gutbrod, *Law*, p. 125.

⁸⁶ *Ibid*, pp. 74, 81-91.

⁸⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 95.

⁸⁸ Hugh H. Currie, "Law of God," in James Hastings, ed., *A Dictionary of Christ and the Gospels* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), I, 685.

⁸⁹ Olaf Moe, "Law," in James Hastings, ed., *Dictionary of the Apostolic Church* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1919), I, 685.

⁹⁰ Meredith G. Line, *Treaty of the Great King, The Covenant Structure of Deuteronomy: Studies and Commentary* (Grand Rapids: William B. Eerdmans, 1963), p. 16. See also J.A. Thompson: *The Ancient Near Easter Treaties and the Old Testament* (London: The Tyndale Press, 1964).

⁹¹ Kline, *op. cit.*, p. 19.

1 Such a covenant is a declaration of God's lordship, consecrating a people to himself in a
2 sovereignly dictated order of life.⁹²

3 This latter phrase needs re-emphasis: the covenant is "a sovereignly dictated order of life." God as the
4 sovereign Lord and Creator gives His law to man as an act of sovereign grace. It is an act of election, of
5 electing grace (Deut. 7:7 f.; 8:17; 9:4-6, etc.).

6 The God to whom the earth belongs will have Israel for His own property, Ex. xix. 5. It is
7 only on the ground of the gracious election and guidance of God that the divine
8 commands to the people are given, and therefore the Decalogue, Ex. xx. 2, places at its
9 forefront the fact of election.⁹³

10 In the law, the total life of man is ordered: "there is no primary distinction between the inner and the outer life;
11 the holy calling of the people must be realized in both."⁹⁴

12 The third characteristic of the Biblical law or covenant is that it constitutes a plan for dominion under God.
13 God called Adam to exercise dominion in terms of God's revelation, God's law (Gen. 1:26 ff.; 2:15-17). This
14 same calling, after the fall, was required of the godly line, and in Noah it was formally renewed (Gen. 9:1-17).
15 It was again renewed with Abraham, with Jacob, with Israel in the person of Moses, with Joshua, David,
16 Solomon (whose Proverbs echo the law), with Hezekiah and Josiah, and finally with Jesus Christ. The
17 sacrament of the Lord's Supper is the renewal of the covenant: "this is my blood of the new testament" (or
18 covenant), so that the sacrament itself re-establishes the law, this time with a new elect group (Matt. 26:28;
19 Mark 14:24; Luke 22:20; 1 Cor. 11:25). The people of the law are now the people of Christ, the believers
20 redeemed by His atoning blood and called by His sovereign election. Kline, in analyzing Hebrews 9:16, 17, in
21 relation to the covenant administration, observes:

22 ...the picture suggested would be that of Christ's children (cf. 2:13) inheriting his
23 universal dominion as their eternal portion (note 9:15b; cf. also 1:14; 2:5 ff.; 6:17; 11:7
24 ff.). And such is the wonder of the messianic Mediator-Testator that the royal inheritance
25 of his sons, which becomes of force only through his death, is nevertheless one of co-
26 regency with the living Testator! For (to follow the typographical direction provided by
27 Heb. 9:16,17 according to the present interpretation) Jesus is both dying Moses and
28 succeeding Joshua. Not merely after a figure but in truth a royal Mediator redivivus, he
29 secures the divine dynasty by succeeding himself in resurrection power and ascension
30 glory.⁹⁵

31 The purpose of God in requiring Adam to exercise dominion over the earth remains His continuing covenant
32 word: man, created in God's image and commanded to subdue the earth and exercise dominion over it in God's
33 name, is recalled to this task and privilege by his redemption and regeneration.

34 The law is therefore the law for Christian man and Christian society. Nothing is more deadly or more derelict
35 than the notion that the Christian is at liberty with respect to the kind of law he can have. Calvin whose
36 classical humanism gained ascendancy at this point, said of the laws of states, of civil governments:

37 I will briefly remark, however, by the way, what laws it (the state) may piously use before
38 God, and be rightly governed by among men. And even this I would have preferred
39 passing over in silence, if I did not know that it is a point on which many persons run into
40 dangerous errors. For some deny that a state is well constituted, which neglects the
41 polity of Moses, and is governed by the common laws of nations. The dangerous and
42 seditious nature of this opinion I leave to the examination of others; it will be sufficient
43 for me to have evinced it to be false and foolish.⁹⁶

44 Such ideas, common in Calvinist and Lutheran circles, and in virtually all churches, are still heretical
45 nonsense.⁹⁷ Calvin favored "the common law of nations." But the common law of nations in his day was
46 Biblical law, although extensively denatured by Roman law. And this "common law of nations" was
47 increasingly evidencing a new religion, humanism. Calvin wanted the establishment of the Christian religion;
48 he could not have it, nor could it last long in Geneva, without Biblical law.

⁹² Ibid., p. 17.

⁹³ Gustave Friedrich Oehler, *Theology of the Old Testament* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 1883), p. 177.

⁹⁴ Ibid., p. 182.

⁹⁵ Kline, *Treaty of the Great King*, p. 41.

⁹⁶ John Calvin, *Institutes of the Christian Religion*, bk. IV, chap. XX, para. Xiv. In the John Allen translation (Philadelphia: Presbyterian Board of Christian Education, 1936), II, 787 f.

⁹⁷ See H. de Jongste and J.M. van Krimpen, *The Bible and the Life of the Christian*, for similar opinions (Philadelphia: Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Co., 1968), p. 66 ff.

1 Two Reformed scholars, in writing of the state, declare, "It is to be God's servant, for our welfare. It must
2 exercise justice, and it has the power of the sword."⁹⁸ Yet these men follow Calvin in rejecting Biblical law for
3 "the common law of nations." But can the state be God's servant and by-pass God's law? And if the state "must
4 exercise justice," how is justice defined, by the nations, or by God? There are as many ideas of justice as there
5 are religions.

6 The question then is, what law is for the state? Shall it be positive law, after calling for "justice" in the state,
7 declare, "A static legislation valid for all times is an impossibility." Indeed!⁹⁹ Then what about the
8 commandment, Biblical legislation, if you please, "Thou shalt not kill," and "Thou shalt not steal"? **Are they not**
9 **intended to valid for all time and in every civil order? By abandoning Biblical law, these Protestant**
10 **theologians end up in moral and legal relativism.**

11 Roman Catholic scholars offer natural law. The origins of this concept are in Roman law and religion. For the
12 Bible, there is no law in nature, because nature is fallen and cannot be normative. Moreover the source of law
13 is not nature but God. There is no law in nature but a law over nature, God's law.¹⁰⁰

14 **Neither positive law [man's law] nor natural law can reflect more than the sin and apostasy of man: revealed**
15 **law [e.g. ONLY THE BIBLE] is the need and privilege of Christian society. It is the only means whereby**
16 **man can fulfill his creation mandate of exercising dominion under God. Apart from revealed law [the**
17 **BIBLE!], man cannot claim to be under God but only in rebellion against God.**

18 [*Institutes of Biblical Law*, Rousas John Rushdoony, 1973, The Craig Press, Library of Congress Catalog Card
19 Number 72-79485, pp. 4-5, Emphasis added]

20 To summarize the findings of this section:

- 21 1. The purpose of law is to describe and codify the morality of a culture. Since only religion can define morality, then all
22 law is religious in origin.
- 23 2. In any culture, the source of law becomes the god of that society. If law is based on Biblical law, then the God of that
24 society is the true God. If it becomes the judges or the rulers, who are at war with God, then these rulers become the
25 god of that society.
- 26 3. In any society, any change of law is an explicit or implicit change of religion.
- 27 4. The disestablishment of religion in any society is an impossibility, because all civilizations are based on law and law is
28 religious in nature.
- 29 5. There can be no tolerance in a law system for another religion. All religious systems eventually seek to destroy their
30 competition for the sake of self-preservation. Consequently, governments tend eventually to try to control or eliminate
31 religions in order to preserve and expand their power.
- 32 6. The laws of our society must derive from Biblical law. Any other result leads to "humanism", apostacy, and mutiny
33 against God, who is our only King and our Lawgiver.
- 34 7. Humanism is the worship of the "state", which is simply a collection of people under a democratic form of
35 government. By "worship", we mean obedience to the dictates and mandates of the collective majority. The United
36 States is NOT a democracy, it is a Republic based on individual rights and sovereignty, NOT collective sovereignty.
- 37 8. The consequence of humanism is moral relativism and disobedience to God's laws, which is sin and apostacy and leads
38 to separation from God.

39 **4.3.7 The Unlimited Liability Universe**

40 In the previous section, we showed how the shift in our culture away from Biblical law has taken us down the path to
41 "humanism", which turns the "state" or government into a religion and a law system that eventually focuses itself on
42 eradicating all other competing religions and law-systems in the society in order to ensure its own survival. Humanism is
43 the worship of the "state" and it is the essence of socialism. Recall that a "state" is simply a collection of people.

44 *"State. A people permanently occupying a fixed territory bound together by common-law habits and custom*
45 *into one body politic exercising, through the medium of an organized government, independent sovereignty and*
46 *control over all persons and things within its boundaries, capable of making war and peace and of entering into*

⁹⁸ *Ibid.*, p. 73.

⁹⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 75.

¹⁰⁰ The very term "nature" is mythical. See R.J. Rushdoony, "The Myth of Nature," in *The Mythology of Science* (Nutley, N.J.: The Craig Press, 1967), pp. 96-98.

1 international relations with other communities of the globe. *United States v. Kusche*, D.C.Cal., 56 F.Supp. 201
 2 207, 208. The organization of social life which exercises sovereign power in behalf of the people. *Delany v.*
 3 *Moralitis*, C.C.A.Md., 136 F.2d 129, 130. In its largest sense, a "state" is a body politic or a society of men.
 4 *Beagle v. Motor Vehicle Acc. Indemnification Corp.*, 44 Misc.2d 636, 254 N.Y.S.2d 763, 765. A body of people
 5 occupying a definite territory and politically organized under one government. *State ex re. Maisano v.*
 6 *Michell*, 155 Conn. 256, 231 A.2d 539, 542. A territorial unit with a distinct general body of law.
 7 *Restatement, Second, Conflicts*, §3. Term may refer either to body politic of a nation (e.g. United States) or to
 8 an individual government unit of such nation (e.g. California)."
 9 [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth, p. 1407]

10 We will build on that theme in this section to show how the inexorable growth of the power and influence of the state and
 11 of humanism is perpetrated in our culture. Much of the content of this section derives once again from the excellent book
 12 *Biblical Institutes of Law* by Rousas Rushdoony, 1972, pp. 664-669. The premise of this section is that the growth of
 13 humanism, socialism, and collectivism requires the government to exploit the weaknesses of the people. Thomas Jefferson
 14 warned us about this tendency of government, when he said:

15 "In every government on earth is some trace of human weakness, some germ of corruption and degeneracy,
 16 which cunning will discover, and wickedness insensibly open, cultivate and improve." --Thomas Jefferson:
 17 *Notes on Virginia Q.XIV, 1782. ME 2:207*

18 The chief weakness that covetous governments have learned to exploit in order to expand their power is to appeal to
 19 people's sinful need to **avoid responsibility** of all kinds and to thereby evade the consequence of their sinful, lazy, apathetic,
 20 and ignorant actions. People by nature are lazy and will always take the path of least resistance. They will often pay any
 21 price to evade responsibility for themselves and their actions, including giving up all their rights. In legal terms, the
 22 government therefore expands its power by:

- 23 1. Writing laws and creating programs that insulate people from responsibility for their actions and themselves.
- 24 2. Calling those who receive the benefit of these laws "privileged"
- 25 3. Instituting a tax on the "privileged" activities.
- 26 4. Persecuting those who speak out about the above types of exploitation.

27 In effect, the government "wolf" takes over the public fool (school) system, regulates the media, and coerces apathetic and
 28 cowardly employers everywhere into helping them manufacture "sheep" that it may devour and enslave.

29 "Most assuredly, I say to you, he who does not enter the sheepfold by the door, but climbs up some other way
 30 [using the Federal Reserve, the IRS, the media, and taking over the public schools], the same is a thief and a
 31 robber." [Jesus in John 10:1, Bible, NKJV]

32 "If you make yourselves sheep, the wolves will eat you." [Benjamin Franklin]

33 "A democracy is a sheep and two wolves deciding on what to have for lunch. Freedom is a well armed sheep
 34 contesting the results of the decision." [Benjamin Franklin]

35 "It is the duty of a good shepherd to shear his sheep, not to skin them." [Tiberius Caesar]

36 These sheep are "preprogrammed" to be irresponsible, dependent on government, dysfunctional, ignorant, apathetic, and
 37 lazy. They are taught to evade personal responsibility for every aspect of their behavior. In short, their sin and violation of
 38 God's laws has made them unable to govern or support themselves, and so they have given government the moral authority
 39 to step in as their "Parens Patriae", or government parent, to take over their lives and become an agent of plunder to support
 40 their sinful and irresponsible lifestyle. These sheep are trained and conditioned by our government "servants", like
 41 Pavlov's dogs, to succumb to the enticements of an evil government (called a "Beast" in the book of Revelations in the
 42 Bible) by participating in and partaking of the benefits of socialism and in so doing, they surrender their sovereignty to the
 43 totalitarian democratic "collective".

44 "A violent man entices his neighbor,
 45 And leads him in a way that is not good
 46 He winks his eye to devise perverse things;
 47 He purses [covers] his lips [by not telling the whole truth] and brings about evil."
 48 [Prov. 16:29-30, Bible, NKJV]

1 The brainwashed sheep are unwittingly recruited to join a mob full of treacherous socialists who want to plunder the rich by
 2 abusing their voting rights and their power sitting as a jurist. If a member of the flock of sheep balks at joining the socialist
 3 mob, they are censured and punished usually financially for being politically incorrect. They are denied a job or a socialist
 4 benefit and/or credit if they refuse to take the mark of the Beast, the Socialist Security Number, or refuse to fill out a W-4 to
 5 begin withholding taxes. Those who participate in this brand of socialism all share “one purse”, and make the government
 6 effectively into one big social insurance company to insulate themselves from responsibility for their own laziness, apathy,
 7 greed, and sin. The role of government in a republic then transitions from that of only protecting the people to that of
 8 punishing and plundering success while rewarding and encouraging failure. Here is how the Bible says we should view
 9 this, and note that it says this is “evil” and that we should not participate in it:

10 *Avoid Bad Company*

11 **“My son, if sinners [socialists, in this case] entice you,**
 12 **Do not consent**
 13 **If they say, “Come with us,**
 14 **Let us lie in wait to shed blood;**
 15 **Let us lurk secretly for the innocent without cause;**
 16 *Let us swallow them alive like Sheol,*
 17 *And whole, like those who go down to the Pit:*
 18 **We shall fill our houses with spoil [plunder];**
 19 **Cast in your lot among us,**
 20 **Let us all have one purse”--**
 21 *My son, do not walk in the way with them,*
 22 *Keep your foot from their path;*
 23 *For their feet run to evil,*
 24 *And they make haste to shed blood.*
 25 *Surely, in vain the net is spread*
 26 *In the sight of any bird;*
 27 **But they lie in wait for their own blood.**
 28 **They lurk secretly for their own lives.**
 29 **So are the ways of everyone who is greedy for gain;**
 30 **It takes away the life of its owners.”**
 31 *[Proverbs 1:10-19, Bible, NKJV]*

32 God, however, wants us to follow His sacred law, and the result of doing so makes government unnecessary, because we
 33 become self-governing and self-supporting and do not make government into a false god or become idolaters in the process:

34 *“He [God] brings the princes to nothing.*
 35 *He makes the judges of the earth useless.”*
 36 *[Isaiah 40:23, Bible, NKJV]*

37 *“How long will you slumber, O sluggard?*
 38 *When will you rise from your sleep?*
 39 *A little sleep, a little slumber,*
 40 *A little folding of the hands to sleep--*
 41 *So shall your poverty come on you like a prowler,*
 42 *And your need like an armed man [from the government/IRS].”*
 43 *[Prov. 6:9-11, Bible, NKJV]*

44 *“The hand of the diligent will rule,*
 45 *But the lazy man will be put to forced labor [working for the government through income taxes].”*
 46 *[Prov. 12:24, Bible, NKJV]*

47 After government has exploited our own sinfulness to make us ripe for their political control, domination, and oppression, a
 48 huge monolithic government bureaucracy steps in as our “sugar daddy” or “Parens Patriae” and not only offers but
 49 demands to help us run our marriages, our financial affairs, our businesses, and forces us to pay taxes to support the
 50 infrastructure needed to do this. In many cases, they force us to pay for services and benefits that we don’t want! What
 51 business within a truly free economy could force you to buy or use their product other than a monopoly, and aren’t
 52 monopolies illegal under the Sherman Antitrust Act? Tyrants in government thereby appear to the ignorant and complacent
 53 masses of sheep as God’s avengers to “harvest” (STEAL) our property, our liberty, our labor, and everything else they
 54 covet and lust after, and we not only willingly accept their domination, but we beg for it by demanding ever more
 55 increasing amounts of “free” government services! The resulting evasion of responsibility and acquiescence to government
 56 usury by the sheep manifests itself in many forms, a few of which we have summarized below:

1 Table 4-2: The characteristics of the irresponsible and how the government panders to them

#	Type of irresponsibility	How the government and liberal culture exploits this form of irresponsibility for their own gain	How the churches reward and encourage this type of irresponsibility
1	Do not want to take responsibility for the consequences of their sin	Passing laws that legalize sinful behaviors. Promising to pass such laws during election time in order to curry favor with voters.	Smorgasbord religion. Pick the set of beliefs that best benefits you. Focus on “grace” and “love” absent an emphasis on obeying God’s laws.
2	Do not want to take responsibility for supporting themselves	Creating Social welfare programs such as Medicare, Welfare, Temporary Aid to Needy Families (TANF), food stamps.	Tithes the churches receive are supposed to be used for charity purposes but pastors jealously guard their contributions to maximize their “take”. Then they try to steer the sheep toward government entitlement programs to make up for their greed and their lack of charity.
3	Do not want to take responsibility for their sexual sin	Passes laws allowing children to get condoms in schools. Teaches sex education instead of abstinence in schools. Institutes “don’t ask don’t tell” policies in the military. Supreme court declaring abortion legal, which is the murder of defenseless children.	Churches look the other way when parishoners get abortions and do not protest the holocaust of abortion by participating in such things as Operation Rescue.
4	Do not want to take responsibility for making their marriage work	Offer marriage licenses that put family court judges in charge of you, your income, and all your assets.	Churches also demanding that their parishoners get a marriage license before they will officiate a ceremony. That way people getting married don’t become the churches problem, but instead can be handled by corrupted family courts.
5	Do not want to take responsibility for educating or raising their kids	Offer public schools, so that parents do not have to confederate and start private Christian schools to educate their children. Teaching the young sinful behaviors such as homosexuality, abortion, drugs so they make easy serfs of government. Showing them how to fill out income tax returns in high school before they even know how to balance a checkbook.	Pastors avoiding moral training in church, so that children growing up in single-parent families never learn how to govern themselves from their busy parents and must therefore depend on government to do for them what they cannot do for themselves.
6	Do not want to take responsibility for their retirement	Offer Socialist Security and federal retirement programs and do not offer employees the option of taking money earmarked for retirement and investing and controlling it themselves. This leaves large sums of money in control of the government, which they then use as a carrot to force you to pay income taxes because if you don’t, they will turn it over to the IRS.	Not warning people that they should not depend on government and that they should take 100% responsibility for themselves.
7	Do not want to tithe to their church	Federal subsidies for charities, which carry with it the requirement for the churches to not criticize government or oppose its illegal enforcement of income tax laws. Example: President Bush’s faith-based initiative.	Pastors not chastising parishoners who do not tithe for their greed and robbery of God, for fear of scaring away the sheep. Pastors ingratiating or poaching generous parishoners (sheep) from other churches to join their church.
8	Do not want to take responsibility for bad business decisions	Creating a privileged status called “corporations”, in which liability for wrongdoing is limited. This encourages reckless investment, bad business practices, and corruption like we have been seeing lately with Enron, Worldcom, etc. Income taxes on corporations then, amount essentially to “liability insurance”.	Not censuring or excommunicating those in the congregation who have committed civil crimes involving business corruption and refuse to repent.
9	Do not want to take responsibility for hurting others in the process of operating a motor vehicle	Government passes laws forcing people to have insurance in order to have the “privilege” of driving.	

1 The ultimate result of the universal and complete adoption of the above concepts is as follows, which is a parody of the
2 content of the Bible, Psalms 23:

3 *DEMOCRAT'S 23rd PSALM*

4 *The government is my Shepherd,*
5 *therefore I shall not work.*
6 *It alloweth me to lie down on a good job.*
7 *It leadeth me beside still factories;*
8 *it destroyeth my initiative,*
9 *It leadeth me in the path of a parasite*
10 *for politic's sake.*

11 *Yea, though I walk through the valley*
12 *of laziness and deficit spending,*
13 *I will fear no evil, for the government is with me.*

14 *It prepareth an economic Utopia for me,*
15 *by borrowing from future generations.*
16 *It filleth my head with false security;*
17 *my inefficiency runneth over.*

18 *Surely the government should take care of me*
19 *all the days of my life!*
20 *And I will dwell in a welfare state forever and ever.*

21
22
23
24
25 In the legal field, the process of evading responsibility is called "avoiding liability". Amazingly, the government openly
26 admits that it is one big insurance company which exists to insulate people from all types of liability! Here is what one
27 Congressman said during the Congressional debates on the Sixteenth Amendment, which is the income tax amendment:

28 *"M. Thiers, the great French statesman, says, 'a tax paid by a citizen to his government is like a premium paid*
29 *by the insured to the insurance company, and should be in proportion to the amount of property insured in one*
30 *case and the other to the amount of property protected or defended [or managed] by the government.'"*
31 *[44 Cong.Rec. 4959 (1909)]*

32 The natural consequence of the logic of the quote above is that the less responsibility we are willing to assume for
33 ourselves, the greater will be our tax rate and the corresponding slavery to government that goes with it. If you trace the
34 percentage of the average American family's income which goes to pay state and federal taxes over the last 100 years, we
35 can see in numerical terms the shift away from personal responsibility and the rise of the "collective" as the sovereign in
36 our society. This information reveals how we have abandoned the original Constitutional Republican model based on faith
37 and personal responsibility, and gradually drifted to a socialist/humanistic economy like most of the rest of the nations in
38 the world. God warned us that this would happen but we simply refuse to heed Him because of the hedonistic stupor our
39 government has put us into by bribing us with "free" government benefits and programs subsidized with STOLEN loot
40 through illegally enforced income tax laws:

41 *"And they rejected His statutes and His covenant that He had made with their fathers, and His testimonies [His*
42 *Law/Bible] which He had testified against them; they followed [government] idols, became idolaters, and went*
43 *after the nations who were all around them, concerning whom the LORD had charged them that they should*
44 *not do like them. So they left all the commandments of the LORD their God, made for themselves a molded*
45 *image and two calves, made a wooden image and worshiped all the host of heaven, and served Baal. And*
46 *they caused their sons and daughters to pass through the fire, practiced witchcraft and soothsaying, and sold*
47 *themselves [through usurious taxes] to do evil in the sight of the LORD, to provoke Him to anger. Therefore*
48 *the LORD was very angry with Israel, and removed them from His sight; there was none left but the tribe of*
49 *Judah alone." [2 Kings 17:15-18, Bible, NKJV]*

50 One congressman has actually quantified this shift from personal to collective responsibility in a wonderful article entitled
51 "The Coming Crisis: How Government Dependency Threatens America's Freedom" available on our website at:

52 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Freedom/Articles/ComingCrisis-01508.pdf>

53 Governments therefore know that people don't want to have to accept responsibility or liability and they use this sinful
54 human tendency to expand their power and revenues by transferring responsibility to themselves. The transfer of
55 responsibility from us as individuals to the government cannot occur, however, without a transfer of sovereignty with it.

The Great IRS Hoax: Why We Don't Owe Income Tax, version 3.59

TOP SECRET: For Official Treasury/IRS Use Only (FOUO)

Copyright Christopher M. Hansen

<http://famguardian.org/>

1 *Sovereignty and dependency are mutually exclusive.* The buck has to stop somewhere, and when we won't take
 2 responsibility for ourselves, we have to surrender sovereignty to the collective democracy, and this eventually leads to
 3 socialism and humanism. This abdication of our responsibilities also amounts to a violation of God's laws. Christians
 4 have a MUCH higher calling with their God than simply to depend on a bloated and evil socialist government to subsidize
 5 their idleness and hedonism with funds that were stolen from their brother through illegal extortion and constructive fraud:

6 *"You shall not follow a crowd to do evil; nor shall you testify in a dispute so as to turn aside after many to*
 7 *pervert justice." [Exodus 23:2, Bible, NKJV]*

8
 9 *"Now about brotherly love we do not need to write to you, for you yourselves have been taught by God to love*
 10 *each other. And in fact, you do love all the brothers throughout Macedonia. Yet we urge you, brothers, to do so*
 11 *more and more.*

12 *"Make it your ambition to lead a quiet life, to mind your own business and to work with your hands, just as*
 13 *we told you, so that your daily life may win the respect of outsiders and so that you will not be dependent on*
 14 *anybody." [1 Thess. 4:9-12, Bible, NIV]*

15 A limited liability company is one in which the liability of each shareholder is limited to the amount of his shares or stocks,
 16 or to a sum fixed by guarantee called "limited liability guarantee". The purpose of limited liability laws is to limit
 17 responsibility. Although the ostensible purpose is to protect the shareholders, the practical effect is to limit their
 18 responsibility and therefore encourage recklessness in investment. A limited liability economy is socialistic. By seeking to
 19 protect people, a limited liability economy merely transfers responsibility away from the people to the state, where "central
 20 government planning" supposedly obviates personal responsibility. Limited liability encourages people to take chances
 21 with limited risks, and to sin economically without paying the price. Limited liability laws rest on the fallacy that payment
 22 for economic sins need not be made. In actuality, payment is simply transferred to others. Limited liability laws were
 23 unpopular in earlier, Christian eras but have flourished in the Darwinian world. They rest on important religious
 24 presuppositions.

25 In a statement central to his account, C.S. Lewis described his preference, prior to his conversion to Christianity, for a
 26 materialistic, atheistic universe. The advantages of such a world are the very limited demands it makes on a man.

27 *To such a craven and materialist's universe has the enormous attraction that it offered you limited liabilities.*
 28 *No strictly infinite disaster could overtake you in it. Death ended all. And if ever finite disasters proved greater*
 29 *than one wished to bear, suicide would always be possible. The horror of the Christian universe was that it had*
 30 *no door marked Exit...But, of course, what mattered most of all was my deep-seated hatred of authority, my*
 31 *monstrous individualism, my lawlessness. No word in my vocabulary expressed deeper hatred than the word*
 32 *Interference. But Christianity placed at the center what then seemed to me a transcendental Interferer. If this*
 33 *picture were true then no sort of "treaty with reality" could ever be possible. There was no region even in the*
 34 *innermost depth of one's soul (nay, there least of all) which one could surround with a barbed wire fence and*
 35 *guard with a notice of No Admittance. And that was what I wanted; some area, however small, of which I could*
 36 *say to all other beings, "This is my business and mine only."¹⁰¹*

37 This is an excellent summation of the matter. The atheist wants a limited liability universe, and he seeks to create a limited
 38 liability political and economic order. The more socialistic he becomes, the more he demands a maximum advantage and a
 39 limited liability from his social order, an impossibility.

40 In reality, living with the fact that the universe and our world carry always unlimited liabilities is the best way to assure
 41 security and advantage. To live with reality, and to seek progress within its framework, is man's best security.

42 The curses and the blessings of the law stress man's unlimited liability to both curses and blessings as a result of
 43 disobedience or obedience to the law. In [Deuteronomy 28:2](#) and [15](#), we are told that the curses and blessings come upon us
 44 and "overtake" us. Man cannot step outside of the world of God's consequence. At every moment and at every point man
 45 is overtaken, surrounded, and totally possessed by the unlimited liability of God's universe.

¹⁰¹ C.S. Lewis, *Surprised by Joy* (New York: Harcourt, Brace, 1956), p. 171 f.

1 Man seeks to escape this unlimited liability either through a denial of the true God, or by a pseudo-acceptance which denies
2 the meaning of God. In atheism, the attitude of man is well summarized by William Ernest Henley's poem, "Invictus."
3 Henley boasted of his "unconquerable soul" and declared,

4 *I am the master of my fate;*
5 *I am the captain of my soul*

6 Not surprisingly, the poem has been very popular with immature and rebellious adolescents.

7 Pseudo-acceptance, common to mysticism, pietism, and pseudo evangelicals, claims to have "accepted Christ" while
8 denying His law. One college youth, very much given to evangelizing everyone in sight, not only denied the law as an
9 article of his faith, in speaking to this writer, but went further. Asked if he would approve of young men and women
10 working in a house of prostitution as whores and pimps to convert the inmates, he did not deny this as a valid possibility.
11 He went on to affirm that many of his friends were converting girls and patrons wholesale by invading the houses to
12 evangelize one and all. He also claimed wholesale conversion of homosexuals, but he could cite no homosexuals who
13 ceased the practice after their conversion; nor any whores or their patrons who left the houses with their "evangelizers."
14 Such lawless "evangelism" is only blasphemy.

15 In the so-called "Great Awakening" in colonial New England, antinomianism, chiliasm, and false perfectionism went hand
16 in hand. Many of these "holy ones" forsook their marriage for adulterous relations, denied the law, and claimed immediate
17 perfection and immortality.¹⁰²

18 What such revivalism and pietism espouses is a limited liability universe in God's name. It is thus atheism under the banner
19 of Christ. It claims freedom from God's sovereignty and denies predestination. It denies the law, and it denies the validity
20 of the curses and blessings of the law. Such a religion is interested only in what it can get out of God: hence, "grace" is
21 affirmed, and "love," but not the law, nor God's sovereign power and decree. But smorgasbord religion is only humanism,
22 because it affirms the right of man to pick and choose what he wants; as the ultimate arbiter of his fate, man is made captain
23 of his soul, with an assist from God. Pietism thus offers limited liability religion, not Biblical faith.

24 According to Heer, the medieval mystic Eckhart gave to the soul a "sovereign majesty together with God. The next step
25 was taken by the disciple, Johannes of Star Alley, who asked if the word of the soul was not as mighty as the word of the
26 Heavenly Father."¹⁰³ In such a faith, the new sovereign is man, and unlimited liability is in process of being transferred to
27 God.

28 In terms of the Biblical doctrine of God, absolutely no liabilities are involved in the person and work of the Godhead.
29 God's eternal decree and sovereign power totally govern and circumscribe all reality, which is His creation. Because man is
30 a creature, man faces unlimited liability; his sins have temporal and eternal consequences, and he cannot at any point escape
31 God. Van Til has summed up the matter powerfully:

32 *The main point is that if man could look anywhere and not be confronted with the revelation of God then he*
33 *could not sin in the Biblical sense of the term. Sin is the breaking of the law of God. God confronts man*
34 *everywhere. He cannot in the nature of the case confront man anywhere if he does not confront him*
35 *everywhere. God is one; the law is one. If man could press one button on the radio of his experience and not*
36 *hear the voice of God then he would always press that button and not the others. But man cannot even press*
37 *the button of his own self-consciousness without hearing the requirement of God.*¹⁰⁴

38 But man wants to reverse this situation. Let God be liable, if He fails to deliver at man's request. Let man declare that his
39 own experience pronounces himself to be saved, and then he can continue his homosexuality or work in a house of
40 prostitution, all without liability. Having pronounced the magic formula, "I accept Jesus Christ as my personal lord and
41 savior," man then transfers almost all the liability to Christ and can sin without at most more than a very limited liability.
42 Christ cannot be accepted if His sovereignty, His law, and His word are denied. To deny the law is to accept a works

¹⁰² C.C. Goen, *Revivalism and Separatism in New England, 1740-1800, Strict Congregationalists and Separate Baptists in the Great Awakening* (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1962), p. 200 f.

¹⁰³ Friedrich Heer, *The Intellectual History of Europe*, p. 179.

¹⁰⁴ Cornelius Van Til, *A Letter on Common Grace* (Philadelphia: Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Company, 1955), p. 40 f.

1 religion, because it means denying God's sovereignty and assuming man's existence in independence of God's total law and
 2 government. In a world where God functions only to remove the liability of hell, and no law governs man, man works his
 3 own way through life by his own conscience. Man is saved, in such a world, by his own work of faith, of accepting Christ,
 4 not by Christ's sovereign acceptance of him. Christ said, "Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you" ([John 15:16](#)).
 5 The pietist insists that *he* has chosen Christ; it is *his* work, not Christ's. Christ, in such a faith, serves as an insurance agent,
 6 as a guarantee against liabilities, not as sovereign lord. This is paganism in Christ's name.

7 In paganism, the worshipper was not in existence. Man did not worship the pagan deities, nor did services of worship
 8 occur. The temple was open every day as a place of business. The pagan entered the temple and bought the protection of a
 9 god by a gift or offering. If the god failed him, he thereafter sought the services of another. The pagan's quest was for an
 10 insurance, for limited liability and unlimited blessings, and, as the sovereign believer, he shopped around for the god who
 11 offered the most. Pagan religion was thus a transaction, and, as in all business transactions, no certainty was involved. The
 12 gods could not always deliver, but man's hope was that, somehow, his liabilities would be limited.

13 The "witness" of pietism, with its "victorious living," is to a like limited liability religion. A common "witness" is, "Praise
 14 the Lord, since I accepted Christ, all my troubles are over and ended." The witness of Job in his suffering was, "Though he
 15 slay me, yet will I trust him" ([Job 13:15](#)). St. Paul recited the long and fearful account of his sufferings *after* accepting
 16 Christ: in prison, beaten, shipwrecked, stoned, betrayed, "in hunger and thirst,...in cold and nakedness" ([II Cor. 11:23-27](#)).
 17 Paul's was not a religion of limited liability nor of deliverance from all troubles because of his faith.

18 **The world is a battlefield, and there are casualties and wounds in battle, but the battle is the Lord's and its end is**
 19 **victory. To attempt an escape from the battle is to flee from the liabilities of warfare against sinful men for battle**
 20 **with an angry God. To face the battle is to suffer the penalties of man's wrath and the blessings of God's grace and**
 21 **law.**

22 Apart from Jesus Christ, men are judicially dead, i.e., under a death sentence, before God, no matter how moral their works.
 23 With regeneration, the beginning of true life, man does not move out from under God's unlimited liability. Rather, with
 24 regeneration, man moves from the world of unlimited liability under the curse, to the world of unlimited liability under
 25 God's blessings. The world and man were cursed when Adam and Eve sinned, but, in Jesus Christ, man is blessed, and the
 26 world progressively reclaimed and redeemed for Him. In either case, the world is under God's law. Blessings and curses
 27 are thus inseparable from God's law and are simply different relationships to it.

28 Men inescapably live in a world of unlimited liability, but with a difference. The covenant-breaker, at war with God and
 29 unregenerate, has an unlimited liability for the curse. Hell is the final statement of that unlimited liability. The objections
 30 to hell, and the attempts to reduce it to a place of probation or correction, are based on a rejection of unlimited liability. But
 31 the unregenerate has, according to Scripture, an unlimited liability to judgment and the curse. On the other hand, the
 32 regenerate man, who walks in obedience to Jesus Christ, his covenant head, has a limited liability to judgment and the
 33 curse. The unlimited liability of God's wrath was assumed for the elect by Jesus Christ upon the cross. The regenerate man
 34 is judged for his transgressions of the law of God, but his liability here is a limited one, whereas his liability for blessings in
 35 this life and in heaven are unlimited. The unregenerate can experience a limited measure of blessing in this life, and none
 36 in the world to come; they have at best a limited liability for blessing.

37 **Man thus cannot escape an unlimited liability universe. The important question is this: in which area is he exposed**
 38 **to unlimited liability, to an unlimited liability to the curse because of his separation from God, or to an unlimited**
 39 **liability to blessing because of his faith in, union with, and obedience to Jesus Christ?**

40 Along the lines of this section, a reader sent us the following poem which summarizes why our lives will amount to nothing
 41 if we do not accept personal responsibility for ourself and learn to accept the unlimited liability that God bestowed upon us
 42 as part of his death sentence for our disobedience in the book of Genesis:

43 **Risk..**

44 *To weep...*
 45 *is to risk appearing sentimental,*

1	<i>To hope...</i>
2	<i>is to risk despair,</i>
3	<i>To reach out for another...</i>
4	<i>is to risk involvement,</i>
5	<i>To try...</i>
6	<i>is to risk failure,</i>
7	<i>To expose feelings...</i>
8	<i>is to risk exposing your true self,</i>
9	<i>To place your ideas, your dreams before the crowd...</i>
10	<i>is to risk their loss,</i>
11	<i>To love is to risk...</i>
12	<i>not being loved in return,</i>
13	<i>To live...</i>
14	<i>is to risk dying,</i>
15	<i>But risks must be taken because the greatest hazard in life,</i>
16	<i>is to risk nothing.</i>
17	<i>The person who risks nothing, does nothing, has nothing, and is nothing. They may avoid suffering and sorrow,</i>
18	<i>but they cannot learn, feel, change, grow, love, and live. Chained by their certitudes, they are a slave, they have</i>
19	<i>forfeited their freedom.</i>
20	<i>Only a person who risks.</i>
21	<i>is free.</i>

22 **4.3.8 The result of violating God's laws or putting man's laws above God's laws is slavery, servitude, and**

23 **captivity**

24 The Bible vividly describes what happens when the people choose to disregard God's laws and follow only the laws of men
 25 or of governments made up of men. The result of disregarding God's laws and substituting in their place man's vain laws
 26 is slavery, servitude, and captivity for any society that does this. The greater the conflict or deviation between man's laws
 27 and God's laws, the more severe the punishment and oppression and wrath will be that God will inflict:

28 *But to the wicked, God says:*

29 **"What right have you to declare My statutes [write man's vain law], or take My covenant [the Bible] in your**
 30 **mouth, seeing you hate instruction and cast My words behind you? When you saw a thief, you consented with**
 31 **him, and have been a partaker with adulterers. You give your mouth to evil, and your tongue frames deceit.**
 32 **You sit and speak against your brother; you slander your own mother's son. These things you have done, and I**
 33 **kept silent; you thought that I was altogether like you; but I will reprove you, and set them in order before your**
 34 **eyes. Now consider this, you who forget God, lest I tear you in pieces, and there be none to deliver: Whoever**
 35 **offers praise glorifies Me; and to him who orders his conduct aright I will show the salvation of God."**
 36 **[Psalms 50:16-23, Bible, NKJV]**

37 Below is an excerpt from the Bible that illustrates the point we are trying to make in this section, found in 2 Kings 17:5-23.
 38 The governments described below that violated God's laws and thereby alienated themselves from God consisted of kings,
 39 but today's equivalent is our politicians, who by law should be *servants* but who through extortion under the color of law in
 40 illegally enforcing income taxes, have made themselves into the equivalent of kings.

41 Israel Carried Captive to Assyria

42 ⁵ *Now the king of Assyria went throughout all the land, and went up to Samaria and besieged it for three years.*
 43 ⁶ *In the ninth year of Hoshea, the king of Assyria took Samaria and carried Israel away to Assyria, and placed*
 44 *them in Halah and by the Habor, the River of Gozan, and in the cities of the Medes.*

45 ⁷ **For so it was that the children of Israel had sinned against the LORD their God, who had brought them up**
 46 **out of [slavery in] the land of Egypt, from under the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt; and they had feared other**

1 gods, ⁸and had walked in the statutes of the nations whom the LORD had cast out from before the children of
 2 Israel, and of the kings of Israel, which they had made. ⁹Also the children of Israel secretly did against the
 3 LORD their God things that were not right, and they built for themselves high places in all their cities, from
 4 watchtower to fortified city. ¹⁰They set up for themselves sacred pillars and wooden images¹¹ on every high hill
 5 and under every green tree. ¹¹There they burned incense on all the high places, like the nations whom the LORD
 6 had carried away before them; and they did wicked things to provoke the LORD to anger, ¹²for they served
 7 idols [governments and laws and kings], of which the LORD had said to them, "You shall not do this thing."

8 ¹³Yet the LORD testified against Israel and against Judah, by all of His prophets, every seer, saying, "Turn
 9 from your evil ways, and keep My commandments and My statutes, according to all the law which I
 10 commanded your fathers, and which I sent to you by My servants the prophets." ¹⁴Nevertheless they would
 11 not hear, but stiffened their necks, like the necks of their fathers, who did not believe in the LORD their God.
 12 ¹⁵And they rejected His statutes and His covenant that He had made with their fathers, and His testimonies
 13 which He had testified against them; they followed idols, became idolaters, and went after the nations who
 14 were all around them, concerning whom the LORD had charged them that they should not do like them. ¹⁶So
 15 they left all the commandments of the LORD their God, made for themselves a molded image and two calves,
 16 made a wooden image and worshiped all the host of heaven, and served Baal. ¹⁷And they caused their sons and
 17 daughters to pass through the fire, practiced witchcraft and soothsaying, and sold themselves [through
 18 usurious taxes] to do evil in the sight of the LORD, to provoke Him to anger. ¹⁸Therefore the LORD was very
 19 angry with Israel, and removed them from His sight; there was none left but the tribe of Judah alone.

20 ¹⁹Also Judah did not keep the commandments of the LORD their God, but walked in the statutes of Israel
 21 which they made. ²⁰And the LORD rejected all the descendants of Israel, afflicted them, and delivered them
 22 into the hand of plunderers, until He had cast them from His sight. ²¹For He tore Israel from the house of
 23 David, and they made Jeroboam the son of Nebat king. Then Jeroboam drove Israel from following the LORD,
 24 and made them commit a great sin. ²²For the children of Israel walked in all the sins of Jeroboam which he did;
 25 they did not depart from them, ²³until the LORD removed Israel out of His sight, as He had said by all His
 26 servants the prophets. So Israel was carried away from their own land to Assyria, as it is to this day.

27 Therefore, the surest way to incur the wrath of God against you is to disregard or violate His Laws, or to put the
 28 commandments and laws and governments of men above obedience to His sacred laws. We must have our priorities
 29 straight or we may dishonor God and violate the first four commandments of the Ten Commandments, which require us to
 30 love and trust and honor God above and beyond any earthly government. If we put man's laws above God's laws on our
 31 priority list, then we are committing idolatry toward a man-made thing called government, as we explained earlier in
 32 section 4.1.

33 We will describe later in section 4.18 a few examples where the modern day vain laws of our government conflict with
 34 God's laws. These conflicts of law force us into the circumstance where we must make a choice in our obedience and
 35 allegiance. The choice of which of those two we should obey when there is such a conflict ought to be quite evident to
 36 those who have read the passage above.

37 **4.3.9 Government-instituted slavery using "privileges"**

38 *"In the matter of taxation, every privilege is an injustice." -- Voltaire*

39 *"The more you want, the more the world can hurt you." Confucius*

40 *"If you think of yourselves as helpless and ineffectual, it is certain that you will create a despotic government to*
 41 *be your master. The wise despot, therefore, maintains among his subjects a popular sense that they are helpless*
 42 *and ineffectual." Frank Herbert, The Dosadi Experiment*

43 Anyone who has been married instinctively knows what "privilege-induced slavery" is. They understand that you have to
 44 give up some of your "rights" for the benefits and "privileges" associated with being married. For instance, one of the
 45 rights that the government forces you to give up using the instrument it created called the "marriage license", especially if
 46 you are a man, is sovereignty over your property and your labor. As we said in the previous section, if you get married
 47 with a state marriage license, then control over your property and labor is surrendered ultimately to the government,
 48 because if your spouse becomes dissatisfied, the marriage license gives the government absolute authority to hijack all your
 49 property and your labor for the imputed "public good", but as you will find out, the chief result of this hijacking is actually
 50 injustice. The marriage license authorizes a family law judge to abuse your property and your labor without your voluntary
 51 consent to create a welfare state for women intent on rebelling against their husbands and using marriage as a means of
 52 economic equalization. We explain in our book entitled Sovereign Christian Marriage that this very characteristic of
 53 marriage licenses issued by the state accomplishes the following unjust results:

- 1 • Usurps and rebels against the sovereignty of God by interfering with His plan for marriage and family clearly spelled out in the Bible.
- 2
- 3 • Encourages spouses to get divorced, because at least one of them will be financially rewarded with the property and labor of the other for doing so.
- 4
- 5 • Makes marriage into legalized prostitution, where the sex comes during the marriage and the money comes after
- 6 marriage and the state and family court judge becomes the pimp and the family law attorneys become tax
- 7 collectors for the pimp.

8 The above defects in the institution of marriage caused by the government “privilege” called state-issued marriage licenses, of course, are the natural result of violating God’s/Natural law on marriage found in the Bible, where Eph. 5:22-24 makes the man, and not the government or the woman, the sovereign in the context of families. This is what happens whenever mankind rebels against God’s authority by trying to improve on God’s design for the family: massive injustice. Remember, that God created man first, and out of man’s rib was created woman, which makes man the sovereign, and this conclusion is completely consistent with the concept of Natural Order we discussed earlier in section 4.1.

14 *“For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, since he is made in the image and glory of God; but woman is the glory of man. For man is not from woman, but woman from man. Nor was man created for the woman, but woman for the man.” [1 Cor. 11:7-9, Bible, NKJV]*

17 If you are going to arrogantly call this attitude chauvinistic, politically incorrect, or bigoted then you’re slapping God in the face and committing blasphemy because this is the way GOD designed the system and who are YOU to question that?

19 *“But indeed, O man, who are you to reply against God? Will the thing formed say to him who formed it, ‘Why have you made me like this?’ Does not the potter have power over the clay, from the same lump to make one vessel for honor and another for dishonor?” [Romans 9:20-21, Bible, NKJV]*

22 If you would like to learn more about this subject, we refer you to our free Sovereign Christian Marriage book posted on our website at:

24 <http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Marriage/SovChristianMarriage.pdf>

25 The government uses this very same concept of privilege-induced slavery in the “constructive contract” you in effect sign by becoming a “citizen” or availing yourself of a government benefit. Here is the phrase that one of our astute readers uses to describe it in his book Social Security, Mark of the Beast, which is posted on our website for your reading pleasure:

28 *“Protection draws subjection.” Steven Miller*

29 In a sense, when you become a “citizen”, you “marry” the state in order to have its protection, and we’ll talk about the terms of this constructive “marriage contract” later in section 4.11. You marry the state by promising it “allegiance” (see 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21) and 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(22)(B)), which is just fancy legal term for obedience and fidelity and mutual protection. Here is the way the U.S. supreme Court describes this marriage contract:

33 *“There cannot be a nation without a people. The very idea of a political community, such as a nation is, implies an [88 U.S. 162, 166] association of persons for the promotion of their general welfare. Each one of the persons associated becomes a member of the nation formed by the association. He owes it allegiance and is entitled to its protection. Allegiance and protection are, in this connection, reciprocal obligations. The one is a compensation for the other; allegiance for protection and protection for allegiance.” [Minor v. Happersett, 88 U.S. (21 Wall.) 162, 166-168 (1874)]*

39 Like marriage licenses, signing the “citizenship contract” means you give up some of your rights, and as a matter of fact, the government wants you to believe that you give up the same rights by becoming a citizen as you do by getting a marriage license. When you marry the federal government by becoming a “U.S. citizen”, you in effect are assimilated into the federal corporation called the “United States” defined in 28 U.S.C. §3002(15)(A) and are classified by the courts as an officer of that corporation in receipt of taxable privileges. You also then become completely subject to the jurisdiction of that corporation. If you are a child of God, at the point when you married the state as a citizen, you united God with an idolatrous, mammon state and sold yourself into legal slavery voluntarily, in direct violation of the Bible:

1 "No one can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the
2 one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon." [Matt. 6:24, Bible, NKJV]

3 "Do not be unequally yoked together with unbelievers. For what fellowship has righteousness with
4 lawlessness? And what communion has light with darkness?" [2 Cor. 6:14, Bible, NKJV]

5 As expected, God's law once again says that we should not become citizens of this world:

6 "For our citizenship is in heaven, from which we also eagerly wait for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ"--
7 Philippians 3:20

8 "These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off were assured of them,
9 embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth." --Hebrews 11:13

10 "Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul..." --
11 1 Peter 2:1

12 "Do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of
13 the world makes himself an enemy of God."—James 4:4

14 One of the reasons God doesn't want us to become citizens of this world is because when we do, we have violated the first
15 commandment and committed idolatry, by replacing God with an artificial god called government, who then provides
16 protection for us that we for one reason or another can't or won't trust or have faith in God to provide. This lack of faith
17 then becomes our downfall. The words of the Apostle Paul resolve why this is:

18 "But he who doubts is condemned if he eats, because he does not eat from faith; for whatever is not from faith
19 in God is sin." [Rom. 14:23, Bible, NKJV]

20 Is it moral or ethical for the government to try to manipulate our rights out of existence by replacing them with taxable and
21 regulatable "privileges" by procuring our consent and agreement? Here is what the U.S. Supreme Court says on this
22 subject:

23 "It would be a palpable incongruity to strike down an act of state legislation which, by words of express
24 divestment, seeks to strip the citizen of rights guaranteed by the federal Constitution, but to uphold an act by
25 which the same result is accomplished under the guise of a surrender of a right in exchange for a valuable
26 privilege which the state threatens otherwise to withhold. It is not necessary to challenge the proposition that,
27 as a general rule, the state, having power to deny a privilege altogether, may grant it upon such conditions as it
28 sees fit to impose. But the power of the state in that respect is not unlimited, and one of the limitations is that it
29 may not impose conditions which require the relinquishment of Constitutional rights. If the state may comp[el]
30 the surrender of one constitutional right as a condition of its favor, it may, in like manner, compel a surrender
31 of all. It is inconceivable that guaranties embedded in the Constitution of the United States may thus be
32 manipulated out or existence." [Frost v. Railroad Commission, 271 U.S. 583; 46 S.Ct. 605 (1926)]

33 So the bottom line is that it is not permissible for a state to try to undermine your Constitutional rights by making privileges
34 they offer contingent on surrendering Constitutional rights, but they do it anyway because we let them get away with it, and
35 because they are very indirect about how they do it.

36 In a very real sense, the government has simply learned how to use propaganda to create fear and insecurity in the people,
37 and then they invent vehicles to turn eliminating your fear into a profit center that requires you to become citizens and pay
38 taxes to support. For instance, they use the Federal Reserve to create the Great Depression by contracting the money
39 supply, and then they get these abused people worried and feeling insecure about retirement and security in the early
40 1930's, and then invent a new program called Social(ist) Security to help eliminate their fear and restore your sense of
41 security. But remember, in the process of procuring the "privilege" to be free of anxiety about old age, you have
42 surrendered sovereignty over your person and labor to the government, and they then have the moral authority to tax your
43 wages and make you into a serf and a peon to pay off the federal debt accumulated to run that program.

44 Another favorite trick of governments is to make something illegal and then turn it into a "privilege" that is taxed. This is
45 how governments maximize their revenues. They often call the tax a "license fee", as if to imply that you never had the
46 right to do that activity without a license. You will never hear a government official admit to it, but the government
47 reasoning is that the tax amounts to a "bribe" or "tribute" to the government to get them to honor or respect some privilege

1 and to enforce it in a court of law. They will even try to treat your rights this way! Here is what the courts have to say
2 about this kind of despicable behavior by the government:

3 "A right common in every citizen such as the right to own property or to engage in business of a character
4 not requiring regulation CANNOT, however, be taxed as a special franchise by first prohibiting its exercise
5 and then permitting its enjoyment upon the payment of a certain sum of money." *Stevens v. State*, 2 Ark. 291;
6 *35 Am. Dec. 72, Spring Val. Water Works v. Barber*, 99 Cal. 36, 33 Pac. 735, 21 L.R.A. 416. Note 57 L.R.A.
7 416

8 Clear thinking about our freedom and liberty demands that when faced with situations like this, we ask ourselves, where
9 does the government derive its authority and "privileges"(?)...from the PEOPLE! The Declaration of
10 Independence says so:

11 We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator
12 with certain unalienable rights, that among these are life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness. That to secure
13 these rights, governments are instituted among men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the
14 governed.

15 Instead, we ought to charge government employees a tax for the "privilege" of having the authority and the "privilege"
16 from the people to govern them, and the tax that government servants pay us for that privilege should be equal to whatever
17 they charge us for the privileges they delegate back to us using the authority we gave them! We need to think clearly about
18 this because it's very easy to get trapped in bad logic by deceitful lawyers and politicians who want to get into your bank
19 account and enslave you with their unjust laws and taxes. We should always remember who the public servants are and
20 who the public is. We are the public and government employees are the servants! Start acting like the boss for once and
21 tell the government what you expect out of them. The only reason the government continues to listen to us is because:

- 22 • We vote our officials into office.
- 23 • We can buy guns to protect ourselves from government abuse.
- 24 • If we don't like the laws they pass, we can nullify them every time we sit down on a jury or a grand jury.

25 For instance, the government started issuing marriage licenses in about 1923 and charged people for the "privilege". But
26 then we have to ask ourselves what a license is. A license is permission from the state to perform an act which, without a
27 license, would be illegal. Is it illegal to get married without the blessing of the state? Did Adam and Eve have a marriage
28 license from God? Absolutely NOT. Marriage licenses, driver's licenses, and professional licenses are a scam designed to
29 increase control of the state over your life and turn you into a financial slave and serf to the government!

30 The IRS uses privilege-induced slavery to its advantage as well. For instance, it:

- 31 1. Sets the rate of withholding for a given income slightly higher than it needs to be so that Americans who paid tax will
32 have to file to get their money back. In the process of filing, these unwitting citizens:
 - 33 1.1. Have to incriminate themselves on their tax returns.
 - 34 1.2. Forfeit most of the Constitutional rights, including the First (right to NOT communicate with your
35 government), Fourth (seizure), and Fifth Amendment (self-incrimination) protections.
 - 36 1.3. Tell the IRS their employer, which later allows the IRS to serve the private employer illegally with a "Notice
37 of Levy" and steal assets in violation of due process protections in the Constitution in the Fifth Amendment.
- 38 2. On the W-4 form, makes it a privilege just to hold onto your income. The regulations written by the Treasury illegally
39 (and unconstitutionally) say that if a person does not submit a W-4 or submits an incorrect W-4, the employer (who
40 really isn't an "employer" because it isn't a federal employer who has "employees" as defined in 26 CFR § 31.3401(c
41)) must withhold at the single zero rate. Thus, it becomes a "privilege" to just receive the money you earned without
42 tax deducted! The only way you can preserve the "privilege" is to incriminate yourself by filling out the W-4, in
43 violation of the Fifth Amendment.
- 44 3. The federal judiciary and the IRS will wickedly tell you that because of the Anti-Injunction Act found at 26 U.S.C.
45 §7421, if you dispute the amount of tax you owe or you assert non-liability, you must pay the tax FIRST before you are
46 permitted to file a lawsuit and subject your case to judicial review. In effect, what Congress has done by legislation is
47 forced you to bribe the government in order to have the privilege to sue them! If you assert that you are a
48 "nontaxpayer" and a person not liable for tax, the IRS will try to get your case dismissed because corrupt judges will

1 assert “sovereign immunity”. See section 3.4.2 of our *Tax Freedom Solutions Manual* for further details on this scam.
 2 For those of you who are Christians, this scam quite clearly violates the bible, which declares:

3 *“And you shall take no bribe, for a bribe blinds the discerning and perverts the words of the righteous.”*
 4 *Exodus 23:8*

- 5 4. Your state government will tell you that you MUST give them a valid Social Security Number in order for you to get a
 6 state driver’s license. They will do this in spite of the fact that traveling is a right and not a government privilege. In
 7 the words of the U.S. Supreme Court and lower courts:

8 *“The right to travel is part of the ‘liberty’ that a citizen cannot be deprived without due process of law.” Kent v.*
 9 *Dulles, 357 U.S. 116 (1958); U.S. v. Laub, 385 U.S. 475 (1967)*

10 *“The use of the highways for the purpose of travel and transportation is not a mere privilege, but a common and*
 11 *fundamental Right of which the public and the individual cannot be rightfully deprived.” -Chicago Motor Coach*
 12 *vs. Chicago, 169 NE 22; Ligare vs. Chicago, 28 NE 934; Boon vs. Clark, 214 SSW 607; 25 Am.Jur. (1st)*
 13 *Highways Sect.163.*

14 To give you just one more example of how privilege-induced slavery leads to abuse, lets look at licenses to practice law.
 15 The only rational basis for having any kind of professional license is *consumer protection*, but the legal profession has
 16 totally distorted and twisted this concept to benefit them, which amounts to a massive conflict of interest. For instance:

- 17 1. Only licensed attorneys can defend others in court. This prevents family members or friends or paralegals from
 18 providing low-cost legal assistance in court, and creates a greater marketplace and monopoly for legal services by
 19 attorneys. This also means that a lot more people go without legal representation, because they can’t afford to hire a
 20 lawyer to represent them. Is that justice, or is that simply the spread of oppression and injustice in the name of profit
 21 for the legal profession?
 22 2. Even if the attorney is licensed to practice law from the socialist state, the court can revoke their right to defend anyone
 23 in a court of law. For instance:
 24 2.1. Look at what the court did to attorney Jeffrey Dickstein in *United States v. Collins*, 920 F.2d 619, (10th Cir.
 25 11/27/1990), which we showed in section 6.6.4.5. If you look at the ruling for this case, you will find that the
 26 court withdrew defendant Collins right to be represented by Attorney Dickstein, because they called attorney
 27 Dickstein a “vexatious litigant”. He was therefore deprived of his choice of competent legal counsel, because the
 28 court viewed his counsel as “politically incorrect”.
 29 2.2. Refer also to what the court did to attorney Oscar Stilley in section 6.5.1, as he defended Dr. Phil Roberts on
 30 tax charges. The court said, and we quote:

31 *“The practice of law, sir, is a privilege, especially in Federal Court. You’re close to losing that privilege in this*
 32 *court, Mr. Stilley.”*

- 33 3. Clients with attorneys are given favoritism by the court in the award of attorney fees against the other side. This leads
 34 attorneys to inflate their fees if they expect sanctions, in order to coerce the opposing side to settle. In most courts, pro
 35 per or pro se litigants are either not allowed or seldom are awarded attorney fees against the opposing side. Only
 36 litigants who have counsel can get attorney fee awards by the court. In effect, the courts treat the time and expense of
 37 pro per litigants in defending themselves as *irrelevant and completely without value!* That’s right.. if you as a pro per
 38 litigant keep track of your time diligently and bill for it at a rate less than an attorney in your motion for sanctions
 39 against the other side, the judge (who incidentally used to be a lawyer and probably still has lawyer golf buddies he
 40 wants to bring business to) will laugh you out of the courtroom! This has the effect of incentivizing people to have
 41 expensive legal counsel and incentivizes the lawyers to prolong the litigation and maximize their hourly rate to
 42 maximize their income. If you then ask a judge why they don’t award attorney fee sanctions to pro per litigants, he
 43 might get defensive and say: *“Pro per litigants are high maintenance, and make extra work for the court because they*
 44 *don’t know what they are doing.”* And yet these same courts and judges are the ones who earlier, as attorneys
 45 practicing law, intimidated and perpetuated the very ignorance on the part of their clients that made these people
 46 ignorant litigants as pro pers! All this rhetoric is just a smokescreen for the real agenda, which is maximizing business
 47 for and profits of those who practice law, and restricting the supply of qualified talent in order to keep the prices and
 48 the income of attorneys artificially high.

1 If we avail ourselves of a “privilege” granted by the state through operation of any statute that does not involve the exercise
2 of a fundamental right, then we cannot have a constitutional grounds for redress of grievances against the statute:

3 *“Anyone who partakes of the benefits or privileges of a given statute, or anyone who even places himself into a
4 position where he may avail himself of those benefits at will, cannot reach constitutional grounds to redress
5 grievances in the courts against the given statute.” [Ashwander v. T.V.A., 297 U.S. 288, 346, 56 S. Ct. 466, 482,
6 80 L.Ed. 688, (1938)]*[underlines added]

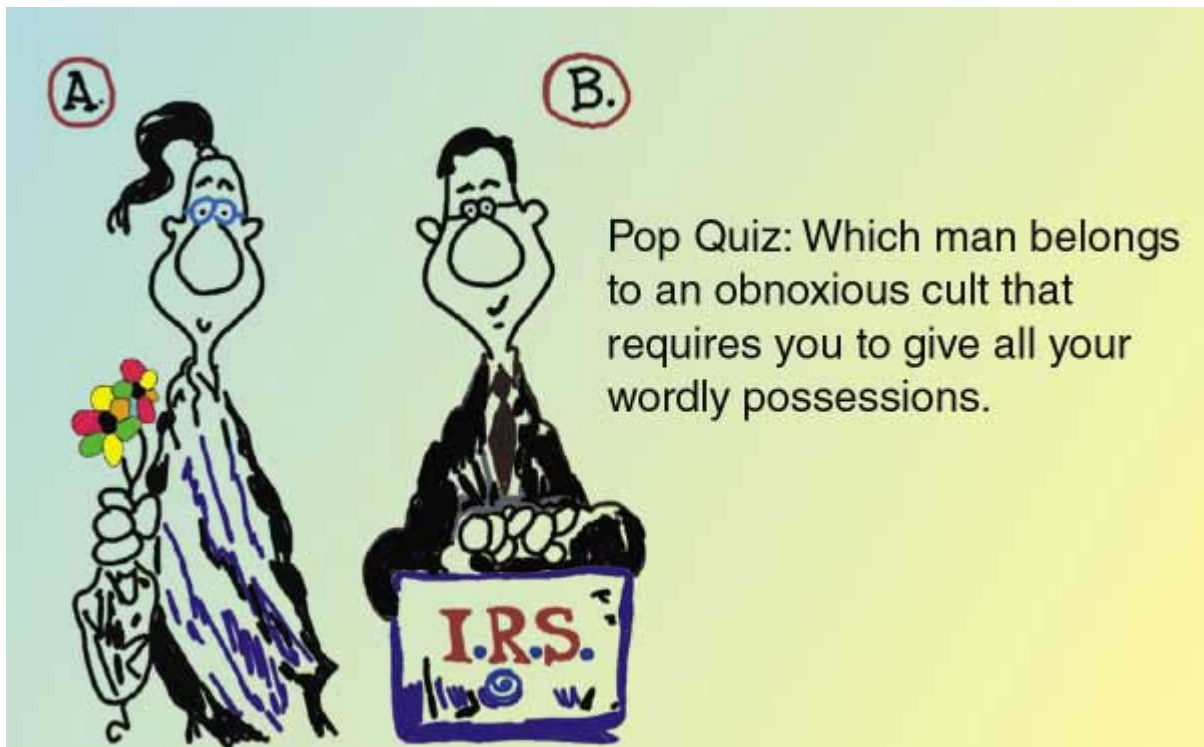
7 But if we are simply trying to exist, by working and receiving a paycheck, voting, serving on jury duty, and fulfilling our
8 various civic and family duties, we cannot be taxed for the mere privilege of existing:

9 *“The individual, unlike the corporation, cannot be taxed for the mere privilege of existing. The corporation is
10 an artificial entity which owes its existence and charter power to the State, but the individual’s right to live and
11 own property are natural rights for the enjoyment of which an excise cannot be imposed.” [Redfield v. Fisher,
12 292 Oregon 814, 817]*

13 *“Legislature...cannot name something to be a taxable privilege unless it is first a privilege.” [Taxation West
14 Key 43]...“The Right to receive income or earnings is a right belonging to every person and realization and
15 receipt of income is therefore not a ‘privilege’, that can be taxed.” [Taxation West Key 933]-[Jack Cole Co.
16 v. MacFarland, 337 S.E.2d 453, Tenn.]*

17 4.3.10 Our Government has become idolatry and a false religion

18 **Figure 4-3: Government Religion Cartoon**



19

20 *“Tyranny is the inevitable consequence of rule from above, a point that the Founding Fathers understood well
21 when they separated the powers of a small and restrained government.*

22 *“Liberty is a human achievement, the product of a 1,000-year struggle. We have taken too lightly our obligation
23 to “earn it anew.” Consequently, we are ceasing to possess ‘that which thy fathers bequeathed thee.’ Our
24 legislative political order has become an administrative state in which ‘We the People’ are increasingly fearful
25 of the government that we allegedly control.*

26 *“If Thomas Jefferson was right, we cannot get self-rule back without a revolution.”*

1 [Jeff Bowman]

2 God, in Exodus 20:3, as part of the Ten Commandments, said:

3 "You shall have no other gods before Me."

4 Our life as Christians should revolve around putting God at the **top** of our priority list. That means supporting His causes
5 with the **first** fruits of our labor and tithing to the church. Here's the scripture to back up this assertion:

6 "**Honor the Lord** with your possessions, and **with the firstfruits of all your increase**; so your barns will be
7 filled with plenty, and your vats will overflow with new wine." Prov. 3:9-10

8 But how can we tithe to the church and put God **first**, if we illegally pay almost 50% of our income to all the following
9 combined taxes before God even gets his first dime in out tithes?:

- 10 1. Federal income tax (25% of our income).
- 11 2. State income tax. (15% of our income)
- 12 3. Property tax. (5% of our income)
- 13 4. Sales tax. (2% of our income)
- 14 5. Estate (Death) taxes. (up to 100% of our income and our assets over a lifetime!)

15 Instead, the first fruits of our labor and almost 50% of our living income (and 100% of our assets when we die) go to the
16 GOVERNMENT first in the form of income taxes, before we ever even see a dime of our own income, and we put way too
17 much emphasis and reliance on the government to help us. In effect, we allow or permit or volunteer ourselves to become
18 government slaves and they become our masters and thus we lose our sovereignty and thereby make God of **secondary**
19 importance, presumably because we want a hand-out and government "security". But listen to what God says about this
20 type of abomination:

21 "**Cursed is the one who trusts in man, who depends on flesh for his strength and whose heart turns away**
22 **from the Lord.** He will be like a bush in the wastelands; he will not see prosperity when it comes. He will
23 dwell in the parched places of the desert, in a salt land where no one lives. But blessed is the man who trusts in
24 the Lord, whose confidence is in Him. He will be like a tree planted by the water that sends out its roots by the
25 stream. It does not fear when heat comes; its leaves are always green. It has no worries in a year of drought
26 and never fails to bear fruit." [Jeremiah 17:5-8, Bible, NIV]

27 By surrendering our sovereignty and letting government become our god or our cult, we have committed idolatry: relying
28 more on government and man than we do on God or ourselves to meet our needs. Jesus Himself, however, specifically
29 warned us **not** to do this:

30 "Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him **ONLY** [NOT the
31 government!] you shall serve.'
32 [Bible, Matt. 4:10]

33 This kind of pernicious evil violates Psalms 118:8-9, which says: "**It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in**
34 **man. It is better to trust the Lord than to put confidence in princes.**" I translate "princes" to mean "government".
35 Likewise, such idolatry also violates Psalms 146:3, which says: "**Put not your trust in princes, [nor] in the son of man, in**
36 **whom [there is] no help.**"

37 But can government REALLY be a religion from a genuine legal perspective and can we prove this in court? Absolutely!
38 Lets look at the definition of "religion" from Black's Law Dictionary to answer this question, and notice the highlighted
39 words:

40 "**Religion.** Man's relation to Divinity, to reverence, **worship**, obedience, and **submission to mandates and**
41 **precepts** of supernatural or superior beings. In its broadest sense includes all forms of belief in the existence
42 of superior beings exercising power over human beings by volition, imposing rules of conduct, with future
43 rewards and punishments. **Bond uniting man to God, and a virtue whose purpose is to render God worship**
44 **due him as source of all being and principle of all government of things.** *Nikulnikoff v. Archbishop, etc., of*
45 *Russian Orthodox Greek Catholic Church, 142 Misc. 894, 255 N.Y.S. 653, 663.* [Black's Law Dictionary,
46 Sixth Edition, page 1292]

1 Now we will take the highlighted words from this definition of “religion” above and put them into a table and compare
 2 worship of God on the left to worship of government on the right. The results are very surprising. The attributes in the left
 3 column of the table below are listed in the same sequence presented in the above definition and have asterisks next to them.
 4 Those attributes without asterisks provide additional means of comparison between worship of God and worship of
 5 government (god with a little “g”).

6 **Table 4-3: Worship of God (Christianity) v. Worship of Government (idolatry)**

<i>Attributes of “religion”</i>	<i>Worship of God (Christianity: “God” with a Big “G”)</i>	<i>Worship of Government (Idolatry: “god” with a little “g”) Government=“The Beast”: Rev. 13:11-18</i>
<i>Lawgiver</i>	God (see Isaiah 33:22)	Legislature or democratic majority
<i>Law</i>	Bible	1. Constitution, statutes, and regulations (in a republic) 2. Whatever judge or ruler says (tyranny or oligarchy)
<i>Purpose of obedience to Law</i>	Protection (see Isaiah 54:11-17)	Protection (see section 4.3.2)
<i>Method of rendering “worship”</i>	1. Faith 2. Prayer 3. Fasting 4. Service to fellow man/family 5. Reverencing (respecting) God	1. Paying income taxes 2. Surrendering rights to judicial jurisdiction and government authority 3. Not questioning or challenging authority. 4. Dying in defense of (if serving in military).
<i>“Submission to mandates and precepts of”*</i>	God	Man (The Beast/Satan)
<i>“Superior being”*</i>	God	President/Congressmen/Mammon (the BEAST/Satan)
<i>What makes “superior beings” superior</i>	Agents of a sovereign God	Not subject to the <u>same</u> laws as everyone else (hypocrisy)
<i>Method of expressing “faith” in and obedience to “superior being”</i>	Trust, obedience, worship, church attendance	1. “Presumption” that government servants have the authority of law. 2. Dependency on and trust in socialistic government welfare programs
<i>“Exercising power”*</i>	1. Church or clergy discipline, censure, or excommunication while alive. 2. Authority over your destiny after you die.	Jurisdiction within the territorial limits of the sovereign
<i>Source of power</i>	Love	Fear, insecurity
<i>“Rules of conduct”*</i>	God’s law (Bible or Natural Law)	Man’s law (statutes)
<i>“Future rewards”*</i>	Eternal life	Absence of IRS harassment for not paying taxes
<i>“Future punishment”*</i>	1. Slavery to sin for those who disobey. 2. Eternal damnation	Harassment, oppression for those who challenge government authority
<i>“Bond uniting man” to “superior being”*</i>	Love	Government- granted “Privileges”, covetousness, limited liability (in the case of corporations)
<i>Source of “virtue”*</i>	“God” and his worship	“Self” and “Vain Rulers” and their aggrandizement
<i>Object of belief/faith*</i>	Trust in God (see Psalms 118:8-9)	Trust in man/the flesh (see Jeremiah 17:5-8)
<i>Influence spread through</i>	Evangelizing	1. Fear, uncertainty, insecurity introduced through media and demagoguery. 2. Propaganda 3. Military and political warfare.

<i>Attributes of "religion"</i>	<i>Worship of God (Christianity: "God" with a Big "G")</i>	<i>Worship of Government (Idolatry: "god" with a little "g") Government="The Beast": Rev. 13:11-18</i>
		4. Bribing sheep into submission with government benefits derived from stolen/extorted tax money.
<i>Spokesperson</i>	Pope/prophet	Judge (witchdoctor)
<i>How spokespersons are appointed</i>	Ordained	Appointed by President/Governor
<i>Representatives of spokesperson</i>	Priests	Lawyers (scumbag Pharisees)
<i>Attire of spokesperson</i>	Black Robe	Black robe
<i>Title of spokesperson</i>	"Pastor"	"Your honor"
<i>Disciples called</i>	Apostles (qty 12)	Grand Jury (qty 12) Petit Jury (qty 12)
<i>How representatives are appointed</i>	Ordained	Licensed by state Supreme Court
<i>Persons who violate laws are</i>	Sinners (God's law)	Criminals (man's/god's law)
<i>Submission</i>	"...knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law but by faith in Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Christ Jesus, that we might be justified by faith in Christ and not by the works of the law; for by the works of the law no flesh shall be justified." (see Gal. 2:16)	"I am a criminal because no one can obey all of man's laws. There are too many of them!" (see section 5.12 entitled "The Government's REAL approach to tax law")
<i>Obedience</i>	"If you love me, keep my commandments" (see John 14:15)	Follow the law or we will throw you in jail and steal your property! (fear)
<i>Control by "superior being" imposed through</i>	Holy Spirit/conscience	Criminal punishment for violating law.
<i>Ultimate punishment exists in</i>	Hell	Jail
<i>Result of punishment is:</i>	Separation from God	Separation from Society (neo-god)
<i>Worship service</i>	Sunday service	Court (worship the judge/lawyers)
<i>Place of worship</i>	Church	Courthouse
<i>Language of worship service</i>	Latin (Roman Catholic church)	Latin (habeus corpus, malum prohibitum, ex post facto, etc)
<i>Method of removing evil from the world</i>	Exorcism	Court and/or jail
<i>Pleadings to the superior being (Sovereign) for help take the form of</i>	Prayer	Prayer (petitions to courts used to be called "prayers" and those that go in front of the Supreme Court are still called "prayers" in some cases).
<i>Source of truth</i>	God's law	Whatever the judge says
<i>Truth is</i>	Absolute and sovereign	Relative to whoever is in charge (and whatever corrupted politicians will let even more corrupted judges get away with before they get removed from office for misconduct)
<i>Method of supporting "superior being"</i>	Tithes (10%)	Taxes (50-100%)
<i>Power expanded by</i>	Evangelism	1. Obfuscating law 2. Attorney licensing 3. Legal "terrorism" (excessive or

Attributes of "religion"	Worship of God (Christianity: "God" with a Big "G")	Worship of Government (Idolatry: "god" with a little "g") Government="The Beast": Rev. 13:11-18
		unwarranted or expensive litigation) 4. Unconstitutional or unlawful acts 5. Lies, propaganda, and deceit 6. Judges allowing juries to rule only on facts and not law of each case.

1 Isn't that interesting? The other thing you MUST conclude after examining the above table is that if anyone in government
 2 is a "superior being" relative to any human in the society they govern, then the government unavoidably becomes an idol
 3 and a god to be "worshipped" and submitted to as if the government or its servants individually were a religion. In the
 4 feudal system of British Common Law from which our legal system derives, they even call judges "Your Worship":

5 *"worship 1. chiefly Brit: a person of importance—used as a title for various officials (as magistrates and some*
 6 *mayors) 2: reverence offered a divine being or supernatural power; also: an act of expressing such reverence*
 7 *3: a form of religious practice with its creed and ritual 4: extravagant respect or admiration for or devotion to*
 8 *an object of esteem <- the dollar>."*
 9 *[Websters Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 1361]*

10 This kind of hypocrisy and idolatry not only violates the first and greatest Commandment in the bible found in Exodus 20:3
 11 and Matt. 22:37-38, but is also more importantly violates the First Amendment to the U.S. Constitution:

12 ***First Amendment:** Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the*
 13 *free exercise thereof; or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people peaceably to*
 14 *assemble, and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances.*

15 How do government servants make themselves or the government they are part of into a "superior being"? Here are just a
 16 few highly unethical and evil ways:

- 17 1. Write laws that apply to everyone but them.
- 18 2. Manipulate the enforcement of laws so that government servants don't have to obey.
- 19 3. Exceed their jurisdiction or lawful authority and not be punished or prosecuted for it.
- 20 4. Abuse official immunity or sovereign immunity with the blessing and collusion of a corrupted judiciary to protect
 21 themselves from punishment for their wrongdoing.
- 22 5. Lie to or mislead a grand jury and not be held accountable for it because they would have to prosecute themselves if
 23 they did.
- 24 6. Judges suppressing evidence in court that is would undermine their power or control over society.
- 25 7. Abuse the purpose of the legal system to terrorize and persecute Americans for their political activities or to coerce
 26 them into giving up some right that the law entitles them to. Most Americans can't afford legal representation and
 27 government abuses this vulnerability by litigating maliciously and endlessly against their enemies to terrorize them into
 28 submission and run up their legal bills. This makes their victims into a financial slave of an expensive attorney who is
 29 licensed by the same state he is litigating against, which imparts a conflict of interest that prejudices the rights of his
 30 client.

31 [TITLE 18 > PART 1 > CHAPTER 77 > Sec. 1589.](#)

32 *Sec. 1589. - Forced labor*

33 ***Whoever knowingly provides or obtains the labor or services of a person -***

34 *(3) **by means of the abuse or threatened abuse of law or the legal process.***

35 ***shall be fined under this title or imprisoned not more than 20 years, or both.** If death results from the violation*
 36 *of this section, or if the violation includes kidnapping or an attempt to kidnap, aggravated sexual abuse or the*
 37 *attempt to commit aggravated sexual abuse, or an attempt to kill, the defendant shall be fined under this title or*
 38 *imprisoned for any term of years or life, or both*

1 By making itself a “superior being” relative to the people it governs and using the color but not actual *force* of law to
 2 compel the people to pay homage to and “worship” and to serve it with their stolen labor (extorted through illegally
 3 enforced income taxes), Congress has mandated a religion, with all the many necessary characteristics found in the legal
 4 definition of “religion” indicated above, and this is clearly unconstitutional. The only way to guarantee the elimination of
 5 the conflict of law that results from putting government above the people is to:

- 6 1. Make God the sovereign over all of creation.
- 7 2. Make the people **servants to God** and His *fiduciary agents*.
- 8 3. Create government as a **servant to the People** and their fiduciary agent. Make the only source of government
 9 authority that of protecting the people from evil, injustice, and abuse.

10 There is no other rational conclusion one can reach based on the above analysis. There is simply no other way to solve this
 11 logical paradox of government becoming a religion in the process of making itself superior to the people or the “U.S.
 12 citizens”. The definition of “religion” earlier confirmed that God must be the origin of a earthly government, when it said:

13 “Bond uniting man to God, and a virtue whose purpose is to render God worship due him as source of all being
 14 and **principle of all government of things.**”

15 One of our readers, Humberto Nunez, wrote a fascinating and funny article showing just how similar government and most
 16 religions really are:

17 GOVERNMENT IS A PAGAN CULT AND WE’VE ALL BEEN DRINKING THE KOOL AID

18 By: Humberto Nunez

19 Government is a pagan cult. When you join the Armed Forces, the first thing they do is shave your head. Just
 20 like in many cults, where they shave your head. The Army also uses sleep deprivation in Boot Camp, just like
 21 many cults do, to brainwash their people.

22 Secret Service Agents are willing to “die for their beliefs” (in defense of The President: their cult leader).

23 Many men say that they would “die for their country”. This is a form of pagan Martyrdom for the pagan cult
 24 State.

25 Many today say that “religion has caused more war... “ and blah blah blah.

26 But the fact is that governments send out draft cards, not churches. Governments started WWI and WWII, not
 27 religion. In fact, during times of peace governments hate religion because religion is the governments’ #1
 28 competition for allegiance, and during times of war, governments use religion for their own agenda.

29 Another similarity to cults: FBI Agents even dress similar to Mormons, and have the same type of haircuts.
 30 Many cults have a dress code of some kind, just like in the Army, and even in the Corporate world.

31 When you join the Moonies you would probably end up selling flowers for them, and the Moonies will keep all
 32 the profits from the work you do. When you work today, the pagan cult State takes your profits (in the form of
 33 income taxes), and they won’t let you leave their cult (the State). If you attempt to not pay your taxes, you would
 34 be arrested and branded a criminal.

35 Now, I did a little research into the symptoms and signs of a cult and found these 5 Warning Signs: (to
 36 distinguish a cult from a ‘normal’ religion)

- 37 3. The organization is willing to place itself above the law; this is probably the most important
 38 characteristic.
- 39 4. The leadership dictates, (rather than suggests) important personal (as opposed to spiritual) details of
 40 followers’ lives, such as whom to marry, what to study in college, etc.
- 41 5. The leader sets forth ethical guidelines members must follow but from which the leader is exempt.
- 42 6. The group is preparing to fight a literal, physical Armageddon against other human beings.
- 43 7. The leader regularly makes public assertions that he or she knows is false and/or the group has a policy of
 44 routinely deceiving outsiders.

45 Now, let’s break these down one by one.

1. The organization is willing to place itself above the law; this is probably the most important characteristic.

Example: Death Penalty.

What is the purpose and intention behind State sponsored Death Penalty? The primary purpose and intention behind State sponsored Death Penalty is not to deter crime, nor is it to be tough on crime. To understand the purpose and intent behind this, we must study psychology, in particular, behavioral psychology; like in training a dog. To train a dog, one must use behavioral modification techniques. For example, the primary purpose and intention behind anti-smoking laws is to get you to obey the State. Before you can train a dog to kill, you must first train the dog to obey simple commands; like sit, and roll over. The same is true of recycling laws. Glass bottles are actually much safer for the environment than plastic bottles. The primary purpose and intention behind recycling laws is not to save the environment, it is a behavioral modification technique to get the people to obey the Government.

Now, back to State sponsored death penalty laws. The primary purpose and intention behind Death Penalty laws is to get people used to the idea that the State is above the law. It is illegal for people to kill and to murder. With State sponsored Death Penalty laws, the State is Above the Law.

There you have symptom #1:

1. The organization is willing to place itself above the law; this is probably the most important characteristic.

2. The leadership dictates, (rather than suggests) important personal (as opposed to spiritual) details of followers' lives, such as whom to marry, what to study in college, etc.

I can give a dozen examples of this behavioral modification ploy of cults. Recycling and anti-smoking laws were two examples I explained above. Dictating the behavior of Americans today is pervasive throughout our entire society.

3. The leader sets forth ethical guidelines members must follow but from which the leader is exempt.

We can see this today very clearly when it comes to violence. Many Americans today are forced to attend Anger Management Courses while at the same time the State uses violence (like in the Iraq War).

4. The group is preparing to fight a literal, physical Armageddon against other human beings.

Three words: War on Terrorism

5. The leader regularly makes public assertions that he or she knows is false and/or the group has a policy of routinely deceiving outsiders.

I don't think that last symptom (of a cult) needs further explanation.

Well there you have it; the Government has all of the 5 major signs/symptoms of being a cult.

For the philosophy behind The Nature of Government I recommend this read:

http://www.apfn.org/apfn/nature_gov.htm

It is A MUST READ for all Americans and all freedom loving peoples of the world. It is so good that if I start quoting from it, I'll just end up pasting the entire article here in my article. So I'll just leave it at that and say you the reader here MUST READ IT.

Now, the atheist says "Show me God." I say, "Show me government." I do not believe in the existence of government. Now hold your horses, I know that sounds silly at first, but let me explain.

Let's say you were on a ship full of people. Now the people in that ship went insane and started hallucinating, thinking that you were an alien from another planet and that you must be killed. If those people on that ship killed you, you would really be dead, literally. Just because of the reality of the consequences of that mass hallucination (you being dead) does not prove that you were really an alien. It just proves that the people were suffering from mass hallucination. So, just because the so-called 'government' can arrest you and put you in jail, that does not prove the existence of government. It just proves mass hallucination.

Let's start again now:

1 The atheist says "Show me God." I say, "Show me government." Now don't tell me the White House. That is
 2 not 'government'. That is a building. That's just as if I were to show an atheist a church (a building), that
 3 would not prove the existence of God.

4 Ok now, you might show me a Police Officer in uniform, and offer proof on how he can actually arrest me, to
 5 prove the existence of Government.

6 Well, I can show an atheist a priest in uniform, but that would not prove the existence of God. Even if Congress
 7 gave priests the authority to arrest people on the streets that would still not prove the existence of God to an
 8 atheist. Just like a cop in uniform does not prove the existence of government, it only proves that the people are
 9 suffering from mass hallucination.

10 People today are obsessed with the laws of the pagan-cult State. The Constitution, the Bill of Rights, etc. etc,
 11 people meditating day and night on the 'laws' of the pagan-cult State, as opposed to the Law of God. Thomas
 12 Jefferson, Benjamin Franklin, these men have become cult figures. They have replaced Abraham, Isaac, Jacob,
 13 Noah, Moses, as the men of God to be pondered on and studied.

14 Sacrifice for Protection

15 In ancient times, people performed human sacrifice to their pagan false gods for 'Protection' from the gods.
 16 They believed their gods also played the role of 'Provider' by performing human sacrifice for rain for their
 17 crops for example.

18 Today, the US Fed. Govt. is asking for "Sacrifice for Protection". The State today is now saying that the people
 19 must sacrifice their Freedoms and Liberties for 'Protection' from terrorism (demons, evil spirits, etc.) and that
 20 the State will then 'Provide' them with safety.

21 This is metaphorically a form of human sacrifice. It is not a human sacrifice where you literally kill someone
 22 (like in the Death Penalty), but it is a "human" sacrifice. I mean, the State is not asking the animals to sacrifice
 23 their Freedoms and Liberties, it is asking us humans, so it is a "human" sacrifice as opposed to an 'animal'
 24 sacrifice in that sense. Also, there is death involved; the death of our Freedoms and Liberty.

25 By the way, State sponsored Death Penalty is another form of human sacrifice for the pagan-cult State, and
 26 State sponsored abortion is a form of child sacrifice for this pagan-cult State.

27 Black Robes: Judges and Devil worshippers

28 Judges wear Black Robes just like Devil worshippers. The Judges' Desk is the altar of baal. They bring men
 29 tied up in handcuffs before the altar (Judges' desk) and these men are for the human sacrifice and the entire
 30 court proceeding is a satanic ritual.

31 Sounds crazy? Is it a coincidence that the 'language of the court' is Latin (ex: Habeas Corpus) just like the
 32 'language of a Catholic Exorcism' is also in Latin? Lawyers speak Latin in the court room just like Priests use
 33 Latin when performing exorcisms when you have a 'case' of full DEMONIC POSSESSION.

34 Also, the same type of 'respect' a Priest would expect from a visitor to his church is the same type of respect a
 35 Judge expects in his court room. There's even a penalty for disobeying this 'respect'; it's called "Contempt of
 36 Court".

37 Another psychological conditioning behavior modification technique being applied on the American Public is
 38 this: Television shows like Judge Judy, Judge Joe, all these People's Courts television shows. The primary
 39 intention and purpose behind these so-called Court Room Justice shows is to condition the public to get used to
 40 entering a court room with NO Trial by Jury. In not one of any of these types of shows do you ever see a Trial
 41 by Jury; that is not a mistake, it is intentional, and by design.

42 I can go on and on with this article and offer a million more details.

43 To conclude, if the US Govt. plans to attack Iran, North Korea, etc. in the future. And if there is the possibility
 44 that this War on Terrorism might lead to WWII. Then, that is nothing but pagan-cult MASS SUICIDE. And
 45 the US Govt. is a pagan cult, and WE'VE ALL BEEN DRINKING THE KOOL AID. [Does Jim Jones from
 46 Ghana ring a bell?]

47 Now, some readers of this article (especially neo-conservatives) would automatically brand me an Anarchist. I
 48 am not an Anarchist, what I am questioning is the role of government. According to the Founding Fathers of
 49 America, the role of government was to protect your Individual Rights. NOT TO TAKE THEM AWAY.

1 And finally, if the people will not serve God, they will end up serving and being slaves of government. I am sure
2 many Christians would believe this, and even some followers of eastern philosophies; for this is a form of 'Bad
3 Karma'.

4 And, if man will not serve God, then woman will not serve man. This is also a form of 'bad karma' [and it may
5 also explain why the divorce rate is so high].

6 Another fascinating and funny article that helps to clarify just how God-like our government has become is as follows:

7 **The Ten Commandments of the U.S. Government**

8 I. I am the Lord of the Talmud, thou shalt have no Biblical God before me.

9 II. Thou shalt not make unto thee any but Satanic images: the witch, symbol of the city government and police
10 department of Salem, Massachusetts; the five-pointed occult pentagram of Sirius, of the state religion of Egypt,
11 emblem of the Department of Defense and our Armed Forces, and the badge of US law enforcement at all
12 levels; the pyramid of Pharaoh, capped by the all-Seeing Eye of Horus, emblazoned on the currency in the
13 denomination of one shekel.

14 III. Thou shalt not take the name of thy god in vain: thou shalt not blaspheme the name Rabbi, Israeli, Zionism,
15 "U.S. government", or any politician or agency.

16 IV. Remember the Wal Mart sale on the Sabbath Day, and keep it holy by spending. Seven days must thou labor,
17 that thereby thou shalt spend ever more.

18 V. Honor thy son and thy daughter. Neither spank nor say no to them when they seek to consume the sex and
19 violence that is dangled before them from every lawful venue. Thy daughter shalt dress like a cheap harlot from
20 the age of eight onward, and thy son shall engage in bloody video games, likewise from his eighth year. All of
21 these are legal and profitable, saith the Lord.

22 VI. Thou shalt not kill the molester of 150 children in his prison cell, and thou shalt condemn the convict who
23 executes the molester, lest such justice be encouraged, and lest it be known that the convict had greater
24 common sense and honor than a legion of our judges.

25 VII. Thou shalt commit adultery and televise and popularize it throughout the land, and broadcast it into
26 Afghanistan and Iraq, that thereby the Muslims shall be vouchsafed a share in our democracy and freedom.

27 VIII. Thou shalt not steal from us, for we detest competition.

28 IX. Thou shalt indeed bear false witness, for by perjury our Law is established.

29 X. Covet thy neighbor's goods and thy neighbor's wife, for thereby doth our Order prosper.

30 I'll bet you never even dreamed that there were so many parallels between Christianity and government, did you? I'll bet
31 you also never thought of government as a religion, but that is exactly what it has become. The idea of making government
32 a religion or creating false idols for the people to worship is certainly not new. Here is an example from the bible, where
33 "cities" are referred to as "gods". Notice this passage also criticizes evolutionists when it says "Saying to.. a stone 'you
34 gave birth to me.'" Evolutionists believe that we literally descended from rocks that evolved from a primordial soup:

35 "As the thief is ashamed when he is found out,
36 So is the house of Israel ashamed;
37 **They and their kings and their princes, and their priests and their prophets,**
38 **Saying to a tree, "You are my father,"**
39 **And to a stone, "You gave birth to me."**
40 For they have turned their back to Me, and not their face.
41 But in the time of their trouble
42 They will say, "Arise and save us."
43 But where are your gods [governments] that you have made for yourselves?
44 Let them arise,
45 If they can save you in the time of your trouble;
46 **For according to the number of your cities**
47 **Are your gods, O Judah."**
48 [Jeremiah 2:26-28, Bible, NKJV]

Leaders know that if you can get people to worship false idols and thereby blaspheme God with their sin, then you can use this idolatry to captivate and enslave them. For instance, in the Bible in 1 Kings Chapters 11 and 12, we learn that Solomon disobeyed the Lord by marrying foreign wives and worshipping the idols of these foreign wives. When Solomon died, his son Rehoboam hardened his heart against God and alienated his people. Then he fought a competitor named Jeroboam over the spoils of his vast father's remnant kingdom (1 Kings 12). The weapon that Jeroboam used to compete with Rehoboam was the creation of a false idol for the ten tribes of Israel that were under his leadership. This false idol consisted of two calves of solid gold. The false idol distracted ten of the 12 tribes of Israel from wanting to reunite with the other two tribes and worship the true God. To this day, the twelve tribes have never again been able to reunite, because they were divided by idolatry toward false gods. Here is a description of how Jeroboam did it from 1 Kings 12:25-33:

Golden Calves at Bethel and Dan

²⁵ Then Jeroboam fortified Shechem in the hill country of Ephraim and lived there. From there he went out and built up Peniel.

²⁶ Jeroboam thought to himself, "The kingdom will now likely revert to the house of David. ²⁷ If these people go up to offer sacrifices at the temple of the LORD in Jerusalem, they will again give their allegiance to their lord, Rehoboam king of Judah. They will kill me and return to King Rehoboam."

²⁸ After seeking advice, the king made two golden calves. He said to the people, "It is too much for you to go up to Jerusalem. Here are your gods, O Israel, who brought you up out of Egypt."²⁹ One he set up in Bethel, and the other in Dan. ³⁰ And this thing became a sin; the people went even as far as Dan to worship the one there.

³¹ Jeroboam built shrines on high places and appointed priests from all sorts of people, even though they were not Levites. ³² He instituted a festival on the fifteenth day of the eighth month, like the festival held in Judah, and offered sacrifices on the altar. This he did in Bethel, sacrificing to the calves he had made. And at Bethel he also installed priests at the high places he had made. ³³ On the fifteenth day of the eighth month, a month of his own choosing, he offered sacrifices on the altar he had built at Bethel. So he instituted the festival for the Israelites and went up to the altar to make offerings.

[1 Kings 12:25-33, Bible, NIV]

Similar to Jeroboam, our present government conquers the people by encouraging them to become distracted with false idols. These false idols include:

1. **Government.** This translates into worship of and slavery to government through the income tax and an obsession with petitioning government to protect people from discrimination or punishment for the consequences of their sins, including homosexuality, dishonesty, and infidelity.
2. **Money.** They use this lust for money to divide and conquer and control families by getting them fighting over money within their marriage. They encourage people to get marriage licenses they never needed in order to get jurisdiction over the spouses and their assets, and then they make it so easy to get divorced that it becomes economically attractive to marry people for their money. This means that people get married for all the wrong reasons, and make themselves into slaves of the state in the process of using the state courts as a vehicle to plunder their partner using community property laws.
3. **Sex.** A fixation with sex, homosexuality, fornication, and adultery. People who are obsessed with anything, and especially sex, are far less likely to be informed about the law or vigilant about holding their government accountable.
4. **Sports and television.** People who are hooked on Monday night football or the latest host soap or sitcom aren't likely to be caught visiting the law library or reading the Bible as God says they should.
5. **Materialism.** This manifests itself in an obsession to acquire and keep "things".
6. **Sin.** In the past, the government outlawed gambling and lotteries. Now most states have actually institutionalized this kind of sin. The government holds lotteries and even advertises them. Indian reservations have become havens for legalized gambling.

Have you ever visited a doctor's office for minor surgery? What the doctor does is administer a local anesthetic to numb your senses in the area he will be cutting and operating on so you won't experience pain or feel what he is doing. The government does the same thing. Before they hook you up to "The Matrix" using their umbilical called the "income tax" to painfully suck you dry, they use a "local anesthetic" that numbs your senses and your discretion. This "local anesthetic" is the sin and hedonism and idolatry they try to get you addicted to and distracted with that they use to make you into a slave:

"Most assuredly, I say to you, whoever commits sin is a slave of sin." [Jesus in John 8:34, Bible, NKJV]

1 Once you are a slave to your sin, you are far less likely to give them any trouble about being a host organism for the federal
2 parasite that sucks your life and your labor and your property dry. They supplement this local anesthetic called “sin” with a
3 combination of cognitive dissonance, lies and propaganda, ignorance generated by the public fool (school) system, and an
4 occasional media report about how they trashed a famous person to keep you in fear and immobilized to oppose their
5 organized extortion and racketeering. This trains you never to trust or respect your own judgment well enough to even
6 conceive of questioning authority or challenging their jurisdiction.

7 *"Surely oppression destroys a wise man's reason.
8 And a [compelled] bribe [called income tax] debases the heart." [Ecclesiastes 7:7, Bible, NKJV]*

9 The concept of government as a religion especially applies to the field of taxation. The Internal Revenue Code is 9,500
10 pages of very fine print. We know because we have a personal copy and read it often. Our own former Treasury Secretary
11 Paul O'Neill calls it, and I quote:

12 *"9,500 pages of gibberish."*

13 *[See this quote in a news article at: [http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Evidence/OrgAndDuties/IRSExhibit-](http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Evidence/OrgAndDuties/IRSExhibit-PaulONeill-IRSCo9500PgsOfGibberish.pdf)
14 [PaulONeill-IRSCo9500PgsOfGibberish.pdf](http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Evidence/OrgAndDuties/IRSExhibit-PaulONeill-IRSCo9500PgsOfGibberish.pdf)]*

15 How many people have taken the time to read the Internal Revenue Code in its entirety, and even among those very few
16 people who have read it completely, how many believe that they fully and completely understand it well enough to swear
17 under penalty of perjury that facts they reveal and statements they might make about their own personal tax liability would
18 be completely consistent with it? If you don't meet these two criteria of having read it completely and often and having a
19 full and accurate understanding about it that is truthful and consistent with its legislative intent, then any statement you
20 make on a tax return that is based on your state of mind in that instance becomes simply a matter of usually misinformed or
21 ignorant “belief”. There's a good word for this condition of believing something without knowing all the facts. It is called
22 “faith” and it is the foundation of all religions in the world!:

23 *"Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen." [Heb. 11:1, Bible, NKJV]*

24 Isn't “faith” based on a “belief” in something which you have not seen sufficient scientific evidence to prove? If you are
25 like most Americans who have *never* read or even seen any part of the Internal Revenue Code, which is the only admissible
26 “evidence” of your legal tax obligation, then any action you might take and any statement you might make regarding your
27 tax “liability” under such circumstances could be rationally described only as an act of “faith” and “belief”. Here's the
28 legal definition of “faith”:

29 *"Faith. Confidence; credit; reliance. Thus, an act may be said to be done 'on the faith' of certain
30 representations.*

31 *"Belief; credence; trust. Thus, the Constitution provides that 'full faith and credit' shall be given to the
32 judgments of each state in the courts of the others.*

33 *Purpose; intent; sincerity; state of knowledge or design. This is the meaning of the word in the phrase "good
34 faith" and "bad faith". See Good faith."*

35 *[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 599]*

36 Even when you hire an expensive professional to prepare your tax return, you still have all of the responsibility and liability
37 for the content and the accuracy of the return and if the IRS institutes a penalty for errors or omissions, isn't it you rather
38 than your tax preparer who has to pay the penalty? What exactly are you “trusting” (see the definition of “faith” above)
39 when you sign a tax return and state under penalty of perjury that it is truthful without even reading or knowing or
40 understanding the tax laws? What you are in fact “trusting” is “man” or your “government”. You are trusting what the IRS
41 told you in its publications, right? Or you're trusting an ignorant and greedy and unethical tax lawyer or a misinformed
42 accountant to tell you what your legal responsibilities are, aren't you? That is called trusting “man” because a man wrote
43 those publications or gave you the advice that you formed your “belief” from. The Bible says we shouldn't trust men or a
44 “worthless” government, and instead ought to trust only Him:

1 "Cursed be he that confirmeth not all the words of this law [God's Law, not Caesar's law] to do them. And all
2 the people shall say, Amen." [Deu 27:26, Bible, NKJV]

3 "Behold, the nations are as a drop in the bucket, and are counted as the small dust on the scales." [Isaiah
4 40:15, Bible, NKJV]

5 "All nations before Him are as nothing, and they are counted by Him less than nothing and worthless."
6 [Isaiah 40:17, Bible, NKJV]

7 "Cursed is the one who trusts in man [or by implication man-made government], who depends on flesh for
8 his strength and whose heart turns away from the Lord. He will be like a bush in the wastelands; he will not
9 see prosperity when it comes. He will dwell in the parched places of the desert, in a salt land where no one
10 lives. But blessed is the man who trusts in the Lord, whose confidence is in Him. He will be like a tree planted
11 by the water that sends out its roots by the stream. It does not fear when heat comes; its leaves are always
12 green. It has no worries in a year of drought and never fails to bear fruit." [Jeremiah 17:5-8, Bible, NIV]

13 Now if our government had stuck to its original charter to be "a society of laws and not men", then we wouldn't be forced
14 to have to depend on "men" to know what our tax responsibilities are because we would be able to read the law ourselves
15 without consulting an "expert" and KNOW what we are supposed to do:

16 "The government of the United States has been emphatically termed a government of laws, and not of men.
17 It will certainly cease to deserve that high appellation, if the laws furnish no remedy for the violation of a vested
18 legal right." *Marbury v. Madison*, [5 U.S. 137](#); 1 Cranch 137, 2 L.Ed. 60 (1803)

19 If our government had remained honorable and honest, the laws would be simple and clear and short. Read the earlier tax
20 laws: they are very short and easy to understand. These laws were KNOWABLE by the common man. The easiest way to
21 make the law respectable is to make it short and simple enough so that every person can read and understand it. When it
22 grows too large and/or too complicated to be knowable by every citizen, then at that point, we have transformed our society
23 from a society of laws to a society of men, which is the root and the foundation of tyranny and the very reason we rebelled
24 against English monarchs to form this country! That kind of corruption of our laws began starting in around 1913, shortly
25 after the Federal Reserve Act and the Sixteenth Amendment were passed. At that point, our government became a gigantic
26 parasite completely unrestrained by the Constitutional limits that had kept it under control. It became a socialist
27 bureaucracy bent on destroying our liberties and making itself into a false god.

28 The IRS publications are the only thing that most Americans have ever read that even comes close to claiming to represent
29 what is in the real tax law found in the Internal Revenue Code. Because most people can't afford a high-priced lawyer or
30 accountant who understands the tax laws completely, and don't have the time to read the entire IRC or buy and read a
31 comprehensive and complete book on taxes, then Americans in effect are economically coerced into relying on and having
32 a "religious faith" in the IRS publications as their only source of the tax law. Add to that the legal ignorance perpetuated in
33 them by our government schools and you have additional government duress. Worst yet, the federal courts have said that
34 none of these IRS publications are credible and that they "confer no rights". Read the article on our website about this
35 scam because it will blow your mind!:

36 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Articles/IRSNotResponsible.htm>

37 Even the IRS says you can't rely on their own publications in their Internal Revenue Manual:

38 "IRS Publications, issued by the National Office, explain the law in plain language for taxpayers and their
39 advisors... While a good source of general information, publications should not be cited to sustain a position."
40 [IRM, 4.10.7.2.8 (05-14-1999)]

41 So once again, if you haven't personally read the entire Internal Revenue Code, don't understand it completely, or have
42 trusted the IRS publications, then your "faith" is ill-founded and in effect becomes "bad faith" because you are relying on a
43 completely unaccountable, criminal, and lawless organization called the IRS to define and fulfill your purported legal
44 responsibilities, and that can only be described as despicable, morally wrong, and biblically unsound:

45 "Bad faith. The opposite of "good faith," generally implying or involving actual or constructive fraud, or a
46 design to mislead or deceive another, or a neglect or refusal to fulfill some duty or some contractual obligation,
47 not prompted by an honest mistake as to one's rights or duties, but by some interested or sinister motive. Term
48 'bad faith' is not simply bad judgment or negligence, but rather it implies the conscious doing of a wrong

1 because of dishonest purpose or moral obliquity; it is different from the negative idea of negligence in that it
2 contemplates a state of mind affirmatively operating with furtive design or ill will..."

3 [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 139]

4 You are not alone in your compelled depravity and violation of God's law because most Americans, including us, are just
5 like you. But you have to trust "somebody" on this tax subject don't you, because if you don't file the government is going
6 to go after you and penalize you, aren't they? So you are compelled to have "faith" in something, right? You get to choose
7 what that "something" is, but the result is a compelled "faith" or "trust" in "something" because of demands the
8 government is making on you to satisfy your alleged tax responsibilities.

9 Now if the Constitution says in the First Amendment that "*Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of*
10 *religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof*", and yet the IRS tells you under the "color of law" that you have to in
11 effect trust or have "religious faith" in "something" in order to satisfy their criminal extortion under the "color of law", then
12 isn't the government in effect "making a law respecting the establishment of a religion"? When corrupt judges make
13 rulings on tax issues that violate the Constitution and prejudice our sacred rights, aren't they making law? Isn't this kind of
14 judicial activism called "judge-made law" and isn't Congress' failure to discipline such tyrant judges the equivalent of
15 allowing them to write law that will then be used as precedent in the future? Isn't the object of that "religious faith" and
16 "trust" that the government compels us to have the fraudulent IRS Publications directly, and the IRS who prepares them
17 indirectly? So in effect, if the income tax is indeed an "enforced" or "compelled" tax, then the government has established
18 "faith in the IRS" as a religion by the operation of law. And then the federal courts of that same government have turned
19 around and said that even though the only basis for most people's beliefs is the IRS publications, they aren't trustworthy
20 nor credible, and in fact, you can be penalized for relying on what the IRS told you in them! So you are in effect being
21 compelled to trust or have "religious faith" in a lie, aren't you? But then out of the other side of that same hypocritical and
22 criminal government's mouth, the U.S. supreme Court says:

23 "Courts, no more than the Constitutions, can intrude into the consciences of men or compel them to believe
24 contrary to their faith or think contrary to their convictions, but courts are competent to adjudge the acts men
25 do under the color of a constitutional right, such as that of freedom of speech or of the press or the free exercise
26 of religion and to determine whether the claimed right is limited by other recognized powers, equally precious
27 to mankind. So the mind and the spirit of man remain forever free, while his actions rest subject to necessary
28 accommodation to the competing needs of his fellows."

29 "If all expression of religion or opinion, however, were subject to the discretion of authority, our unfettered
30 dynamic thoughts or moral impulses might be made only colorless and sterile ideas. To give them life and
31 force, the Constitution protects their use. No difference of view as to the importance of the freedoms of press
32 or religion exist. They are "fundamental personal rights and liberties" *Schneider v. State*, 308 U.S. 147, 161,
33 60 S.Ct. 146, 150, 84 L.Ed. 155. To proscribe the dissemination of doctrines or arguments which do not
34 transgress military or moral limits is to destroy the principal bases of democracy, --knowledge and discussion.
35 One man, with views contrary to the rest of his compatriots, is entitled to the privilege of expressing his ideas by
36 speech or broadside to anyone willing to listen or to read. ...

37 "Ordinances absolutely prohibiting [or penalizing] the exercise of the right to disseminate information are, a
38 fortiori, invalid." [*Jones v. City of Opelika*, 316 U.S. 584; 62 S.Ct. 1231 (1942), *Emphasis added*]

39 And when we raise the issue in court that the payment of federal income taxes violates our religious beliefs as documented
40 here, then the courts frequently say that our arguments are "frivolous". See section 4.19 later and *U.S. v. Lee*, 455 U.S. 252
41 (1982) for further confirmation of how the government essentially labels our religious beliefs as being frivolous in the
42 process of enforcing their "love for your money" in the courts. That too is a government action to create a religion, because
43 all of the arguments here are based on the law and words right out of the mouths of the government's own judges and
44 lawyers. Indirectly, they are saying that their own words are frivolous! That's religion and idolatry, and the object of
45 worship is the almighty dollar. The result of them calling our claims "frivolous" is a maximization of federal revenues and
46 personal retirement benefits of federal judges through illegal and unconstitutional extortion. That too violates Christian
47 beliefs, which say that "covetousness" is idolatry, which is the religious worship of idols:

48 "Therefore put to death your members which are on the earth: fornication, uncleanness, passion, evil desire,
49 and covetousness, which is idolatry." [*Colossians 3:5*, Bible, NKJV]

1 “Behold, to obey [God and His Law] is better than sacrifice, and to heed than the fat of rams. **For**
 2 **rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is an iniquity and**
 3 **idolatry. Because you have rejected the word of the Lord, He also has**
 4 **rejected you from being king [or sovereign over government].**” [1 Sam. 15:22-
 5 28, Bible, NKJV]

6 The implication of the above scripture is that when public servants in the government violate God’s law, they cease to be
 7 part of the government and are acting as private individuals absent the authority of law. They are no longer the sovereigns
 8 who are serving the public they are there to protect. Instead they are serving themselves mainly and thereby violating the
 9 fiduciary relationship they have as part of the public trust and federal corporation known as the “United States government”
 10 (see section 2.1 earlier for details). Christians are supposed to disobey such unlawful and immoral actions, including those
 11 of courts.

12 *“We ought to obey God rather than men.” [Acts 5:27-29, Bible, NKJV]*

13 So we have a paradox, folks. Either Subtitle A income taxes are *mandatory* and *enforced* and “religious faith in the IRS”
 14 has become the new religion, or the taxes are instead entirely “voluntary” donations and therefore do not conflict with
 15 religious views or the First Amendment. We can’t have it both ways, but the government’s fraudulent way of calling them
 16 *mandatory* conflicts with so many aspects of our Constitution that we may as well throw the whole Bill of Rights in the
 17 toilet and tell everyone the truth: which is that all their freedoms are suspended to pay for the extravagant debts of an out-
 18 of-control government and everyone is an economic slave and a serf to the government.

19 In our time, government has not only become a religion, it has also become an anti-religion intent on driving Christianity
 20 out of public life so that its only competitor (God) can be eliminated and it can continue to grow in power without
 21 resistance and graduate to that of a totalitarian communist state. Christianity, it turns out, is the only competitor to
 22 government at the moment for the worship of the people, and the one thing that most minority groups focused on rights
 23 (homosexuals, women’s liberation, abortion, etc) have in common is a hate for Christianity, because Christianity is the only
 24 check on their corruption and hedonism. Christianity is the salt, the preservative, and the immune system for our society,
 25 and when you want to overtake society with sin and disease and death, the first thing you have to attack is its immune
 26 system.

27 The kind of idolatrous thinking that accepts the income tax as legal therefore leads to socialism ultimately, and turns the
 28 government into a tyrannical police state that robs citizens of their assets and puts them to use for the alleged "common
 29 good." It is a product of mobocracy masquerading as democracy, where less privileged or poorer groups use their voting
 30 power to compel the government to plunder the assets of wealthier people for their personal benefit. This is the central
 31 approach the demagogues (I mean democrats) use: buy votes with money extorted from hard-working citizens. The
 32 Supreme Court agreed precisely with these conclusions below in the case of *Loan Association v. Topeka*, 20 Wall. 655
 33 (1874):

34 *“To lay with one hand the power of government on the property of the citizen, and with the other to bestow it on*
 35 *favored individuals.. is none the less robbery because it is done under the forms of law and is called taxation.*
 36 *This is not legislation. It is a decree under legislative forms.”*

37 The only way a socialist state can justify its existence is to assert that the government knows better how to take care of you
 38 than you do, and past experience, especially with the Soviet Union, proves that approach **doesn't work!** Forcing you to
 39 have “faith” in the government is a violation of the First Amendment by establishing government as a “religion”. Worship
 40 of government as a religion is the essence of socialism. Socialism has never worked throughout all of history, because the
 41 corruption of men at the highest levels who are in charge of the public funds always leads to usury, abuse, evil, and
 42 tyrannical oppression of the people they are supposed to serve.

43 *“Remember the word that I said to you . ‘A servant is not greater than his master.’ If they persecuted Me, they*
 44 *will also persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also. But all these things they will do to you*
 45 *for My name’s sake, because they do not know Him who sent Me.” [Jesus speaking in the Bible, John 15:20-*
 46 21]

1 Our own country was formed by Christian patriots more than 200 years ago because they rejected this very thing happening
2 to us! They founded the first country whose legal system was based entirely on Natural Law and Natural Order, which we
3 further explain in sections 3.4 and 4.1.

4 Socialism also makes us into unwitting slaves of the government. Would anyone argue that we don't already have a police
5 state, where the Gestapo are the tyrants at the IRS, and fear of the IRS is what keeps us paying our "tribute to the king" in
6 the form of income taxes? Would anyone argue that we are not a country full of cowards when it comes to facing our
7 oppressors? Realistically speaking: How long can cowards remain free and sovereign? Remember that the original
8 American colonies waged an entire violent war of independence and risked everything they had to fight against Britain
9 when their taxes to Britain were only 7%? Now some of us are paying 50% of our income in taxes without even flinching
10 or whimpering or fighting. We're a bunch of wimps if you ask me!

11 The point is that it's much more difficult to put God first with federal income taxes because out of the remaining 50% of
12 our income left after we pay taxes, we have to feed our families and pay our bills. Is it any wonder then that less than 1%
13 of Christians tithe 10% of their income to the church as the Bible requires in Malachi 3:8-10? They can't afford to because
14 they are being taxed/raped and financially enslaved by the government illegally! And then the IRS compels churches to
15 shut up about this kind of abuse by taking away their 501(c)(3) tax-exempt status if they speak up!

16 But if you didn't have to pay income taxes and the IRS would honor your right to do so legally (why does the IRS call it
17 "voluntary compliance" if we can't choose not to pay?), wouldn't you give MUCH more to God and put God first? I
18 certainly would! Therefore, implementing the advice found in this document will, in the long run, result in equipping you
19 with the income you need to be more generous to your local church and to the noble causes and preservation of American
20 liberties and freedoms that we all believe in.

21 **HOWEVER:** *If your intent is to take the money you saved in taxes as a result of following the*
22 *guidance in this document and spend it on your own selfish desires and not on the church (whatever*
23 *church you belong to) or helping others, then you are violating the copyright on this document and*
24 *acting illegally. We demand that you destroy this book and **NOT** read or use this document because*
25 *we would submit that you are a less than honorable steward over the gracious gifts that God (whatever*
26 *God you believe in) has bestowed upon you and deserve to have your income taken away by the tyrants*
27 *at the IRS. Selfishness and deceit are their own best avengers, and we should rightly reap what we*
28 *sow. Anything less would be to promote anarchy, hypocrisy, injustice, and oppression in our society.*
29 *Recall that it was selfishness and vanity on the part of government employees which created the*
30 *problems so clearly documented in this book to begin with. You can't cure selfishness with more*
31 *selfishness, and you will be maligning the tax honesty movement and other noble patriots by abusing*
32 *these materials for your own selfish gain and associating yourself with them in so doing.*

33 The above comment is based on the following scriptures:

34 "A man with an evil eye hastens after riches, and does not consider that poverty will come upon him." [Prov.
35 28:22, Bible, NKJV]

36 "Do not lay up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves [the IRS and
37 the government] break in and steal; but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust
38 destroys and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be
39 also." [Matt. 6:19-21, Bible, NKJV]

40 Now some of you, in fear, might say that we need to obey the government and not make any noise. When should a
41 Christian disobey the civil government? (Rom. 13:7; Acts 5:27-29) When a civil government refuses people the liberty to
42 worship and obey God freely or violates God's law, it has lost its mandate of authority from God. Then the Christian
43 should feel justified and maybe even compelled in disobeying. How are we to worship God freely? With the first fruits of
44 our labor and our income!

1 Ben Franklin , who incidentally was one of the attendees at the Constitutional Convention, believed that when a
2 government began to be tyrannical, it was the right and even the DUTY of the citizens to rebel against that government.
3 Here is what he said:

4 *"Resistance to tyrants is obedience to God."*

5 The Christian, however, is called to bear with his government whenever possible, but there must be a limit to that
6 forbearance.

7 *"Those who stand for nothing will fall for anything." Alex Hamilton*

8 Jesus did not call for revolution against Rome, even though it was an oppressive conqueror of Israel. On the other hand, the
9 apostles refused to obey a government order not to preach and teach in Jesus' name (Acts 5:27-29). On that occasion, one
10 of Jesus' apostles said:

11 *"We ought to obey God rather than men."*

12 Whenever the civil government forbids the practice of things that God has commanded us to do, or tells us to do things He
13 has commanded us not to do, then we are on solid ground in disobeying the government. Blind obedience to government is
14 never right or biblically sound. However difficult or costly it may be, we all must reserve the right to say no to things that
15 we consider oppressive or immoral or sinful. If we don't and we make government our unquestioned god, here is the future
16 that awaits us:¹⁰⁵

17 **The 23rd Psalm (A present-day Lamentation)**

18 *The politician is my shepherd...I am in want;*
19 *He maketh me to lie down on park benches,*
20 *He leadeth me beside still factories;*
21 *He disturbeth my soul.*
22 *Yea, thou I walk through the valley of the shadow of depression and recession,*
23 *I anticipate no recovery, for he is with me.*
24 *He prepareth a reduction in my salary in the presence of my enemies;*
25 *He anointeth my small income with great losses;*
26 *My expenses runneth over.*
27 *Surely unemployment and poverty shall follow me all the days of my life,*
28 *And I shall dwell in a mortgaged house forever.*

29 **4.3.11 Socialism is Incompatible with Christianity**

30 *"The American people will never knowingly adopt socialism. But, under the name of "liberalism", they will*
31 *adopt every fragment of the socialist program, until one day America will be a socialist nation, without knowing*
32 *how it happened." -- Norman Thomas, for many years the U.S. Socialist Party presidential candidate*

33 *"We cannot expect the Americans to jump from Capitalism to Communism, but we can assist their elected*
34 *leaders in giving Americans small doses of Socialism, until they suddenly awake to find they have Communism."*
35 *-- Nikita Krushchev, Premiere of the former Soviet Union, 3-1/2 months before his first visit to the United States.*

36 *"But why, you might ask, should the richest people in the world promote a socialistic system? The answer*
37 *appears to be that under socialism the state owns everything, and these people intend, quite simply, to own the*
38 *state. It is the neatest and completest way of bagging the lot!" -- W.D. Chalmers in "The Conspiracy Of Truth"*

39 *"Socialism is not in the least what it pretends to be. It is not the pioneer of a better and finer world, but the*
40 *spoiler of what thousands of years of civilization have created. It does not build, it destroys. For destruction is*
41 *the essence of it. It produces nothing, it only consumes what the social order based on private ownership in the*
42 *means of production has created." -- Ludwig von Mises ("Socialism", 1922)*

43 *"Freedom is the Right to Choose, the Right to create for oneself the alternatives of Choice. Without the*
44 *possibility of Choice, and the exercise of Choice, a man is not a man but a member, an instrument, a thing [of a*
45 *larger collective]." Thomas Jefferson*

¹⁰⁵ A parody of the Bible, Psalms 23. Submitted by Pastor Wayne Teel and authored by Bob Phillips in his book *The Best of the Good Clean Jokes*.

1 The Supreme Court ruled in the case of *Helvering v. Davis*, [301 U.S. 619](#) (1937) and *Flemming v. Nestor*, [363 U.S. 603](#)
 2 (1960), that Social Security (and by implication all other government social programs!) are **NOT** insurance and are **NOT** a
 3 contract. The government isn't obligated to pay you back *anything*, much less even the amount of money you put into any
 4 social (or should we say *socialist*?) program (see section 2.9.1 for further details on this). Because Social Security is
 5 therefore not insurance and not a trust fund, then what should Christians view it as? It is theft, plain and simple!

6 Social Security is socialism. Socialism is theft. Theft is a sin. There was never a promise to pay benefits. Rights can only
 7 come from responsibilities. You won't understand this yet, but those who accept public benefits cannot have rights. The
 8 Supreme Court agreed precisely with these conclusions below:

9 *"To lay with one hand the power of government on the property of the citizen, and with the other to bestow it on*
 10 *favoured individuals.. is none the less robbery because it is done under the forms of law and is called taxation.*
 11 *This is not legislation. It is a decree under legislative forms."*
 12 *[Loan Association v. Topeka, 20 Wall. 655 (1874):]*

13 _____
 14 *"A tax, in the general understanding of the term and as used in the constitution, signifies an exaction for the*
 15 *support of the government. The word has never thought to connote the expropriation of money from one group*
 16 *for the benefit of another." U.S. v. Butler, 297 U.S. 1 (1936)*

17 _____
 18 *"A statutory provision which is not a legitimate police regulation cannot be made such by being placed in the*
 19 *same act with a police regulation, or by being enacted under a title that declares a purpose which would be a*
 20 *proper object for the exercise of that power.*

21 *"It being self-evident that, unless all things are held in common, some persons must have more property than*
 22 *others, it is from the nature of things impossible to uphold freedom of contract and the right of private*
 23 *property without at the same time recognizing as legitimate those inequalities of fortune that are the*
 24 *necessary result of the exercise of those rights.*

25 *"The Fourteenth Amendment recognizes "liberty" and "property" as coexistent human rights, and debars the*
 26 *states from any unwarranted interference with either.*

27 *"Since a state may not strike down the rights of liberty or property directly, it may not do so indirectly, as by*
 28 *declaring in effect that the public good requires the removal of those inequalities that are but the normal and*
 29 *inevitable result of the exercise of those rights, and then invoking the police power in order to remove the*
 30 *inequalities, without other object in view.*

31 *"The Fourteenth Amendment debars the states from striking down personal liberty or property rights or*
 32 *materially restricting their normal exercise excepting so far as may be incidentally necessary for the*
 33 *accomplishment of some other and paramount object, and one that concerns the public welfare. The mere*
 34 *restriction of liberty or of property rights cannot, of itself, be denominated "public welfare" and treated as a*
 35 *legitimate object of the police power, for such restriction is the very thing that is inhibited by the Amendment. "*
 36 *[Coppage v. Kansas, 236 U.S. 1 (1915)]*

37 The reason why the Supreme Court ruled the way it did above is because:

38 *"Democracy is a form of government that cannot long survive, for as soon as the people learn that they have a*
 39 *voice in the fiscal policies of the government, they will move to vote for themselves all the money in the*
 40 *treasury, and bankrupt the nation".*

41 *- Karl Marx, 1848 author of "The Communist Manifesto"*

42 What protects us as Americans from the above excesses of democracy and mobocracy is the mandate imposed in Article 4,
 43 Section 4 of the U.S. Constitution to provide a Republican Government, which by implication is based on *individual* rather
 44 than *collective* sovereignty and rights as you will find out later in section 4.5:

45 *"The United States shall guarantee to every State in this Union a Republican Form of Government..."*

1 The U.S. Supreme Court in the landmark case of *Pollock v. Farmers Loan and Trust*, [157 U.S. 429](#) (1895), which outlawed
 2 income taxes legislated by Congress, said the following regarding what happens when the government becomes a
 3 robinhood and tries to promote equality of result rather than equality of opportunity. We end up with class warfare, in
 4 society done using the force of law and a mobocracy mentality:

5 *"The present assault upon capital is but the beginning. It will be but the stepping stone to others larger and
 6 more sweeping, until our political contest will become war of the poor against the rich; a war of growing
 7 intensity and bitterness.*

8 ...
 9 *The legislation, in the discrimination it makes, is class legislation. Whenever a distinction is made in the
 10 burdens a law imposes or in the benefits it confers on any citizens by reason of their birth, or wealth, or
 11 religion, it is class legislation, and leads inevitably to oppression and abuses, and to general unrest and
 12 disturbance in society."*

13 Federal funds are not available to ordinary persons. Only indigents can qualify to receive federal benefits. It is highly
 14 unlikely that you ever qualified for a Social Security Card. [Section 205\(c\)\(2\)\(B\)\(i\) of the Social Security Act](#) allows
 15 government to assign Social Security Numbers to applicants for benefits financed with government funds. Unless you need
 16 federal benefits, Social Security Cards are not available to you. You cannot qualify for a number. That's right! SOCIAL
 17 SECURITY NUMBERS ARE NOT AVAILABLE TO THOSE WHO CAN PROVIDE FOR THEMSELVES. If you can
 18 still provide for yourself, or if your family or church or state can support you, it would be fraud to apply for federal
 19 benefits.

20 Let me repeat this essential fact is several ways, until you understand: The application for an SS Card (the [SS-5 form](#)) is a
 21 form limited to a very specific purpose. It is only for indigents who need federal funds. People who can provide for
 22 themselves cannot be indigent. Social Security Cards cannot be issued to anyone until they apply for federal benefits. The
 23 government cannot know who is destitute; they must wait for applicants desperate enough to apply for federal funds. It
 24 must be voluntary. Social Security has no trust fund; it is solely a handout. It is limited to government wards. Only
 25 socialists can qualify for a card. ONLY THOSE WHO CANNOT SUPPORT THEMSELVES AND ARE WILLING TO
 26 ACCEPT SOCIALISM AND WILLING TO SWEAR SO WITH A PERJURY OATH ON A PERMANENT
 27 IRREVOCABLE RECORD, CAN QUALIFY TO RECEIVE A SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER.

28 To remain constitutional, only wards of the government can receive benefits. This is a vow of poverty. You exchanged
 29 your rights to all future wages for the false promise of future benefits. You did so voluntarily. I'll discuss labor rights and
 30 poverty vows and taxable wages in other chapters.

31 According to the legal definition of "Tacit Procuration", you grant them the power of attorney if you expect them to provide
 32 for you. You asked them to provide for you - To steal for you. Government does not and cannot create wealth, it must tax
 33 in order to give. Government cannot provide benefits unless it takes them from someone else. Socialism is theft of your
 34 neighbor's money. Your new master will take money from your neighbors, against their will, and over their objections.
 35 These civil servants will eventually resort to the force of guns, on your behalf, to seize property from any neighbor who
 36 stubbornly and repeatedly refuses to hand over whatever is demanded. It is theft. They call it distraint. It is not insurance.
 37 Proverbs 1:10-19 gives us advice about those who entrap the innocent to fill their house with plunder.

38 In Matt 20:25-27 and Mark 10:42-43 and Luke 22:25-27 Jesus tells us to not have dominion over others, but to serve.
 39 CHRISTIANS SERVE. CHRISTIANS DON'T LORD over those who are not under them. Not by force, not by vote, not
 40 by hiring a servant and then delegating to the servant an authority to steal - an authority that you don't have. Again:
 41 Christians don't have dominion over their neighbors. You cannot tax your neighbors to fund your retirement, and that's
 42 exactly what you are doing by collecting a Social Security Check, because the government isn't paying back the money you
 43 put in. As a matter of fact, it pays back many times the value of the money you put in and doesn't maintain a trust balance
 44 at all. Everything it takes in is paid right back out to beneficiaries!

45 Since there is no trust fund (nor can there be one) - Only by the deepest commitment to covetousness can you force others
 46 to pay for your retirement (or pay your doctor bills, or pay to educate your children). You are coveting your neighbors'
 47 goods. You are forcing your dominion over those who are not subject to your authority, contrary to Christ's command.

1 Conversely, if your bank account and property can be seized to pay for your neighbor's retirement (or doctor bills or
2 tuition), then you must have somehow lost your right to keep `your' property or money. What do you suppose that you
3 signed to waive any right to keep `your' property?

4 Have you become surety for the debts of a stranger? The security in Social Security is social. Look up "social insurance"
5 in a law dictionary. You have become surety for your neighbor. Proverbs 11:15 "He that is surety for a stranger shall smart
6 for it: and he that hateth suretiship is sure." Also: Proverbs 17:18

7 Only wards of the government (card carrying socialists) can receive the benefits of National Socialism.

8 SS is not a trust fund or insurance, it is an excise tax on the benefits of a limited citizenship (including the government
9 granted privilege of earning wages). This tax revenue goes into the general fund. Authority for this taxation comes from
10 the Buck Act, not the Internal Revenue Code. It is presumed, but not required, that congress will appropriate funds each
11 year for maintenance of the government wards. The Supreme Court ruled in 1980 that Social Security benefits are not
12 based on a fixed contract and therefore can change or be eliminated at any time. *Fleming v. Nestor*, 80 S Ct 1367.

13 In the 1891 naturalization case of Mr. Sauer, Title 81 Federal Reporter page 358 the court held that Mr. Sauer, although an
14 industrious, law abiding man, could not become a citizen because he claimed to be a Socialist. Socialists could not become
15 citizens. And they still cannot. I have another chapter that cites every court case where people were forced to get Social
16 Security numbers. Every case is a welfare applicant. Social Security Numbers are only for socialists. Socialists cannot
17 have rights. Read Appendix C of *Social Security: Mark of the Beast*
18 (<http://famguardian.org/Publications/SocialSecurity/TOC.htm>) and prove to yourself that they have changed their
19 citizenship and are not protected by the first eight amendments to your Constitution (Hague case) and do not have the right
20 to a trial by jury (Colegate case). If you want to loose your birthright just fill out a form claiming socialist benefits. If you
21 think you still have a right to a trial by jury, read Appendix F of Mark of the Beast.

22 A Christian cannot be a socialist. Christians are not to associate with freeloaders, according to 2nd Thessalonians 3:6-14:

23 2nd Thessalonians 3:6 (NIV): In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, we command you, brothers, to keep away from every
24 brother who is idle and does not live according to the teaching you received from us.

25 3:7 For you yourselves know how you ought to follow our example. We were not idle when we were with you,

26 3:8 nor did we eat anyone's food without paying for it. On the contrary, we worked night and day, laboring and toiling so
27 that we would not be a burden to any of you.

28 3:9 We did this, not because we do not have the right to such help, but in order to make ourselves a model for you to
29 follow.

30 3:10 For even when we were with you, we gave you this rule: "If a man will not work, he shall not eat." I want to interject a
31 note here: this isn't a snobbish threat to starve the poor, it is a fundamental Biblical principle. In the same sentence
32 where God condemned us to die, he condemned us to work for food. That's right! To acknowledge socialism is to deny
33 God's authority. Genesis 3:19 (KJV): "In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for
34 out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return." The socialists that want you to provide not
35 only their food but also health care, deny God's authority to sentence us to hardships.

36 3:11 We hear that some among you are idle. They are not busy; they are busybodies.

37 3:12 Such people we command and urge in the Lord Jesus Christ to settle down and earn the bread they eat.

38 3:13 And as for you, brothers, never tire of doing what is right.

39 3:14 If anyone does not obey our instruction in this letter, take special note of him. Do not associate with him, in order that
40 he may feel ashamed."

41 That the freeloader may feel ashamed. I've been told that I am too sarcastic just because I quote the Bible.

42 Do not confuse voluntary charity with forced socialism. Christians are often in need of charity, yet cannot accept socialism.

43 *"We have rights, as individuals, to give as much of our own money as we please to charity; but as members of*
44 *Congress we have no right so to appropriate a dollar of public money." David Crockett, Congressman 1827-35*

45 Does the Bible support the notion that socialism can provide for Christians? Let's take a closer look:

- 1 • 1st Thessalonians 2:9 (NIV): " Surely you remember, brothers, our toil and hardship; we worked night and day in
2 order not to be a burden to anyone ..."
- 3 • 1st Thessalonians 4:11-12 "work with your hands...so that you will not be dependent on anybody."
- 4 • 1st Corinthians 4:11 (NIV): "To this very hour we go hungry and thirsty, we are in rags, we are brutally treated,
5 we are homeless." [note: they were homeless but they were not freeloaders. Even Christ was homeless, Matt 8:20,
6 Luke 9:58.]
- 7 • Proverbs 10:26: (NKJV) "As vinegar to the teeth and smoke to the eyes, so is the lazy man to those who send
8 him."
- 9 • Proverbs 20:4: (NKJV): "The lazy man will not plow because of winter; he will beg during harvest and have
10 nothing."
- 11 • Proverbs 21:25 (KJV): "The desire of the slothful killeth him; for his hands refuse to labour."
- 12 • Ephesians 4:28 (NIV): "He who has been stealing must steal no longer, but must work, doing something useful
13 with his own hands, that he may have something to share with those in need."
- 14 • Acts 14:22 (NIV) ..."We must go through many hardships to enter the kingdom of God," [You will understand this
15 after you study the topic of citizenship]
- 16 • Luke 19:26 (NIV): "He replied, 'I tell you that to everyone who has, more will be given, but as for the one who has
17 nothing, even what he has will be taken away.'"
- 18 • 2nd Corinthians 11:9 (NIV) "And when I was with you and needed something, I was not a burden to anyone,... I
19 have kept myself from being a burden to you in any way, and will continue to do so."
- 20 • 2nd Corinthians 7:2 (NIV) "... we have exploited no one. "
- 21 • Jesus is quoted in Matthew 25:29-30 (KJV) "For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have
22 abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable
23 servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."
- 24 • Proverbs 13:4 (NIV) "The sluggard craves and gets nothing, but the desires of the diligent are fully satisfied."
- 25 • Proverbs 20:4 (KJV) "The sluggard will not plow by reason of the cold; therefore shall he beg in harvest, and have
26 nothing."

27 If a Christian cannot be a socialist, then a Christian cannot have an ID card available only to socialists. Theodore
28 Roosevelt:

29 *"The first requisite of a citizen in this Republic of ours, is that he shall be able and willing to pull his own*
30 *weight."*

31 As further proof that socialists have never had rights, in Appendix C of *Social Security: Mark of the Beast* read where the
32 Articles of Confederation extended the rights of citizenship to inhabitants with the exceptions of paupers and vagabonds
33 and fugitives. A vagrant is not a vagabond. Even Christ was homeless (Matt 8:20, Luke 9:58). A vagabond is a homeless
34 freeloader. A pauper is a person who must be supported at public expense. Social Security partakers are supported at public
35 expense, therefore cannot have the rights of citizens anymore than a fugitive would have.

36 The English word "stigma" comes from the Greek and, in English, means a mark of shame or a brand of disgrace. The third
37 six in 666 is the Greek *stigma* (666= *chi-xi-stigma*). The mark is not necessarily a tattoo or implant. Do you have a
38 permanent mark of shame?

39 Conclusions so far: There is no Social Security trust fund, there is no insurance, and there is no pension. It is plunder. It is
40 pure orthodox socialism. Socialists are not and cannot become citizens. Socialists cannot have rights. Never could, still
41 can't. Christians cannot be socialists. Christians cannot have socialist ID. Did your government school teach you this?

42 **PUBLIC EDUCATION**

43 Karl Marx wrote the *Communist Manifesto* in 1848. Public schools is the 10th plank. As I said earlier: Those who accept
44 public benefits cannot have rights. Rights can only come from responsibilities. You have no right to force others to pay
45 your children's tuition. Hillary Clinton's village will raise the children of those who forfeit their rights to their own
46 children. Even the U.S. Supreme Court in *Meyer v. Nebraska*, [262 US 390](#) (1923), concluded

47 *"it is the natural duty of the parent to give his children education suitable to their station in life..."*

1 The U.S. Supreme Court in *Plyler v. Doe*, [457 U.S. 202](#) (1982), concluded,

- 2 • "...education is not a fundamental right..."
 3 • "the Fourteenth Amendment's protection extends to anyone, citizen or stranger, who is subject to the laws of a
 4 State..."

5 US Congressman in the 1840's Robert Dale Owen, later known as the father of American socialism, believed that the
 6 Christian faith hindered man's evolution. An Owen associate wrote:

7 *"The great object was to get rid of Christianity and to convert our churches into halls of science... the plan was
 8 not to make open attacks upon religion - although we might belabor the clergy and bring them into contempt
 9 where we could ... but to establish a system of state - we said national - schools... from which all religion would
 10 be excluded and to which all parents were to be compelled by law to send their children."*

11 These views influenced John Dewey at the Columbia Teacher's College, and by 1900 a socialist system of compulsory
 12 schools, which exclude religion, became a reality.

13 SUMMARY

14 The seven-headed scarlet beast is a socialist confederation of beast powers that raised up from the sea. The sea symbolizes
 15 multitudes of people (Rev 17:5). Seas of people (democracies) demand socialist benefits. These people received not the
 16 love of the truth that they might be saved. They want to be taken care of, but not by God. They won't accept the
 17 responsibility to take care of themselves, or suffer God's trials. They fabricated a counterfeit image of God [the
 18 government] to provide for them and protect them. They get their rights from their god that they created. This is without a
 19 doubt idolatry and the new god is government. Here is the way one of our readers described it:

20 *"The people want 'Zeus' and 'Gods'/gods' --- paganism!
 21 They' got PAY-GUN-ISM!!!"*
 22 [\[http://www.bayith-yhvh.org/index.Segmented-1.htm.html/\]](http://www.bayith-yhvh.org/index.Segmented-1.htm.html/)

23 They expect you to worship their counterfeit image of God. In their courts, your rights come from the god they created.

24 *Abraham Lincoln, September 11, 1858: "Accustomed to trampling on the rights of others, you have lost the
 25 genius of your own independence and become the fit subjects of the first cunning tyrant who rises among you."*

26 If you want to learn more about the subject of this section, we refer you to a document entitled: *Social Security: Mark of*
 27 *the Beast*, which you can freely download and read at:

28 <http://famguardian.org/Publications/SocialSecurity/TOC.htm>

29 **4.3.12 All Governments are Corporations**

30 According to the U.S. Supreme Court, all governments are corporations:

31 "Corporations are also of all grades, and made for varied objects; **all governments are corporations,**
 32 **created by usage and common consent, or grants and charters which create a body politic for**
 33 **prescribed purposes; but whether they are private, local or general, in their objects, for the**
 34 **enjoyment of property, or the exercise of power, they are all governed by the same rules of law, as to**
 35 **the construction and the obligation of the instrument by which the incorporation is made. One**
 36 **universal rule of law protects persons and property.** It is a fundamental principle of the common law of
 37 England, that the term freemen of the kingdom, includes 'all persons,' ecclesiastical and temporal,
 38 incorporate, politique or natural; it is a part of their magna charta (2 Inst. 4), and is incorporated into our
 39 institutions. The persons of the members of corporations are on the same footing of protection as other
 40 persons, and their corporate property secured by the same laws which protect that of individuals. 2 Inst. 46-
 41 7. 'No man shall be taken,' 'no man shall be disseised,' without due process of law, is a principle taken from
 42 magna charta, infused into all our state constitutions, and is made inviolable by the federal government, by

1 the amendments to the constitution." [Proprietors of Charles River Bridge v. Proprietors of Warren Bridge,
2 [36 U.S. 420](#) (1837)]

3 The above quote from the U.S. Supreme Court is further confirmed by the United States Code:

4 *United States Code*
5 *TITLE 28 - JUDICIARY AND JUDICIAL PROCEDURE*
6 [PART VI - PARTICULAR PROCEEDINGS](#)
7 [CHAPTER 176 - FEDERAL DEBT COLLECTION PROCEDURE](#)
8 [SUBCHAPTER A - DEFINITIONS AND GENERAL PROVISIONS](#)

9 [Sec. 3002. Definitions](#)

10 (15) "**United States**" means -
11 (A) **a Federal corporation**;
12 (B) an agency, department, commission, board, or other entity of the United States; or
13 (C) an instrumentality of the United States.

14 The fact that all governments are corporations and that the United States government is a federal corporation means that
15 their authority is limited by their corporate charter. In the case of our federal government, that corporate charter is the
16 Constitution of the United States of America. Any attempt to violate the corporate charter amounts to an assault on the
17 liberties of the body politic that granted the charter, which is us as the Sovereigns, who are "We the People".

18 Our federal government has obviously violated its corporate charter and thereby wreaked havoc on our society. The
19 following Declaration was written by an enlightened legal researcher, Dessie Andrews, as a way to show not only how the
20 legal profession has corrupted our system of government, but how we can put it back inside the box that its corporate
21 charter was supposed to keep it in. She proposes that we should convene a Third Continental Congress which should
22 resolve to pass the following Declaration, which would dissolve the criminal government of the United States because it
23 has violated its charter. We believe she is onto something and we urge you to read this important work. If you would like
24 to contact her, send an email to: dessieandrews@earthlink.net:

25 *The unanimous Declaration of the fifty united States of America,*

26 *When in the Course of human events, it becomes necessary for one nation of Sovereigns to dissolve the political*
27 *bands which have connected them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth, the separate and*
28 *equal station to which the Laws of Nature and of Nature's God entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of*
29 *mankind requires that they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation.*

30 *We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men and women are created equal, that they are endowed by*
31 *their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness.*
32 *That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men, deriving their just powers from the consent*
33 *of the governed. That whenever any Form of Government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the Right of*
34 *the People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new Government, laying its foundation on such principles*
35 *and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their Safety and Happiness,*
36 *Prudence, indeed, will dictate that Governments long established should not be changed for light and transient*
37 *causes; and accordingly all experience hath shown, that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are*
38 *sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long*
39 *train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same Object evinces a design to reduce them under*
40 *absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide new Guards*
41 *for their future security. Such has been the patient sufferance of Government. The history of the present regime*
42 *and all those regimes leading up to this time, from the very foundation and grant of the limited delegation of*
43 *authority in the contract known as the United States Constitution is a history of repeated injuries and*
44 *usurpation, all having in direct object the establishment of an absolute Tyranny over these States and their*
45 *People. To prove this, let Facts be submitted to an august body of advisors to Congress.*

46 *A government functions as a corporation. Inasmuch as every government is an artificial person, an*
47 *abstraction, and a creature of the mind only, a government can interface only with other artificial persons. The*
48 *imaginary—having neither actuality nor substance – is foreclosed from creating and attaining parity with the*
49 *tangible. The legal manifestation of this is that no government, as well as any law, agency, aspect, court, etc.,*
50 *can concern itself with anything other than corporate artificial persons and the contracts between them.*

51 *A corporation, to remain in business, must abide by its corporate charter and can assume no more power than*
52 *those granted it by its creators. The present corporation, the "government" of the United States, or United*

1 *States of America, has long ago burst its corporate bonds and assumed control of its Grantors. This can no*
2 *longer be tolerated and must end. The trustees of this sacred trust have run amok.*

3 *They have laid war and emergency powers over this land in order to create chaos and subject the*
4 *People to military rule.*

5 *They have divested the People of their freeholds in order to steal their electoral rights in exchange*
6 *for voting franchises. The Reconstruction Acts.*

7 *They have systematically and with great patience stolen the birthright of every American and state*
8 *Citizen and replaced it with a yoke of duties and obligations to the created creature.*

9 *They have codified the Law and overlaid it with codes and statutes. The Revised Statutes of the*
10 *United States in 1878.*

11 *They have not enacted law, as Constitutionally mandated, since 1879, but rather, have initiated*
12 *“public policy”.*

13 *They have created a “government” outside the Charter and pretend to fill the offices which have*
14 *remained vacant since 1871. In so doing, they ended the separation of powers guaranteed to the*
15 *People, ending any responsibilities assumed under the mantle of the office of officer and became one*
16 *body of employees. The Civil Service Act of 1883.*

17 *They have legislated away the Peoples’ Circuit courts. The Judiciary Act of 1911.*

18 *They have created a central bank in defiance of the Framers’ express wishes and orders. Federal*
19 *Reserve Act of 1913*

20 *They have abolished the several States and State Citizens with the passage of the 17th Amendment in*
21 *1913.*

22 *They have given the substance of every state Citizen to a private corporation, the Federal Reserve,*
23 *with the Glass-Steagal Act of 1933.*

24 *They have stolen the assets, energy, property and futures of every state Citizen and pledged them to*
25 *foreign corporations.*

26 *They have openly declared the People to be enemies of the State.*

27 *They have initiated policies in violation of the takings clause in their Corporate charter, in order to*
28 *fund social programs and redistribute wealth.*

29 *They have undermined the educational process in the several States and created a slave force with*
30 *the uneducated.*

31 *They have snatched the children from their natural parents through the use of the doctrine of parens*
32 *patriae.*

33 *They, by their charter, being confined to the ten mile square area known as Washington DC, have*
34 *created agencies to justify their intrusion upon and into the several States*

35 *They have eliminated the People’s courts and a duly elected Congress and left the People with no*
36 *redress of grievances.*

37 *They have instituted Roman civil law on the land under the guise of Corporate courts.*

38 *They have implemented a Bar Association to still the voice of the People in their Corporate courts.*

39 *They have tricked the People into invisible contracts with guile and deceit and without full*
40 *disclosure, into exchanging their Sovereign standing for that of a Corporate employee status.*

41 *They hold the People in slavery with their presumptions, their courts and their police powers.*

42 *They have waged war and committed unspeakable atrocities in my name on innocent peoples and*
43 *nations, without declaring war.*

1 They have obstructed the Administration of Justice, by refusing to Assent to Laws for establishing
2 Judiciary powers, instead they sit in administrative, corporate courts.

3 They have made Judges dependent on their will alone, for the tenure of their offices and the amount
4 and payment of their salaries.

5 They have erected a multitude of New Offices, and sent hither swarms of employees, masquerading as
6 Officers to harass our people and eat out their substance.

7 They have kept among us, in times of peace, Standing Armies without the consent of the legislatures,
8 by declaring constant and chronic emergencies.

9 They have affected to render the Military independent of and superior to the Civil powers.
10 They have combined with others to subject us to a jurisdiction foreign to our constitution, and
11 unacknowledged by our laws; giving their Assent to their Acts of pretended Legislation.

12 For quartering large bodies of armed troops among us.

13 For protecting them, by a mock Trial or investigation, from punishment for any Murders or other
14 atrocities they should commit on the Inhabitants of the several States.

15 For imposing Taxes on us without our Consent..

16 For depriving us of the benefits of Trial by Jury.

17 For taking away our Charters, abolishing our most valuable Laws, and altering fundamentally the
18 Forms of our Governments.

19 For suspending our own Legislatures, and declaring themselves invested with power to legislate for
20 us in all cases whatsoever.

21 They have abdicated Government here, by declaring us out of their Protection and waging War
22 against us.

23 They have brought the law of the seas onto the land, bringing with it its system of taxes, fines and
24 penalties, thus destroying the lives of our people.

25 They are, at this time, transporting large Armies to complete the works of death, desolation and
26 tyranny, already begun with circumstances of Cruelty and perfidy scarcely paralleled in the most
27 barbarous ages, and totally unworthy of the leaders of a civilized nation.

28 They have bankrupted the United States corporation too many times to count, have initiated
29 Reorganization after Reorganization, each time being more onerous to the People and each time
30 divesting them of more rights and replacing them with government issued privileges and benefits.

31 They have created worthless military scrip, removed all backing of substance of any currency and
32 forced the People to trade with worthless scrip and credit, thereby stealing the substance of the
33 People and eroding their worth with inflation.

34 In every stage of these Oppressions We have Petitioned for Redress in the most humble terms. Our repeated
35 Petitions have been answered only by repeated injury. A Government Pretender whose character is thus
36 marked by every act which may define a Tyrant, is unfit to be the holder of the sacred trust of a free people.

37 The actors conspiring under color of law to undermine the integrity and substance of the People, have
38 accomplished these acts by counterfeiting the Seals of States and Offices, to deceive the People.

39 For these reasons and more, I, one of the descendants of the declarers of the Declaration of Independence of
40 1776 do solemnly Publish and Declare, That the People of the several States are, and of Right ought to be,
41 FREE AND INDEPENDENT PEOPLE OF THE SEVERAL STATES; that they are absolved from all Allegiance
42 to the corporate United States of America, that they no longer have a republican, representative form of
43 government. That the employees of the United States of America long ago exceeded their trust which was
44 granted to them by the People with limited delegation of powers. That, as Creators of the Corporation known
45 as the United States of America, we hereby disband and dissolve the corporate charter which was granted in
46 trust.

1 That I, the undersigned, was endowed with unalienable rights from my Creator. That I rely on the Protection of
2 divine Providence, and with this compact, pledge to my fellow men and women my Life, my Fortune and my
3 sacred Honor.

4 **4.3.13 Why good government demands more than just “obeying the law”**

5 We should all teach our own children that legal, law-abiding behavior is desirable. However, in a civilized society, simply
6 “obeying the law” and doing nothing more is minimal behavior and poor citizenship. Civilization cannot long endure if our
7 conduct is merely “legal.” The Apostle Paul alluded to this when he said:

8 “**All things are lawful for me, but all things are not helpful.** All things are lawful for me, but I will not be
9 brought under the power of any.” [1 Cor. 6:12, Bible, NKJV]

10 For civilization to endure and expand personal liberty and happiness, human relations must be characterized by respect,
11 courtesy, good manners, ethics, and morality - none of which are required by law. The reason they can’t be required by law
12 is because:

13 “You can’t legislate morality.”

14 With former President Bill Clinton, "I didn't break any laws" has become the hissing cackle of false humility and
15 hypocritical vanity displayed by the puff adder politician in the White House and his "Sit Up! Bark!" democrat emulators in
16 the halls of Congress. He is a walking, talking contradiction of everything worthy of teaching our children about self-
17 government. If everyone did nothing more for the benefit of our society than emulate his despicable behavior, then what
18 kind of country do you think we would have? What we would end up with a banana-republic where “the end justifies the
19 means”, and we would certainly no longer deserve the kind of respect and envy that many throughout the rest of the world
20 bestow upon this country.

21 "I didn't break any laws" is nothing to brag about. Our ancestors were individuals and families of character as with most of
22 the American people who do not measure their daily choices by what is merely legal. They have lived their moment-by-
23 moment lives by respect for individuals, standards of ethics, and principles of boundary that transcend mere law. They
24 believed this was normal and average civilized conduct. When they come of age, our children and our children's children
25 will agree.

26 The former actor in the White House is, by repeated acts of misconduct, challenging the statistical laws of probability and
27 the Creator's sow-reap Laws of Certainty. Lying and cheating, and getting away with it, appears to be successful. But, like
28 a speeder on the highway, "Success breeds failure." He will get caught or crash - or both! Count on it.

29 The day is soon coming when Clinton’s former supporters will, by hindsight, speak his name as a curse. Many of us would
30 have preferred foresight. Remember the words of former President George Bush before he lost the election to Clinton?
31 “President Clinton has no character?” He was definitely right, in hindsight, now wasn’t he? But, after all, foresight has a
32 prerequisite. It is called "making choices by principle."

33 Any civilization, if it is to endure, expand, and prosper, must be based on “making choices by principle”, rather than simply
34 “complying with the law”. The foundation of making choices by principle rather than law is morality and ethics. Morality
35 and ethics are summed up in one word: wisdom. The chief source of all wisdom is God:

36 “**The fear of [respect and obedience towards] the Lord is the beginning of wisdom,** and the knowledge of the
37 Holy One is understanding, for by me your days will be multiplied, and years of life will be added to you.”
38 [Prov. 9:10-11, Bible, NKJV]

39 Therefore, belief and trust in God over and above the vanity of man is the chief source of “making choices by principle” in
40 our society. Any effort by our corrupted courts to eliminate religion from the media or public life or schools is an effort to
41 remove “principle”, and by implication, morality and ethics and wisdom, from the decision-making process. Even the
42 Supreme Court agrees:

43 “The American people have always regarded education and acquisition of knowledge as matters of supreme
44 importance which should be diligently promoted. The Ordinance of 1787 declares: **Religion, morality and**

knowledge being necessary to good government and the happiness of mankind, schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged." [Meyer v. State of Nebraska, [262 U.S. 390](#) (1923)]

When you eliminate God and religion from society, then you end up with a society without a conscience, which is exactly what our country would be like if everyone were like former President Clinton and his Democrat imitators.

4.4 The Constitution is Supposed to Make You the Sovereign and The Government Your Servant

The premise of this section is that the purpose of our U.S. Constitution is to make the government into our servant and us into the sovereign. You as the sovereign are not bound by the Constitution, but the people who work in government are because they took an oath to support and defend it. The taking of that oath makes them the servant and you the master and creates a fiduciary relationship between the two of you that is enforceable in a court of law if your rights are injured. You never took that oath and you never signed any instrument agreeing to be bound by it.

For the subsections within this section, we rely again on the writings of Lysander Spooner and his wonderful and brilliant essay entitled No Treason: The Constitution of No Authority. Specifically, we derive most of the rest of this section and its subsections from sections IV through XIX of that essay which appears on our website at:

<http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Indiv/SpoonerLysander/NoTreason.htm>

Lysander Spooner's writings will really get you thinking, and he has a unique, common sense, and lucid way of expressing himself which we enjoyed so thoroughly that we thought we would repeat it here for your reading pleasure. If his writings interest you, then we recommend a compendium of his writings entitled The Lysander Spooner Reader, ISBN 0-930073-06-1 (hc), Fox and Wilkes, 938 Howard Street, Ste 202; San Francisco, CA 94103. Incidentally, Lysander's writings are the basis of most of contemporary Libertarian thought.

We have taken the liberty to edit Mr Spooner's remarks slightly to remove the notion that the Constitution does not in actuality bind government servants, because the result of that aspect of his conclusions in their affect on our society would be tyranny, pure chaos, anarchy, and lawlessness, and this would clearly serve the interests of no one and harm everyone as a collective. Likewise, there is nothing to be gained and everything to be lost by society in undermining the value and the virtue of a written constitution, since the Constitutional Republic we have has been quite effective to date in maintaining the blessings of liberty far better than any previous know system of government. Along those more constructive lines of inquiry, we believe that oaths of public office can and should be improved to increase the level of personal accountability that government servants have toward their constituents so as to remove the defects and complaints that Lysander expresses regarding oaths of office later in section 4.4.8. On the other hand, Lysander Spooner believes that because the Constitution does such a poor job holding our public servants accountable, that our only defense is trial by jury. He wrote an essay entitled An Essay on Trial by Jury describing this aspect of his beliefs that we have posted on our website at:

<http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Indiv/SpoonerLysander/TrialByJury.txt>

For the purposes of subsequent discussion, we use the term "citizen" only as a convenience to refer to the sovereign people inhabiting a body politic, but in a more general sense, we mean everyone who inhabits a country, including both citizens and aliens.

4.4.1 The Constitution does not bind citizens

The constitution not only binds no citizens now, but it never did bind any citizens. It never bound citizens, because it was never agreed to by citizens in such a manner as to make it, on general principles of law and reason, binding upon them.

It is a general principle of law and reason, that a *written* instrument binds no one until he has signed it. This principle is so inflexible a one, that even though a man is unable to write his name, he must still "make his mark," before he is bound by a written contract. This custom was established ages ago, when few men could write their names; when a clerk -- that is, a man who could write -- was so rare and valuable a person, that even if he were guilty of high crimes, he was entitled to pardon, on the ground that the public could not afford to lose his services. Even at that time, a written contract must be signed; and men who could not write, either "made their mark," or signed their contracts by stamping their seals upon wax

1 affixed to the parchment on which their contracts were written. Hence the custom of affixing seals, that has continued to
2 this time.

3 The laws holds, and reason declares, that if a written instrument is not signed, the presumption must be that the party to be
4 bound by it, did not choose to sign it, or to bind himself by it. And law and reason both give him until the last moment, in
5 which to decide whether he will sign it, or not. Neither law nor reason requires or expects a man to agree to an instrument,
6 *until it is written*; for until it is written, he cannot know its precise legal meaning. And when it is written, and he has had the
7 opportunity to satisfy himself of its precise legal meaning, he is then expected to decide, and not before, whether he will
8 agree to it or not. And if he do not THEN sign it, his reason is supposed to be, that he does not choose to enter into such a
9 contract. The fact that the instrument was written for him to sign, or with the hope that he would sign it, goes for nothing.

10 Where would be the end of fraud and litigation, if one party could bring into court a written instrument, without any
11 signature, and claim to have it enforced, upon the ground that it was written for another man to sign? that this other man
12 had promised to sign it? that he ought to have signed it? that he had had the opportunity to sign it, if he would? but that he
13 had refused or neglected to do so? Yet that is the most that could ever be said of the Constitution. [1] The very judges, who
14 profess to derive all their authority from the Constitution -- from an instrument that nobody ever signed -- would spurn any
15 other instrument, not signed, that should be brought before them for adjudication. [1] The very men who drafted it, never
16 signed it in any way to bind themselves by it, AS A CONTRACT. And not one of them probably ever would have signed it
17 in any way to bind himself by it, AS A CONTRACT.

18 Moreover, a written instrument must, in law and reason, not only be signed, but must also be delivered to the party (or to
19 some one for him), in whose favor it is made, before it can bind the party making it. The signing is of no effect, unless the
20 instrument be also delivered. And a party is at perfect liberty to refuse to deliver a written instrument, after he has signed it.
21 The Constitution was not only never signed by anybody, but it was never delivered by anybody, or to anybody's agent or
22 attorney. It can therefore be of no more validity as a contract, then can any other instrument that was never signed or
23 delivered.

24 **4.4.2 The Constitution as a Legal Contract**

25 As further evidence of the general sense of mankind, as to the practical necessity there is that all men's IMPORTANT
26 contracts, especially those of a permanent nature, should be both written and signed, the following facts are pertinent.

27 For nearly two hundred years -- that is, since 1677 -- there has been on the statute book of England, and the same, in
28 substance, if not precisely in letter, has been re-enacted, and is now in force, in nearly or quite all the States of this Union, a
29 statute, the general object of which is to declare that no action shall be brought to enforce contracts of the more important
30 class, UNLESS THEY ARE PUT IN WRITING, AND SIGNED BY THE PARTIES TO BE HELD CHARGEABLE
31 UPON THEM. [At this point there is a footnote listing 34 states whose statute books Spooner had examined, all of which
32 had variations of this English statute; the footnote also quotes part of the Massachusetts statute.]

33 The principle of the statute, be it observed, is, not merely that written contracts shall be signed, but also that all contracts,
34 except for those specially exempted -- generally those that are for small amounts, and are to remain in force for but a short
35 time -- SHALL BE BOTH WRITTEN AND SIGNED.

36 The reason of the statute, on this point, is, that it is now so easy a thing for men to put their contracts in writing, and sign
37 them, and their failure to do so opens the door to so much doubt, fraud, and litigation, that men who neglect to have their
38 contracts -- of any considerable importance -- written and signed, ought not to have the benefit of courts of justice to
39 enforce them. And this reason is a wise one; and that experience has confirmed its wisdom and necessity, is demonstrated
40 by the fact that it has been acted upon in England for nearly two hundred years, and has been so nearly universally adopted
41 in this country, and that nobody thinks of repealing it.

42 We all know, too, how careful most men are to have their contracts written and signed, even when this statute does not
43 require it. For example, most men, if they have money due them, of no larger amount than five or ten dollars, are careful to
44 take a note for it. If they buy even a small bill of goods, paying for it at the time of delivery, they take a receipted bill for it.
45 If they pay a small balance of a book account, or any other small debt previously contracted, they take a written receipt for
46 it.

1 Furthermore, the law everywhere (probably) in our country, as well as in England, requires that a large class of contracts,
 2 such as wills, deeds, etc., shall not only be written and signed, but also sealed, witnessed, and acknowledged. And in the
 3 case of married women conveying their rights in real estate, the law, in many States, requires that the women shall be
 4 examined separate and apart from their husbands, and declare that they sign their contracts free of any fear or compulsion
 5 of their husbands.

6 Such are some of the precautions which the laws require, and which individuals -- from motives of common prudence, even
 7 in cases not required by law -- take, to put their contracts in writing, and have them signed, and, to guard against all
 8 uncertainties and controversies in regard to their meaning and validity. And yet we have what purports, or professes, or is
 9 claimed, to be a contract -- the Constitution -- made eighty years ago, by men who are now all dead, and who never had any
 10 power to bind US, but which (it is claimed) has nevertheless bound three generations of men, consisting of many millions,
 11 and which (it is claimed) will be binding upon all the millions that are to come; but which nobody ever signed, sealed,
 12 delivered, witnessed, or acknowledged; and which few persons, compared with the whole number that are claimed to be
 13 bound by it, have ever read, or even seen, or ever will read, or see. And of those who ever have read it, or ever will read it,
 14 scarcely any two, perhaps no two, have ever agreed, or ever will agree, as to what it means.

15 Moreover, this supposed contract, which would not be received in any court of justice sitting under its authority, if offered
 16 to prove a debt of five dollars, owing by one man to another, is one by which -- AS IT IS GENERALLY INTERPRETED
 17 BY THOSE WHO PRETEND TO ADMINISTER IT -- all men, women and children throughout the country, and through
 18 all time, surrender not only all their property, but also their liberties, and even lives, into the hands of men who by this
 19 supposed contract, are expressly made wholly irresponsible for their disposal of them. And we are so insane, or so wicked,
 20 as to destroy property and lives without limit, in fighting to compel men to fulfill a supposed contract, which, inasmuch as
 21 it has never been signed by anybody, is, on general principles of law and reason -- such principles as we are all governed by
 22 in regard to other contracts -- the merest waste of paper, binding upon nobody, fit only to be thrown into the fire; or, if
 23 preserved, preserved only to serve as a witness and a warning of the folly and wickedness of mankind.

24 **4.4.3 How the Constitution is Administered by the Government**

25 It is no exaggeration, but a literal truth, to say that, by the Constitution -- NOT AS I INTERPRET IT, BUT AS IT IS
 26 INTERPRETED BY THOSE WHO PRETEND TO ADMINISTER IT -- the properties, liberties, and lives of the entire
 27 people of the United States are surrendered unreservedly into the hands of men who, it is provided by the Constitution
 28 itself, shall never be "questioned" as to any disposal they make of them.

29 Thus the Constitution (Art. I, Sec. 6) provides that, "for any speech or debate (or vote), in either house, they (the senators
 30 and representatives) shall not be questioned in any other place."

31 The whole law-making power is given to these senators and representatives (when acting by a two-thirds vote); [1] and this
 32 provision protects them from all responsibility for the laws they make. [1] And this two-thirds vote may be but two-thirds
 33 of a quorum -- that is two-thirds of a majority -- instead of two-thirds of the whole. The Constitution also enables them to
 34 secure the execution of all their laws, by giving them power to withhold the salaries of, and to impeach and remove, all
 35 judicial and executive officers, who refuse to execute them.

36 Thus the whole power of the government is in their hands, and they are made utterly irresponsible for the use they make of
 37 it. What is this but absolute, irresponsible power?

38 It is no answer to this view of the case to say that these men are under oath to use their power only within certain limits; for
 39 what care they, or what should they care, for oaths or limits, when it is expressly provided, by the Constitution itself, that
 40 they shall never be "questioned," or held to any responsibility whatever, for violating their oaths, or transgressing those
 41 limits?

42 Neither is it any answer to this view of the case to say that the men holding this absolute, irresponsible power, must be men
 43 chosen by the people (or portions of them) to hold it. A man is none the less a slave because he is allowed to choose a new
 44 master once in a term of years. Neither are a people any the less slaves because permitted periodically to choose new
 45 masters. What makes them slaves is the fact that they now are, and are always hereafter to be, in the hands of men whose

1 power over them is, and always is to be, absolute and irresponsible. [2] [2] Of what appreciable value is it to any man, as an
2 individual, that he is allowed a voice in choosing these public masters? His voice is only one of several millions.

3 The right of absolute and irresponsible dominion is the right of property, and the right of property is the right of absolute,
4 irresponsible dominion. The two are identical; the one necessarily implies the other. Neither can exist without the other. If,
5 therefore, Congress have that absolute and irresponsible law-making power, which the Constitution -- according to their
6 interpretation of it -- gives them, it can only be because they own us as property. If they own us as property, they are our
7 masters, and their will is our law. If they do not own us as property, they are not our masters, and their will, as such, is of
8 no authority over us.

9 But these men who claim and exercise this absolute and irresponsible dominion over us, dare not be consistent, and claim
10 either to be our masters, or to own us as property. They say they are only our servants, agents, attorneys, and
11 representatives. But this declaration involves an absurdity, a contradiction. No man can be my servant, agent, attorney, or
12 representative, and be, at the same time, uncontrollable by me, and irresponsible to me for his acts. It is of no importance
13 that I appointed him, and put all power in his hands. If I made him uncontrollable by me, and irresponsible to me, he is no
14 longer my servant, agent, attorney, or representative. If I gave him absolute, irresponsible power over my property, I gave
15 him the property. If I gave him absolute, irresponsible power over myself, I made him my master, and gave myself to him
16 as a slave. And it is of no importance whether I called him master or servant, agent or owner. The only question is, what
17 power did I put in his hands? Was it an absolute and irresponsible one? or a limited and responsible one?

18 For still another reason they are neither our servants, agents, attorneys, nor representatives. And that reason is, that we do
19 not make ourselves responsible for their acts. If a man is my servant, agent, or attorney, I necessarily make myself
20 responsible for all his acts done within the limits of the power I have intrusted to him. If I have intrusted him, as my agent,
21 with either absolute power, or any power at all, over the persons or properties of other men than myself, I thereby
22 necessarily make myself responsible to those other persons for any injuries he may do them, so long as he acts within the
23 limits of the power I have granted him. But no individual who may be injured in his person or property, by acts of
24 Congress, can come to the individual electors, and hold them responsible for these acts of their so-called agents or
25 representatives. This fact proves that these pretended agents of the people, of everybody, are really the agents of nobody.

26 If, then, nobody is individually responsible for the acts of Congress, the members of Congress are nobody's agents. And if
27 they are nobody's agents, they are themselves individually responsible for their own acts, and for the acts of all whom they
28 employ. And the authority they are exercising is simply their own individual authority; and, by the law of nature -- the
29 highest of all laws -- anybody injured by their acts, anybody who is deprived by them of his property or his liberty, has the
30 same right to hold them individually responsible, that he has to hold any other trespasser individually responsible. He has
31 the same right to resist them, and their agents, that he has to resist any other trespassers.

32 **4.4.4 If the Constitution is a Contract, why don't we have to sign it and how can our predecessors bind us to it**
33 **without our signature?**

34 It is plain, then, that on general principles of law and reason -- such principles as we all act upon in courts of justice and in
35 common life -- the Constitution is no contract; that it binds nobody, and never did bind anybody; and that all those who
36 pretend to act by its authority, are really acting without any legitimate authority at all; that, on general principles of law and
37 reason, they are mere usurpers, and that everybody not only has the right, but is morally bound, to treat them as such.

38 If the people of this country wish to maintain such a government as the Constitution describes, there is no reason in the
39 world why they should not sign the instrument itself, and thus make known their wishes in an open, authentic manner; in
40 such manner as the common sense and experience of mankind have shown to be reasonable and necessary in such cases;
41 AND IN SUCH MANNER AS TO MAKE THEMSELVES (AS THEY OUGHT TO DO) INDIVIDUALLY
42 RESPONSIBLE FOR THE ACTS OF THE GOVERNMENT. But the people have never been asked to sign it. And the
43 only reason why they have never been asked to sign it, has been that it has been known that they never would sign it; that
44 they were neither such fools nor knaves as they must needs have been to be willing to sign it; that (at least as it has been
45 practically interpreted) it is not what any sensible and honest man wants for himself; nor such as he has any right to impose
46 upon others. It is, to all moral intents and purposes, as destitute of obligations as the compacts which robbers and thieves
47 and pirates enter into with each other, but never sign.

1 If any considerable number of the people believe the Constitution to be good, why do they not sign it themselves, and make
 2 laws for, and administer them upon, each other; leaving all other persons (who do not interfere with them) in peace? Until
 3 they have tried the experiment for themselves, how can they have the face to impose the Constitution upon, or even to
 4 recommend it to, others? Plainly the reason for absurd and inconsistent conduct is that they want the Constitution, not
 5 solely for any honest or legitimate use it can be of to themselves or others, but for the dishonest and illegitimate power it
 6 gives them over the persons and properties of others. But for this latter reason, all their eulogiums on the Constitution, all
 7 their exhortations, and all their expenditures of money and blood to sustain it, would be wanting.

8 **4.4.5 Authority delegated by the Constitution to Public Servants**

9 The Constitution itself, then, being of no authority, on what authority does our government practically rest? On what
 10 ground can those who pretend to administer it, claim the right to seize men's property, to restrain them of their natural
 11 liberty of action, industry, and trade, and to kill all who deny their authority to dispose of men's properties, liberties, and
 12 lives at their pleasure or discretion?

13 The most they can say, in answer to this question, is, that some half, two-thirds, or three-fourths, of the male adults of the
 14 country have a TACIT UNDERSTANDING that they will maintain a government under the Constitution; that they will
 15 select, by ballot, the persons to administer it; and that those persons who may receive a majority, or a plurality, of their
 16 ballots, shall act as their representatives, and administer the Constitution in their name, and by their authority.

17 But this tacit understanding (admitting it to exist) cannot at all justify the conclusion drawn from it. A tacit understanding
 18 between A, B, and C, that they will, by ballot, depute D as their agent, to deprive me of my property, liberty, or life, cannot
 19 at all authorize D to do so. He is none the less a robber, tyrant, and murderer, because he claims to act as their agent, than
 20 he would be if he avowedly acted on his own responsibility alone.

21 Neither am I bound to recognize him as their agent, nor can he legitimately claim to be their agent, when he brings no
 22 WRITTEN authority from them accrediting him as such. I am under no obligation to take his word as to who his principals
 23 may be, or whether he has any. Bringing no credentials, I have a right to say he has no such authority even as he claims to
 24 have: and that he is therefore intending to rob, enslave, or murder me on his own account.

25 This tacit understanding, therefore, among the voters of the country, amounts to nothing as an authority to their agents.
 26 Neither do the ballots by which they select their agents, avail any more than does their tacit understanding; for their ballots
 27 are given in secret, and therefore in such a way as to avoid any personal responsibility for the acts of their agents.

28 No body of men can be said to authorize a man to act as their agent, to the injury of a third person, unless they do it in so
 29 open and authentic a manner as to make themselves personally responsible for his acts. None of the voters in this country
 30 appoint their political agents in any open, authentic manner, or in any manner to make themselves responsible for their acts.
 31 Therefore these pretended agents cannot legitimately claim to be really agents. Somebody must be responsible for the acts
 32 of these pretended agents; and if they cannot show any open and authentic credentials from their principals, they cannot, in
 33 law or reason, be said to have any principals. The maxim applies here, that what does not appear, does not exist. If they can
 34 show no principals, they have none.

35 But even these pretended agents do not themselves know who their pretended principals are. These latter act in secret; for
 36 acting by secret ballot is acting in secret as much as if they were to meet in secret conclave in the darkness of the night. And
 37 they are personally as much unknown to the agents they select, as they are to others. No pretended agent therefore can ever
 38 know by whose ballots he is selected, or consequently who his real principles are. Not knowing who his principles are, he
 39 has no right to say that he has any. He can, at most, say only that he is the agent of a secret band of robbers and murderers,
 40 who are bound by that faith which prevails among confederates in crime, to stand by him, if his acts, done in their name,
 41 shall be resisted.

42 Men honestly engaged in attempting to establish justice in the world, have no occasion thus to act in secret; or to appoint
 43 agents to do acts for which they (the principals) are not willing to be responsible.

44 The secret ballot makes a secret government; and a secret government is a secret band of robbers and murderers. Open
 45 despotism is better than this. The single despot stands out in the face of all men, and says:

- 1 1. I am the State.
- 2 2. My will is law.
- 3 3. I take the responsibility of my acts.
- 4 4. The only arbiter I acknowledge is the sword.
- 5 5. If anyone denies my right, let him try conclusions with me.

6 But a secret government is little less than a government of assassins. Under it, a man knows not who his tyrants are, until
7 they have struck, and perhaps not then. He may GUESS, beforehand, as to some of his immediate neighbors. But he really
8 knows nothing. The man to whom he would most naturally fly for protection, may prove an enemy, when the time of trial
9 comes.

10 This is the kind of government we have; and it is the only one we are likely to have, until men are ready to say: We will
11 consent to no Constitution, except such an one as we are neither ashamed nor afraid to sign; and we will authorize no
12 government to do anything in our name which we are not willing to be personally responsible for.

13 **4.4.6 Voting by Congressmen**

14 What is the motive to the secret ballot? This, and only this: Like other confederates in crime, those who use it are not
15 friends, but enemies; and they are afraid to be known, and to have their individual doings known, even to each other. They
16 can contrive to bring about a sufficient understanding to enable them to act in concert against other persons; but beyond this
17 they have no confidence, and no friendship, among themselves. In fact, they are engaged quite as much in schemes for
18 plundering each other, as in plundering those who are not of them. And it is perfectly well understood among them that the
19 strongest party among them will, in certain contingencies, murder each other by the hundreds of thousands (as they lately
20 did do) to accomplish their purposes against each other. Hence they dare not be known, and have their individual doings
21 known, even to each other. And this is avowedly the only reason for the ballot: for a secret government; a government by
22 secret bands of robbers and murderers. And we are insane enough to call this liberty! To be a member of this secret band of
23 robbers and murderers is esteemed a privilege and an honor! Without this privilege, a man is considered a slave; but with it
24 a free man! With it he is considered a free man, because he has the same power to secretly (by secret ballot) procure the
25 robbery, enslavement, and murder of another man, and that other man has to procure his robbery, enslavement, and murder.
26 And this they call equal rights!

27 If any number of men, many or few, claim the right to govern the people of this country, let them make and sign an open
28 compact with each other to do so. Let them thus make themselves individually known to those whom they propose to
29 govern. And let them thus openly take the legitimate responsibility of their acts. How many of those who now support the
30 Constitution, will ever do this? How many will ever dare openly proclaim their right to govern? or take the legitimate
31 responsibility of their acts? Not one!

32 **4.4.7 Our Government is a band of criminal extortionists acting without legal authority!**

33 It is obvious that, on general principles of law and reason, there exists no such thing as a government created by, or resting
34 upon, any consent, compact, or agreement of "the people of the United States" with each other; that the only visible,
35 tangible, responsible government that exists, is that of a few individuals only, who act in concert, and call themselves by the
36 several names of senators, representatives, presidents, judges, marshals, treasurers, collectors, generals, colonels, captains,
37 etc., etc.

38 On general principles of law and reason, it is of no importance whatever that these few individuals profess to be the agents
39 and representatives of "the people of the United States"; since they can show no credentials from the people themselves;
40 they were never appointed as agents or representatives in any open, authentic manner; they do not themselves know, and
41 have no means of knowing, and cannot prove, who their principals (as they call them) are individually; and consequently
42 cannot, in law or reason, be said to have any principals at all.

43 It is obvious, too, that if these alleged principals ever did appoint these pretended agents, or representatives, they appointed
44 them secretly (by secret ballot), and in a way to avoid all personal responsibility for their acts; that, at most, these alleged
45 principals put these pretended agents forward for the most criminal purposes, viz.: to plunder the people of their property,
46 and restrain them of their liberty; and that the only authority that these alleged principals have for so doing, is simply a

1 TACIT UNDERSTANDING among themselves that they will imprison, shoot, or hang every man who resists the exactions
2 and restraints which their agents or representatives may impose upon them.

3 Thus it is obvious that the only visible, tangible government we have is made up of these professed agents or
4 representatives of a secret band of robbers and murderers, who, to cover up, or gloss over, their robberies and murders, have
5 taken to themselves the title of "the people of the United States"; and who, on the pretense of being "the people of the
6 United States," assert their right to subject to their dominion, and to control and dispose of at their pleasure, all property and
7 persons found in the United States.

8 **4.4.8 Oaths of Public Office**

9 On general principles of law and reason, the oaths which these pretended agents of the people take "to support the
10 Constitution," are of no validity or obligation. And why? For this, if for no other reason, viz., THAT THEY ARE GIVEN
11 TO NOBODY in particular. There is no privity (as the lawyers say) -- that is, no mutual recognition, consent, and
12 agreement -- between those who take these oaths, and any other persons.

13 If I go upon Boston Common, and in the presence of a hundred thousand people, men, women and children, with whom I
14 have no contract upon the subject, take a verbal but not written oath that I will enforce upon them the laws of Moses, of
15 Lycurgus, of Solon, of Justinian, or of Alfred, that oath is, on general principles of law and reason, of no obligation. It is of
16 no obligation, not merely because it is intrinsically a criminal one, BUT ALSO BECAUSE IT IS GIVEN TO NOBODY,
17 and consequently pledges my faith to nobody. It is merely given to the winds.

18 It would not alter the case at all to say that, among these hundred thousand persons, in whose presence the oath was taken,
19 there were two, three, or five thousand male adults, who had SECRETLY -- by secret ballot, and in a way to avoid making
20 themselves INDIVIDUALLY known to me, or to the remainder of the hundred thousand -- designated me as their agent to
21 rule, control, plunder, and, if need be, murder, these hundred thousand people. The fact that they had designated me
22 secretly, and in a manner to prevent my knowing them individually, prevents all privity between them and me; and
23 consequently makes it impossible that there can be any contract, or pledge of faith, on my part towards them; for it is
24 impossible that I can pledge my faith, in any legal sense, to a man whom I neither know, nor have any means of knowing,
25 individually.

26 So far as I am concerned, then, these two, three, or five thousand persons are a secret band of robbers and murderers, who
27 have secretly, and in a way to save themselves from all responsibility for my acts, designated me as their agent; and have,
28 through some other agent, or pretended agent, made their wishes known to me. But being, nevertheless, individually
29 unknown to me, and having no open, authentic contract with me, my oath is, on general principles of law and reason, of no
30 validity as a pledge of faith to them. And being no pledge of faith to them, it is no pledge of faith to anybody. It is mere
31 idle wind. At most, it is only a pledge of faith to an unknown band of robbers and murderers, whose instrument for
32 plundering and murdering other people, I thus publicly confess myself to be. And it has no other obligation than a similar
33 oath given to any other unknown body of pirates, robbers, and murderers.

34 *For these reasons the oaths taken by members of Congress, "to support the Constitution," are, on general principles of*
35 *law and reason, of no validity based on the way they are administered now. They are not only criminal in themselves,*
36 *and therefore void; but they are also void for the further reason THAT THEY ARE GIVEN TO NOBODY.*

37 It cannot be said that, in any legitimate or legal sense, they are given to "the people of the United States"; because neither
38 the whole, nor any large proportion of the whole, people of the United States ever, either openly or secretly, appointed or
39 designated these men as their agents to carry the Constitution into effect. The great body of the people -- that is, men,
40 women, and children -- were never asked, or even permitted, to signify, in any FORMAL manner, either openly or secretly,
41 their choice or wish on the subject. The most that these members of Congress can say, in favor of their appointment, is
42 simply this: Each one can say for himself:

43 I have evidence satisfactory to myself, that there exists, scattered throughout the country, a band of men, having a tacit
44 understanding with each other, and calling themselves "the people of the United States," whose general purposes are to
45 control and plunder each other, and all other persons in the country, and, so far as they can, even in neighboring countries;
46 and to kill every man who shall attempt to defend his person and property against their schemes of plunder and dominion.

1 Who these men are, INDIVIDUALLY, I have no certain means of knowing, for they sign no papers, and give no open,
2 authentic evidence of their individual membership. They are not known individually even to each other. They are
3 apparently as much afraid of being individually known to each other, as of being known to other persons. Hence they
4 ordinarily have no mode either of exercising, or of making known, their individual membership, otherwise than by giving
5 their votes secretly for certain agents to do their will. But although these men are individually unknown, both to each other
6 and to other persons, it is generally understood in the country that none but male persons, of the age of twenty-one years
7 and upwards, can be members. It is also generally understood that ALL male persons, born in the country, having certain
8 complexions, and (in some localities) certain amounts of property, and (in certain cases) even persons of foreign birth, are
9 PERMITTED to be members. But it appears that usually not more than one half, two-thirds, or in some cases, three-fourths,
10 of all who are thus permitted to become members of the band, ever exercise, or consequently prove, their actual
11 membership, in the only mode in which they ordinarily can exercise or prove it, viz., by giving their votes secretly for the
12 officers or agents of the band. The number of these secret votes, so far as we have any account of them, varies greatly from
13 year to year, thus tending to prove that the band, instead of being a permanent organization, is a merely PRO TEMPORE
14 affair with those who choose to act with it for the time being. \ The gross number of these secret votes, or what purports to
15 be their gross number, in different localities, is occasionally published. Whether these reports are accurate or not, we have
16 no means of knowing. It is generally supposed that great frauds are often committed in depositing them. They are
17 understood to be received and counted by certain men, who are themselves appointed for that purpose by the same secret
18 process by which all other officers and agents of the band are selected. According to the reports of these receivers of votes
19 (for whose accuracy or honesty, however, I cannot vouch), and according to my best knowledge of the whole number of
20 male persons "in my district," who (it is supposed) were permitted to vote, it would appear that one-half, two-thirds or
21 three-fourths actually did vote. Who the men were, individually, who cast these votes, I have no knowledge, for the whole
22 thing was done secretly. But of the secret votes thus given for what they call a "member of Congress," the receivers
23 reported that I had a majority, or at least a larger number than any other one person. And it is only by virtue of such a
24 designation that I am now here to act in concert with other persons similarly selected in other parts of the country. \ It is
25 understood among those who sent me here, that all persons so selected, will, on coming together at the City of Washington,
26 take an oath in each other's presence "to support the Constitution of the United States." By this is meant a certain paper that
27 was drawn up eighty years ago. It was never signed by anybody, and apparently has no obligation, and never had any
28 obligation, as a contract. In fact, few persons ever read it, and doubtless much the largest number of those who voted for me
29 and the others, never even saw it, or now pretend to know what it means. Nevertheless, it is often spoken of in the country
30 as "the Constitution of the United States"; and for some reason or other, the men who sent me here, seem to expect that I,
31 and all with whom I act, will swear to carry this Constitution into effect. I am therefore ready to take this oath, and to co-
32 operate with all others, similarly selected, who are ready to take the same oath.

33 This is the most that any member of Congress can say in proof that he has any constituency; that he represents anybody;
34 that his oath "to support the Constitution," IS GIVEN TO ANYBODY, or pledges his faith to ANYBODY. He has no open,
35 written, or other authentic evidence, such as is required in all other cases, that he was ever appointed the agent or
36 representative of anybody. He has no written power of attorney from any single individual. He has no such legal knowledge
37 as is required in all other cases, by which he can identify a single one of those who pretend to have appointed him to
38 represent them. Certainly, we as a society can and should structure our system of government to improve upon this serious
39 defect in the taking of oaths of public office by making all oaths into written affidavits rather than administering them only
40 in a verbal manner.

41 Of course his oath, professedly given to them, "to support the Constitution," is, on general principles of law and reason, an
42 oath given to nobody. It pledges his faith to nobody. If he fails to fulfill his oath, not a single person can come forward, and
43 say to him, you have betrayed me, or broken faith with me.

44 No one can come forward and say to him: I appointed you my attorney to act for me. I required you to swear that, as my
45 attorney, you would support the Constitution. You promised me that you would do so; and now you have forfeited the oath
46 you gave to me. No single individual can say this.

47 No open, avowed, or responsible association, or body of men, can come forward and say to him: We appointed you our
48 attorney, to act for us. We required you to swear that, as our attorney, you would support the Constitution. You promised us
49 that you would do so; and now you have forfeited the oath you gave to us.

1 No open, avowed, or responsible association, or body of men, can say this to him; because there is no such association or
 2 body of men in existence. If any one should assert that there is such an association, let him prove, if he can, who compose
 3 it. Let him produce, if he can, any open, written, or other authentic contract, signed or agreed to by these men; forming
 4 themselves into an association; making themselves known as such to the world; appointing him as their agent; and making
 5 themselves individually, or as an association, responsible for his acts, done by their authority. Until all this can be shown,
 6 no one can say that, in any legitimate sense, there is any such association; or that he is their agent; or that he ever gave his
 7 oath to them; or ever pledged his faith to them.

8 On general principles of law and reason, it would be a sufficient answer for him to say, to all individuals, and to all
 9 pretended associations of individuals, who should accuse him of a breach of faith to them:

10 *I never knew you. Where is your evidence that you, either individually or collectively, ever appointed me your*
 11 *attorney? that you ever required me to swear to you, that, as your attorney, I would support the Constitution?*
 12 *or that I have now broken any faith that I ever pledged to you? You may, or you may not, be members of that*
 13 *secret band of robbers and murderers, who act in secret; appoint their agents by a secret ballot; who keep*
 14 *themselves individually unknown even to the agents they thus appoint; and who, therefore, cannot claim that*
 15 *they have any agents; or that any of their pretended agents ever gave his oath, or pledged his faith to them. I*
 16 *repudiate you altogether. My oath was given to others, with whom you have nothing to do; or it was idle wind,*
 17 *given only to the idle winds. Begone!*

18 By no means are we suggesting, based on this section, that we should scrap our current system of government based on
 19 written Constitutions and go back to the stone age. We don't mean to be hypercritical without offering concrete solutions
 20 to the systemic defects that we describe. The fiduciary duty created by written Constitutions between public officers and
 21 their constituents is a very useful legal tool that should be exploited to its fullest to ensure a high degree of accountability
 22 for public officers and public servants to the their constituents. On the other hand, this section raises some very serious
 23 defects and issues within our current system of government relating to public oaths and we can't know how to fix
 24 something until we know what is broke. Based on the discussion in this section, we therefore suggest the following
 25 remedies to address the deficiencies noted and to improve our system of republican government:

- 26 • Public records of individual voters and how they voted should be maintained. This will allow the public officer to
 27 know who he is accountable to. This would also help to ensure that vote fraud can easily be verified by individual
 28 voters. The information system that maintains this information should carefully protect the privacy of individuals
 29 and it should be accessible on the world wide web.
- 30 • Affidavits containing oaths of public office should be a matter of public record which is maintained by a public
 31 recorder and should be made available to the public on the world wide web without charge
- 32 • Oaths of public office should clearly state that public officers and public servants have a fiduciary relationship
 33 with the persons they serve and define the terms of that fiduciary relationship. See section 4.1 earlier for further
 34 details on fiduciary relationships. They should also clearly identify the specific laws at the time of the oath that
 35 describe and circumscribe the limits of the authority delegated to the officer or agent.
- 36 • Any public official caught destroying or ordering the destruction of affidavit evidence of their oath of public office
 37 should be promptly fired from office, surrender their retirement, be prosecuted criminally, and disbarred from ever
 38 holding public office again.

39 **4.4.9 Tax Collectors**

40 For the same reasons, the oaths of all the other pretended agents of this secret band of robbers and murderers are, on general
 41 principles of law and reason, equally destitute of obligation. They are given to nobody; but only to the winds.

42 The oaths of the tax-gatherers and treasurers of the band, are, on general principles of law and reason, of no validity. If any
 43 tax gatherer, for example, should put the money he receives into his own pocket, and refuse to part with it, the members of
 44 this band could not say to him: You collected that money as our agent, and for our uses; and you swore to pay it over to us,
 45 or to those we should appoint to receive it. You have betrayed us, and broken faith with us.

46 It would be a sufficient answer for him to say to them:

47 *I never knew you. You never made yourselves individually known to me. I never came by oath to you, as*
 48 *individuals. You may, or you may not, be members of that secret band, who appoint agents to rob and murder*

1 other people; but who are cautious not to make themselves individually known, either to such agents, or to those
 2 whom their agents are commissioned to rob. If you are members of that band, you have given me no proof that
 3 you ever commissioned me to rob others for your benefit. I never knew you, as individuals, and of course never
 4 promised you that I would pay over to you the proceeds of my robberies. I committed my robberies on my own
 5 account, and for my own profit. If you thought I was fool enough to allow you to keep yourselves concealed, and
 6 use me as your tool for robbing other persons; or that I would take all the personal risk of the robberies, and
 7 pay over the proceeds to you, you were particularly simple. As I took all the risk of my robberies, I propose to
 8 take all the profits. Begone! You are fools, as well as villains. If I gave my oath to anybody, I gave it to other
 9 persons than you. But I really gave it to nobody. I only gave it to the winds. It answered my purposes at the
 10 time. It enabled me to get the money I was after, and now I propose to keep it. If you expected me to pay it over
 11 to you, you relied only upon that honor that is said to prevail among thieves. You now understand that that is a
 12 very poor reliance. I trust you may become wise enough to never rely upon it again. If I have any duty in the
 13 matter, it is to give back the money to those from whom I took it; not to pay it over to villains such as you.

14 **4.4.10 Oaths of naturalization given to aliens**

15 On general principles of law and reason, the oaths which foreigners take, on coming here, and being "naturalized" (as it is
 16 called), are of no validity. They are necessarily given to nobody; because there is no open, authentic association, to which
 17 they can join themselves; or to whom, as individuals, they can pledge their faith. No such association, or organization, as
 18 "the people of the United States," having ever been formed by any open, written, authentic, or voluntary contract, there is,
 19 on general principles of law and reason, no such association, or organization, in existence. And all oaths that purport to be
 20 given to such an association are necessarily given only to the winds. They cannot be said to be given to any man, or body of
 21 men, as individuals, because no man, or body of men, can come forward WITH ANY PROOF that the oaths were given to
 22 them, as individuals, or to any association of which they are members. To say that there is a tacit understanding among a
 23 portion of the male adults of the country, that they will call themselves "the people of the United States," and that they will
 24 act in concert in subjecting the remainder of the people of the United States to their dominion; but that they will keep
 25 themselves personally concealed by doing all their acts secretly, is wholly insufficient, on general principles of law and
 26 reason, to prove the existence of any such association, or organization, as "the people of the United States"; or consequently
 27 to prove that the oaths of foreigners were given to any such association.

28 **4.4.11 Oaths given to secessionists and corporations**

29 On general principles of law and reason, all the oaths which, since the war, have been given by Southern men, that they will
 30 obey the laws of Congress, support the Union, and the like, are of no validity. Such oaths are invalid, not only because they
 31 were extorted by military power, and threats of confiscation, and because they are in contravention of men's natural right to
 32 do as they please about supporting the government, BUT ALSO BECAUSE THEY WERE GIVEN TO NOBODY. They
 33 were nominally given to "the United States." But being nominally given to "the United States," they were necessarily given
 34 to nobody, because, on general principles of law and reason, there were no "United States," to whom the oaths could be
 35 given. That is to say, there was no open, authentic, avowed, legitimate association, corporation, or body of men, known as
 36 "the United States," or as "the people of the United States," to whom the oaths could have been given. If anybody says there
 37 was such a corporation, let him state who were the individuals that composed it, and how and when they became a
 38 corporation. Were Mr. A, Mr. B, and Mr. C members of it? If so, where are their signatures? Where the evidence of their
 39 membership? Where the record? Where the open, authentic proof? There is none. Therefore, in law and reason, there was
 40 no such corporation.

41 On general principles of law and reason, every corporation, association, or organized body of men, having a legitimate
 42 corporate existence, and legitimate corporate rights, must consist of certain known individuals, who can prove, by
 43 legitimate and reasonable evidence, their membership. But nothing of this kind can be proved in regard to the corporation,
 44 or body of men, who call themselves "the United States." Not a man of them, in all the Northern States, can prove by any
 45 legitimate evidence, such as is required to prove membership in other legal corporations, that he himself, or any other man
 46 whom he can name, is a member of any corporation or association called "the United States," or "the people of the United
 47 States," or, consequently, that there is any such corporation. And since no such corporation can be proved to exist, it cannot
 48 of course be proved that the oaths of Southern men were given to any such corporation. The most that can be claimed is that
 49 the oaths were given to a secret band of robbers and murderers, who called themselves "the United States," and extorted
 50 those oaths. But that is certainly not enough to prove that the oaths are of any obligation.

51 **4.4.12 Oaths of soldiers and servicemen**

1 On general principles of law and reason, the oaths of soldiers, that they will serve a given number of years, that they will
2 obey the orders of their superior officers, that they will bear true allegiance to the government, and so forth, are of no
3 obligation. Independently of the criminality of an oath, that, for a given number of years, he will kill all whom he may be
4 commanded to kill, without exercising his own judgment or conscience as to the justice or necessity of such killing, there is
5 this further reason why a soldier's oath is of no obligation, viz., that, like all the other oaths that have now been mentioned,
6 IT IS GIVEN TO NOBODY. There being, in no legitimate sense, any such corporation, or nation, as "the United States,"
7 nor, consequently, in any legitimate sense, any such government as "the government of the United States," a soldier's oath
8 given to, or contract made with, such a nation or government, is necessarily an oath given to, or contract made with,
9 nobody. Consequently such an oath or contract can be of no obligation.

10 **4.4.13 Treaties**

11 On general principles of law and reason, the treaties, so called, which purport to be entered into with other nations, by
12 persons calling themselves ambassadors, secretaries, presidents, and senators of the United States, in the name, and in
13 behalf, of "the people of the United States," are of no validity. These so-called ambassadors, secretaries, presidents, and
14 senators, who claim to be the agents of "the people of the United States" for making these treaties, can show no open,
15 written, or other authentic evidence that either the whole "people of the United States," or any other open, avowed,
16 responsible body of men, calling themselves by that name, ever authorized these pretended ambassadors and others to make
17 treaties in the name of, or binding upon any one of, "the people of the United States," or any other open, avowed,
18 responsible body of men, calling themselves by that name, ever authorized these pretended ambassadors, secretaries, and
19 others, in their name and behalf, to recognize certain other persons, calling themselves emperors, kings, queens, and the
20 like, as the rightful rulers, sovereigns, masters, or representatives of the different peoples whom they assume to govern, to
21 represent, and to bind.

22 The "nations," as they are called, with whom our pretended ambassadors, secretaries, presidents, and senators profess to
23 make treaties, are as much myths as our own. On general principles of law and reason, there are no such "nations." That is
24 to say, neither the whole people of England, for example, nor any open, avowed, responsible body of men, calling
25 themselves by that name, ever, by any open, written, or other authentic contract with each other, formed themselves into
26 any bona fide, legitimate association or organization, or authorized any king, queen, or other representative to make treaties
27 in their name, or to bind them, either individually, or as an association, by such treaties.

28 Our pretended treaties, then, being made with no legitimate or bona fide nations, or representatives of nations, and being
29 made, on our part, by persons who have no legitimate authority to act for us, have intrinsically no more validity than a
30 pretended treaty made by the Man in the Moon with the king of the Pleiades.

31 **4.4.14 Government Debts**

32 On general principles of law and reason, debts contracted in the name of "the United States," or of "the people of the United
33 States," are of no validity. It is utterly absurd to pretend that debts to the amount of twenty-five hundred millions of dollars
34 are binding upon thirty-five or forty millions of people [the approximate national debt and population in 1870], when there
35 is not a particle of legitimate evidence -- such as would be required to prove a private debt -- that can be produced against
36 any one of them, that either he, or his properly authorized attorney, ever contracted to pay one cent.

37 Certainly, neither the whole people of the United States, nor any number of them, ever separately or individually contracted
38 to pay a cent of these debts.

39 Certainly, also, neither the whole people of the United States, nor any number of them, every, by any open, written, or other
40 authentic and voluntary contract, united themselves as a firm, corporation, or association, by the name of "the United
41 States," or "the people of the United States," and authorized their agents to contract debts in their name.

42 Certainly, too, there is in existence no such firm, corporation, or association as "the United States," or "the people of the
43 United States," formed by any open, written, or other authentic and voluntary contract, and having corporate property with
44 which to pay these debts.

1 How, then, is it possible, on any general principle of law or reason, that debts that are binding upon nobody individually,
 2 can be binding upon forty millions of people collectively, when, on general and legitimate principles of law and reason,
 3 these forty millions of people neither have, nor ever had, any corporate property? never made any corporate or individual
 4 contract? and neither have, nor ever had, any corporate existence?

5 Who, then, created these debts, in the name of "the United States"? Why, at most, only a few persons, calling themselves
 6 "members of Congress," etc., who pretended to represent "the people of the United States," but who really represented only
 7 a secret band of robbers and murderers, who wanted money to carry on the robberies and murders in which they were then
 8 engaged; and who intended to extort from the future people of the United States, by robbery and threats of murder (and real
 9 murder, if that should prove necessary), the means to pay these debts.

10 This band of robbers and murderers, who were the real principals in contracting these debts, is a secret one, because its
 11 members have never entered into any open, written, avowed, or authentic contract, by which they may be individually
 12 known to the world, or even to each other. Their real or pretended representatives, who contracted these debts in their
 13 name, were selected (if selected at all) for that purpose secretly (by secret ballot), and in a way to furnish evidence against
 14 none of the principals INDIVIDUALLY; and these principals were really known INDIVIDUALLY neither to their
 15 pretended representatives who contracted these debts in their behalf, nor to those who lent the money. The money,
 16 therefore, was all borrowed and lent in the dark; that is, by men who did not see each other's faces, or know each other's
 17 names; who could not then, and cannot now, identify each other as principals in the transactions; and who consequently can
 18 prove no contract with each other.

19 Furthermore, the money was all lent and borrowed for criminal purposes; that is, for purposes of robbery and murder; and
 20 for this reason the contracts were all intrinsically void; and would have been so, even though the real parties, borrowers and
 21 lenders, had come face to face, and made their contracts openly, in their own proper names.

22 Furthermore, this secret band of robbers and murderers, who were the real borrowers of this money, having no legitimate
 23 corporate existence, have no corporate property with which to pay these debts. They do indeed pretend to own large tracts
 24 of wild lands, lying between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, and between the Gulf of Mexico and the North Pole. But, on
 25 general principles of law and reason, they might as well pretend to own the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans themselves; or the
 26 atmosphere and the sunlight; and to hold them, and dispose of them, for the payment of these debts.

27 Having no corporate property with which to pay what purports to be their corporate debts, this secret band of robbers and
 28 murderers are really bankrupt. They have nothing to pay with. In fact, they do not propose to pay their debts otherwise than
 29 from the proceeds of their future robberies and murders. These are confessedly their sole reliance; and were known to be
 30 such by the lenders of the money, at the time the money was lent. And it was, therefore, virtually a part of the contract, that
 31 the money should be repaid only from the proceeds of these future robberies and murders. For this reason, if for no other,
 32 the contracts were void from the beginning.

33 In fact, these apparently two classes, borrowers and lenders, were really one and the same class. They borrowed and lent
 34 money from and to themselves. They themselves were not only part and parcel, but the very life and soul, of this secret
 35 band of robbers and murderers, who borrowed and spent the money. Individually they furnished money for a common
 36 enterprise; taking, in return, what purported to be corporate promises for individual loans. The only excuse they had for
 37 taking these so-called corporate promises of, for individual loans by, the same parties, was that they might have some
 38 apparent excuse for the future robberies of the band (that is, to pay the debts of the corporation), and that they might also
 39 know what shares they were to be respectively entitled to out of the proceeds of their future robberies.

40 Finally, if these debts had been created for the most innocent and honest purposes, and in the most open and honest manner,
 41 by the real parties to the contracts, these parties could thereby have bound nobody but themselves, and no property but their
 42 own. They could have bound nobody that should have come after them, and no property subsequently created by, or
 43 belonging to, other persons.

44 **4.4.15 Our rulers are a secret society!**

45 The Constitution having never been signed by anybody; and there being no other open, written, or authentic contract
 46 between any parties whatever, by virtue of which the United States government, so called, is maintained; and it being well

1 known that none but male persons, of twenty-one years of age and upwards, are allowed any voice in the government; and
2 it being also well known that a large number of these adult persons seldom or never vote at all; and that all those who do
3 vote, do so secretly (by secret ballot), and in a way to prevent their individual votes being known, either to the world, or
4 even to each other; and consequently in a way to make no one openly responsible for the acts of their agents, or
5 representatives, -- all these things being known, the questions arise: WHO compose the real governing power in the
6 country? Who are the men, THE RESPONSIBLE MEN, who rob us of our property? Restrain us of our liberty? Subject us
7 to their arbitrary dominion? And devastate our homes, and shoot us down by the hundreds of thousands, if we resist? How
8 shall we find these men? How shall we know them from others? How shall we defend ourselves and our property against
9 them? Who, of our neighbors, are members of this secret band of robbers and murderers? How can we know which are
10 THEIR houses, that we may burn or demolish them? Which THEIR property, that we may destroy it? Which their persons,
11 that we may kill them, and rid the world and ourselves of such tyrants and monsters?

12 These are questions that must be answered, before men can be free; before they can protect themselves against this secret
13 band of robbers and murderers, who now plunder, enslave, and destroy them.

14 The answer to these questions is, that only those who have the will and power to shoot down their fellow men, are the real
15 rulers in this, as in all other (so-called) civilized countries; for by no others will civilized men be robbed, or enslaved.

16 Among savages, mere physical strength, on the part of one man, may enable him to rob, enslave, or kill another man.
17 Among barbarians, mere physical strength, on the part of a body of men, disciplined, and acting in concert, though with
18 very little money or other wealth, may, under some circumstances, enable them to rob, enslave, or kill another body of men,
19 as numerous, or perhaps even more numerous, than themselves. And among both savages and barbarians, mere want may
20 sometimes compel one man to sell himself as a slave to another. But with (so-called) civilized peoples, among whom
21 knowledge, wealth, and the means of acting in concert, have become diffused; and who have invented such weapons and
22 other means of defense as to render mere physical strength of less importance; and by whom soldiers in any requisite
23 number, and other instrumentalities of war in any requisite amount, can always be had for money, the question of war, and
24 consequently the question of power, is little else than a mere question of money. As a necessary consequence, those who
25 stand ready to furnish this money, are the real rulers. It is so in Europe, and it is so in this country.

26 In Europe, the nominal rulers, the emperors and kings and parliaments, are anything but the real rulers of their respective
27 countries. They are little or nothing else than mere tools, employed by the wealthy to rob, enslave, and (if need be) murder
28 those who have less wealth, or none at all.

29 The Rothschilds, and that class of money-lenders of whom they are the representatives and agents -- men who never think
30 of lending a shilling to their next-door neighbors, for purposes of honest industry, unless upon the most ample security, and
31 at the highest rate of interest -- stand ready, at all times, to lend money in unlimited amounts to those robbers and
32 murderers, who call themselves governments, to be expended in shooting down those who do not submit quietly to being
33 robbed and enslaved.

34 They lend their money in this manner, knowing that it is to be expended in murdering their fellow men, for simply seeking
35 their liberty and their rights; knowing also that neither the interest nor the principal will ever be paid, except as it will be
36 extorted under terror of the repetition of such murders as those for which the money lent is to be expended.

37 These money-lenders, the Rothschilds, for example, say to themselves: If we lend a hundred millions sterling to the queen
38 and parliament of England, it will enable them to murder twenty, fifty, or a hundred thousand people in England, Ireland, or
39 India; and the terror inspired by such wholesale slaughter, will enable them to keep the whole people of those countries in
40 subjection for twenty, or perhaps fifty, years to come; to control all their trade and industry; and to extort from them large
41 amounts of money, under the name of taxes; and from the wealth thus extorted from them, they (the queen and parliament)
42 can afford to pay us a higher rate of interest for our money than we can get in any other way. Or, if we lend this sum to the
43 emperor of Austria, it will enable him to murder so many of his people as to strike terror into the rest, and thus enable him
44 to keep them in subjection, and extort money from them, for twenty or fifty years to come. And they say the same in regard
45 to the emperor of Russia, the king of Prussia, the emperor of France, or any other ruler, so called, who, in their judgment,
46 will be able, by murdering a reasonable portion of his people, to keep the rest in subjection, and extort money from them,
47 for a long time to come, to pay the interest and the principal of the money lent him.

1 And why are these men so ready to lend money for murdering their fellow men? Solely for this reason, viz., that such loans
2 are considered better investments than loans for purposes of honest industry. They pay higher rates of interest; and it is less
3 trouble to look after them. This is the whole matter. The question of making these loans is, with these lenders, a mere
4 question of pecuniary profit. They lend money to be expended in robbing, enslaving, and murdering their fellow men,
5 solely because, on the whole, such loans pay better than any others. They are no respecters of persons, no superstitious
6 fools, that reverence monarchs. They care no more for a king, or an emperor, than they do for a beggar, except as he is a
7 better customer, and can pay them better interest for their money. If they doubt his ability to make his murders successful
8 for maintaining his power, and thus extorting money from his people in future, they dismiss him unceremoniously as they
9 would dismiss any other hopeless bankrupt, who should want to borrow money to save himself >from open insolvency.

10 When these great lenders of blood-money, like the Rothschilds, have loaned vast sums in this way, for purposes of murder,
11 to an emperor or a king, they sell out the bonds taken by them, in small amounts, to anybody, and everybody, who are
12 disposed to buy them at satisfactory prices, to hold as investments. They (the Rothschilds) thus soon get back their money,
13 with great profits; and are now ready to lend money in the same way again to any other robber and murderer, called an
14 emperor or king, who, they think, is likely to be successful in his robberies and murders, and able to pay a good price for
15 the money necessary to carry them on.

16 This business of lending blood-money is one of the most thoroughly sordid, cold-blooded, and criminal that was ever
17 carried on, to any considerable extent, amongst human beings. It is like lending money to slave traders, or to common
18 robbers and pirates, to be repaid out of their plunder. And the men who loan money to governments, so called, for the
19 purpose of enabling the latter to rob, enslave, and murder their people, are among the greatest villains that the world has
20 ever seen. And they as much deserve to be hunted and killed (if they cannot otherwise be got rid of) as any slave traders,
21 robbers, or pirates that ever lived.

22 When these emperors and kings, so-called, have obtained their loans, they proceed to hire and train immense numbers of
23 professional murderers, called soldiers, and employ them in shooting down all who resist their demands for money. In fact,
24 most of them keep large bodies of these murderers constantly in their service, as their only means of enforcing their
25 extortions. There are now [1870], I think, four or five millions of these professional murderers constantly employed by the
26 so-called sovereigns of Europe. The enslaved people are, of course, forced to support and pay all these murderers, as well
27 as to submit to all the other extortions which these murderers are employed to enforce.

28 It is only in this way that most of the so-called governments of Europe are maintained. These so-called governments are in
29 reality only great bands of robbers and murderers, organized, disciplined, and constantly on the alert. And the so-called
30 sovereigns, in these different governments, are simply the heads, or chiefs, of different bands of robbers and murderers.
31 And these heads or chiefs are dependent upon the lenders of blood-money for the means to carry on their robberies and
32 murders. They could not sustain themselves a moment but for the loans made to them by these blood-money loan-mongers.
33 And their first care is to maintain their credit with them; for they know their end is come, the instant their credit with them
34 fails. Consequently the first proceeds of their extortions are scrupulously applied to the payment of the interest on their
35 loans.

36 In addition to paying the interest on their bonds, they perhaps grant to the holders of them great monopolies in banking, like
37 the Banks of England, of France, and of Vienna; with the agreement that these banks shall furnish money whenever, in
38 sudden emergencies, it may be necessary to shoot down more of their people. Perhaps also, by means of tariffs on
39 competing imports, they give great monopolies to certain branches of industry, in which these lenders of blood-money are
40 engaged. They also, by unequal taxation, exempt wholly or partially the property of these loan-mongers, and throw
41 corresponding burdens upon those who are too poor and weak to resist.

42 Thus it is evident that all these men, who call themselves by the high-sounding names of Emperors, Kings, Sovereigns,
43 Monarchs, Most Christian Majesties, Most Catholic Majesties, High Mightinesses, Most Serene and Potent Princes, and the
44 like, and who claim to rule "by the grace of God," by "Divine Right" -- that is, by special authority from Heaven -- are
45 intrinsically not only the merest miscreants and wretches, engaged solely in plundering, enslaving, and murdering their
46 fellow men, but that they are also the merest hangers on, the servile, obsequious, fawning dependents and tools of these
47 blood-money loan-mongers, on whom they rely for the means to carry on their crimes. These loan-mongers, like the
48 Rothschilds, laugh in their sleeves, and say to themselves: These despicable creatures, who call themselves emperors, and
49 kings, and majesties, and most serene and potent princes; who profess to wear crowns, and sit on thrones; who deck

1 themselves with ribbons, and feathers, and jewels; and surround themselves with hired flatterers and lickspittles; and whom
 2 we suffer to strut around, and palm themselves off, upon fools and slaves, as sovereigns and lawgivers specially appointed
 3 by Almighty God; and to hold themselves out as the sole fountains of honors, and dignities, and wealth, and power -- all
 4 these miscreants and imposters know that we make them, and use them; that in us they live, move, and have their being;
 5 that we require them (as the price of their positions) to take upon themselves all the labor, all the danger, and all the odium
 6 of all the crimes they commit for our profit; and that we will unmake them, strip them of their gewgaws, and send them out
 7 into the world as beggars, or give them over to the vengeance of the people they have enslaved, the moment they refuse to
 8 commit any crime we require of them, or to pay over to us such share of the proceeds of their robberies as we see fit to
 9 demand.

10 **4.4.16 The agenda of our public servants is murder, robbery, slavery, despotism, and oppression**

11 Now, what is true in Europe, is substantially true in this country. The difference is the immaterial one, that, in this country,
 12 there is no visible, permanent head, or chief, of these robbers and murderers who call themselves "the government." That is
 13 to say, there is no ONE MAN, who calls himself the state, or even emperor, king, or sovereign; no one who claims that he
 14 and his children rule "by the Grace of God," by "Divine Right," or by special appointment from Heaven. There are only
 15 certain men, who call themselves presidents, senators, and representatives, and claim to be the authorized agents, FOR THE
 16 TIME BEING, OR FOR CERTAIN SHORT PERIODS, OF ALL "the people of the United States"; but who can show no
 17 credentials, or powers of attorney, or any other open, authentic evidence that they are so; and who notoriously are not so;
 18 but are really only the agents of a secret band of robbers and murderers, whom they themselves do not know, and have no
 19 means of knowing, individually; but who, they trust, will openly or secretly, when the crisis comes, sustain them in all their
 20 usurpations and crimes.

21 What is important to be noticed is, that these so-called presidents, senators, and representatives, these pretended agents of
 22 all "the people of the United States," the moment their exactions meet with any formidable resistance from any portion of
 23 "the people" themselves, are obliged, like their co-robbers and murderers in Europe, to fly at once to the lenders of blood
 24 money, for the means to sustain their power. And they borrow their money on the same principle, and for the same purpose,
 25 viz., to be expended in shooting down all those "people of the United States" -- their own constituents and principals, as
 26 they profess to call them -- who resist the robberies and enslavements which these borrowers of the money are practicing
 27 upon them. And they expect to repay the loans, if at all, only from the proceeds of the future robberies, which they
 28 anticipate it will be easy for them and their successors to perpetrate through a long series of years, upon their pretended
 29 principals, if they can but shoot down now some hundreds of thousands of them, and thus strike terror into the rest.

30 Perhaps the facts were never made more evident, in any country on the globe, than in our own, that these soulless blood-
 31 money loan-mongers are the real rulers; that they rule from the most sordid and mercenary motives; that the ostensible
 32 government, the presidents, senators, and representatives, so called, are merely their tools; and that no ideas of, or regard
 33 for, justice or liberty had anything to do in inducing them to lend their money for the war [i.e, the Civil War]. In proof of all
 34 this, look at the following facts.

35 Nearly a hundred years ago we professed to have got rid of all that religious superstition, inculcated by a servile and corrupt
 36 priesthood in Europe, that rulers, so called, derived their authority directly from Heaven; and that it was consequently a
 37 religious duty on the part of the people to obey them. We professed long ago to have learned that governments could
 38 rightfully exist only by the free will, and on the voluntary support, of those who might choose to sustain them. We all
 39 professed to have known long ago, that the only legitimate objects of government were the maintenance of liberty and
 40 justice equally for all. All this we had professed for nearly a hundred years. And we professed to look with pity and
 41 contempt upon those ignorant, superstitious, and enslaved peoples of Europe, who were so easily kept in subjection by the
 42 frauds and force of priests and kings.

43 Notwithstanding all this, that we had learned, and known, and professed, for nearly a century, these lenders of blood money
 44 had, for a long series of years previous to the war, been the willing accomplices of the slave-holders in perverting the
 45 government from the purposes of liberty and justice, to the greatest of crimes. They had been such accomplices FOR A
 46 PURELY PECUNIARY CONSIDERATION, to wit, a control of the markets in the South; in other words, the privilege of
 47 holding the slave-holders themselves in industrial and commercial subjection to the manufacturers and merchants of the
 48 North (who afterwards furnished the money for the war). And these Northern merchants and manufacturers, these lenders
 49 of blood-money, were willing to continue to be the accomplices of the slave-holders in the future, for the same pecuniary

1 considerations. But the slave-holders, either doubting the fidelity of their Northern allies, or feeling themselves strong
2 enough to keep their slaves in subjection without Northern assistance, would no longer pay the price which these Northern
3 men demanded. And it was to enforce this price in the future -- that is, to monopolize the Southern markets, to maintain
4 their industrial and commercial control over the South -- that these Northern manufacturers and merchants lent some of the
5 profits of their former monopolies for the war, in order to secure to themselves the same, or greater, monopolies in the
6 future. These -- and not any love of liberty or justice -- were the motives on which the money for the war was lent by the
7 North. In short, the North said to the slave-holders: If you will not pay us our price (give us control of your markets) for our
8 assistance against your slaves, we will secure the same price (keep control of your markets) by helping your slaves against
9 you, and using them as our tools for maintaining dominion over you; for the control of your markets we will have, whether
10 the tools we use for that purpose be black or white, and be the cost, in blood and money, what it may.

11 On this principle, and from this motive, and not from any love of liberty, or justice, the money was lent in enormous
12 amounts, and at enormous rates of interest. And it was only by means of these loans that the objects of the war were
13 accomplished.

14 And now these lenders of blood-money demand their pay; and the government, so called, becomes their tool, their servile,
15 slavish, villainous tool, to extort it from the labor of the enslaved people both of the North and South. It is to be extorted by
16 every form of direct, and indirect, and unequal taxation. Not only the nominal debt and interest -- enormous as the latter
17 was -- are to be paid in full; but these holders of the debt are to be paid still further -- and perhaps doubly, triply, or
18 quadruply paid -- by such tariffs on imports as will enable our home manufacturers to realize enormous prices for their
19 commodities; also by such monopolies in banking as will enable them to keep control of, and thus enslave and plunder, the
20 industry and trade of the great body of the Northern people themselves. In short, the industrial and commercial slavery of
21 the great body of the people, North and South, black and white, is the price which these lenders of blood money demand,
22 and insist upon, and are determined to secure, in return for the money lent for the war.

23 This programme having been fully arranged and systematized, they put their sword into the hands of the chief murderer of
24 the war, [undoubtedly a reference to General Grant, who had just become president] and charge him to carry their scheme
25 into effect. And now he, speaking as their organ, says, "LET US HAVE PEACE."

26 The meaning of this is: Submit quietly to all the robbery and slavery we have arranged for you, and you can have "peace."
27 But in case you resist, the same lenders of blood-money, who furnished the means to subdue the South, will furnish the
28 means again to subdue you.

29 These are the terms on which alone this government, or, with few exceptions, any other, ever gives "peace" to its people.

30 The whole affair, on the part of those who furnished the money, has been, and now is, a deliberate scheme of robbery and
31 murder; not merely to monopolize the markets of the South, but also to monopolize the currency, and thus control the
32 industry and trade, and thus plunder and enslave the laborers, of both North and South. And Congress and the president are
33 today the merest tools for these purposes. They are obliged to be, for they know that their own power, as rulers, so-called, is
34 at an end, the moment their credit with the blood-money loan-mongers fails. They are like a bankrupt in the hands of an
35 extortioner. They dare not say nay to any demand made upon them. And to hide at once, if possible, both their servility and
36 crimes, they attempt to divert public attention, by crying out that they have "Abolished Slavery!" That they have "Saved the
37 Country!" That they have "Preserved our Glorious Union!" and that, in now paying the "National Debt," as they call it (as if
38 the people themselves, ALL OF THEM WHO ARE TO BE TAXED FOR ITS PAYMENT, had really and voluntarily
39 joined in contracting it), they are simply "Maintaining the National Honor!"

40 By "maintaining the national honor," they mean simply that they themselves, open robbers and murderers, assume to be the
41 nation, and will keep faith with those who lend them the money necessary to enable them to crush the great body of the
42 people under their feet; and will faithfully appropriate, from the proceeds of their future robberies and murders, enough to
43 pay all their loans, principal and interest.

44 The pretense that the "abolition of slavery" was either a motive or justification for the war, is a fraud of the same character
45 with that of "maintaining the national honor." Who, but such usurpers, robbers, and murderers as they, ever established
46 slavery? Or what government, except one resting upon the sword, like the one we now have, was ever capable of
47 maintaining slavery? And why did these men abolish slavery? Not from any love of liberty in general -- not as an act of

1 justice to the black man himself, but only "as a war measure," and because they wanted his assistance, and that of his
 2 friends, in carrying on the war they had undertaken for maintaining and intensifying that political, commercial, and
 3 industrial slavery, to which they have subjected the great body of the people, both black and white. And yet these imposters
 4 now cry out that they have abolished the chattel slavery of the black man -- although that was not the motive of the war --
 5 as if they thought they could thereby conceal, atone for, or justify that other slavery which they were fighting to perpetuate,
 6 and to render more rigorous and inexorable than it ever was before. There was no difference of principle -- but only of
 7 degree -- between the slavery they boast they have abolished, and the slavery they were fighting to preserve; for all
 8 restraints upon men's natural liberty, not necessary for the simple maintenance of justice, are of the nature of slavery, and
 9 differ >from each other only in degree.

10 If their object had really been to abolish slavery, or maintain liberty or justice generally, they had only to say: All, whether
 11 white or black, who want the protection of this government, shall have it; and all who do not want it, will be left in peace,
 12 so long as they leave us in peace. Had they said this, slavery would necessarily have been abolished at once; the war would
 13 have been saved; and a thousand times nobler union than we have ever had would have been the result. It would have been
 14 a voluntary union of free men; such a union as will one day exist among all men, the world over, if the several nations, so
 15 called, shall ever get rid of the usurpers, robbers, and murderers, called governments, that now plunder, enslave, and
 16 destroy them.

17 Still another of the frauds of these men is, that they are now establishing, and that the war was designed to establish, "a
 18 government of consent." The only idea they have ever manifested as to what is a government of consent, is this -- that it is
 19 one to which everybody must consent, or be shot. This idea was the dominant one on which the war was carried on; and it
 20 is the dominant one, now that we have got what is called "peace."

21 Their pretenses that they have "Saved the Country," and "Preserved our Glorious Union," are frauds like all the rest of their
 22 pretenses. By them they mean simply that they have subjugated, and maintained their power over, an unwilling people. This
 23 they call "Saving the Country"; as if an enslaved and subjugated people -- or as if any people kept in subjection by the
 24 sword (as it is intended that all of us shall be hereafter) -- could be said to have any country. This, too, they call "Preserving
 25 our Glorious Union"; as if there could be said to be any Union, glorious or inglorious, that was not voluntary. Or as if there
 26 could be said to be any union between masters and slaves; between those who conquer, and those who are subjugated.

27 All these cries of having "abolished slavery," of having "saved the country," of having "preserved the union," of
 28 establishing "a government of consent," and of "maintaining the national honor," are all gross, shameless, transparent cheats
 29 -- so transparent that they ought to deceive no one -- when uttered as justifications for the war, or for the government that
 30 has succeeded the war, or for now compelling the people to pay the cost of the war, or for compelling anybody to support a
 31 government that he does not want.

32 The lesson taught by all these facts is this: As long as mankind continue to pay "national debts," so-called -- that is, so long
 33 as they are such dupes and cowards as to pay for being cheated, plundered, enslaved, and murdered -- so long there will be
 34 enough to lend the money for those purposes; and with that money a plenty of tools, called soldiers, can be hired to keep
 35 them in subjection. But when they refuse any longer to pay for being thus cheated, plundered, enslaved, and murdered, they
 36 will cease to have cheats, and usurpers, and robbers, and murderers and blood-money loan-mongers for masters.

37 **4.5 The U.S.A. is a Republic, not a Democracy¹⁰⁶**

38 *"The United States shall guarantee to every State in this Union a Republican Form of Government..."*

39 Article 4, Section 4 of the Federal Constitution is particularly interesting because it's one of the few sections of the
 40 Constitution which expressly *mandate* specific obligations for the Federal Government. In contrast, read Article 1, Section
 41 8, Clause 1:

42 *"The Congress shall have Power To lay and collect Taxes, duties, Imposts and Excises to pay the Debts and*
 43 *provide for the common Defense and general Welfare of the United States..."*

¹⁰⁶ Derived and adapted from *Suspicious* magazine, Vol. 11. No. 3 in an article by Alfred Adask entitled "A 'Republican Form of Government'". See <http://www.antishyster.com/>.

1 Note that while this section grants Congress the power to “lay and collect Taxes,” etc., it does not *mandate* that Congress
 2 shall do so. If Congress wants to “lay and collect taxes,” they can; they have the power to do so. But if Congress doesn’t
 3 want to “lay and collect taxes,” they don’t have to; they can refuse to exercise their power of taxation.

4 But under Article 4, Section 4, Congress has no such discretion. They *must* “guarantee every State in this Union a
 5 Republican Form of Government...” The federal mandate for a “Republican Form of Government” is echoed in Article 1,
 6 Section 2 of the Texas Constitution which reads:

7 *“INHERENT POLITICAL POWER; REPUBLIC FORM OF GOVERNMENT. All political power is inherent in*
 8 *the people, and all free governments are founded on their authority, and instituted for their benefit. The faith of*
 9 *the people of Texas stands pledged to the preservation of a republican form of government, and subject to this*
 10 *limitation only, they have at all times the inalienable right to alter, reform or abolish their government in such*
 11 *manner as they may think expedient.”*

12 In other words, the *only* form of government that can *ever* be lawful in Texas is a “*republican form of government*”.
 13 Texans can change their State government any way we please, any time we please, “subject to *one limitation only*”—that
 14 we preserve a “republican form of government”—no matter what. Several other state constitutions include similar
 15 guarantees of a “republican form of government”. It seems that early Texans also thought a “republican form of
 16 government” was absolutely vital.

17 **4.5.1 Republican mystery**

18 *Problem is*, what is a “republican form of government”? I’ve been intrigued by that question for several years, but a clear
 19 definition of the concept has persistently eluded me. For example, according to the 1st Edition of *Black’s Law Dictionary*
 20 (*published in 1891*):

21 *“REPUBLICAN GOVERNMENT. A government in the republican form; a government of the people; a*
 22 *government by representatives chosen by the people. Cooley, Const. Law 194.”*

23 *Gee, that’s about as helpful as defining “black” as a “dark color”. You’d think they could be a bit more precise, no? If*
 24 *there was a concise definition there, I wasn’t smart enough to see it. I kept wondering why such an important concept was*
 25 *so poorly defined. After all, isn’t it a fundamental rule of lexicography that definitions don’t include the word being*
 26 *defined? If so, why did Black’s use “republican form” to define “republican government”? Were they merely negligent or*
 27 *intentionally trying to obscure the concept?*

28 *Black’s 4th Edition (published in 1968) provide virtually the same definition of “republican government” as Black’s 1st*
 29 *(1891). Once again, we’re essentially told that “republics” are very “republican”. That’s not very elucidating. I couldn’t*
 30 *believe that “representation” was all the founders sought to guarantee in Article 4 Section 4 of the Constitution. After all,*
 31 *virtually every form of government—even dictatorships and communists—have some kind of “representation” for the*
 32 *people.*

33 I simply couldn’t believe the Founders wasted quill and ink on Article 4, Section 4 of the Federal Constitution to simply
 34 mandate that the government allow the people to have representatives. A “Republican form of Government” had to mean
 35 much more. Further, the mysterious failure to concisely define a concept as fundamental and mandatory as “Republican
 36 Form of Government” implied that the meaning might be so important that it was intentionally obscured.

37 **4.5.2 Military Intelligence**

38 I read comparative definitions of “democracy” and “republic” in *U.S. Government Training Manual No. 2000-25* for Army
 39 officers (published by the War Department on November 30, 1928). Those definitions illustrate that in 1928, democracy
 40 was officially viewed as dangerous and our military was sworn to defend our “Republic”:

41 *DEMOCRACY: A government of masses. Authority derived through mass meeting or any other form of*
 42 *“direct” expression. Results in mobocracy. Attitude toward property is communistic—negating property*
 43 *rights. Attitude toward law is that the will of the majority shall regulate, whether it be based upon deliberation*
 44 *or governed by passion, prejudice, and impulse, without restraint or regard to consequences. Results in*
 45 *demagogism, license, agitation, discontent, anarchy.*

1 *REPUBLIC: Authority is derived through the election by the people of public officials best fitted to represent*
 2 *them. Attitude toward property is respect for laws and individual rights, and a sensible economic procedure.*
 3 *Attitude toward law is the administration of justice in accord with fixed principles and established evidence,*
 4 *with a strict regard to consequences. A great number of citizens and extent of territory may be brought within*
 5 *its compass. Avoids the dangerous extreme of either tyranny or mobocracy. Results in statesmanship, liberty,*
 6 *reason, justice, contentment, and progress...[Emph. Add.]*

7 These military definitions were improvements over *Black's 1st* and 4th Editions. We can tell that the Army regarded
 8 “democracy” as contemptible and “republic” as noble, but otherwise, the essential meaning of “republican form of
 9 government” remained elusive.

10 4.5.3 Sovereign Power

11 My search for the meaning of “republic”, “democracy” and “republican form of government” ended with *Black's 7th*
 12 *Edition (1999)*. Unlike previous editions, *Black's 7th* doesn't even define “republican government”—but it does offer an
 13 illuminating definition of:

14 *“REPUBLIC. N. A system of government in which the people hold sovereign power and elect representatives*
 15 *who exercise that power. It contrasts on the one hand with a pure democracy, in which the people or*
 16 *community as an organized whole wield the sovereign power of government, and on the other with the rule of*
 17 *one person (such as a king, emperor, czar, or sultan).*

18 Ohh, that's a *beauty!* I'd read that definition several times since 1999 without recognizing the inherent implications. But
 19 once I saw the implied meaning, I was electrified. First, note that definition focuses on “*sovereign power*”. Who “holds”
 20 sovereign power? The answer to that question provides the *essential distinction* between a republic, a democracy, and a
 21 monarchy (and probably all other forms of government).

22 But what is “sovereign power”? It's pretty obvious that the words “sovereign,” “king” and “monarchy” are so closely
 23 associated as to be almost synonymous. Further, in Western civilization, whenever one or more individuals hold
 24 “sovereign power,” it's almost certain that such power flows from *God*. For example, to be an earthly “sovereign” (King),
 25 one must gain the authority of sovereignty from *God*. This is the fundamental premise for the “divine right of kings”
 26 (sovereigns). *God* is the source of all “divine” rights. All other sources of authority are transient and simply based on raw
 27 power, survival of the fittest, and the idea that “might makes right” (“right” meaning “sovereign power”). Without a claim
 28 of *divine* origin of right, such “sovereign” powers are subject to constant challenge by anyone who believes his personal
 29 power is comparable or superior to that of the existing King. But gilded with the presumption of *divine* origin and implied
 30 Godly approval, “sovereign powers” can't be lawfully challenged by any mortal man. Such powers are, by definition,
 31 superior to any form of man-made (secular) political powers.

32 The idea that sovereign powers flow *directly from God* is consistent with the “Declaration of Independence” which reads in
 33 part:

34 *“We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator*
 35 *with certain unalienable Rights...” [Emph. Added]*

36 Clearly, just as the “divine rights” of English kings flowed from *God*, so did our “unalienable Rights”. Further, if “*all* men
 37 [including kings] are created *equal*,” then it follows that whatever “divine rights” were accorded to *kings* by *God* in 1776
 38 must be *equal* to whatever “unalienable Rights” were simultaneously granted to “all men” by *God* as established by the
 39 “Declaration of Independence”. After all, if all men (kings and commoners) are created equal, their God-given rights must
 40 likewise be equal. Ergo, “unalienable Rights” and “divine rights” should be synonymous. If so, any “divine right” that was
 41 recognized in English law as belonging to English kings in 1776 should also be included among the bundle of “unalienable
 42 Rights” accorded to Americans by the 1776 Declaration.

43 4.5.4 Government's Purpose

44 The third sentence of the “Declaration of Independence” reads:

45 *“That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men, deriving their just powers from the*
 46 *consent of the governed.” [Emph. add.]*

1 Here we see the primary *purpose* of our “Form of Government”: “to *secure* these rights”. What “rights”?

2 Answer: The “unalienable Rights” (including Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness) mentioned in the Declaration’s
3 previous (second) sentence. Thus—if “unalienable,” “divine,” and “sovereign” rights are virtually synonymous—then the
4 primary legitimate *purpose* for our government is to “secure” our God-given, unalienable (sovereign) Rights.

5 And who, pray tell, is the recipient of the Declaration’s sovereign/unalienable Rights? Is it We the People in a *collective*
6 sense? Or is it We the People in an *individual* sense? The correct answer is “individual”. Below is a U.S. Supreme Court
7 cite that backs this conclusion up from *Penhallow v. Doane's*, 3 U.S. 54, 3 Dall. 54, 1 L.Ed. 507 (1795):

8 *"The great distinction between Monarchies and Republics (at least our Republics) in general is, that in the*
9 *former the monarch is considered as the sovereign, and each individual of his nation a subject to him, though in*
10 *some countries with many important special limitations: This, I say, is generally the case, for it has not been so*
11 *universally. But in a Republic, all the citizens, as such, are equal, and no citizen can rightfully exercise any*
12 *authority over another, but in virtue of a power constitutionally given by the whole community, and such*
13 *authority when exercised, is in effect an act of the whole community which forms such body politic. In such*
14 *governments, therefore, the sovereignty resides in the great body of the people, but it resides in them not as so*
15 *many distinct individuals, but in their politic capacity only."*

16 God endows *me* with “certain unalienable Rights,” and He endows *you* with “certain unalienable Rights” and he endows
17 each of our neighbors with “certain unalienable Rights”. At the moment of creation, *each of us*—as *individuals*—are *equally*
18 “endowed by our Creator” with “certain unalienable Rights”. The idea that we are endowed *individually* (rather than
19 collectively) with identical sets of sovereign/unalienable Rights is further supported by the State constitutions and the Bill
20 of Rights which make it clear that virtually all of our sovereign/unalienable Rights are held as *individuals*.

21 **4.5.5 Who holds the sovereign power?**

22 OK—big deal, hmm? We hold our unalienable Rights as “individuals”. Someone alert the media. Well, actually, it *is* a
23 big deal because—if you’ll recall—the *Black’s 7th* definition of “republic” implies that the essential distinction between a
24 monarchy, a republic and a democracy is determined by *who* holds the “sovereign powers”:

25 *REPUBLIC. n. A system of government in which the people hold sovereign power and elect representatives who*
26 *exercise that power. It contrasts on the one hand with a pure democracy, in which the people or community as*
27 *an organized whole wield the sovereign power of government, and on the other with the rule of one person*
28 *(such as a king, emperor, czar, or sultan).*
29 [Emph. added]

30 Therefore, what is a *republic* and (by implication) a “Republican Form of Government”? *Black’s 7th* does not expressly
31 answer that question but it does provide enough contrasting definitions to allow us to deduce the mysterious meaning of
32 “republic”.

33 First, a monarchy is the most easily understood form of government since the sovereign powers are held exclusively by *one*
34 individual—the king. He alone has God-given, unalienable Rights. All others are “subjects” who have no legal authority
35 or right to resist the King’s will. However, distinguishing between a democracy and a republic is more subtle. *Black’s 7th*
36 explains that in both a democracy and a republic, the sovereign powers are held by the *people*. Therefore, the first time you
37 read that definition, you may be both confused and reassured. In either case, you see that the “people” hold the sovereign
38 powers. OK, sounds great. We the People. Of the people, by the people, for the people. People, people, people. Sounds
39 just like the all-American answer we’d expect to hear because we’ve been told all our lives that, in this country, the *people*
40 are sovereign.

41 Uh-huh. But if you read the phrase defining a democracy again, you’ll see that “people” is qualified by “as an organized
42 whole.” I believe that qualification is the key to understanding republic. If the “people” in a democracy hold sovereign
43 power as an “organized whole,” they hold that power as a *collective*. Unlike a monarchy where *one* individual (the king)
44 holds all sovereign power, in a democracy the sovereign power is held by the collective, by the *group*. But—in a
45 democracy, the sovereign power is held by the collective, by the *group*. But—in a democracy *no* individual holds any
46 sovereign power.

1 OK. *Black's 7th* defines “republic” as a system of government in which the “people hold sovereign power.” So if a
 2 monarchy has *one* sovereign individual...and a democracy *no* sovereign individuals.. then it would seem to follow that in a
 3 republic...*all* individuals hold sovereign power! Do you see the difference between a democracy and a republic? In both
 4 forms of government, the *people* hold the sovereign power—but in the democracy those powers are held by the people as a
 5 *collective*, while in the republic, those powers are held by the people as *individuals*.

6 **4.5.6 Individually-held God-given unalienable Rights**

7 Thus, a “republic” is a system of government which recognizes that each person is *individually* “endowed by his Creator
 8 with certain unalienable Rights.” I am individually endowed, you are individually endowed, our neighbors are each
 9 *individually* endowed. Why is this *individual* endowment important? Because it doesn't matter how the majority votes in a
 10 republic—they can't arbitrarily deprive a single individual of his sovereign/unalienable Rights to “Life, Liberty and the
 11 pursuit of Happiness” unless some of those unalienable Rights have been expressly delegated to government through the
 12 Constitution.

13 In a republic, the majority can't vote to incarcerate (or execute) all the Jews, Blacks' Japanese or patriots. Why? Because
 14 in a republic “All men are created equal and endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights”—and no man or
 15 collection of men (not even a massive democratic majority) can arbitrarily deprive *any* individual (even if he's a “kike,”
 16 “nigger,” “gook,” “political extremist” or “religious fundamentalist”) of his God-given, unalienable Rights. Why? Because
 17 in the American republic, every man holds the position of “sovereign” (one who enjoys the “divine rights of kings”). The
 18 American republic is essentially a nation of kings. Thus, as per the Declaration of Independence, a “Republican Form of
 19 Government” is one which *recognizes and “secures” each individual's “sovereign powers”—his individually-held, God-*
 20 *given, unalienable Rights.*¹⁰⁷

21 **4.5.7 A republic's covenant**

22 In a republic, every individual's unalienable Rights cannot be violated or arbitrarily denied by any mortal man or
 23 democratic majority—*unless* that individual first violates his covenant with God. This principle is based on the premise
 24 that our “unalienable Rights” are *conditional*; they are given to each of us by God on condition that we obey the balance of
 25 God's laws (like “Thou shalt not kill”, “thou shalt not steal”, etc). If an individual chooses to violate God's law, he
 26 breaches his covenant with God, and his claim to God's protections, blessings, and endowment of “unalienable Rights” is
 27 forfeit. For example, if it can be proved in a court of law that a particular individual has broken his covenant with God to
 28 “not kill,” that individual forfeits his own unalienable Right to Life and may be lawfully executed. An eye for an eye, a
 29 tooth for a tooth...do unto others as you would have government do unto you.

30 However, in a republic, execution cannot be lawfully imposed on isolated individuals or groups who haven't *individually*
 31 breached their covenant with God. Why? Because that individual has God-given, unalienable Rights. Those individually-
 32 held rights are the basis for his defense. That's the foundation for his presumption of innocence. Why? Because the votes
 33 and opinions of all mankind taken together are trivialities when compared to God. If God endows an individual with a
 34 particular Right, the whole of mankind lacks sufficient collective authority to arbitrarily revoke or violate that right—unless
 35 that individual has first breached his covenant with God.

36 **4.5.8 Divine endowment**

37 This Biblical interpretation may seem like so much “holy rolling,” but it has great significance in a “Republican Form of
 38 Government”. For example, in a republic, you can only be charged with a crime if you injure the person or property of
 39 another sovereign individual. So long as you don't injure, rob or kill another sovereign (and thereby violate *his* God-given,
 40 unalienable *Rights*), there is no crime. In a republic, there can be no crimes “against the state” (the collective)—only
 41 against God. Likewise, except for certain biblical prohibitions (like working on the Sabbath), there are no “victimless
 42 crimes” in a republic. However, in a democracy, the majority (or their presumed agent, the government) can vote that any
 43 act is a crime (hate speech, for example) even if no individual's life, person or property is damaged. Thus, “victimless

¹⁰⁷ Not every “republic” conforms to this definition. For example, the former “Union of Soviet Socialist Republics” claimed to be composed of “Republics,” but merely used that word as a political label. Those “republics” were actually collectives where sovereign power was held by the collective, not individuals.

1 crimes” and “crimes against the state” (which are almost impossible in a true republic) are common under democracy.
 2 Why? Because there are no legitimate *victims* in a democracy. Why? Because, in a democracy, no individual has any
 3 unalienable Rights.

4 Without rights, you can’t be a victim; there’s nothing to damage. For example, to shoot a homo sapien without unalienable
 5 Rights is legally indistinguishable from killing a cow. Without God-given, unalienable Rights, there’s nothing intrinsic to
 6 violate. Sure, the democracy may vote that murder is wrong (at least when committed against the majority). But that
 7 democratic collective can likewise vote that murdering Jews, Blacks, homosexuals, patriots—or even specific individuals
 8 like Jesus Christ—is quite alright. As citizens of a democracy, we each have no more *individual* rights than cows. Without
 9 individually-held, God-given rights “secured” by a “Republican Form of Government,” we have no intrinsic value and may
 10 be fairly characterized as “human resources”. In a democracy, we have no individually-held, unalienable Rights to shield
 11 us against the arbitrary will of the majority or their agents: government.

12 Think not? Ask Vickie Weaver about her unalienable Right to Life in our fair “democracy”. FBI hitman Lon Horiuchi
 13 simply shot her in the head like any other dumb animal. Why? Because, as a citizen of a democracy (where the sovereign
 14 powers are held by the *collective*), Vickie Weaver had no *individual* right to Life. Same was true for the Branch Davidians.
 15 Same is true for you and for me. In a democracy, there are no individually-held, unalienable Rights so we are all
 16 individually defenseless against the majority and/or the government. Look at the ranchers and farmers in Klamath Falls,
 17 Oregon. They’re losing their homes to save some suckerfish. They’re shocked to learn that our government doesn’t
 18 recognize or secure their “unalienable Rights to Life, Liberty and pursuit of Happiness” (property).

19 But the truth is that—as citizens of a *democracy*—those individual ranchers don’t have *any* unalienable Rights to their
 20 property. The democracy has “spoken” (if only by its silence). The majority has presumptively ruled (at least, they haven’t
 21 complained loudly) that endangered suckerfish are more important than the “suckers” who allowed themselves to become
 22 citizens of a democracy. The citizens of Klamath Falls are learning that, as a tiny minority in a national democracy, they
 23 are as defenseless as Jews in a Nazi concentration camp.

24 **4.5.9 Democracies must by nature be deceptive to maintain their power**

25 This doesn’t mean that a democratic government can do virtually anything it wants. It has to be careful and crafty. It can’t
 26 murder so many citizens or steal so much property that the majority of citizens of the democracy wake up and vote to stop
 27 government from killing or robbing individuals. So a democratic government has to be sneaky. It has to control public
 28 opinion. It has to follow (almost worship) the public opinion polls. It can only implement so much abuse as the public will
 29 endure without actually getting angry enough to vote the S.O.B.’s out. As a result, the only thing a democracy fears is
 30 public exposure.

31 Conversely, in a republic, it’s simply unlawful for an FBI hitman to kill a woman holding a baby and get away with it. In a
 32 republic, government officials can’t flambe’ a bunch of kids in Waco and walk away with promotions and a fat pension. In
 33 a republic, you can’t effectively “seize” another person’s property by declaring that property can no longer be used to raise
 34 cattle if that use adversely affects the lowly suckerfish. In a republic, *individuals* have unalienable Rights; suckerfish don’t.
 35 Thus, the rights of individuals are superior to the interests of suckerfish. In a republic, neither a 99% democratic majority
 36 nor the Gates of Hell can lawfully prevail over the God-given, unalienable Rights with which every *individual* is endowed.
 37 See the difference?

38 In a monarchy, one individual holds the sovereign powers. In a democracy, *no* individual holds sovereign powers. But in a
 39 republic only, *all* individuals hold “sovereign powers” (God-given, unalienable Rights).

40 Where would you rather live? Where *only one* individual had sovereign powers? Where *no* individual had sovereign
 41 powers? Or where *all* individuals (including you) have sovereign powers?

42 **4.5.10 Democratic disabilities**

43 *“The very purpose of a Bill of Rights was to withdraw certain subjects from the vicissitudes of political*
 44 *controversy, to place them beyond the reach of majorities and officials and to establish them as legal principles*
 45 *to be applied by the courts. One’s right to life, liberty, and property, to free speech, a free press, freedom of*

1 worship and assembly, and other fundamental rights may not be submitted to vote; they depend on the outcome
2 of no elections." *West Virginia State Board of Education v. Barnette*, 319 U.S. 624; 63 S.Ct. 1178 (1943)

3 *Black's Law Dictionary*, 7th Edition defines "democracy" as a system of government in which, "the people or **community**
4 **as an organized whole** wield the sovereign power"—but do so in the capacity of a single, artificial *collective*—*not as an*
5 *association of* individual "sovereigns". Thus, democracy is a *collectivist* political philosophy characterized by a lack of
6 individually-held, God given, "unalienable Rights". In other words, it is socialism or worst yet communism, at its extreme.
7 Also note that the logical correlative of the *collective* rights of the "group is the *absence of* rights for each *individual*. This
8 absence of individually-held, God-given rights is the central feature of all collectivist philosophies (communism, socialism,
9 etc.) since these systems presume that "sovereign power" is held by the *collective*, but not by any individuals. Therefore,
10 by definition, no citizen of a democracy can hold God-given, "unalienable Rights" to Life, Liberty and the pursuit of
11 Happiness" as an *individual*. Why? Because if a democracy recognized the legitimacy of *individual* rights as God-given
12 and thus superior to any claim of "collective" rights, the power of the democracy and majority rule over specific individuals
13 or minorities would disappear. By simply invoking his God-given, unalienable Rights, any individual could thumb his nose
14 at virtually any vote by the democratic majority. So long as I have an unalienable Right to Life, it matters not if 250
15 million Americans all vote to hang me. So long as I am *individually* "endowed by my Creator with certain unalienable
16 Rights," I can tell the whole world to "stuff it" by simply invoking my *individually*-held, unalienable Rights.

17 The implications of who holds sovereignty within our system of republican government forms the basis for our system of
18 jurisprudence. Because *individuals* rather than collective groups or the government, are the holders of divinely endowed
19 *rights*, then they are the only ones who can have a legal remedy in the courts for an invasion or injury of those rights.
20 Groups and government cannot be identified in a republic as an "injured party". This is why you can go into court in our
21 country and demand a verified affidavit from an injured party, and if the state cannot produce one, then they cannot
22 prosecute you for a crime. Stated another way, there must be a real, flesh and blood victim of a crime in order for the state
23 to prosecute for a violation of a criminal law. If the state prosecutes someone for any other type of crime, it is called a
24 malum prohibitum:

25 *Malum prohibitum.* A wrong prohibited; a thing which is wrong because prohibited; an act which is not
26 inherently immoral, but becomes so because its commission is expressly forbidden by positive law; an act
27 involving an illegality resulting from positive law. Compare Malum in se.

28 [*Black's Law Dictionary*, Sixth Edition, page 960]

29 As we will explain later in section 4.8, the Supreme Court has ruled in the case of *Downes v. Bidwell*, 182 U.S. 244 (1902)
30 that Constitutional rights (the Bill of Rights) and direct taxes on natural people are mutually exclusive and cannot coexist.
31 We believe this is because the entire Bill of Rights would have to be destroyed to eliminate all the conflicts of law that
32 would result. On the other hand, ask yourself if a tax crime can have a real, flesh and blood individual victim for a tax that
33 is voluntary to begin with? The answer is no, and that is one of many reasons why income tax laws consistent with the
34 Constitution and the Bill of Rights can never be lawfully imposed against real flesh and blood people, who are the
35 *sovereigns* in our society. Furthermore, citizens simply can't be the sovereigns unless they have *individual* rights.
36 Consequently, public servants in our government simply can never be greater than the sovereigns they serve because that
37 would turn the bedrock of our political system upside down. The Federalist Paper No. 78 written by Alexander Hamilton,
38 one of our founding fathers, clearly explains these observations:

39 "No legislative act contrary to the Constitution can be valid. To deny this would be to affirm that the deputy
40 (agent) is greater than his principal; that the servant is above the master; that the representatives of the
41 people are superior to the people; that men, acting by virtue of powers may do not only what their powers do
42 not authorize, but what they forbid...[text omitted] It is not otherwise to be supposed that the Constitution
43 could intend to enable the representatives of the people to substitute their will to that of their constituents. It
44 is far more rational to suppose, that the courts were designed to be an intermediate body between the people
45 and the legislature, in order, among other things, to keep the latter within the limits assigned to their authority.
46 The interpretation of the laws is the proper and peculiar province of the courts. A Constitution is, in fact, and
47 must be regarded by judges, as fundamental law. If there should happen to be an irreconcilable variance
48 between the two, the Constitution is to be preferred to the statute." - Alexander Hamilton (*Federalist Paper* #
49 78)

50 Do you now see our point about the implications of who holds sovereign power? By *definition*, a democracy can't work—
51 can't exercise the arbitrary authority of the majority over the minority—can't even exist where unalienable Rights are

1 granted to *individuals* by the supreme authority of *God*. And at least coincidentally, according to Brock Chisholm, former
2 Director of the UN's World Health Organization,

3 *"To achieve world government, it is necessary to remove from the minds of men, their individualism, loyalty to*
4 *family traditions, national patriotism and religious dogmas."*

5 Do you see how a democracy—which denies both *individual* rights and the *God* that granted them—could diminish the
6 republican forces of individualism and faith that would naturally resist one world government? Do you see how a
7 "democratic form of government" might be ideal for implementing a New World Order? In fact, if you'll read the United
8 Nation's "Universal Declaration of Human Rights" (adopted Dec. 10, 1948), you'll see that Article 21(b) explains the basis
9 of the U.N.'s one-world government:

10 *"The will of the people shall be the basis of the authority of government; this shall be expressed in periodic and*
11 *genuine elections which shall be by universal and equal suffrage and shall be held by secret vote or by*
12 *equivalent free voting procedures."* [Emph. added]

13 The basis for the authority of all U.N. governments isn't God, but the "will of the people" as expressed in "periodic
14 elections" (rather than fixed constitutions). That's democracy, folks. And that 1948 U.S. "Declaration" is probably the
15 political foundation for the world's 20th century march toward our "beloved" democracy. Think not? Read Article 29(2) of
16 the same U.N. "Declaration":

17 *"In the exercise of his rights and freedoms, everyone shall be subject only to...the rights and freedoms of*
18 *others...in a democratic society."*

19 In other words, despite the considerable list of rights which the U.N.'s "Declaration" claims to provide for all individuals,
20 those individually-held "human rights" are absolutely subject to the "rights and freedoms of others". Note that "others" is
21 plural. Thus, the individual's rights are always subject to that of the *group*, of the *collective*. In other words, whenever two
22 or more are gathered in the U.N.'s name, a single person's claim to "individual rights" is meaningless.

23 A collectivist form of government, the U.N. democracy is fundamentally indistinguishable from communism and
24 socialism.¹⁰⁸ More importantly, by rejecting the concept of individually-held, *unalienable* Rights, every democracy
25 (including the U.N., the New World Order and/ or the United States) must likewise reject the *source* of those unalienable
26 Rights: God.

27 Like all *collectivist* political systems, democracies must be *atheistic*. Although a particular democracy may allow its
28 subjects to engage in some religious activity, none of those religious principles can be officially recognized or given any
29 authority by the collectivist state. (Can you say "separation of church and state," boys and girls?)

30 **4.5.11 Collective self-destruction**

31 *"Do not follow the crowd [majority] in doing wrong. When you give testimony in a lawsuit, do not pervert*
32 *justice by siding with the crowd, and do not show favoritism to a poor man in his lawsuit."* [Exodus 23:2,
33 Bible, NIV]

34 But democracies aren't merely dangerous to individuals, they're even dangerous to the collective because—without
35 individually-held, unalienable Rights—there is no defense against unlimited government growth, taxation, regulation or
36 oppression. A massive, unlimited New World Order (or American bureaucracy) is the inevitable expression and
37 consequence of the principles of democracy.

38 Consider: In 1978, William E. Simon (Secretary of the Treasury in the Nixon and Ford administrations) complained that the
39 federal expenditures exceeded \$1 billion a day. Twenty-three years later, our federal government spends about \$56 billion
40 per day. Of course, our economy has grown since 1978, and inflation has reduced the value of \$56 billion in today's
41 dollars to about \$20 billion in 1978 dollars.

¹⁰⁸ If you read Article 22 of the U.N.'s "Declaration": "Everyone, as a member of society, has the right to *social security*..." Does this imply that modern "social security" is a U.N. program? Is it possible that mere possession of a Social Security card is construed as evidence of your status as subject in an *international* democracy?

1 Still, did federal expenditures (and taxes, regulations, and intrusion into private lives) grow at least ten-fold in the last
 2 quarter century because the citizens of our “democracy” *voted* for that growth? Or did it grow because in a democracy, we
 3 have no claim to the *individual* rights that would automatically inhibit such extraordinary government growth?

4 In a “Republican Form of Government”—where individually held, God-given rights are presumed and “secured”—
 5 government can’t grow except by the *express* will of the people as demonstrated through constitutional amendments. But
 6 in a democracy, where there are no God-given, individual rights to inhibit government growth, the will of the collective is
 7 expressed *only* every two years in the form of elections. Once elected, our “representatives” are endowed to vote for
 8 virtually *anything* and *everything* they want since they’re presumed to enjoy the support of the majority of the collective.
 9 Unless the people complain bitterly and even vote against incumbents—without individually-held, God-given rights, there
 10 is not restriction on government growth in a democracy.

11 In a democracy, government can take your guns. They can take your kids, your property and your cash. In fact, they can
 12 take your life. Every one of those “takings” (and thousands more) are possible and absolutely legal because subjects of a
 13 democracy have *no* individually-held, unalienable Rights to protect them against arbitrary exercise of government power.

14 If it’s lawful for government to take virtually anything it wants from subjects of the democratic collective, then it’s
 15 certainly lawful for government to create and enlarge as many bureaucracies and enforcement agencies as it deems
 16 necessary to implement the unrestricted takings. Do you see my point? God-give, unalienable Rights don’t merely protect
 17 us as individuals from government oppression, they are the fundamental bulwarks that protects the whole nation against the
 18 growth of massive, government bureaucracies. The road to world democracy without the restraining influences of
 19 republican government is a road to totalitarian socialism and communism and self-destruction. Below is just one example
 20 of how that might happen:

21 *"A democracy cannot exist as a permanent form of government. It can only exist until the voters discover that*
 22 *they can vote themselves money from the Public Treasury. From that moment on, the majority always votes for*
 23 *the candidate promising the most benefits from the Public Treasury with the result that a democracy always*
 24 *collapses over loose fiscal policy always followed by dictatorship." Alexander Fraser Tyler, "The Decline and*
 25 *Fall of the Athenian Republic"*

26 **4.5.12 The “First” Bill of Rights?**

27 So what is the “Republican Form of Government” that’s *mandated* by Article 4, Section 4 of the Federal Constitution?

28 Answer: A system of government that recognizes the God-given, unalienable Rights of *individuals*. And what did the
 29 “Declaration of Independence” say was the fundamental purpose for all just government? “To secure these *rights*”
 30 Which rights? The “unalienable Rights” given to each *individual* by God and referenced in the previous sentence of the
 31 Declaration.

32 Thus, the first obligation of the “Republican Form of Government” *mandated* by Article 4, Section 4 of the Federal
 33 Constitution is to secure God-given, unalienable Rights to *individuals*. Not to secure rights to the *collective* or some king—
 34 but to secure unalienable Rights to every *individual*. And note that while, “among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of
 35 Happiness”—this general list of unalienable Rights is not exhaustive. It is obvious that there are other, unspecified
 36 unalienable Rights which must also be “secured” by government. If so, Article 4, section 4 of the Federal Constitution
 37 might be viewed as the original “Bill of Rights”.

38 Consider: The Federal Constitution was adopted in 1789. The Bill of Rights (first ten amendments) was adopted in 1791.
 39 But, in 1791, some people argued against adopting the Bill of Rights because 1) all unalienable Rights were protected under
 40 the Constitution; and 2) by expressly specifying some Rights, government might later be able to argue that other rights
 41 which were not specified did not exist or were not protected.

42 Until recently, I viewed those 18th century arguments as unconvincing. But now that I see that a “Republican Form of
 43 Government” is one that recognizes and “secures” *all* God-given, unalienable Rights, I also see that Article 4, Section 4 of
 44 the Federal Constitution (and similar sections in State constitutions) seem to guarantee *all* unalienable Rights to *all*
 45 individuals.

1 Thus, the 1791 Bill of Rights may have truly been unnecessary, redundant or even counterproductive. Worse, by focusing
 2 on the specific rights enumerated in the first ten amendments, we may have lost sight of the “mother lode” of unalienable
 3 Rights: the Article 4, Section 4 guarantee of a “Republican Form of Government” (one that “secures” our unalienable
 4 Rights).

5 By focusing on each specific right in the Bill of Rights, it’s become possible for democratic government to whittle away at
 6 each right whenever political conditions allow them to do so. They don’t attack all our rights at once; they simply whittle
 7 away a little at “due process” today, “freedom of speech” tomorrow, and the right to “keep and bear arms” next month. In a
 8 sense, it’s arguable that the Bill of Rights might allow government to “divide and conquer” our rights on a one-by-one basis
 9 and thereby slowly “cook” our freedoms like so many frogs. However, such cannibalism seems strictly prohibited under
 10 Article 4, Section 4 guarantee of a “Republican Form of Government”.

11 **4.5.13 The mandate remains**

12 So far as we know, the last President to refer to this nation as a “republic” was John F. Kennedy. Since then, all presidents
 13 have referred to the United States only as a “democracy”—a political system which, by definition, *cannot* recognize the
 14 unalienable Rights and sovereign powers of *individuals*. Does our current government secure our God-given, unalienable
 15 Rights? Obviously not.

16 Obvious conclusion? We no longer live in a republic. Instead, we’re entrapped in a democracy where unalienable Rights
 17 are not recognized or “secured” and no individual or minority is safe from the majority’s/government’s arbitrary exercise of
 18 power or oppression. Nevertheless, Article 4, Section 4 of the Federal Constitution is *still there*, un-amended, and
 19 *mandating* that “The United States *shall* guarantee to every State in this Union a Republican Form of Government...”

20 So we seem to have a constitutional conflict. Our Federal and (some) State constitutions mandate a republic, but our
 21 government only provides a democracy. This conflict between the Article 4, Section 4 mandate for a “Republican Form of
 22 Government” and our modern democracy can successfully be exploited as a defense against government oppression. We
 23 suspect that a defendant who 1) understands the full meaning of a “Republican Form of Government” and 2) demands that
 24 the Article 4, Section 4 guarantee of such government be enforced—may raise a constitutional conflict or “political
 25 question” too embarrassing for most prosecutors to face. If so, cases against defendants might “disappear” if those
 26 defendants essentially argued that, as *individuals* “endowed with certain unalienable Rights,” they could not be subject to
 27 the statutes, regulations and enforcement activities of a democracy—which, by definition, denies unalienable Rights.

28 More importantly, any government official who has taken an Oath of Office to support and defend the Constitution is duty
 29 bound to “guarantee” a “Republican Form of Government” and the attendant “unalienable Rights”. Therefore, if an official
 30 sought to impose rules or regulation upon you that were based on democratic principles rather than unalienable Rights—
 31 that official might violate his Oath of Office and incur personal liability.

32 So, if you claim you still have the unalienable Rights referenced in the “Declaration of Independence” and seemingly
 33 guaranteed by Article 4, Section 4 of the Federal Constitution, will government *publicly* admit that it’s not so? Even if
 34 government can prove that you don’t have unalienable Rights, you’re not in a “state of this Union,” or the Republic is long
 35 dead, they’d be unlikely to make those admissions publicly since doing so could alert the democratic majority that they’ve
 36 been betrayed. Once “officially alerted of their loss of individual rights, the public might rise up and vote (the democracy’s
 37 one remaining “right”) to restore the Republican Form of Government.¹⁰⁹

38 Ironically, democracy only works if the public has no idea of what kind of mess they’re really in. If your courtroom
 39 defense threatens to “sound the alarm,” gov-co may decline to prosecute. Further, I suspect that most government
 40 prosecutions for minor offenses (traffic, family law, etc.) take place in courts of *equity* rather than law. One axiom of
 41 equity jurisdiction is that the plaintiff must have “clean hands” to initiate a case in equity. So what would happen if the
 42 government tried to sue or indict you in a court of equity and you advised the court that the government’s “hands” were
 43 “unclean” since it was operating as a *democracy* rather than the “Republican Form of Government” mandated by the

¹⁰⁹ The “right to vote” is the *only* right guaranteed to the citizens of a democracy. Hence the importance of the Federal Election Commission and enforcement of “voting rights”.

1 Federal and (possibly) State constitutions? Could failure to provide a “Republican Form of Government” cost government
2 its standing to sue in equity?

3 Similarly, Article 4, Section 4 might not only offer an intriguing defense against government prosecution, it might even
4 provide a basis for aggressively *suing* a governmental entity or official that violated or refused to “secure” our unalienable
5 Rights. Until Federal and State constitutions are amended to remove the republican mandate, there appears to be no
6 wiggle-room, no excuse for not providing the People with a “Republican Form of Government”. If so, any governmental
7 agent or agency that’s put on proper notice of their constitutionally-mandated duty to provide us with a “Republican Form
8 of Government”—and nevertheless continues to prosecute us as a subject of the unauthorized democracy—might be
9 personally exposed to financial and even criminal liability. More, intentional failure to provide a “Republican Form of
10 Government” is arguably treason (a hanging offense). In fact, it’s arguable that (like all collectivist political systems)
11 democracy itself is anathema to the Declaration of Independence, treason to the Constitution, and blasphemy to God.

12 Faced with charges that they’ve knowingly refused to provide a “Republican Form of Government” and “secure” our
13 “Unalienable Rights,” what could government agents do? Admit to a jury that the American people haven’t had any
14 unalienable Rights since the 1930’s? I don’t think so. But even if they made that admission, would the jury believe them?
15 Probably not. And therein lies the great vulnerability of a democracy imposed through deceit and enforced public
16 ignorance. Government secretly imposed the democracy, because they knew the American people would never accept it, if
17 they understood that abandoning the republic meant abandoning their unalienable Rights. As a result, government is in the
18 awkward position of a teenage boy who brings a hooker home while his folks are on vacation. If his parents come home
19 early, the kid must either hide the whore or pass her off as his history teacher—but he can’t possible admit that he’s got a
20 whore in the house. Likewise, our government can’t openly admit it’s brought the disease-bearing whore of democracy
21 into our republic. Ohh, she’s here alright, but all gov-co can do is act innocent, keep a big supply of condoms handy and
22 hope we don’t find out she’s not our long-lost Aunt.

23 **4.5.14 What shall we do?**

24 How can we eject the democratic bitch? The “Declaration of Independence” offers guidance:

25 *“That whenever any Form of Government becomes destructive of these ends [securing our unalienable Rights],*
26 *it is the Right of the People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new Government, laying its foundation on*
27 *such principles and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their Safety*
28 *and Happiness. [Emph. and bracket added]*

29 In short, we have an unalienable Right (some say, “duty”) to *abolish* the democracy which denies our individually-held,
30 God-given Rights. Based on the Article 4, Section 4 “guarantee,” we can *demand* restoration of the “Republican Form of
31 Government” that secures our unalienable Rights. Such overthrow won’t happen soon since a successful referendum
32 against democracy is a “political question” that will require a massive effort to educate the public to the blessings of a
33 Republic and the disabilities of democracy.

34 However, for now, we can begin that educational process by simply challenging government to provide the “Republican
35 Form of Government” that’s guaranteed by our Federal and (some) State constitutions. As our understanding grows, and
36 more people begin to defend themselves based on the constitutional guarantee of a “Republican Form of Government,” we
37 might see atheist democracy begin to crack, then crumble like the Berlin wall did when Communism fell.

38 **4.5.15 Sorry, Mr. Franklin, “We’re All Democrats Now”**

39 This section was derived from a speech by Congressman Ron Paul delivered in the House of Representatives on January
40 29, 2003. It very powerfully illustrates the disabilities of democracies, how we have violated the intent of the founding
41 fathers in our retreat from the Constitutional Republic they endowed us with, and what we need to do to fix the problem.
42 You can visit Ron Paul’s Liberty Committee website at the address below:

43 <http://www.thelibertycommittee.org/>

44 **4.5.15.1 Introduction**

1 At the close of the Constitutional Convention in 1787, Benjamin Franklin told an inquisitive citizen that the delegates to
2 the Constitutional Convention gave the people “a Republic, if you can keep it.” We should apologize to Mr. Franklin. It is
3 obvious that the Republic is gone, for we are wallowing in a pure democracy against which the Founders had strongly
4 warned.

5 Madison, the father of the Constitution, could not have been more explicit in his fear and concern for democracies.
6 “Democracies,” he said, “have ever been spectacles of turbulence and contention; have ever been found incompatible with
7 personal security or the rights of property; and have in general been as short in their lives as they have been violent in their
8 death.”

9 If Madison’s assessment was correct, it behooves those of us in Congress to take note and decide, indeed, whether the
10 Republic has vanished, when it occurred, and exactly what to expect in the way of “turbulence, contention, and violence.”
11 And above all else, what can we and what will we do about it?

12 The turbulence seems self-evident. Domestic welfare programs are not sustainable and do not accomplish their stated goals.
13 State and federal spending and deficits are out of control. Terrorism and uncontrollable fear undermine our sense of well-
14 being. Hysterical reactions to dangers not yet seen prompt the people- at the prodding of the politicians- to readily sacrifice
15 their liberties in vain hope that someone else will take care of them and guarantee their security. With these obvious signs
16 of a failed system all around us, there seems to be more determination than ever to antagonize the people of the world by
17 pursuing a world empire. Nation building, foreign intervention, preemptive war, and global government drive our foreign
18 policy. There seems to be complete aversion to defending the Republic and the Constitution that established it.

19 The Founders clearly understood the dangers of a democracy. Edmund Randolph of Virginia described the effort to deal
20 with the issue at the Constitutional Convention:

21 *“The general object was to produce a cure for the evils under which the United States labored; that in tracing*
22 *these evils to their origins, every man had found it in the turbulence and follies of democracy.”*

23 These strongly held views regarding the evils of democracy and the benefits of a Constitutional Republic were shared by all
24 the Founders. For them, a democracy meant centralized power, controlled by majority opinion, which was up for grabs and
25 therefore completely arbitrary.

26 In contrast, a Republic was decentralized and representative in nature, with the government’s purpose strictly limited by the
27 Constitution to the protection of liberty and private property ownership. They believed the majority should never be able to
28 undermine this principle and that the government must be tightly held in check by constitutional restraints. The difference
29 between a democracy and a republic was simple. Would we live under the age-old concept of the rule of man or the
30 enlightened rule of law?

31 A constitution in and by itself does not guarantee liberty in a republican form of government. Even a perfect constitution
32 with this goal in mind is no better than the moral standards and desires of the people. Although the United States
33 Constitution was by far the best ever written for the protection of liberty, with safeguards against the dangers of a
34 democracy, it too was flawed from the beginning. Instead of guaranteeing liberty equally for all people, the authors
35 themselves yielded to the democratic majority’s demands that they compromise on the issue of slavery. This mistake, plus
36 others along the way, culminated in a Civil War that surely could have been prevented with clearer understanding and a
37 more principled approach to the establishment of a constitutional republic.

38 Subsequently, the same urge to accommodate majority opinion, while ignoring the principles of individual liberty, led to
39 some other serious errors. Even amending the Constitution in a proper fashion to impose alcohol prohibition turned out to
40 be a disaster. Fortunately this was rectified after a short time with its repeal.

41 But today, the American people accept drug prohibition, a policy as damaging to liberty as alcohol prohibition. A majority
42 vote in Congress has been enough to impose this very expensive and failed program on the American people, without even
43 bothering to amend the Constitution. It has been met with only minimal but, fortunately, growing dissent. For the first 150
44 years of our history, when we were much closer to being a true republic, there were no federal laws dealing with this
45 serious medical problem of addiction.

1 The ideas of democracy, not the principles of liberty, were responsible for passage of the 16th Amendment. It imposed the
2 income tax on the American people and helped to usher in the modern age of the welfare/warfare state. Unfortunately, the
3 16th Amendment has not been repealed, as was the 18th. As long as the 16th Amendment is in place, the odds are slim that
4 we can restore a constitutional republic dedicated to liberty. The personal income tax is more than symbolic of a
5 democracy; it is a predictable consequence.

6 **4.5.15.2 Transition to Democracy**

7 The transition from republic to democracy was gradual and insidious. It seeds were sown early in our history. In many
8 ways, the Civil War and its aftermath laid the foundation for the acute erosion that took place over the entire 20th century.
9 Chronic concern about war and economic downturns- events caused by an intrusive government's failure to follow the
10 binding restraints of the Constitution- allowed majority demands to supercede the rights of the minority. By the end of the
11 20th century, majority opinion had become the determining factor in all that government does. The rule of law was cast
12 aside, leaving the Constitution a shell of what it once was- a Constitution with rules that guaranteed a republic with limited
13 and regional government and protection of personal liberty. The marketplace, driven by voluntary cooperation, private
14 property ownership, and sound money was severely undermined with the acceptance of the principles of a true democracy.

15 Unfortunately, too many people confuse the democratic elections of leaders of a republic for democracy by accepting the
16 rule of majority opinion in all affairs. For majorities to pick leaders is one thing. It is something quite different for
17 majorities to decide what rights are, to redistribute property, to tell people how to manage their personal lives, and to
18 promote undeclared, unconstitutional wars.

19 The majority is assumed to be in charge today and can do whatever it pleases. If the majority has not yet sanctioned some
20 desired egregious action demanded by special interests, the propaganda machine goes into operation, and the pollsters relay
21 the results back to the politicians who are seeking legitimacy in their endeavors. The rule of law and the Constitution have
22 become irrelevant, and we live by constant polls.

23 This trend toward authoritarian democracy was tolerated because, unlike a military dictatorship, it was done in the name of
24 benevolence, fairness, and equity. The pretense of love and compassion by those who desire to remold society and
25 undermine the Constitution convinced the recipients, and even the victims, of its necessity. Since it was never a precipitous
26 departure from the republic, the gradual erosion of liberty went unnoticed.

27 But it is encouraging that more and more citizens are realizing just how much has been lost by complacency. The resolution
28 to the problems we face as a result of this profound transition to pure democracy will be neither quick nor painless. This
29 transition has occurred even though the word "democracy" does not appear in the Constitution or in the Declaration of
30 Independence, and the Founders explicitly denounced it.

31 Over the last hundred years, the goal of securing individual liberties within the framework of a constitutional republic has
32 been replaced with incessant talk of democracy and fairness.

33 Rallying support for our ill-advised participation in World War I, Wilson spoke glowingly of "making the world safe for
34 democracy," and never mentioned national security. This theme has, to this day, persisted in all our foreign affairs. Neo-
35 conservatives now brag of their current victories in promoting what they call "Hard Wilsonism."

36 A true defense of self-determination for all people, the necessary ingredient of a free society, is ignored. Self-determination
37 implies separation of smaller government from the larger entities that we witnessed in the breakup of the Soviet Union.
38 This notion contradicts the goal of pure democracy and world government. A single world government is the ultimate goal
39 of all social egalitarians who are unconcerned with liberty.

40 **4.5.15.3 Current Understanding**

41 Today the concepts of rights and property ownership are completely arbitrary. Congress, the courts, presidents and
42 bureaucrats arbitrarily "legislate" on a daily basis, seeking only the endorsement of the majority. Although the republic was
43 designed to protect the minority against the dictates of the majority, today we find the reverse. The republic is no longer
44 recognizable.

1 Supporters of democracy are always quick to point out one of the perceived benefits of this system is the redistribution of
2 wealth by government force to the poor. Although this may be true in limited fashion, the champions of this system never
3 concern themselves with the victims from whom the wealth is stolen. The so-called benefits are short-lived, because
4 democracy consumes wealth with little concern for those who produce it. Eventually the programs cannot be funded, and
5 the dependency that has developed precipitates angry outcries for even more “fairness.” Since reversing the tide against
6 liberty is so difficult, this unworkable system inevitably leads to various forms of tyranny.

7 As our republic crumbles, voices of protest grow louder. The central government becomes more authoritarian with each
8 crisis. As the quality of education plummets, the role of the federal government is expanded. As the quality of medical care
9 collapses, the role of the federal government in medicine is greatly increased. Foreign policy failures precipitate cries for
10 more intervention abroad and an even greater empire. Cries for security grow louder, and concern for liberty languishes.

11 Attacks on our homeland prompt massive increase in the bureaucracy to protect us from all dangers, seen and imagined.
12 The prime goal and concern of the Founders, the protection of liberty, is ignored. Those expressing any serious concern for
13 personal liberty are condemned for their self-centeredness and their lack of patriotism.

14 Even if we could defeat al Qaeda- which surely is a worthwhile goal- it would do little to preserve our liberties, while
15 ignoring the real purpose of our government. Another enemy would surely replace it, just as the various groups of
16 barbarians never left the Roman Empire alone once its internal republican structure collapsed.

17 **4.5.15.4 Democracy Subverts Liberty and Undermines Prosperity**

18 Once it becomes acceptable to change the rules by majority vote, there are no longer any limits on the power of the
19 government. When the Constitution can be subverted by mere legislative votes, executive orders or judicial decrees,
20 constitutional restraints on the government are eliminated. This process was rare in the early years of our history, but now it
21 is routine.

22 Democracy is promoted in the name of fairness in an effort to help some special-interest group gain a benefit that it claims
23 it needs or is entitled to. If only one small group were involved, nothing would come of the demands. But coalitions
24 develop, and the various groups ban together to form a majority to vote themselves all those things that they expect others
25 to provide for them.

26 Although the motivating factor is frequently the desire for the poor to better themselves through the willingness of others to
27 sacrifice for what they see as good cause, the process is doomed to failure. Governments are inefficient and the desired
28 goals are rarely achieved. Administrators, who benefit, perpetuate the programs. Wealthy elites learn to benefit from the
29 system in a superior fashion over the poor, because they know how to skim the cream off the top of all the programs
30 designed for the disadvantaged. They join the various groups in producing the majority vote needed to fund their own
31 special projects.

32 Public financing of housing, for instance, benefits builders, bureaucrats, insurance companies, and financial institutions,
33 while the poor end up in drug-infested, crime-ridden housing projects. For the same reason, not only do business leaders not
34 object to the system, but they also become strong supporters of welfare programs and foreign aid. Big business strongly
35 supports programs like the Export/Import Bank, the IMF, the World Bank, farm subsidies, and military adventurism. Tax-
36 code revisions and government contracts mean big profits for those who are well-connected. Concern for individual liberty
37 is pushed to the bottom of the priority list for both the poor and rich welfare recipients.

38 Prohibitions placed in the Constitution against programs that serve special interests are the greatest threat to the current
39 system of democracy under which we operate. In order for the benefits to continue, politicians must reject the rule of law
40 and concern themselves only with the control of majority opinion. Sadly, that is the job of almost all politicians. It is clearly
41 the motivation behind the millions spent on constant lobbying, as well as the billions spent on promoting the right
42 candidates in each election. Those who champion liberty are rarely heard from. The media, banking, insurance, airlines,
43 transportations, financial institutions, government employees, the military-industrial complex, the educational system, and
44 the medical community are all dependent on government appropriations, resulting in a high-stakes system of government.

1 Democracy encourages the mother of all political corruption- the use of political money to buy influence. If the dollars
2 spent in this effort represent the degree to which democracy has won out over the rule of law and the Constitution, it looks
3 like the American republic is left wanting. Billions are spent on the endeavor.

4 Money in politics is the key to implementing policy and swaying democratic majorities. It is seen by most Americans, and
5 rightly so, as a negative and a danger. Yet the response, unfortunately, is only more of the same. More laws tinkering with
6 freedom of expression are enacted, in hopes that regulating sums of private money thrown into the political system will
7 curtail the abuse. But failing to understand the cause of the problem, lack of respect for the Constitution, and obsession with
8 legislative relativity dictated by the majority serve only to further undermine the rule of law.

9 We were adequately warned about the problem. Democracies lead to chaos, violence and bankruptcy. The demands of the
10 majority are always greater than taxation alone can provide. Therefore, control over the monetary and banking system is
11 required for democracies to operate. It was no accident in 1913, when the dramatic shift toward a democracy became
12 pronounced, that the Federal Reserve was established. A personal income tax was imposed as well. At the same time,
13 popular election of Senators was instituted, and our foreign policy became aggressively interventionist. Even with an
14 income tax, the planners for war and welfare (a guns and butter philosophy) knew that it would become necessary to
15 eliminate restraints on the printing of money. Private counterfeiting was a heinous crime, but government counterfeit and
16 fractional-reserve banking were required to seductively pay for the majority's demands. It is for this reason that
17 democracies always bring about currency debasement through inflation of the money supply.

18 Some of the planners of today clearly understand the process and others, out of ignorance, view central-bank money
19 creation as a convenience with little danger. That's where they are wrong. Even though the wealthy and the bankers support
20 paper money- believing they know how to protect against its ill effects- many of them are eventually dragged down in the
21 economic downturns that always develop.

22 It's not a new era that they have created for us today, but more of the same endured throughout history by so many other
23 nations. The belief that democratic demands can be financed by deficits, credit creation and taxation is based on false hope
24 and failure to see how it contributes to the turbulence as the democracy collapses.

25 Once a nation becomes a democracy, the whole purpose of government changes. Instead of the government's goal being
26 that of guaranteeing liberty, equal justice, private property, and voluntary exchange, the government embarks on the
27 impossible task of achieving economic equality, micromanaging the economy, and protecting citizens from themselves and
28 all their activities. The destruction of the wealth-building process, which is inherent in a free society, is never anticipated.
29 Once it's realized that it has been undermined, it is too late to easily reverse the attacks against limited government and
30 personal liberty.

31 Democracy, by necessity, endorses special-interest interventionism, inflationism, and corporatism. In order to carry out the
32 duties now expected of the government, power must be transferred from the citizens to the politicians. The only thing left is
33 to decide which group or groups have the greatest influence over the government officials. As the wealth of the nation
34 dwindles, competition between the special-interest groups grows more intense and becomes the dominant goal of political
35 action. Restoration of liberty, the market and personal responsibility are of little interest and are eventually seen as
36 impractical.

37 Power and public opinion become crucial factors in determining the direction of all government expenditures. Although
38 both major parties now accept the principles of rule by majority and reject the rule of law, the beneficiaries for each party
39 are generally different- although they frequently overlap. Propaganda, demagoguery, and control of the educational system
40 and the media are essential to directing the distribution of the loot the government steals from those who are still honestly
41 working for a living.

42 The greater problem is that nearly everyone receives some government benefit, and at the same time contributes to the
43 Treasury. Most hope they will get back more than they pay in and, therefore, go along with the firmly entrenched system.
44 Others, who understand and would choose to opt out and assume responsibility for themselves, aren't allowed to and are
45 forced to participate. The end only comes with a collapse of the system, since a gradual and logical reversal of the
46 inexorable march toward democratic socialism is unachievable.

1 Soviet-style communism dramatically collapsed once it was recognized that it could no longer function and a better system
2 replaced it. It became no longer practical to pursue token reforms like those that took place over its 70-year history.

3 The turmoil and dangers of pure democracy are known. We should get prepared. But it will be the clarity with which we
4 plan its replacement that determines the amount of pain and suffering endured during the transition to another system.
5 Hopefully, the United States Congress and other government leaders will come to realize the seriousness of our current
6 situation and replace the business-as-usual attitude, regardless of political demands and growing needs of a boisterous
7 majority. Simply stated, our wealth is running out, and the affordability of democracy is coming to an end.

8 History reveals that once majorities can vote themselves largesse, the system is destined to collapse from within. But in
9 order to maintain the special-interest system for as long as possible, more and more power must be given to an ever-
10 expanding central government-which of course only makes matters worse.

11 The economic shortcomings of such a system are easily understood. What is too often ignored is that the flip side of
12 delivering power to government is the loss of liberty to the individual. This loss of liberty causes exactly what the
13 government doesn't want- less productive citizens who cannot pay taxes.

14 Even before 9/11, these trends were in place and proposals were abundant for restraining liberty. Since 9/11, the growth of
15 centralized government and the loss of privacy and personal freedoms have significantly accelerated.

16 It is in dealing with homeland defense and potential terrorist attacks that the domestic social programs and the policy of
17 foreign intervention are coming together and precipitating a rapid expansion of the state and erosion of liberty. Like our
18 social welfarism at home, our foreign meddling and empire building abroad are a consequence of our becoming a pure
19 democracy.

20 **4.5.15.5 Foreign Affairs and Democracy**

21 The dramatic shift away from republicanism that occurred in 1913, as expected, led to a bold change of purpose in foreign
22 affairs. The goal of "making the world safe for democracy" was forcefully put forth by President Wilson. Protecting
23 national security had become too narrow a goal and selfish in purpose. An obligation for spreading democracy became a
24 noble obligation backed by a moral commitment, every bit as utopian as striving for economic equality in an egalitarian
25 society here at home.

26 With the growing affection for democracy, it was no giant leap to assume that majority opinion should mold personal
27 behavior. It was no mere coincidence that the 18th Amendment- alcohol prohibition- was passed in 1919.

28 Ever since 1913, all our presidents have endorsed meddling in the internal affairs of other nations and have given generous
29 support to the notion that a world government would facilitate the goals of democratic welfare or socialism. On a daily
30 basis, we hear that we must be prepared to spend our money and use our young people to police the entire world in order to
31 spread democracy. Whether in Venezuela or Columbia, Afghanistan or Pakistan, Iraq or Iran, Korea or Vietnam, our
32 intervention is always justified with a tone of moral arrogance that "it's for their own good."

33 Our policymakers promote democracy as a cure-all for the various complex problems of the world. Unfortunately, the
34 propaganda machine is able to hide the real reasons for our empire building. "Promoting democracy" overseas merely
35 becomes a slogan for doing things that the powerful and influential strive to do for their own benefit. To get authority for
36 these overseas pursuits, all that is required of the government is that the majority be satisfied with the stated goals- no
37 matter how self-serving they may be. The rule of law, that is, constitutional restraint, is ignored. But as successful as the
38 policy may be on the short run and as noble as it may be portrayed, it is a major contributing factor to the violence and
39 chaos that eventually come from pure democracy.

40 There is abundant evidence that the pretense of spreading democracy contradicts the very policies we are pursuing. We
41 preach about democratic elections, but we are only too willing to accept some for-the-moment friendly dictator who
42 actually overthrew a democratically elected leader or to interfere in some foreign election.

1 This is the case with Pakistan's Mushariff. For a temporary alliance, he reaps hundreds of millions of dollars, even though
2 strong evidence exists that the Pakistanis have harbored and trained al Qaeda terrorists, that they have traded weapons with
3 North Korea, and that they possess weapons of mass destruction. No one should be surprised that the Arabs are confused by
4 our overtures of friendship. We have just recently promised \$28 billion to Turkey to buy their support for Persian Gulf War
5 II.

6 Our support of Saudi Arabia, in spite of its ties to al Qaeda through financing and training, is totally ignored by those
7 obsessed with going to war against Iraq. Saudi Arabia is the furthest thing from a democracy. As a matter of fact, if
8 democratic elections were permitted, the Saudi government would be overthrown by a bin Laden ally.

9 Those who constantly preach global government and democracy ought to consider the outcome of their philosophy in a
10 hypothetical Mid-East regional government. If these people were asked which country in this region possesses weapons of
11 mass destruction, has a policy of oppressive occupation, and constantly defies UN Security council resolutions, the vast
12 majority would overwhelmingly name Israel. Is this ludicrous? No, this is what democracy is all about and what can come
13 from a one-man, one-vote philosophy.

14 U.S. policy supports the overthrow of the democratically elected Chavez government in Venezuela, because we don't like
15 the economic policy it pursues. We support a military takeover as long as the new dictator will do as we tell him.

16 There is no creditability in our contention that we really want to impose democracy on other nations. Yet promoting
17 democracy is the public justification for our foreign intervention. It sounds so much nicer than saying we're going to risk
18 the lives of our young people and massively tax our citizens to secure the giant oil reserves in Iraq.

19 After we take over Iraq, how long would one expect it to take until there are authentic nationwide elections in that country?
20 The odds of that happening in even a hundred years are remote. It's virtually impossible to imagine a time when democratic
21 elections would ever occur for the election of leaders in a constitutional republic dedicated for protection of liberty any
22 place in the region.

23 **4.5.15.6 Foreign Policy, Welfare, and 9/11**

24 The tragedy of 9/11 and its aftermath dramatize so clearly how a flawed foreign policy has served to encourage the
25 majoritarians determined to run everyone's life.

26 Due to its natural inefficiencies and tremendous costs, a failing welfare state requires an ever-expanding authoritarian
27 approach to enforce mandates, collect the necessary revenues, and keep afloat an unworkable system. Once the people grow
28 to depend on government subsistence, they demand its continuation.

29 Excessive meddling in the internal affairs of other nations and involving ourselves in every conflict around the globe has
30 not endeared the United States to the oppressed of the world. The Japanese are tired of us. The South Koreans are tired of
31 us. The Europeans are tired of us. The Central Americans are tired of us. The Filipinos are tired of us. And above all, the
32 Arab Muslims are tired of us.

33 Angry and frustrated by our persistent bullying and disgusted with having their own government bought and controlled by
34 the United States, joining a radical Islamic movement was a natural and predictable consequence for Muslims.

35 We believe Bin Laden when he takes credit for an attack on the West, and we believe him when he warns us of an
36 impending attack. But we refuse to listen to his explanation of why he and his allies are at war with us.

37 Bin Laden's claims are straightforward. The U.S. defiles Islam with military bases on holy land in Saudi Arabia, its
38 initiation of war against Iraq, with 12 years of persistent bombing, and its dollars and weapons being used against the
39 Palestinians as the Palestinian territory shrinks and Israel's occupation expands. There will be no peace in the world for the
40 next 50 years or longer if we refuse to believe why those who are attacking us do it.

41 To dismiss terrorism as the result of Muslims hating us because we're rich and free is one of the greatest foreign-policy
42 frauds ever perpetrated on the American people. Because the propaganda machine, the media, and the government have

1 restated this so many times, the majority now accept it at face value. And the administration gets the political cover it needs
2 to pursue a “holy” war for democracy against the infidels who hate us for our goodness.

3 Polling on the matter is followed closely and, unfortunately, is far more important than the rule of law. Do we hear the
4 pundits talk of constitutional restraints on the Congress and the administration? No, all we ever hear are reassurances that
5 the majority supports the President; therefore it must be all right.

6 The terrorists’ attacks on us, though never justified, are related to our severely flawed foreign policy of intervention. They
7 also reflect the shortcomings of a bureaucracy that is already big enough to know everything it needs to know about any
8 impending attack but too cumbersome to do anything about it. Bureaucratic weaknesses within a fragile welfare state
9 provide a prime opportunity for those whom we antagonize through our domination over world affairs and global wealth to
10 take advantage of our vulnerability.

11 But what has been our answer to the shortcomings of policies driven by manipulated majority opinion by the powerful
12 elite? We have responded by massively increasing the federal government’s policing activity to hold American citizens in
13 check and make sure we are well-behaved and pose no threat, while massively expanding our aggressive presence around
14 the world. There is no possible way these moves can make us more secure against terrorism, yet they will accelerate our
15 march toward national bankruptcy with a currency collapse.

16 Relying on authoritarian democracy and domestic and international meddling only move us sharply away from a
17 constitutional republic and the rule of law and toward the turbulence of a decaying democracy, about which Madison and
18 others had warned.

19 Once the goal of liberty is replaced by a preconceived notion of the benefits and the moral justifications of a democracy, a
20 trend toward internationalism and world government follows.

21 We certainly witnessed this throughout the 20th century. Since World War II, we have failed to follow the Constitution in
22 taking this country to war, but instead have deferred to the collective democratic wisdom of the United Nations.

23 Once it’s recognized that ultimate authority comes from an international body, whether the United Nations, NATO, the
24 WTO, the World Bank, or the IMF, the contest becomes a matter of who holds the reins of power and is able to dictate
25 what is perceived as the will of the people (of the world). In the name of democracy, just as it is done in Washington,
26 powerful nations with the most money will control UN policy. Bribery, threats, and intimidation are common practices used
27 to achieve a “democratic” consensus-no matter how controversial and short-lived the benefits.

28 Can one imagine what it might be like if a true worldwide democracy existed and the United Nations were controlled by a
29 worldwide, one man/one vote philosophy? The masses of China and India could vote themselves whatever they needed
30 from the more prosperous western countries. How long would a world system last based on this absurdity? Yet this is the
31 principle that we’re working so hard to impose on ourselves and others around the world.

32 In spite of the great strides made toward one-world government based on egalitarianism, I’m optimistic that this utopian
33 nightmare will never come to fruition. I have already made the case that here at home powerful special interests take over
34 controlling majority opinion, making sure fairness in distribution is never achieved. This fact causes resentment and
35 becomes so expensive that the entire system becomes unstable and eventually collapses.

36 The same will occur internationally, even if it miraculously did not cause conflict among the groups demanding the loot
37 confiscated from the producing individuals (or countries). Democratic socialism is so destructive to production of wealth
38 that it must fail, just as socialism failed under Soviet Communism. We have a long way to go before old-fashioned
39 nationalism is dead and buried. In the meantime, the determination of those promoting democratic socialism will cause
40 great harm to many people before its chaotic end and we rediscover the basic principle responsible for all of human
41 progress.

42 4.5.15.7 **Paving for Democracy**

1 With the additional spending to wage war against terrorism at home, while propping up an ever-increasing expensive and
2 failing welfare state, and the added funds needed to police the world, all in the midst of a recession, we are destined to see
3 an unbelievably huge explosion of deficit spending. Raising taxes won't help. Borrowing the needed funds for the
4 budgetary deficit, plus the daily borrowing from foreigners required to finance our ever-growing current account deficit,
5 will put tremendous pressure on the dollar.

6 The time will come when the Fed will no longer be able to dictate low interest rates. Reluctance of foreigners to lend, the
7 exorbitant size of our borrowing needs, and the risk premium will eventually send interest rates upward. Price inflation will
8 accelerate, and the cost of living for all Americans will increase. Under these conditions, most Americans will face a
9 decline in their standard of living.

10 Facing this problem of paying for past and present excess spending, the borrowing and inflating of the money supply has
11 already begun in earnest. Many retirees, depending on their 401k funds and other retirement programs, are suffering the ill-
12 effects of the stock market crash- a phenomenon that still has a long way to go. Depreciating the dollar by printing
13 excessive money, like the Fed is doing, will eventually devastate the purchasing power of those retirees who are dependent
14 on Social Security. Government cost-of-living increases will never be able to keep up with this loss. The elderly are already
15 unable to afford the inflated costs of medical care, especially the cost of pharmaceuticals.

16 The reality is that we will not be able to inflate, tax, spend or borrow our way out of this mess that the Congress has
17 delivered to the American people. The demands that come with pure democracy always lead to an unaffordable system that
18 ends with economic turmoil and political upheaval. Tragically, the worse the problems get, the louder is the demand for
19 more of the same government programs that caused the problems in the first place- both domestic and international.
20 Weaning off of government programs and getting away from foreign meddling because of political pressure are virtually
21 impossible. The end comes only after economic forces make it clear we can no longer afford to pay for the extravagance
22 that comes from democratic dictates.

23 Democracy is the most expensive form of government. There is no "king" with an interest in preserving the nation's capital.
24 Everyone desires something, and the special-interest groups, banding together, dictate to the politicians exactly what they
25 need and want. Politicians are handsomely rewarded for being "effective," that is, getting the benefits for the groups that
26 support them. Effectiveness is never measured by efforts and achievements in securing liberty, even though it's the most
27 important element in a prosperous and progressive world.

28 Spending is predictable in a democracy, especially one that endorses foreign interventionism. It always goes up, both in
29 nominal terms and in percentage of the nation's wealth. Paying for it can be quite complicated. The exact method is less
30 consequential than the percent of the nation's wealth the government commands. Borrowing and central-bank credit
31 creation are generally used and are less noticeable, but more deceitful, than direct taxation to pay as we go. If direct
32 taxation were accomplished through monthly checks written by each taxpayer, the cost of government would immediately
33 be revealed. And the democratic con game would end much more quickly.

34 The withholding principle was devised to make paying for the programs the majority demanded seem less painful. Passing
35 on debt to the next generation through borrowing is also a popular way to pay for welfare and warfare. The effect of
36 inflating a currency to pay the bills is difficult to understand, and the victims are hard to identify. Inflation is the most
37 sinister method of payment for a welfare state. It, too, grows in popularity as the demands increase for services that aren't
38 affordable.

39 Although this appears to be a convenient and cheap way to pay the bills, the economic consequences of lost employment,
40 inflated prices, and economic dislocation make the long-term consequences much more severe than paying as we go. Not
41 only is this costly in terms of national wealth, it significantly contributes to the political chaos and loss of liberty that
42 accompany the death throes of a doomed democracy.

43 This does not mean that direct taxes won't be continuously raised to pay for out-of-control spending. In a democracy, all
44 earned wealth is assumed to belong to the government. Therefore any restraint in raising taxes, and any tax cuts or tax
45 credits, are considered "costs" to government. Once this notion is established, tax credits or cuts are given only under
46 condition that the beneficiaries conform to the democratic consensus. Freedom of choice is removed, even if a group is
47 merely getting back control of that which was rightfully theirs in the first place.

1 Tax-exempt status for various groups is not universal but is conditioned on whether their beliefs and practices are
2 compatible with politically correct opinions endorsed by the democratic majority. This concept is incompatible with the
3 principles of private-property ownership and individual liberty. By contrast, in a free society all economic and social
4 decision-making is controlled by private property owners without government intrusion, as long as no one is harmed in the
5 process.

6 **4.5.15.8 Confusion Regarding Democracy**

7 The vast majority of the American people have come to accept democracy as a favorable system and are pleased with our
8 efforts to pursue Wilson's dream of "making the world safe for democracy." But the goals of pure democracy and that of a
9 constitutional republic are incompatible. A clear understanding of the difference is paramount, if we are to remain a free
10 and prosperous nation.

11 There are certain wonderful benefits in recognizing the guidance that majority opinion offers. It takes a consensus or
12 prevailing attitude to endorse the principles of liberty and a Constitution to protect them. This is a requirement for the rule
13 of law to succeed. Without a consensus, the rule of law fails. This does not mean that the majority or public opinion
14 measured by polls, court rulings, or legislative bodies should be able to alter the constitutional restraints on the
15 government's abuse of life, liberty, and property. But in a democracy, that happens. And we know that today it is
16 happening in this country on a routine basis.

17 In a free society with totally free markets, the votes by consumers through their purchases, or refusals to purchase,
18 determine which businesses survive and which fail. This is free-choice "democracy" and it is a powerful force in producing
19 and bringing about economic efficiency. In today's democracy by decree, government laws dictate who receives the
20 benefits and who gets shortchanged. Conditions of employment and sales are taxed and regulated at varying rates, and
21 success or failure is too often dependent on government action than by consumers' voting in the marketplace by their
22 spending habits. Individual consumers by their decisions should be in charge, not governments armed with mandates from
23 the majority.

24 Even a system of free-market money (a redeemable gold-coin standard) functions through the principle of consumers
25 always voting or withholding support for that currency. A gold standard can only work when freely converted into gold
26 coins, giving every citizen a right to vote on a daily basis for or against the government money.

27 **4.5.15.9 The Way Out**

28 It's too late to avoid the turbulence and violence that Madison warned about. It has already started. But it's important to
29 minimize the damage and prepare the way for a restoration of the republic. The odds are not favorable, but not impossible.
30 No one can know the future with certainty. The Soviet system came to an abrupt end with less violence than could have
31 ever been imagined at the height of the Cold War. It was a pleasant surprise.

32 Interestingly enough, what is needed is a majority opinion, especially by those who find themselves in leadership roles-
33 whether political, educational, or in the media that rejects democracy- and support the rule of law within the republic. This
34 majority support is essential for the preservation of the freedom and prosperity with which America is identified.

35 This will not occur until we as a nation once again understand how freedom serves the interests of everyone. Henry Grady
36 Weaver, in his 1947 classic, "The Mainspring of Human Progress," superbly explains how it works. His thesis is simple.
37 Liberty permits progress, while government intervention tends always to tyranny. Liberty releases creative energy;
38 government intervention suppresses it. This release of energy was never greater than in the time following the American
39 Revolution and the writing of the U.S. Constitution.

40 Instead of individual activity being controlled by the government or superstitious beliefs about natural and mystical events,
41 activity is controlled by the individual. This understanding recognizes the immense value in voluntary cooperation and
42 enlightened self-interests. Freedom requires self-control and moral responsibility. No one owes anyone else anything and
43 everyone is responsible for his or her own acts. The principle of never harming one's neighbor, or never sending the
44 government to do the dirty work, is key to making the system tend toward peaceful pursuits and away from the tyranny and
45 majority-induced violence. Nothing short of a reaffirmation of this principle can restore the freedoms once guaranteed

1 under the Constitution. Without this, prosperity for the masses is impossible, and as a nation we become more vulnerable to
2 outside threats.

3 In a republic, the people are in charge. The Constitution provides strict restraints on the politicians, bureaucrats and the
4 military. Everything the government is allowed to do is only done with explicit permission from the people or the
5 Constitution. Today, it's the opposite. The American people must get permission from the government for their every
6 move, whether it's use of their own property or spending their own money.

7 Even the most serious decision, such as going to war, is done while ignoring the Constitution and without a vote of the
8 people's representatives in the Congress. Members of the global government have more to say about when American
9 troops are put in harm's way than the U.S. Congress.

10 The Constitution no longer restrains the government. The government restrains the people in all that they do. This destroys
11 individual creative energy, and the "mainspring of human progress" is lost. The consequences are less progress, less
12 prosperity, and less personal fulfillment.

13 A system that rejects voluntary contracts, enlightened self interest, and individual responsibilities permits the government
14 to assume these responsibilities. And the government officials become morally obligated to protect us from ourselves,
15 attempting to make us better people and setting standards for our personal behavior. That effort is already in full swing.
16 But if this attitude prevails, liberty is lost.

17 When government assumes the responsibility for individuals to achieve excellence and virtue, it does so at the expense of
18 liberty, and must resort to force and intimidation. Standards become completely arbitrary, depending on the attitude of
19 those in power and the perceived opinion of the majority. Freedom of choice is gone. This leads to inevitable conflicts with
20 the government dictating what one can eat, drink or smoke. One group may promote abstinence, the other tax-supported
21 condom distribution. Arguments over literature, prayer, pornography, and sexual behavior are endless. It is now not even
22 permissible to mention the word "God" on public property. A people who allows its government to set personal moral
23 standards, for all non-violent behavior, will naturally allow it to be involved in the more important aspects of spiritual life.
24 For instance, there are tax deductions for churches that are politically correct, but not for those whose beliefs that are
25 considered out of the mainstream. Groups that do not meet the official politically correct standards are more likely to be put
26 on a "terrorist" list.

27 This arbitrary and destructive approach to solving difficult problems must be rejected if we ever hope to live again in a
28 society where the role of government is limited to that of protecting liberty.

29 The question that I'm most often asked when talking about this subject is, "Why do our elected leaders so easily relinquish
30 liberty and have such little respect for the Constitution?" The people of whom I speak are convinced that liberty is good and
31 big government is dangerous. They are also quite certain that we have drifted a long way away from the principles that
32 made America great, and their bewilderment continuously elicits a big "Why?"

33 There's no easy answer to this and no single explanation. It involves temptation, envy, greed, and ignorance, but worst of
34 all, humanitarian zeal. Unfortunately, the greater the humanitarian outreach, the greater the violence required to achieve it.
35 The greater the desire to perform humanitarian deeds through legislation, the greater the violence required to achieve it.
36 Few understand this. There are literally no limits to the good deeds that some believe need to be done. Rarely does anyone
37 question how each humanitarian act by government undermines the essential element of all human progress- individual
38 liberty.

39 Failure of government programs prompts more determined efforts, while the loss of liberty is ignored or rationalized away.
40 Whether it's the war against poverty, drugs, terrorism, or the current Hitler of the day, an appeal to patriotism is used to
41 convince the people that a little sacrifice of liberty, here and there, is a small price to pay.

42 The results, though, are frightening and will soon become even more so. Poverty has been made worse, the drug war is a
43 bigger threat than drug use, terrorism remains a threat, and foreign wars have become routine and decided upon without
44 congressional approval.

1 Most of the damage to liberty and the Constitution is done by men and women of good will who are convinced they know
2 what is best for the economy, for others, and foreign powers. They inevitably fail to recognize their own arrogance in
3 assuming they know what is the best personal behavior for others. Their failure to recognize the likelihood of mistakes by
4 central planners allows them to ignore the magnitude of a flawed central government directive, compared to an individual
5 or a smaller unit of government mistake.

6 C. S. Lewis had an opinion on this subject:

7 *“Of all tyrannies a tyranny sincerely exercised for the good of its victim may be the most oppressive. It may be*
8 *better to live under robber barons than under omnipotent moral busybodies. The robber baron’s cruelty may*
9 *sometimes sleep, his cupidity may at some point be satiated, but those who torment us for our own good will*
10 *torment us without end for they do so with the approval of their own conscience.”*

11 A system that is based on majority vote rather than the strict rule of law encourages the few who thrive on power and
12 exerting authority over other people’s lives, unlike the many driven by sincere humanitarian concerns. Our current system
13 rewards those who respond to age-old human instincts of envy and greed as they gang up on those who produce. Those
14 individuals who are tempted by the offer of power are quick to accommodate those who are the most demanding of
15 government-giveaway programs and government contracts. These special-interest groups notoriously come from both the
16 poor and the rich, while the middle class is required to pay.

17 It’s not just a coincidence that, in the times of rapid monetary debasement, the middle class suffers the most from the
18 inflation and job losses that monetary inflation brings. When inflation is severe, which it will become, the middle class can
19 be completely wiped out. The stock market crash gives us a hint as to what is likely to come as this country is forced to pay
20 for the excesses sustained over the past 30 years while operating under a fiat monetary system.

21 Eric Hoffer, the longshoreman philosopher, commented on this subject as well: “Absolute power corrupts even when
22 exercised for humane purposes. The benevolent despot who sees himself as a shepherd of the people still demands from
23 others the submissiveness of sheep.”

24 Good men driven by a desire for benevolence encourage the centralization of power. The corruptive temptation of power is
25 made worse when domestic and international interventions go wrong and feed into the hate and envy that invade men’s
26 souls when the love of liberty is absent.

27 Those of good will who work to help the downtrodden do so not knowing they are building a class of rulers who will
28 become drunk with their own arrogance and lust for power. Generally only a few in a society yield to the urge to dictate to
29 others, and seek power for the sake of power and then abuse it. Most members of society are complacent and respond to
30 propaganda, but they unite in the democratic effort to rearrange the world in hopes of gaining benefits through coercive
31 means and convince themselves they are helping their fellow man as well. A promise of security is a powerful temptation
32 for many.

33 A free society, on the other hand, requires that these same desires be redirected. The desire for power and authority must be
34 over one’s self alone. The desire for security and prosperity should be directed inward, rather than toward controlling
35 others. We cannot accept the notion that the gang solution endorsed by the majority is the only option. Self-reliance and
36 personal responsibility are crucial.

37 But there is also a problem with economic understanding. Economic ignorance about the shortcomings of central economic
38 planning, excessive taxation and regulations, central bank manipulation of money, and credit and interest rates is pervasive
39 in our nation’s capital. A large number of conservatives now forcefully argue that deficits don’t matter. Spending programs
40 never shrink, no matter whether conservatives or liberals are in charge. Rhetoric favoring free trade is canceled out by
41 special-interest protectionist measures. Support of international government agencies that manage trade, such as the IMF,
42 the World Bank, the WTO, and Nafta politicizes international trade and eliminates any hope that free-trade capitalism will
43 soon emerge.

44 The federal government will not improve on its policies until the people coming to Washington are educated by a different
45 breed of economists than those who dominate our government-run universities. Economic advisors and most officeholders

1 merely reflect the economics taught to them. A major failure of our entire system will most likely occur before serious
2 thought is given once again to the guidelines laid out in the Constitution.

3 The current economic system of fiat money and interventionism (both domestic and international) serves to accommodate
4 the unreasonable demands for government to take care of the people. And this, in turn, contributes to the worst of human
5 instincts: authoritarian control by the few over the many.

6 We, as a nation, have lost our understanding of how the free market provides the greatest prosperity for the greatest
7 number. Not only have most of us forgotten about the invisible hand of Adam Smith, few have ever heard of Mises and
8 Hayek- two individuals who understood exactly why all the economic ups and downs of the 20th century occurred, as well
9 as the cause of the collapse of the Soviet Union.

10 But worst of all, we have lost our faith in freedom. Materialistic concerns and desire for security drive all national politics.
11 This trend has sharply accelerated since 9/11.

12 Understanding the connection between liberty, prosperity, and security has been lost. The priorities are backwards.
13 Prosperity and security come from liberty. Peace and the absence of war come as a consequence of liberty and free trade.
14 The elimination of ignorance and restraints on do-goodism and authoritarianism in a civilized society can only be achieved
15 through a contractual arrangement between the people and the government- in our case, the U.S. Constitution. This
16 document was the best ever devised for releasing the creative energy of a free people while strictly holding in check the
17 destructive powers of government. Only the rule of law can constrain those who, by human instinct, look for a free ride
18 while delivering power to those few, found in every society, whose only goal in life is a devilish desire to rule over others.

19 The rule of law in a republic protects free-market activity and private-property ownership and provides for equal justice
20 under the law. It is this respect for law and rights over government power that protects the mainspring of human progress
21 from the enemies of liberty. Communists and other socialists have routinely argued that the law is merely a tool of the
22 powerful capitalists. But they have it backwards. Under democracy and fascism, the pseudo-capitalists write the laws that
23 undermine the Constitution and jeopardize the rights and property of all citizens. They fail to realize it is the real law, the
24 Constitution itself, which guarantees rights and equal justice and permits capitalism, thus guaranteeing progress.

25 Arbitrary, ever-changing laws are the friends of dictators. Authoritarians argue constantly that the Constitution is a living
26 document, and that rigid obedience to ideological purity is the enemy we should be most concerned about. They would
27 have us believe that those who cherish strict obedience to the rule of law in the defense of liberty are wrong merely because
28 they demand ideological purity. They fail to mention that their love of relative rights and pure democracy is driven by a
29 rigid obedience to an ideology as well. The issue is never rigid beliefs versus reasonable friendly compromise. In politics,
30 it's always competition between two strongly held ideologies. The only challenge for men and women of good will is to
31 decide the wisdom and truth of the ideologies offered.

32 Nothing short of restoring a republican form of government with strict adherence to the rule of law, and curtailing illegal
33 government programs, will solve our current and evolving problems.

34 Eventually the solution will be found with the passage of the Liberty Amendment. Once there is serious debate on this
35 amendment, we will know that the American people are considering the restoration of our constitutional republic and the
36 protection of individual liberty.

37 **4.5.16 Summary and Conclusion**

38 *"Democracy is indispensable to socialism." V.I. Lenin*

39 *"Democracy is the road to socialism." Karl Marx*

40 *"The goal of socialism is communism." V.I. Lenin*

41 To summarize what we have just learned in this section:

1. Unlike monarchies and democracies, only a true Republic can “secure” God-given, unalienable Rights to all *individuals*.
2. A “Republican Form of Government” is guaranteed to every “State of the Union” by Article 4, Section 4 of the Federal Constitution (and also some current State constitutions).
3. Contrary to those constitutional guarantees, our current government operates as a democracy which, by definition, recognizes the people’s rights as a single *collective*, but denies their God-given unalienable Rights as *individuals*.
4. The conflict between the constitutionally-mandated “Republican Form of Government” and our de facto democracy may provide a powerful strategy for challenging government enforcement programs which—implemented under the guise of *democracy*—ignore any individual’s claim of God-given, unalienable Rights under the mandatory *Republic*.
5. It is in the best interests of our elected officials to claim we have a democracy rather than a Republic, because this allows them to expand their power and influence and control without the constraints imposed by a constitution that limits their power.
6. When transforming a Christian republic into a democracy, the sequence of events is as follows:
 - a. Eliminate religious references from public life, politics, and public schools.
 - b. Disconnect us with our Christian heritage and the source of our sovereignty: God
 - c. Eliminate school choice and vouchers and provide financial incentives to put children in public schools.
 - d. Institute laws to punish individuals for practicing law without a license to make the legal profession into a priesthood and a monopoly that can charge whatever the market will stand for their services. This will also effectively deny legal representation to the 2/3 of individuals on average who can’t afford lawyers, so that when the government legally terrorizes individuals for insisting on their rights, they will be defenseless in court.
 - e. Institute high taxes so that both parents have to work, which leaves the government free to brain wash the kids in public schools and keep the parents in financial slavery so they don’t have time to watch their government and litigate to protect their rights.
 - f. Appoint corrupt judges who will ignore constitutional rights and protections, especially as it pertains to collection and enforcement of taxes.
 - g. Institute public policy through tax legislation (social engineering).
 - h. Punish those who challenge government authority in court by sanctions, fines, and attorney fee awards, even though this amounts to a violation of the First Amendment right to petition government for a redress of grievances.
 - i. Undermine sovereignty of jurors by making them legally ignorant and preventing discussing law in the courtroom, in order to transform our government from a government of laws to a government of men.

The table below summarizes succinctly the implications of this section as extended to various forms of government:

Table 4-4: Summary of various forms of government

<i>Attribute</i>	<i>Republic</i>	<i>Democracy</i>	<i>Monarchy</i>	<i>Communism/ Socialism</i>
Purpose of government	“secure” God-given rights	Satisfy the will of the <i>collective</i> no matter how depraved	Satisfy the will of the king , no matter how depraved	Satisfy the will and whims of the ruling officials
Sovereign(s)	Individual	Collective	King	Ruler(s)
Source of sovereignty	God	Constitution/election	God (divine right of kings)	Guns/force
Rights defined by	Constitution	Last election	King’s discretion	Collective discretion
Rights are	Absolute, unchangeable	Relativistic and dependent on the last election	Dependent on king’s discretion	Dependent on last government edict
Protector of rights	1. Jury (sovereigns) 2. Grand jury (sovereigns)	Government (conflict of interest!)	Government (conflict of interest!)	Government (conflict of interest!)
Elected representatives	Represent interest of individuals	Represent interests of collective	Advise king but have little power	None
Means of maintaining	1. Strong religious faith	1. Atheism and	1. Merging of church	3. Atheism.

Attribute	Republic	Democracy	Monarchy	Communism/ Socialism
power	<p>in God.</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> Public that mistrusts government and jealously guards its rights. "Question authority!" Constitution to limit government's power that is hard to change. Accountable judiciary bound by the chains of the constitution. Independent media. Private school system and school vouchers so government doesn't propagandize the kids to expand their power. Stay-at-home mom who home schools and encourages children to question authority and build's child's self-esteem. 	<p>"separation of church and state"</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> Strong police force that turns on its "citizens" to enforce the tyrannical will of the collective over that of the individual. Media propaganda Deceit and lies by public officials. Maintaining ignorance of populace about the limits on government authority using the public school system. Bickering and anarchy in the legislature. Corrupt court system. Public fool, I mean school system to keep subjects "ignorant". Poor individuals burdened by excessive taxes who can't afford legal advice to defend their rights against state/collective encroachment. 	<p>and state to consolidate power.</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> Severe punishment for wrongdoing. Excessive taxes. 	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> Strong military that turns on its "citizens" to maintain power at the point of a gun. Control of media and propaganda Public school system. No private property ownership.

1 And now let's summarize the strategy we suggest based on the above information and conclusions:

1. The "unalienable Rights" granted by God and declared in the "Declaration of Independence" are the constitutionalist's "holy grail". These are the rights to travel, to own firearms, to raise your children without government interference, to engage in any occupation that you desire, to worship God without restriction and to enjoy the "freedom" that every patriot seeks but hasn't found since the 1930's.
2. A "Republican Form of Government" is one that "secures" our God-given, individually-held "unalienable Rights".
3. Article 4, Section 4 of the Federal Constitution mandates that, "The United States shall guarantee to every State in this Union a Republican Form of Government..."
4. Virtually every government official has taken an Oath of Office to support and defend the Federal Constitution.
5. The Oath of Office should obligate all government officials to support and defend a "Republican Form of Government" that "secures" our "unalienable Rights".
6. Any official who knowingly supports and defends a democracy that denies your unalienable Rights may be personally liable for violating his Oath of Office, violating the Constitution, and committing criminal acts including treason. If two or more officials knowingly work together to deny or deprive you of your unalienable Rights and a Republican Form of Government, they may be guilty of conspiracy.

16 If the analysis in this section is generally correct, legal arguments based on a thoroughly researched and properly presented
 17 demand for a "Republican Form of Government" may be powerful. More research must be done, but for now, it's likely
 18 that this argument will stand up in court.

19 **4.6 The Three Definitions of "United States"**

1 Most of us are unaware that the term “United States” has several meanings and that it is up to us to know and understand
 2 these differences, to use them appropriately, and to clarify exactly which one we mean whenever we sign any piece of
 3 paper (including voter registration, tax documents, etc). If we do not, we could unknowingly, unwillingly and involuntarily
 4 be creating false presumptions that cause us to surrender our Constitutional rights. The fact is, most of us have unwittingly
 5 been doing just that for most, if not all, of our lives. We have become so casual in our use of the term “United States” it is
 6 no longer understood that there are actually three different meanings to the term. In fact, the legal profession has
 7 contributed to confusion over this term by removing its definitions from all legal dictionaries currently in print that we have
 8 looked at. See section 6.10.1 later for details on this scam.

9 Most of us have grown up thinking the term United States indicates and includes all 50 states of the Union. This is true in
 10 the context of the U.S. Constitution but it is not true in all contexts. As you will see, this is the third meaning assigned to
 11 the term “United States” by the united States supreme Court. But, usually when we (Joe six pack) use the term United
 12 States we actually think we are saying the united States, as we are generally thinking of the several states or the union of
 13 States. There are times when you could be mistaken and as you will come to realize, this could be a very costly
 14 assumption.

15 First, it should be noticed that the term United States is a noun. In fact, it is the proper name and title “We the people...”
 16 gave to the corporate entity (non-living thing) of the federal (central) government created by the Constitution. This in turn
 17 describes where the “United States” federal corporation was to be housed as the Seat of the Government - In the District of
 18 Columbia, not to exceed a ten mile square.

19 *Constitution (Article I, Section 8, Clause 17):*

20 *To exercise exclusive Legislation in all Cases whatsoever, over such District (not exceeding ten Miles square)*
 21 *as may, by Cession of particular States, and the Acceptance of Congress, become the Seat of the Government of*
 22 *the United States, and to exercise like Authority over all Places purchased by the Consent of the Legislature of*
 23 *the State in which the Same shall be for the Erection of Forts, Magazines, Arsenals, dock-Yards, and other*
 24 *needful Buildings;—And [underlines added]*

25 Here is how the united States supreme Court addressed the question of the meaning of the term “United States” (see Black's
 26 Law Dictionary) in the famous case of *Hooven & Allison Co. v. Evatt* 324 U.S. 652, (1945). The Court ruled that the term
 27 United States has three uses:

- 28 1. “...either as the name of a sovereign occupying the position analogous to that of other sovereigns in the family
 29 of nations, or
- 30 2. “...as designating the territory over which the sovereignty of the United States (Federal government) extends” or
- 31 3. “...as the collective name for the states which are united by and under the Constitution.”

32 In other words, the term United States may mean:

- 33 1. “These united States,” when traveling abroad, you come under the jurisdiction of the President through his
 34 agents in the U.S. State Department, where “U.S.” refers to the sovereign society. You are a “Citizen of the United
 35 States” like someone is a Citizen of France, or England. or
- 36 2. “The United States (the District of Columbia, possessions and territories)”. Here Congress has exclusive
 37 legislative jurisdiction. In this sense, the term “United States” is a singular noun. You are a person residing in the
 38 District of Columbia, one of its Territories or Federal areas (enclaves). Hence, even a person living in the one of
 39 the sovereign States could still be a member of the Federal area and a “citizen of the United States.”
- 40 3. “The several States which is the united States of America.” Referring to the 50 sovereign States, which are
 41 united under the Constitution of the United States of America. The federal area is not included in this definition
 42 because the Congress does not have exclusive legislative authority over any of the 50 sovereign States within the
 43 Union of States. Rights are retained by the States in the 9th and 10th Amendments, and you are a “Citizen of these
 44 united States.”

45 Another important distinction needs to be made. Definition 1 above refers to the country “United States”, but this country
 46 is not a “nation”, in the sense of international law. This very important point was made clear by the U.S. Supreme Court in
 47 1794 in the case of *Chisholm v. Georgia*, 2 Dall. (U.S.) 419, 1 L.Ed. 440 (1793), when it said:

1 This is a case of uncommon magnitude. One of the parties to it is a State; certainly respectable, claiming to be
 2 sovereign. The question to be determined is, whether this State, so respectable, and whose claim soars so
 3 high, is amenable to the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court of the United States? This question, important in
 4 itself, will depend on others, more important still; and, may, perhaps, be ultimately resolved into one, no less
 5 radical than this 'do the people of the United States form a Nation?'

6 A cause so conspicuous and interesting, should be carefully and accurately viewed from every possible point of
 7 sight. I shall examine it; 1st. By the principles of general jurisprudence. 2nd. By the laws and practice of
 8 particular States and Kingdoms. **From the law of nations little or no**
 9 **illustration of this subject can be expected. By that law the**
 10 **several States and Governments spread over our globe, are**
 11 **considered as forming a society, not a NATION.** It has only been by a
 12 very few comprehensive minds, such as those of Elizabeth and the Fourth Henry, that this last great idea has
 13 been even contemplated. 3rdly. and chiefly, I shall examine the important question before us, by the
 14 Constitution of the United States, and the legitimate result of that valuable instrument.

15 [Chisholm v. Georgia, 2 Dall. (U.S.) 419, 1 L.Ed. 440 (1793)]

16 Black's Law Dictionary further clarifies the distinction between a nation and a society by clarifying the differences between
 17 a **national** government and a **federal** government, and keep in mind that our government is called "federal government":

18 "**NATIONAL GOVERNMENT.** The government of a whole nation, as distinguished from that of a local or
 19 territorial division of the nation, and also as distinguished from that of a league or confederation.

20 "A national government is a government of the people of a single state or nation, united as a community by
 21 what is termed the "social compact," and possessing complete and perfect supremacy over persons and things,
 22 so far as they can be made the lawful objects of civil government. A federal government is distinguished from
 23 a national government by its being the government of a community of independent and sovereign states,
 24 united by compact." Piqua Branch Bank v. Knoup, 6 Ohio St. 393." [Black's Law Dictionary, Revised Fourth
 25 Edition, 1968, p. 1176]

26 So the "United States*" the country is a "society" and a "sovereignty" but not a "nation" under the law of nations, by the
 27 Supreme Court's own admission. Because the supreme Court has ruled on this matter, it is now incumbent upon each of us
 28 to always remember it and to apply it in all of our dealings with the Federal Government. If not, we lose our individual
 29 Sovereignty by default and the Federal Government assumes jurisdiction over us. So, while a sovereign Citizen will want
 30 to be the third type of Citizen and on occasion the first, he would never want to be the second.

31 Yet on every government (any level) document we sign (e.g. Social Security, Marriage License, Voter Registration, Drivers
 32 License, BATF 4473, etc.) they either require you to be a "citizen of the United States" or they ask "are you a resident of
 33 Illinois?". If you accept their assumption, or you answer "Yes" to the question, usually under penalty of perjury, then you
 34 have voluntarily placed yourself under their jurisdiction and are therefore subject to Federal & State Codes and Regulations
 35 (Statutes).

36 Statute Law is, in effect, contract law (private law). As you will soon read, the government uses various ways to mislead
 37 and trick us into their private laws (outside our Constitutional protections) and thereby commits a great fraud on the
 38 American People.

39 The essentials of their deception include the following, to which this document is dedicated to exposing:

- 40 1. Which United States are they talking about (this article)?
- 41 2. What is a "person"?
- 42 3. What is an "individual"?
- 43 4. How can there be two of you?
- 44 5. What constitutes "foreign income" and "domestic income"?
- 45 6. What is the SOLUTION?

1 I hope you will take the time to STUDY this information thoroughly, then commence to use it, in an effort to untangle
 2 yourself from this web of deceit. It is the only sure, nonviolent way to regain your Constitutional Rights as it guarantees
 3 you your individual sovereignty as a freeman.

4 **4.7 Two Political Jurisdictions: “United States” the Corporation vs the 50 States of the Union**

5 Many people are blissfully unaware that there are actually *two* mutually exclusive political jurisdictions within United
 6 States the country. Your citizenship status determines which of the two political jurisdictions you are a member of and you
 7 have an option to adopt either. This book describes how to regain the model on the right, the “50 states of the Union”,
 8 which we also call the “United States of America” throughout this book. We have prepared a table to compare the two and
 9 explain what we mean. The vast majority of Americans fall under the model on the left, and their own ignorance, fear, and
 10 apathy has put them there. The model on the left treats the “United States” as a *federal corporation*, which is how the law
 11 defines it in [28 U.S.C. §3002](#)(15)(A). This area is also called “the federal zone” throughout this book. The “United States”
 12 first became a federal corporation in 1871 and you can read this law for yourself right from the Statutes at Large:

13 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/16Amend/SpecialLaw/DCCorpStatuesAtLarge.pdf>

14 **Table 4-5: Two Political Models within United States the Country**


TWO POLITICAL JURISDICIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY		
Characteristic	“United States” the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	“United States of America” (50 states of the Union)
God that is worshipped: See Matt. 6:24	Mammon/man/government (Satan) Idolatry (see Exodus 20:3) One nation under “fraud”	God One nation under “God”
Freedom and liberty	Counterfeit, man-made freedom. Freedom granted not by God, but by the government/man/Satan. <i>"Can the liberties of a nation be thought secure when we have removed their only firm basis, a conviction in the minds of the people that these liberties are of the gift of God? That they are not to be violated but with His wrath?" --Thomas Jefferson: Notes on Virginia Q.XVIII, 1782. ME 2:227</i>	Liberty direct from God Himself: <i>"Where the spirit of the Lord is, there is Liberty."</i> 2 Corinthians 3:17 (Bible)
Religious foundation	This <i>government/state is god</i> . It sets the morals and values of those in its jurisdiction. These value are ever changing at their whim. Violates the 10 commandments: <i>"You shall have no other gods before Me."</i> Exodus 20:3	Sovereign Citizens are created by God and are answerable to their Maker who is Omnipotent. The Bible is the Basis of all Law and moral standards. In 1820, the USA government purchased 20,000 bibles for distribution.
Source of law	“The state”, which is the majority living under a democracy rather than a republic. <i>"You shall not follow a crowd to do evil; nor shall you testify in a dispute so as to turn aside after many to pervert justice."</i> [Exodus 23:2, Bible, NKJV]	God, as revealed in the Bible/ten commandments. (See book <i>Biblical Institutes of Law</i> , by Rousas Rushdoony)
Purpose of law	Protect rulers in government from the irate “serfs” and tax “slaves” that they govern and from the inevitable consequences of their tyranny and abuse	Protect sovereign people from tyranny in government and from hurting each other

TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY		
Characteristic	“United States” the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	“United States of America” (50 states of the Union)
Political hierarchy (lower number has higher precedence)	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Ruler/king (supercedes God) 2. Legislature 3. Laws 4. Subjects/citizens (slaves/serfs of the state) <p>NO GOD. Atheist or anti-spiritual (remove prayer from schools, because belief in God threatens government authority).</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. God 2. World 3. Man 4. “We the people” 5. Grand jury, Elections, Trial jury 6. U.S. Constitution 7. Human government & organized church
Political system	<p><u>Municipal corporation</u> <u>Totalitarian socialist democracy</u></p> <p>“Socialism: 1. any of various economic and political theories advocating collective or governmental ownership and administration of the means of production and distribution of goods. 2 a: a system of society or group living in which there is no private property b: a system or condition of society in which the means of production are owned and controlled by the state 3: a stage of society in Marxist theory transitional between capitalism and communism and distinguished by unequal distribution of goods and pay according to work done.” Merriam Webster’s Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, ISBN 0-97779-508-8, 1983.</p> <p>“<i>Democracy has never been and never can be so desirable as aristocracy or monarchy, but while it lasts, is more bloody than either. Remember, democracy never lasts long. It soon wastes, exhausts, and murders itself. There never was a democracy that never did commit suicide.</i>” John Adams, 1815.</p>	<p><u>Republic</u></p> <p>“Republic: A commonwealth; that form of government which the administration of affairs is open to all the citizens. In another sense, it signifies the state, independently of its form of government.” (Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 1302)</p> <p>“Commonwealth: The public or common weal or welfare... It generally designates, when so employed, a republican frame of government, one in which the welfare and rights of the entire mass of people are the main consideration, rather than the privileges of a class or the will of a monarch; or it may designate the body of citizens living under such a government.” (Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 278)</p>
Status	U.S. continues to be in a permanent state of national emergency since March 9, 1933, and possibly as far back as the Civil War. See Senate report 93-549.	No state of Emergency and is not at war.
Pledge	"I pledge allegiance to the IRS, and to the tyrannical totalitarian oligarchy for which it stands. One nation, under fraud, indivisible, with slavery, injustice, and atheism for all."	"I pledge allegiance to the united states of America, and to the Republic for which it stands, one nation, under God , indivisible, with liberty and justice for all
Form of government	De facto (unlawful) (See our article entitled " How Scoundrels Corrupted Our Republican Form of Government " in section 6.1 for details on how our government was rendered unlawful)	De jure (lawful)
Constitution	Constitution of the “United States” (See http://www.access.gpo.gov/congress)	Constitution of the “United States of America”

TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY		
Characteristic	“United States” the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	“United States of America” (50 states of the Union)
		(See http://www.access.gpo.gov/congress)
Creator	Merchants, bankers through President Lincoln and his Cohorts by act of treason. This martial law government is a fiction managing civil affairs	Created by God and sovereign Citizens acting under His delegated authority (see Gen. 1:26 and Gen. 2:15-17 in the Bible)
Origins	Gettysburg Address in 1864 and the Incorporation of District of Columbia by Act of February 21, 1871 under the Emergency War Powers Act and the Reconstruction Act	Started with the Declaration of Independence in 1776, Articles of Confederation in 1778, and the Constitution in 1787
Existence	Still existing as long as: <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. “state of war” or “emergency” exists. 2. The President does not terminate “martial” or “emergency” powers by Executive Order or decree, or 3. The people do not <u>resist</u> submission and terminate by <u>restoring</u> lawful civil courts, processes and procedures under authority of the “inherent political powers” of the people. 	Adjournment of Congress sine die occurred in 1861
Governing body	The President (Caesar) rules by Executive Order (Unconstitutional). Congress and the Courts are under the President as branches of the Executive Department. Congress sits by resolution not by positive law. The Judges are actually administrative referees and cannot rule on constitutional rights.	“We the People”, who rule themselves through their <u>servant</u> elected representatives. See Lincoln's Gettysburg Address, in which he said: “A government of the people, for the people, and by the people” Three separate Departments for the <u>servants</u> : <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Executive. 2. Legislative-can enact <u>positive law</u>. 3. Judicial
Citizenship	“ U.S. citizen ” (Chattel Property of the government) are belligerents in the field and are “subject to its jurisdiction” (Washington, D.C.) (see 8 U.S.C. 1401(a) at http://www4.law.cornell.edu/uscode/8/1401.html)	“ U.S. nationals ” is “sovereign”, “Freemen”, and “Freeborn”. Unless that right is given up knowingly, intentionally, and voluntarily. “National of the United States of America” (see 8 U.S.C. 1408(2) at http://www4.law.cornell.edu/uscode/8/1408.html)
Implications of citizenship	“ U.S. citizens ” were declared <u>enemies</u> of the U.S. by F.D.R. by Executive Order No. 2040 and ratified by Congress on March 9, 1933. FDR changed the meaning of The Trading with the Enemy Act of December 6, 1917 by changing the word “ without ” to citizens “ within ” the United States	“ U.S. nationals ” are Sovereign citizens who supercede the U.S. Government is the enemy of liberty and should be kept as small as practical. “Government big enough to supply everything you need is big enough to take everything you have. The course of history shows that as a government grows, liberty

TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY		
Characteristic	“United States” the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	“United States of America” (50 states of the Union)
		<i>decreases.” Thomas Jefferson</i>
Jurisdiction	Expands and conquers by deceit and fraud. Uses “words of art” to deceive the people.	Restricted by the Constitution to the 10 mile square area called Washington D.C., U.S. possessions, such as Puerto Rico, Guam, and its enclaves for forts and arsenals.
Civic duties-qualifications for	Must be a “citizen of the United States” to vote or serve jury duty	Must clarify citizenship when registering to vote and serving jury duty. In some states, cannot vote or serve jury duty
Vote	Is recommendation only.	Counts like one of the Board of Directors.
Rights and privileges	<p><u>In</u>alienable rights. Rights from the corporate government.</p> <p>Statutory taxable “privileges” “Invisible contract” with federal government to “buy” these statutory privileges through taxes. See 48 U.S.C. §1421b: Bill of Rights. “The privileges and immunities clause of the 14th Amendment protects very few rights because it neither incorporates the Bill of Rights nor protects all rights of individual citizens. Instead, this provision protects only those rights peculiar to being a citizen of the federal government; it does not protect those rights which relate to state citizenship.” <i>Jones v. Temmer</i> 829 F.Supp. 1226 (Emphasis added.)</p>	<p><u>Un</u>alienable Rights. Rights from God. Constitutional rights-cannot be taxed See U.S. Constitution at: http://www.findlaw.com/casecode/constitution/</p>
Value of the individual	<p>Bond Servant To cover the debt in 1933 and future debt, the corporate government determined and established the value of the future labor of each individual in its jurisdiction to be \$630,000. A bond of \$630,000 is set on each Certificate of Live Birth. The certificates are bundled together into sets and then placed as securities on the open market. These certificates are then purchased by the Federal Reserve and/or foreign bankers. The purchaser is the "holder" of "Title." This process made each and every person in this jurisdiction a bond servant.</p>	<p>Freeborn Freeman Freeholder Sovereign "We the people..."</p>
Welfare/social security	YES: Socialism-allowed and encouraged	NO: Not allowed. Everyone takes care of themselves.
FAMILY		
Purpose of sex	Recreation and sin. When children result from such sin, then abortion (murder) frees sexual pervers and fornicators from the consequences of or liability for such sin and	Procreation. Gen. 1:22 : "And God blessed them, saying, "Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the waters

TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY		
Characteristic	“United States” the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	“United States of America” (50 states of the Union)
	maintains their quality of life. Permissiveness by government of abortion becomes a license to sin without consequence.	in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth." <u>Psalms 127: 4-5: “Like arrows in the hand of a warrior, So are the children of one's youth. Happy is the man who has his quiver full of them; They shall not be ashamed, But shall speak with their enemies in the gate.”</u>
Purpose of marriage	An extension of the “welfare state” that financially enslaves men to the state and their wives and thereby undermines male sovereignty in the family. Prov. 31:3 says: “Do not give your strength [or sovereignty] to women, nor your ways to that which destroys kings.”	To make families self-governing by creating a chain of authority within them (see Eph. 5:22-24). Honor God and produce godly offspring. (Malachi 2:15)
Birth certificate	Birth Certificate when the baby's footprint is placed thereon <u>before it touches the land</u> . The certificate is recorded at a County Recorder, then sent to a Secretary of State which sends it to the Bureau of Census of the Commerce Department. This process converts a man's life, labor, and property to an asset of the US government when this person receives a benefit from the government such as a drivers license, food stamps, free mail delivery, etc. This person becomes a fictional persona in commerce . The Birth Certificate is an unrevealed " Trust Instrument " originally designed for the children of the newly freed black slaves after the 14th Amendment. The US has the ability to tax and regulate commerce EVERYWHERE.	
Education of young	Public schooling (brain washing of the young). School vouchers not allowed. This is a central plank in the Communist Manifesto. Purpose is to create better state "serfs".	Private schooling and school vouchers. Prayer permitted in schools.
STATES		
The word “State”	In U.S. Titles and Codes "State" refers to U.S. possessions such as Puerto Rico, Guam, etc.	"state" when used by itself refers to the "Republics" of The <u>u</u> nited <u>s</u> tates of America
State governments	Politicians of each state formed a new government and incorporated it into the federal US government corporation and are therefore under its jurisdiction. e.g. "State of California" corporate California	All of the states are " Republics " e.g. "The Republic of California" "California republic" "California state" or just "California"

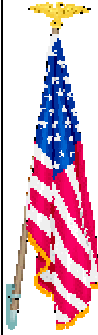

TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY		
Characteristic	"United States" the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	"United States of America" (50 states of the Union)
	California State	
Origins of the states	The corporate States are controlled by the corporate US government by its purse strings such as grants, funding, matching funds, revenue sharing, disaster relief, etc. The citizens of such States are "subjects" and are called " Residents "	Sovereign Citizens created the states (Republics) and are Sovereign over the states. The Republics and the people created the USA government and are sovereign over the USA government.
State constitution	The original constitution was revised and adopted by the corporate State of California on May 7, 1879. It has been revised many times hence.	California was admitted into the union as a Republic on September 9, 1850. The people created the original state constitution to give the government limited powers and to act on behalf of, and for the people. Called The "Organic" state constitution.
Rights of citizens in state	A one word change in the original State (California) constitution from "unalienable" to "inalienable" made rights into privileges. "Inalienable" means government given rights. "Unalienable" means God given rights.	Adjournment <i>sine die</i> occurred in California in April 27, 1863 

JUSTICE SYSTEM

Judicial function	Judicial <u>Branch</u> under the President	Judicial <u>Department</u>
Separation of powers	It is <u>not</u> separate, but is an arm of the legislature	Separate from all other Departments
Purpose of federal courts	Maximize power and control and revenues of federal government	Protect the Constitutional rights of persons domiciled in states of the Union
Constitutional authority for federal courts	Article I, II, and IV ("U.S. District Courts" and "Tax Court")	Article III (district courts in the District of Columbia, Hawaii, and the Court of Claims)
Venue	federal (<i>feudal</i>) venue	<i>judicial</i> venue
Courts	Corporate Administrative Arbitration Boards Consisting of an Arbitrator (so-called "Judge") and a panel of corporate employees (so-called "Juries") Panel decisions (recommendation) can be reversed by the Arbitrator	Constitutional Judicial Courts with real Judges and real Juries who can judge the law as well as the facts Jury decisions cannot be reversed by the judge
Type of courts	Equity Courts, Municipal Courts--Merchant Law, Military Law, Marshall Law, Summary Court Martial proceedings, and administrative <i>ad hock</i> tribunals (similar to Admiralty/Maritime) now governed by "The Manual of Courts Martial (under Acts of War) and the War Powers Act of 1933.	Common Law Court(s)
Trials	All legal actions are pursued under the " color of law " Color of law means "appears to be" law, but is <u>not</u>	The 7th Amendment guarantees a trial by jury according to the rules of the common law when the value in controversy exceeds \$20
Requirements of law	Covers a vast number of volumes of text that even attorneys can't absorb or comprehend	Common Law Has two requirements:

TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY		
Characteristic	"United States" the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	"United States of America" (50 states of the Union)
	<p>such as:</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Regulations 2. Codes 3. Rules 4. Statutes <p>Prior to bankruptcy of 1933 "Public Law"</p> <p>Now the so-called courts administer "Public Policy" through the "Uniform Commercial Code" (instituted in 1967)</p>	<p>Do not Offend Anyone Honor all contracts</p>
Basis of judicial decisions	<p>No <i>stare decisis</i></p> <p>Means no precedent binds any court, because they have <u>no law standard</u> of absolute right and wrong by which to measure a ruling— what is legal today may not be legal tomorrow.</p> <p>So-called "court decisions" are administrative opinions only and are basically decided on the basis of "What is best for the corporate government."</p>	<p>Constitution Supreme Law of the land restricting governments.</p> <p>The "organic" Constitution and its amendments are created by the Sovereign living souls (We the people...) to institute, restrict, and restrain a <u>limited</u> government.</p>
Nature of acts regulated	Legal or Illegal	Lawful or Unlawful
Lingo	"at Law" "Attorney at law"	"in-law" (i.e. "Son-in-law" or a "covenant in law")
Counsel	<p>Attorney an "Esquire" (British nobility) Attorney-at-law (licensed agents of the corporate administrative courts and tribunals in the US for the Crown of England)</p> <p>Attorneys swear an oath to uphold the "BAR ASSOCIATION".</p> <p>The first letter of B.A.R stands for "British".</p> <p>(British Accreditation Regency) The BAR was First organized in Mississippi in 1825. The "<i>integrated bar</i>" movement, meaning "the condition precedent to the right to practice law," was initiated in the US in 1914 by the American Jurisprudence Society. --Black's Law Dictionary, 4th edition</p>	<p>Counsel or "Counselor <u>in</u>-Law" (Lawyer)</p>
Claims	"Charge" or "Complaint" (administrative jurisdiction)	"Claim" (equity/common law jurisdiction)
Plaintiff/damaged party.	Compels performance No damaged party is necessary.	Must have damaged party
Court proceeding	"Public"	"Private"
Rights under justice system	No rights except statutory Civil Rights granted by Congress.	Maintains rights, freedoms, and liberties


TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY		
Characteristic	"United States" the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	"United States of America" (50 states of the Union)
	Restricts freedoms and liberties.	
Role of courts	U.S. citizens are at the mercy of government and the administrative courts and tribunals Servants (subjects/ bond-servants) cannot sue the Master (Corporate government).	Unalienable rights, fundamental rights, substantial rights and other rights of living souls are all protected by The Law and protected by The "organic" Constitution and its amendments.
Bill of rights	The actual " Bill of Rights " was a declaration in 1689 by King William and Queen Mary to their loyal subjects of the British crown. If you are in this jurisdiction, you are a subject of the crown as well?	The first <u>ten</u> articles of amendment to the constitution are sometimes referred to as " Bill of Rights " which is incorrect. They are not a "Bill" but are simply amendments.
Due process	Due Process is optional--Sometimes Gestapo-like tactics without reservation.	Due Process is required Writ of habeas corpus
Innocence before the law	Guilty until proven innocent	Innocent until proven guilty
Juries	The juror judges only the facts--The judge gives the statute, regulation, code, rule, etc.	Jurors judge the law as well as the facts
DEBT		
Bankruptcy	First bankruptcy was in 1863 In 1865 the total debt was \$2,682,593,026.53 A portion was funded by 1040 Bonds to run not less than 10 nor more than 40 years at an interest rate of 6% Members of Congress are the official Trustees in the <u>bankruptcy</u> of the US and the re-organization	None
Income tax revenues necessary to pay debt	"All individual Income Tax revenues are gone before one nickel is spent on services taxpayers expect from government" --Ronald Reagan, 1984 Grace Commission Report	Wouldn't it be nice to be completely out of debt, personally, and have a stash of gold and silver besides?
TAXATION		
Federal income taxes	1. Illegally enforced. Government lies to citizens to steal their money. Corruption in the court. 2. States destroy personal liberties to get their share of federal matching funds. Example: Requirement to provide SSN to get a state driver's license.	Federal government has very limited income from only taxing foreign imports into states. Can't twist state's arm to destroy civic rights because it has so little income it won't give it away.
State income taxes	Treated as a "nonresident" of your state living on federal property (See, for example: http://www.leginfo.ca.gov/cgi-bin/displaycode?section=rtc&group=17001-	Treated as a resident of your state and not taxed because it would violate the Bill of Rights and 1:9:4 and 1:2:3 of the U.S.A. Constitution.

TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY		
Characteristic	“United States” the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	“United States of America” (50 states of the Union)
	18000&file=17001-17039.1 and look at 17016 and 17018 off the California website at http://www.leginfo.ca.gov/cgi-bin/calawquery?codesection=rtc&codebody=&hits=20	
Personal Income tax rates (State plus Federal)	High: 50-70% because working is a “privilege” and because it is a "privilege" to be part of the "commune".	None: Working is a “right”
Limits	No limit on taxation	Limits on taxation
Purpose of taxation	1. Wealth redistribution (socialism) and to appease the whims of the democratic majority in spiteful disregard of the Bill of Rights. 2. Stabilize fiat currency system	Support <i>only</i> the government and not the people in any way. See <i>Loan Assoc. v. Topeka</i> , 87 U.S. (20 Wall.) 655 (1874)
Income taxes	Income taxes are legal and ever increasing	Direct taxes such as " Income taxes " are unlawful
Indirect taxes	Other taxation's such as inheritance taxes are legal	Indirect taxes such as excise tax and import duties are lawful
IRS	IRS's 1040 forms originated from the 1040 Bonds used for funding Lincoln's War 1863, first year income tax was ever used in history of US . The IRS is a collection arm of the Federal Reserve. The Federal Reserve was created by the Bank of England in 1913 and is owned by foreign investors. The IRS is not listed as a government agency like other government agencies.	No IRS
FLAG		
Flag	 <p>Not an American flag</p> <p>Some say it is a flag of Admiralty/Maritime type jurisdiction and is not suppose to be used on Land. Others say it's not a flag at all, but fiction.</p> <p>However, the gold fringe which surrounds the flag gives notice that the American flag has been captured and is now being used by the corporate so-called "government".</p>	 <p>American Flag</p> <p>plain and simple--no gold fringe or other ornaments and symbolism attached</p>
Requirements for flags	Appears to be an "American flag" but has one or more of the following: <ol style="list-style-type: none"> Gold fringe along its borders (called "a badge") Gold braided cord (tassel) hanging from pole Ball on top of pole (last cannon ball 	Prior to the 1950's, state republic flags were mostly flown, but when a USA flag was flown it was one of the following: <ol style="list-style-type: none"> Military flag--Horizontal stripes, white stars on blue background** Peace flag--vertical stripes, blue stars on white background--last flown before

TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY

Characteristic	"United States" the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	"United States of America" (50 states of the Union)
	<p>fired)</p> <p>4. Eagle on top of pole 5. Spear on top of pole</p> <p>Yellow fringed flag is not described in Title 4 of USC and therefore is illegal on land except for maybe (1) the President since he is in charge of Navel Forces on high seas, and (2) naval offices and yards. President Eisenhower settled the debate on the width of the fringe.</p> <p>The so-called justification for a Navel/Maritime flag to be on land is that all land was under the high water mark at one time even if it was eons ago.</p>	<p>Civil War**</p> <p>**Has no fringe, braid (tassel), eagle, ball, spear, etc.</p> <p>(Although the codes do not apply here, the USA Military flag is described in Title 4 of USC)</p> <p>The continental USA is at peace</p>

BENEFITS

Benefits	<p><u>Inalienable rights</u></p> <p>Government given rights that are really "Privileges" that can be taken away at any time</p> <p>So-called "privileges"/Benefits are as follows:</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Social Security (You paid all your working life and there are no guarantees that there will be money for you) 2. Medicare 3. Medicaid 4. Grants 5. Disaster relief 6. Food Stamps 7. Licenses and Registration (Permission) 8. Privileges only, no Rights 9. Experimentation on citizens without their consent. <p>Corporate government steals your money and gets credit for helping others with it. Politicians in return create more such programs to get more votes. Eventually there is no more to collect and give. Everyone becomes takers and there are no givers. The government then collapses within. That is why democracy never survives, because the looters eventually outnumber the producers.</p>	<p><u>Unalienable rights</u></p> <p>God given rights</p> <p><i>"...incapable [emphasis added] of being aliened, that is, sold and transferred."</i></p> <p>Black's Law Dictionary, Revised Fourth Edition, 1968, page 1693.</p> <p>Enjoy:</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Life 2. Liberty 3. pursuit of Happiness 4. full property ownership. <p>No US benefits--Every living soul is responsible for themselves and has the option of helping others.</p> <p>Each living soul gives accordingly to help others in need and receives the credit or gives the credit to his Maker and Provider.</p> <p>No tax burdens or government debt obligations.</p>
		

TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY

Characteristic	"United States" the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	"United States of America" (50 states of the Union)
----------------	---	--

RECORDS

Location of records	<p>County Clerk Recorders Office Created by statute to keep track of the corporate government's holdings which are applied as collateral to the increasing debt. The written records are a continuation of the "Doomsday Book" which keeps track of the Crown of England's holdings. The "Doomsday Book" originated as a written record of the conquered holdings of king William, which was later the basis of his taxes and grants.</p> <p>Property recorded at the recorders office makes the corporate de facto government "holders in due course"</p> <p>Your TV is <u>not</u> recorded there, therefore you are "holder in due course" for the TV.</p>	<p>Ex-officio clerks County Clerk is also Clerk of the superior court, (i.e. a court of common law) and courts of record Records are also kept by Citizens such as in a family Bible</p>
Birth certificate	" Birth Certificate " is required. It puts one into commerce as a fictional persona	Record the date family members are born married, and the date they pass on in the Family Bible
Marriage	Must file a " Marriage License ". The Corporate State becomes the third party to your union and whatever you conceive is theirs and becomes their property in commerce.	<p>Common Law Marriage Married by a minister or living together for more than 7 years constitutes a marriage</p> <p>Pastor may issue a Certificate of Matrimony</p>

PROPERTY

Property	<p><u>Privilege to use</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Fee title--Feudal Title 2. Grant Deed and Trust Deed Note: GRANTOR and GRANTEE in all caps are fictional persona 3. Property tax (Must pay) 4. Other taxes (such as water district taxes) 5. Subject to control by government 6. Vehicle Registration (The incorporated State owns vehicles on behalf of US) 7. Property and vehicles are <u>collateral</u> for the government debt 	<p>Full and complete ownership</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Allodial Title--Land Patents--Allodial Freeholder 2. Can <u>not</u> be taxed (Only voluntary) 3. You are king of your castle 4. No government intrusion, involvement, or controls
----------	--	--

MONEY

Money	Has <u>no</u> substance--Built on <u>credit</u>	Has substance
	Controlled by <u>US Treasury</u>	Controlled by Treasury of the united States of America



TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY

Characteristic	“United States” the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	“United States of America” (50 states of the Union)
Money symbol	Phony/Fiat Money All computer programs are designed with the “\$” having only one line through it	Real Money Most of us were taught to write the "S" with two lines through it. The two lines was a derivative of the "U" inside the "S" signifying real US currency based on the American silver dollar and gold-backed currency.
Legal tender	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Federal Reserve Notes (FRN's)*** 2. Bonds 3. Other Notes--evidences of debt 4. Cashless society--Electronic banking ***Issued by the Federal Reserve Bank (FRB) --A <u>private corporation</u> created by the Bank of England in 1913 and is owned by <u>foreign bankers/investors</u> The Federal Reserve is a continuation of the " Exchequer " of the Crown of England.	Silver coins* (Silver dollar--standard unit of value) Gold Coins* Paper currency <u>redeemable</u> in gold or silver* Spanish milled dollar *Issued by the <u>Treasury Department of the USA</u> (A Republic).
Minting of money	The government must borrow before FRN's are printed. The FRB pays 2½ ¢ per FRN note printed whether \$1 or \$1000. The US in-turn pays FRB interest indefinitely for each outstanding note or representation of a note. With electronic banking FRN's are created out of nothing and nothing being printed. <i>What a deal!</i>	Coinage started in 1783. The first paper currency was issued in 1862. "Silver Certificates" last printed in 1957. Coinage of Silver coins for circulation ended with the 1964 coins. Redemption of "Silver Certificates" ended on June 24, 1968.
History	The Greenback Act was revoked and replaced with the National Banking Act in 1863. An Act passed on April 12, 1866 authorized the sale of bonds to retire currency called greenbacks. FRN's (Federal Reserve Notes) were first issued in 1914. Just prior to the Stock Market crash of 1929, millions of dollars of gold was taken out of this Country and transferred to England.	

ROADWAYS

Use of roadways	Drivers Licenses are required, because driving is a privilege .	Sovereigns have a right to use the public ways.
Driving “privileges”	May lose privilege or have it suspended at the whim of government	"Liberty of the common way"
Driver’s licenses	Must comply with the Department of Motor Vehicles, the Vehicle Code, which is ever changing, and the Highway Patrol. Even a "Class 3" Driver's license is a "commercial" license. A "Driver" is one who does commercial business on the highways	No "Driver's License" is required for private, personal, and recreational use of the roadways. A "driver's license" can only be required for those individuals or businesses operating a business within the rights-of-ways such as Taxi Drivers, Truck Drivers, Bus Drivers, Chauffeurs, etc.
Definition of “Vehicle”	"Vehicle"--automobile or truck doing	"Car"--short for "carriage" such as "horseless

TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY		
Characteristic	"United States" the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	"United States of America" (50 states of the Union)
	business on the highway	carriage" for private use
"Passenger"	"Passenger"--A paying customer who wants to be transported to another location	"Guest"--One who comes along for pleasure or private reasons without cost
Movement	"Drive"--The act of commercial use of the right-of-way	"Travel"--The act of private, personal, and recreational use of the roadways
MAIL		
Types of mail	Domestic Mail that moves between D.C., possessions and territories of the U.S.	Non-domestic Mail that moves outside of D.C. its possessions and territories
Zip codes	Zip Codes are required when using "jurisdictional regions or zones" such as "CA", NV, AZ, etc.	Zip Code <u>not required</u> and should not be used.
Cost of stamp	Cost is 34 cents for first class	3 cents--Sovereign to Sovereign Otherwise 34 cents
Designation of regions	Must now use "jurisdictional regions or zones" such as "CA", NV, AZ, etc. Purposely used <i>ad nauseum</i> which means "no name at all"	Write out the state completely such as "California" or abbreviated "Calif.". Never use "CA" for an address to a Sovereign or in your return address.
GUNS		
Philosophy on gun ownership	This government wants to disarm the Citizens so as to have complete control and power. Every tyrannical government in the past has taken away the guns to prevent any serious opposition or rebellion. History continues to repeat itself because the new generations who come along don't know or tend to forget about the past and will say it will not happen here.	Sovereign Citizens have a right to own and use guns--"Right to bear arms" against "enemies foreign and domestic ". The founding fathers knew the importance of protecting themselves from governments who get out of hand.
Legal constraints on gun ownership	Disregards the 2nd Amendment or justifies what weapons should not be legal. Ever changing and ever restrictive. Requires registration of guns . If any of you saw the motion picture called " Red Dawn " would realize that the enemy finds these lists and then goes door to door collecting all of the guns.	<u>2nd Amendment</u> Protects the Right of the people to keep and bear arms.
RELIGION		
Relationship between church and state	This government wants to control the churches by having them come under their jurisdiction as corporations under Section 501(c)(3) . This is to prevent the clergy, Pastors, Ministers, etc. from having any political influence on its members or the public in general. This government regulates what is to be said and not to be said.	Churches exist alone. No permission of government required.

TWO POLITICAL JURISDICTIONS WITHIN UNITED STATES THE COUNTRY		
Characteristic	“United States” the federal corporation (Federal Zone)	“United States of America” (50 states of the Union)
	<p>These churches also display the gold fringe flag.</p> <p>Their faith is in the government and not in God. They exist by permission of this government not by God alone.</p>  <p>They signed away their Birthright for a so-called benefit:</p> <p>"Tax-exempt corporation".</p>	 <p><u>1st Amendment</u></p> <p>Protects against government making a law that would respect an establishment of religion or prohibit the free exercise of a religion.</p>

1 Some of our readers have written us to inquire about our use of the term “United States of America” in the above table by
 2 reporting that they studied the term “United States of America” in federal statutes and implementing regulations and could
 3 not find where it is legally defined. In fact, it is not defined but is referenced in federal law within the following contexts:

- 4 • 28 CFR §0.64-1
- 5 • 28 CFR §0.96b

6 Even though the term “United States of America” is nowhere defined in federal law, we use it to refer to the collection of
 7 sovereign states of the Union which form our “republic”. The federal zone is technically *not* part of our “republic” because
 8 the Bill of Rights, which is the first ten Amendments to the Constitution, forms the essence of the republic and it does not
 9 apply within the federal zone.

10 **4.8 The Federal Zone**

11 In 1818, the Supreme Court stated that:

12 *“The exclusive jurisdiction which the United States have in forts and dock-yards ceded to them, is derived from*
 13 *the express assent of the states by whom the cessions are made. It could be derived in no other manner; because*
 14 *without it, the authority of the state would be supreme and exclusive therein,” 3 Wheat., at 350, 351.*

15 *[U.S. v. Bevens, 16 U.S. 336 (1818), reaff. 19 U.S.C.A., section 1401(h).]*

16 The above case establishes that the federal government only has jurisdiction over federal property that it owns within the
 17 states or coming under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the U.S. Constitution. In other places, it has no legislative or
 18 judicial jurisdiction. Places coming under the sovereignty or exclusive legislative jurisdiction of the federal government
 19 under 1:8:17 of the Constitution include the District of Columbia, federal territories, and enclaves within the state and we
 20 call these areas “the federal zone” throughout this book. When Congress is operating in its exclusive jurisdiction over the
 21 “federal zone”, it is important to remember that the U.S. Government has full authority to enact legislation as private acts
 22 pertaining to its boundaries, and it is not a state of the union of states because it exists solely by virtue of the
 23 compact/constitution that created it. The U.S. Constitution does not say that the District of Columbia must guarantee a
 24 Republican form of Government to its own subject citizens within its territories. (See *Hepburn & Dundas v. Ellzey*, 6 US.

1 445(1805); *Glaeser v. Acacia Mut. Life Ass'n.*, 55 F.Supp., 925 (1944); *Long v. District of Columbia*, 820 F.2d 409 (D.C.
2 Cir. 1987); *Americana of Puerto Rico, Inc. v. Kaplus*, 368 F.2d 431 (1966), among others).

3 Within the federal zone, there are areas where the Bill of Rights (the first ten amendments) applies and areas where it does
4 not. The best place to go for a clarification of where it applies is the Supreme Court case of *Downes v. Bidwell*, 182 U.S.
5 244 (1901). Below are quotes from that case establishing that we have two national governments:

6 *"The idea prevails with some -- indeed, it found expression in arguments at the bar -- that we have in this*
7 *country substantially or practically two national governments; one, to be maintained under the Constitution,*
8 *with all its restrictions; the other to be maintained by Congress outside and independently of that instrument, by*
9 *exercising such powers as other nations of the earth are accustomed to exercise."*
10 *[Downes v. Bidwell, 182 U.S. 244 (1901), supra.]*

11 The U.S. Constitution limits federal government jurisdiction over the state Citizens using the Bill of Rights. *The federal*
12 *government has unlimited powers over federal citizens within territories of the United States because it is acting outside of*
13 *the Constitution.* Administrative laws are private acts, also called "special law", and are not applicable to state Citizens.
14 The Internal Revenue Code is administrative law. Here are some more quotes from *Downes* that establish our point:

15 *"Loughborough v. Blake, 5 Wheat. 317, 5 L. ed. 98, was an action of trespass or, as appears by the original*
16 *record, replevin, brought in the circuit court for the District of Columbia to try the right of Congress to impose*
17 *a direct tax for general purposes on that District. 3 Stat. at L. 216, chap. 60. It was insisted that Congress*
18 *could act in a double capacity: in one as legislating [182 U.S. 244, 260] for the states; in the other as a local*
19 *legislature for the District of Columbia. In the latter character, it was admitted that the power of levying direct*
20 *taxes might be exercised, but for District purposes only, as a state legislature might tax for state purposes; but*
21 *that it could not legislate for the District under art. 1, 8, giving to Congress the power 'to lay and collect taxes,*
22 *imposts, and excises,' which 'shall be uniform throughout the United States,' inasmuch as the District was no*
23 *part of the United States. It was held that the grant of this power was a general one without limitation as to*
24 *place, and consequently extended to all places over which the government extends; and that it extended to the*
25 *District of Columbia as a constituent part of the United States. The fact that art. 1, 2, declares that*
26 *'representatives and direct taxes shall be apportioned among the several states . . . according to their respective*
27 *numbers' furnished a standard by which taxes were apportioned, but not to exempt any part of the country from*
28 *their operation. 'The words used do not mean that direct taxes shall be imposed on states only which are*
29 *represented, or shall be apportioned to representatives; but that direct taxation, in its application to states,*
30 *shall be apportioned to numbers.'* That art. 1, 9, 4, declaring that direct taxes shall be laid in proportion to the
31 census, was applicable to the District of Columbia, 'and will enable Congress to apportion on it its just and
32 equal share of the burden, with the same accuracy as on the respective states. If the tax be laid in this
33 proportion, it is within the very words of the restriction. It is a tax in proportion to the census or enumeration
34 referred to.' It was further held that the words of the 9th section did not 'in terms require that the system of
35 direct taxation, when resorted to, shall be extended to the territories, as the words of the 2d section require that
36 it shall be extended to all the states. They therefore may, without violence, be understood to give a rule when
37 the territories shall be taxed, without imposing the necessity of taxing them.'"

38 *"There could be no doubt as to the correctness of this conclusion, so far, at least, as it applied to the District*
39 *of Columbia. This District had been a part of the states of Maryland and [182 U.S. 244, 261] Virginia. It had*
40 *been subject to the Constitution, and was a part of the United States[***]. The Constitution had attached to it*
41 *irrevocably. There are steps which can never be taken backward. The*
42 *tie that bound the states of Maryland and Virginia to the Constitution could not be dissolved, without at least*
43 *the consent of the Federal and state governments to a formal separation. The mere cession of the District of*
44 *Columbia to the Federal government relinquished the authority of the states, but it did not take it out of the*
45 *United States or from under the aegis of the Constitution. Neither party had ever consented to that*
46 *construction of the cession. If, before the District was set off, Congress had passed an unconstitutional act*
47 *affecting its inhabitants, it would have been void. If done after the District was created, it would have been*
48 *equally void; in other words, Congress could not do indirectly, by carving out the District, what it could not do*
49 *directly. The District still remained a part of the United States, protected by the Constitution. Indeed, it would*
50 *have been a fanciful construction to hold that territory which had been once a part of the United States ceased*
51 *to be such by being ceded directly to the Federal government."*

52 [. . .]

53 *"Indeed, the practical interpretation put by Congress upon the Constitution has been long continued and*
54 *uniform to the effect [182 U.S. 244, 279] that the Constitution is applicable to territories acquired by purchase*
55 *or conquest, only when and so far as Congress shall so direct. Notwithstanding its duty to 'guarantee to every*
56 *state in this Union a republican form of government' (art. 4, 4), by which we understand, according to the*
57 *definition of Webster, 'a government in which the supreme power resides in the whole body of the people, and is*
58 *exercised by representatives elected by them,' Congress did not hesitate, in the original organization of the*
59 *territories of Louisiana, Florida, the Northwest Territory, and its subdivisions of Ohio, Indiana, Michigan,*

Illinois, and Wisconsin and still more recently in the case of Alaska, to establish a form of government bearing a much greater analogy to a British Crown colony than a republican state of America, and to vest the legislative power either in a governor and council, or a governor and judges, to be appointed by the President. It was not until they had attained a certain population that power was given them to organize a legislature by vote of the people. In all these cases, as well as in territories subsequently organized west of the Mississippi, Congress thought it necessary either to extend to Constitution and laws of the United States over them, or to declare that the inhabitants should be entitled to enjoy the right of trial by jury, of bail, and of the privilege of the writ of habeas corpus, as well as other privileges of the bill of rights.”
[Downes v. Bidwell, 182 U.S. 244 (1901)]

Based on the above and further reading of *Downes*, we can reach the following conclusions about the applicability of the Constitution within United States the country:

1. That the District of Columbia and the territories are not states within the judicial clause of the Constitution giving jurisdiction in cases between citizens of different states;
2. That territories are not states within the meaning of Rev. Stat. 709, permitting writs of error from this court in cases where the validity of a state statute is drawn in question;
3. That the District of Columbia and the territories are states as that word is used in treaties with foreign powers, with respect to the ownership, disposition, and inheritance of property;
4. That the territories are not within the clause of the Constitution providing for the creation of a supreme court and such inferior courts as Congress may see fit to establish;
5. That the Constitution does not apply to foreign countries or to trials therein conducted, and that Congress may lawfully [182 U.S. 244, 271] provide for such trials before consular tribunals, without the intervention of a grand or petit jury;
6. That where the Constitution has been once formally extended by Congress to territories, neither Congress nor the territorial legislature can enact laws inconsistent therewith, or retract the applicability of the Constitution to those territories.
7. That Article 1, Section 8, Clause 1 of the Constitution authorizing duties, imposts, and excises (indirect taxes) empowers congress to apply these taxes throughout the sovereign 50 Union states, and not just on federal land. Here is the quote from *Downes* confirming that:

“In delivering the opinion [Loughborough v. Blake, 5 Wheat. 317, 5 L. ed. 98], however, the Chief Justice made certain observations which have occasioned some embarrassment in other cases. ‘The power,’ said he, ‘to lay and collect duties, imposts, and excises may be exercised, and must be exercised, throughout the United States. Does this term designate the whole, or any particular portion of the American empire? Certainly this question can admit but of one answer. It is the name given to our great Republic which is composed of states and territories. The District of Columbia, or the territory west of the Missouri, is not less within the United States than Maryland or Pennsylvania; and it is not less necessary, on the principles of our Constitution, that uniformity in the imposition of imposts, duties, and excises should be observed in the one than in the other. Since, then, the power to lay and collect taxes, which includes direct taxes, is obviously coextensive with the power to lay and collect duties, imposts, and excises, and since the latter extends throughout the United States, it follows that the power to impose direct taxes also extends through- [182 U.S. 244, 262] out the United States.’ So far as applicable to the District of Columbia, these observations are entirely sound. So far as they apply to the territories, they were not called for by the exigencies of the case.”

The only limitation on the above powers to impose indirect excise taxes throughout the United States* (the country) is that appearing in the statutes and the requirement of Article 1, Section 8, Clause 3 of the Constitution. The Constitution only authorizes federal jurisdiction over foreign commerce with other countries and not intrastate commerce (commerce within a state). The Constitution forbids federal jurisdiction over exports from states under Article 1, Section 9, Clause 5 of the Constitution. The only thing left for the federal government to tax and regulate under the Constitution, under these circumstances, is imports from outside the country, which is what “foreign commerce” means. The feds can impose duties, imposts, and excises only on imports or profit derived from imports. The imports, however, must be done by corporations or else they are not taxable.

8. Once a state is accepted into the union of states united under the Constitution, all lands in the state at that time are then covered by the Constitution in perpetuity excepting land under federal jurisdiction (enclaves). If the federal government then chooses to purchase state lands back after the state joins the union to set up a federal enclave, such as a military base or federal courthouse or national park, then the land that facility resides on that formerly was governed by the Constitution continues in perpetuity to be governed by the Constitution, even though it then becomes subject to

1 the exclusive legislative jurisdiction of the federal government under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the
 2 Constitution.
 3 9. States east of the Mississippi had very little land that continued under federal jurisdiction at the time they were
 4 admitted to the union as states of the Union. Therefore, nearly the entire state in these cases is covered by the
 5 Constitution. The opposite is true in states west of the Mississippi, where large portions continued under federal
 6 jurisdiction after these territories were admitted as states. Those areas that were federal enclaves at the date of
 7 admission which continue to this day to be under federal jurisdiction are not subject to the Constitution or the Bill of
 8 Rights.
 9 10. Direct federal taxes and rights conferred by the Bill of Rights are mutually exclusive. You will note that when a new
 10 state is admitted to the Union, its lands then irrevocably have the Constitution attached to them and are covered by the
 11 Bill of Rights while at the same time, a new requirement to apportion all direct taxes is added in the former territory.
 12 The reason is that once people have **rights**, they become **sovereign** and at that point, it becomes impossible for the
 13 federal government under the Bill of Rights and Constitutional protections to encroach on those rights by trying to
 14 collect direct taxes because direct taxes then **must** be apportioned to each state as required under Article 1, Section 2,
 15 Clause 3, and Article 1, Section 9, Clause 4 of the Constitution. This is consistent with the Supreme Court’s ruling in
 16 Knowlton v. Moore, 178 U.S. 41 (1900):

17 *“Direct taxes bear immediately upon persons, upon the possession and enjoyment of rights; indirect taxes are*
 18 *levied upon the happening of an event as an exchange.”*
 19 *[Knowlton v. Moore, 178 U.S. 41 (1900)]*

20 We now summarize the above findings graphically to make them crystal clear and useful in front of a judge and jury in
 21 court:

22 **Table 4-6: Constitutional rights throughout the United States* (country)**

#	Type of property	Constitutional Rights	Example	Authorities
1	Territories	No	Puerto Rico, Virgin Islands, American Samoa, etc.	1. <i>Downes v. Bidwell</i> , 182 U.S. 244 (1901); 2. <i>M’Culloch v. Maryland</i> , 4 Wheat. 316, 422, 4 L. ed. 579, 605, and in <i>United States v. Gratiot</i> , 14 Pet. 526, 10 L. ed. 573
2	Federal enclaves <u>within</u> states:	NA	NA	NA
2.1	Ceded to federal gov. <u>after</u> joining union	Yes	Federal courthouses	<i>Downes v. Bidwell</i> , 182 U.S. 244 (1901);
2.2	Also enclaves at the time of admission	No	Indian reservations	<i>Downes v. Bidwell</i> , 182 U.S. 244 (1901);
3	Sovereign states	Yes	California, Texas, etc.	<i>Downes v. Bidwell</i> , 182 U.S. 244 (1901);
4	District of Columbia	Yes	District of Columbia	1. <i>Downes v. Bidwell</i> , 182 U.S. 244 (1901). 2. <i>Loughborough v. Blake</i> , 18 U.S. 317, 5 Wheat. 317, 5 L. ed. 98 (1820)
5	Foreign countries (nations)	No	Japan	1. <i>Downes v. Bidwell</i> , 182 U.S. 244 (1901). 2. <i>Cook v. Tait</i> , 265 U.S. 47 (1924) 3. <i>M’Culloch v. Maryland</i> , 4 Wheat. 316, 422, 4 L. ed. 579, 605 (1819) 4. <i>United States v. Gratiot</i> , 14 Pet. 526, 10 L. ed. 573 5. <i>Springville v. Thomas</i> , 166 U.S. 707, 41 L. ed. 1172, 17 Sup. Ct. Rep. 717 (1897)

23 **IMPORTANT:** Those areas listed above where there are no Constitutional rights are
 24 the only areas where direct income taxes under Subtitle A can be applied to individuals
 25 without apportionment and without violating (clauses 1:9:4 and 1:2:3 of) the
 26 Constitution. Everyplace else, it isn’t a tax, but a donation.

1 The federal zone, or federal “United States**”, is the area of land over which the Congress exercises an unrestricted,
 2 exclusive legislative jurisdiction. The Congress, however, does *not* have unrestricted, exclusive legislative jurisdiction over
 3 any of the 50 sovereign states. It is bound by the chains of the Constitution. This point is so very important, it bears
 4 repeating throughout the remaining chapters of this book and it also explains why the use of the word “State” in the Internal
 5 Revenue Code doesn’t by default ([26 U.S.C. §7701\(a\)\(9\)](#) and (10)) mean one of the 50 sovereign states of the union. As in
 6 the apportionment rule for direct taxes and the uniformity rule for indirect taxes, Congress cannot join or divide any of the
 7 50 sovereign states without the explicit approval of the Legislatures of the state(s) involved. This means that Congress
 8 cannot unilaterally delegate such a power to the President. Congress cannot lawfully exercise (nor delegate) a power which
 9 it simply does not have.

10 For further evidence of what constitutes the “federal zone” and a “State” within the IRC, we refer you to the fascinating
 11 analysis found in section 5.2.8 entitled “‘State’ in the Internal Revenue Code means ‘federal State’ and not a Union State”.

12 Lastly, let us carefully clarify the important distinctions between “States”, “territories”, and “states” in the context of
 13 federal statutes to make our analysis crystal clear. Remember that federal “territories” and “States” are synonymous as per
 14 [4 U.S.C. §110\(d\)](#). Keep in mind also that Indian reservations, while considered “sovereign nations” are also federal
 15 “States”:

16 **Table 4-7: Attributes of "State"/"Territory" v. "state"**

#	Attribute	Authority	“State” or “Territory” of the “United States”	“state”/ Union state
1	Federal government has “police powers” (e.g. criminal jurisdiction) here?	Tenth Amendment to U.S. Constitution	Yes	No
2	Constitution Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 jurisdiction?	U.S. v. Bevans, 16 U.S. 336 (1818)	Yes	No
3	“foreign state” relative to the federal government?	Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition definition of “foreign state” and “foreign laws”	No	Yes
4	No “legislative jurisdiction” (federal statutes, like IRC) jurisdiction without state cession?	40 U.S.C. §255	No	Yes
5	Federal courts in the region act under the authority of what Constitutional provision?:	Constitution Articles II and III.	Article II legislative courts (no mandate for trial by jury)	Article III Constitutional courts (mandatory trial by jury)
6	Diversity of citizenship applies here?	28 U.S.C. §1332	No	Yes
7	Citizenship of persons born here:	8 U.S.C. §1401 and 8 U.S.C. §1408	“U.S. citizen”	“U.S. national”
8	Bill of rights (first ten amendments to the U.S. Constitution) applies here?	Downes v. Bidwell, 182 U.S. 244 (1901)	No	Yes
9	Listed in Title 48 as a “Territory or possession”?	Title 48, U.S. Code	Yes	No
10	Local governments here have “sovereign immunity” relative to federal government?	28 U.S.C. §1346(b) Eleventh Amendment to U.S. Const.	No	Yes

17 Your ZIP Code determines which ZIP Code region you live in. ZIP Code regions are federal areas and are part of the
 18 federal zone. The IRS has adopted the ZIP Code regions as IRS regions. If you accept mail that has a ZIP Code on it, you
 19 are treated as though you reside in a federal territory and thus are subject to the IRS and all other municipal laws of the
 20 District of Columbia.

21 **4.9 Police Powers**

22 To fully understand our Constitutional government of balanced and limited powers, you must understand the concept of
 23 “police powers”. First, let’s define the term:

24 *“Police power. An authority conferred by the American constitutional system in the Tenth Amendment, U.S.*
 25 *Const., upon the individual states, and, in turn, delegated to local governments, through which they are enabled*
 26 *to establish a special department of police; adopt such laws and regulations as tend to prevent the commission*

of fraud and crime, and secure generally the comfort, safety, morals, health, and prosperity of the citizens by preserving the public order, preventing a conflict of rights in the common intercourse of the citizens, and insuring to each an uninterrupted enjoyment of all the privileges conferred upon him or her by the general laws.

The power of the State to place restraints on the personal freedom and property rights of persons for the protection of the public safety, health, and morals or the promotion of the public convenience and general prosperity. The police power is subject to limitations of the federal and State constitutions, and especially to the requirement of due process. Police power is the exercise of the sovereign right of a government to promote order, safety, security, health, morals and general welfare within constitutional limits and is an essential attribute of government. *Marshall v. Kansas City, Mo.*, 355 S.W.2d 877, 883.”

[*Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 1156*]

In nearly all cases, “police powers” and “legislative jurisdiction” are synonymous terms. Nearly all “Acts of Congress” are “private laws” or “special laws” that only apply within federal territories and not to states of the Union. We talk about this in greater detail later in section 11.3 and its subsections.

Both state and the federal governments under our Constitutional system possess police powers within their own respective territories:

1. States within their own borders, but generally not on land ceded to the federal government, including any area within the “federal zone”.
2. Federal government to all its territories and possessions and the enclaves that it owns within the union states consisting of lands ceded by the state legislature to the federal government. These areas are called the “federal zone” in this book. The states of the union are not regarded as “territories” of the federal government. Instead, they are the equivalent of sovereign nations who have delegated a portion of their power to the federal government but who collectively reserve sovereignty over that government.

Below is one of many statements made by the Supreme court confirming the limited nature of federal police powers within the sovereign states of the Union:

“By the tenth amendment, ‘the powers not delegated to the United States by the constitution, nor prohibited by it to the states, are reserved to the states, respectively, or to the people.’ Among the powers thus reserved to the several states is what is commonly called the ‘police power,’-that inherent and necessary power, essential to the very existence of civil society, and the safeguard of the inhabitants of the state against disorder, disease, poverty, and crime. ‘The police power belonging to the states in virtue of their general sovereignty,’ said Mr. Justice STORY, delivering the judgment of this court, ‘extends over all subjects within the territorial limits of the states, and has never been conceded to the United States.’ Prigg v. Pennsylvania, 16 Pet. 539, 625. This is well illustrated by the recent adjudications that a statute prohibiting the sale of illuminating oils below a certain fire test is beyond the constitutional power of congress to enact, except so far as it has effect within the United States (as, for instance, in the District of Columbia) and without the limits of any state; but that it is within the constitutional power of a state to pass such a statute, even as to oils manufactured under letters patent from the United States. U. S. v. Dewitt, 9 Wall. 41; Patterson v. Kentucky, 97 U.S. 501. [135 U.S. 100, 128] The police power includes all measures for the protection of the life, the health, the property, and the welfare of the inhabitants, and for the promotion of good order and the public morals. It covers the suppression of nuisances, whether injurious to the public health, like unwholesome trades, or to the public morals, like gambling-houses and lottery tickets. Slaughter-House Cases, 16 Wall. 36, 62, 87; Fertilizing Co. v. Hyde Park, 97 U.S. 659; Phalen v. Virginia, 8 How. 163, 168; Stone v. Mississippi, 101 U.S. 814. This power, being essential to the maintenance of the authority of local government, and to the safety and welfare of the people, is inalienable. As was said by Chief Justice WAITE, referring to earlier decisions to the same effect: ‘No legislature can bargain away the public health or the public morals. The people themselves cannot do it, much less their servants. The supervision of both these subjects of governmental power is continuing in its nature, and they are to be dealt with as the special exigencies of the moment may require. Government is organized with a view to their preservation, and cannot divest itself of the power to provide for them. For this purpose the largest legislative discretion is allowed, and the discretion cannot be parted with any more than the power itself.’ Stone v. Mississippi, 101 U.S. 814, 819. See, also, Butchers’ Union, etc., Co. v. Crescent City, etc., Co., 111 U.S. 746, 753, 4 S. Sup. Ct. Rep. 652; New Orleans Gas Co. v Louisiana Light Co., 115 U.S. 650, 672, 6 S. Sup. Ct. Rep. 252; New Orleans v. Houston, 119 U.S. 265, 275, 7 S. Sup. Ct. Rep. 198.”

[*Leisy v. Hardin, 135 U.S. 100 (1890)*]

An example of the exercise of police powers is the enactment of criminal laws to protect citizens and inhabitants from crime and other injurious activities. Exercise of police powers encompasses such things as the regulation of intoxicating

liquors, public health, vaccination programs, healthcare, and many other subjects. Within the federal government, the function of the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, and Firearms (BATF), for instance, is to exercise general police powers within the federal zone only over alcohol, tobacco, and firearms and this power is conferred under Title 27 of the U.S. code. At one time, federal police powers over alcohol extended into states of the Union under the Eighteenth Amendment, but this amendment was subsequently repealed with the passage of the 21st Amendment. The Drug Enforcement Agency, or DEA, has exclusive federal jurisdiction over drug trafficking inside the federal zone. These federal agencies, however, have no jurisdiction over such activities that are exclusively within a state. The minute that such activities cross state borders and become interstate commerce, these agencies obtain jurisdiction under the Commerce Clause found in the Constitution under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 3.

In some cases, a delegation of authority to enforce state criminal or tax laws may occur by the federal government, whereby federal legislation is enacted to permit state laws to apply to federal enclaves within a state. An example of such legislation is the Buck Act of 1940, codified in 5 U.S.C. §105-113. This Act gave authority to the states of the union to impose state income taxes on business activities exclusively within federal enclaves located in the states. This Act, in fact, is the exclusive authority for the income and sales tax laws in most states. That's right, income and sales taxes in most states are only authorized inside the federal zone on nonresidents of each state!

The important thing that you need to know about police powers is that they are required in order to enforce tax laws. You can't outlaw something by passing a criminal statute against it unless you have police powers within the region you are trying to tax. An example of such criminal statutes are 26 U.S.C. §§7201-7217, which are the criminal provisions of the Internal Revenue Code that most people in the states of the union "think" apply to them but in fact do not. Why? Because the federal government has no police powers within the borders of the states unless they are exercising powers specifically granted to them by the Constitution. Even the Supreme Court agrees with this conclusion:

"It should never be held that Congress intends to supersede or by its legislation suspend the exercise of the police powers of the States, even when it may do so, unless its purpose to effect that result is clearly manifested."
[Reid v. Colorado, [187 U.S. 137](#), 148 (1902)]

"The principle thus applicable has been frequently stated. It is that the Congress may circumscribe its regulation and occupy a limited field, and that the intention to supersede the exercise by the State of its authority as to matters not covered by the federal legislation is not to be implied unless the Act of Congress fairly interpreted is in conflict with the law of the State. See Savage v. Jones, 225 U.S. 501, 533."
[Atchison, T. & S. F. R. Co. v. Railroad Commission, [283 U.S. 380, 392-393](#) (1931)]

"If Congress is authorized to act in a field, it should manifest its intention clearly. It will not be presumed that a federal statute was intended to supersede the exercise of the power of the state unless there is a clear manifestation of intention to do so. The exercise of federal supremacy is not lightly to be presumed."
[Schwartz v. Texas, [344 U.S. 199](#), 202-203 (1952)]

"While states are not sovereign in true sense of term but only quasi sovereign, yet in respect of all powers reserved to them they are supreme and independent of federal government as that government within its sphere is independent of the states."

"It is no longer open to question that the general government, unlike the states, Hammer v. Dagenhart, 247 U.S. 251, 275, 38 S.Ct. 529, 3 A.L.R. 649, Ann.Cas.1918E 724, possesses no inherent power in respect of the internal affairs of the states; and emphatically not with regard to legislation." [Carter v. Carter Coal Co., [298 U.S. 238](#), 56 S.Ct. 855 (1936)]

With regard to that last quote, the Internal Revenue Code is classified as "legislation". The ability to directly tax natural persons within the 50 states of the union was never conferred upon the federal government anywhere in the Constitution, Sixteenth Amendment or otherwise. As a matter of fact, in Chapter 3, we cited several Supreme Court rulings stating specifically that the Sixteenth Amendment "conferred no new powers of taxation" (see *Stanton v. Baltic Mining*, 240 U.S. 103 (1916) and many others). We will reiterate this fact for you later in section 5.4.2 and we will also show in section 5.1.1

1 that the *only* type of taxation authorized by the Constitution within states of the Union is indirect excise taxes on privileged
 2 artificial entities such as corporations and partnerships who are involved *only* in foreign or interstate commerce under Art.
 3 1, Section 8, Clause 3 of the U.S. Constitution.

4 To summarize the findings of this section on police powers, we will present in the table below a list of definitions. This
 5 table clarifies the distinctions between the various terms relating to “States”, “states”, and “United States” in the various
 6 state and federal laws so that the impact of the separation of police powers between federal and state governments can be
 7 clearly seen in a meaningful way:

8 **Table 4-8: Summary of the meaning of various terms**

Law	Federal constitution	Federal statutes	Federal regulations	State constitutions	State statutes	State regulations
Author	Union States/ "We The People"	Federal Government		"We The People"	State Government	
"state"	Foreign country	Union state	Union state	Other Union state or federal government	Other Union state or federal government	Other Union state or federal government
"State"	Union state	Federal state	Federal state	Union state	Union state	Union state
"in this State" or "in the State" ¹¹⁰	NA	NA	NA	NA	Federal enclave within state	Federal enclave within state
"State" ¹¹¹ (State Revenue and taxation code only)	NA	NA	NA	NA	Federal enclave within state	Federal enclave within state
"several States"	Union states collectively ¹¹²	Federal "States" collectively	Federal "States" collectively	Federal "States" collectively	Federal "States" collectively	Federal "States" collectively
"United States"	states of the Union collectively	Federal United States**	Federal United States**	United States* the country	Federal United States**	Federal United States**

9 **4.10 "Resident", "Residence", and "Domicile"**

10 We are all the time being asked "are you a resident of the state of Illinois?" (or whatever State) and we always answer
 11 "yes". But are we really? Let us take a much closer look and see.

12 Black's Law Dictionary 6th edition, page 1309:

13 ***Resident.** "Any person who occupies a dwelling within the State, has a present intent to remain within the State*
 14 *for a period of time, and manifests the genuineness of that intent by establishing an ongoing physical presence*
 15 *within the State together with indicia that his presence within the State is something other than merely*
 16 *transitory in nature. The word "resident" when used as a noun means a dweller, habitant or occupant; one who*
 17 *resides or dwells in a place for a period of more, or less, duration; it signifies one having a residence, or one*
 18 *who resides or abides. Hanson v. P.A. Peterson Home Ass'n, 35 Ill.App2d 134, 182 N.E.2d 237, 240*
 19 *[Underlines added]*

¹¹⁰ See California Revenue and Taxation Code, section 6017 at <http://www.leginfo.ca.gov/cgi-bin/displaycode?section=rtc&group=06001-07000&file=6001-6024>

¹¹¹ See California Revenue and Taxation Code, section 17018 at <http://www.leginfo.ca.gov/cgi-bin/displaycode?section=rtc&group=17001-18000&file=17001-17039.1>

¹¹² See, for instance, U.S. Constitution Article IV, Section 2.

1 Word "resident" has many meanings in law, largely determined by statutory context in which it is used. [Kelm
2 v. Carlson, C.A.Ohio, 473, F2d 1267, 1271][Underline added]

3 Did you notice the distinct use of "the State" in the above definition? That was no accident. Below are a few clues to its
4 meaning from federal statutes, which is where the above definition says we should look:

5 [26 U.S.C. Sec. 7701\(a\)\(10\): State](#)

6 *The term "State" shall be construed to include the District of Columbia, where such construction is necessary to*
7 *carry out provisions of this title.*

8
9 [8 U.S.C. Sec. 1101\(a\)\(36\): State \[naturalization\]](#)

10 *The term "State" includes the District of Columbia, Puerto Rico, Guam, and the Virgin Islands of the United*
11 *States.*

12
13 *TITLE 4 - FLAG AND SEAL, SEAT OF GOVERNMENT, AND THE STATES*

14 *CHAPTER 4 - THE STATES*

15 [Sec. 110. Same; definitions](#)

16 *(d) The term "State" includes any Territory or possession of the United States.*

17 The above cites are definitions of "State" from federal law, but even most state law agrees with this definition! Below is
18 the California Revenue and Taxation Code definition of "State":

19 *6017. "In this State" or "in the State" means within the exterior [outside] limits of the [Sovereign] state of*
20 *California and includes [only] all territory within these limits owned by or ceded to the United States*

21 *17018. "State" includes the District of Columbia, and the possessions of the United States.*
22 *[which don't include the 50 sovereign states but do include federal areas within those states]]*

23 The sovereign 50 Union states are NOT territories or possessions of the "United States". The states are sovereign over their
24 own territories. The "State" mentioned above in the California Revenue and Taxation Code is a federal enclave within the
25 exterior boundaries of the California Republic. People living within these areas are "residents" under the Internal Revenue
26 Code and in that condition, they live in the "federal zone".

27 The only type of "resident" defined in the Internal Revenue Code is a "resident alien", as demonstrated below:

28 [26 U.S.C. §7701\(b\)\(1\)\(A\) Resident alien](#)

29 *(b) Definition of resident alien and nonresident alien*

30 *(1) In general*

31 *For purposes of this title (other than subtitle B) -*

32 *(A) Resident alien*

33 *An alien individual shall be treated as a resident of the United States with respect to any calendar*
34 *year if (and only if) such individual meets the requirements of clause (i), (ii), or (iii):*

35 *(i) Lawfully admitted for permanent residence*

36 *Such individual is a lawful permanent resident of the United States at any time during such*
37 *calendar year.*

38 *(ii) Substantial presence test*

39 *Such individual meets the substantial presence test of paragraph (3).*

40 *(iii) First year election*

41 *Such individual makes the election provided in paragraph (4).*

42 Therefore, the terms "resident", "alien", and "resident alien" are all synonymous terms within the Internal Revenue Code.

QUESTION FOR DOUBTERS: If you believe we are wrong, then please show us a definition of the term “resident” within either the Internal Revenue Code or the implementing regulations that includes “citizens of the United States” as defined under 8 U.S.C. §1401. There simply isn’t one! You are not free to “presume” or “assume” that “citizens of the United States” are also “residents” without the authority of a law that authorizes it. To make this assumption in a court of law would violate our right to “due process or law”, because “presumption” or “assumption” of anything in the legal realm is a violation of due process. Everything must be proven.

1 The only way you can come under the jurisdiction of the Internal Revenue Code is to be a “U.S. person” and to meet one or
2 more of the following two criterias below:

3 1. A “U.S. person” residing on or BEING federal property or situated inside the “federal zone” as defined under 26
4 U.S.C. §7701(a)(30):

5 [TITLE 26 > Subtitle F > CHAPTER 79 > Sec. 7701.](#)
6 [Sec. 7701. - Definitions](#)

7
8 (a)(30) *United States person*

9
10 The term “United States person” means -

11 (A) a [citizen](#) or [resident](#) of the United States,

12 (B) a domestic partnership,

13 (C) a domestic [corporation](#),

14 (D) any estate (other than a foreign estate, within the meaning of paragraph (31)), and

15 (E) any trust if -

16 (i) a court within the United States is able to exercise primary supervision over the administration of the
17 trust, and

18 (ii) one or more United States persons have the authority to control all substantial decisions of the trust.

19 The above “U.S. person” is technically either an “alien” or a federal corporation only. A corporation can also be
20 an “alien” if it was incorporated outside of federal jurisdiction but has a presence inside the federal zone. Under
21 26 CFR § 301.6109-1, these are the only entities who are required to provide any kind of identifying number on
22 their tax return! That regulation requires the furnishing of a “Taxpayer Identification Number” for these legal
23 “persons”, but 26 CFR §301.6109-1(d)(3) says that Social Security Numbers are not to be treated as “Taxpayer
24 Identification Numbers”. Consequently, natural persons with a Social Security Number do not have to provide
25 any kind of identifying number on their return because they aren’t the proper subject of Subtitle A of the Internal
26 Revenue Code. See section 5.4.12 later for further details on this scandal.

27 2. An “alien” under 26 CFR §1.1-1(a)(2)(ii) or 26 CFR §1.1441-1(c)(3)

28 Under item 1 above, the term “citizen of the United States” is used in describing a “U.S. person”, but that “person” is
29 technically only a federal corporation, as confirmed by the following:

30 1. The legal encyclopedia, Corpus Juris Secundum confirms that corporations are treated in law as “citizens of the
31 United States”:

32 “A corporation is a citizen, [resident](#), or inhabitant of the state or country by or under the laws of which it was
33 created, and of that state or country only.”

34 [19 Corpus Juris Secundum, Corporations, §886]

35 2. The definition of “income” as including only “corporate profit” under our Constitution limits the entire Internal
36 Revenue Code to corporations only. See section 5.6.5 later for complete details on this subject.

37 Natural persons (people) who are “citizens of the United States” are those born only in the District of Columbia or federal
38 territories under the provisions of 8 U.S.C. §1401. Federal territories are the only “States” within the Internal Revenue
39 Code. These “citizens of the United States” cannot legally be classified as “residents”/“aliens” under the Internal Revenue
40 Code and are not authorized by the code to “elect” to be treated as one either. The reason is because the purpose of law is
41 to protect, and a person cannot elect to lose their constitutional rights and protection, even if they want to! However, by

1 filing an IRS form 1040 or 1040A, they in effect make this illegal election anyway, and the IRS looks the other way and
 2 does not prosecute such unintentional fraud because they benefit financially from it. The pronouncements of the U.S.
 3 Supreme Court also identify this kind of constructive fraud on the part of the IRS as an invalid election if this unwitting
 4 choice did not involve fully informed consent. Did you know that you were agreeing to be treated as an “alien” by the IRS
 5 when you signed and sent in your first Form 1040 or 1040A?:

6 *"Waivers of Constitutional rights not only must be voluntary, but must be knowing, intelligent acts done with*
 7 *sufficient awareness of the relevant circumstances and likely consequences."*

8 *[Brady v. U.S., 397 U.S. 742 (1970)]*

9 The reason Constitutional rights are being waived is because people who are “residents”/“aliens” within the federal zone
 10 have no constitutional rights in law. The only way to avoid this involuntary election is to instead either file nothing or to
 11 file a 1040NR form with the IRS instead of a 1040 or 1040A form. You will learn starting in the next section that people
 12 who are born in states of the Union are not “citizens of the United States” under 8 U.S.C. §1401, but are instead the
 13 equivalent of “non-citizen nationals of the United States” under 8 U.S.C. §1408 who are in fact “nonresident aliens” under
 14 the Internal Revenue Code who should file only the 1040NR form if they file anything with the IRS. The rules for electing
 15 to be treated as a “resident” or “resident alien” are found in IRS Publication 54: Tax Guide for U.S. citizens and Resident
 16 Aliens Abroad. See the following sections for amplification on this subject: 5.5.2, 5.5.3, and 5.4.12.

IMPORTANT: If you were born in a state of the Union, NEVER, EVER file a 1040, 1040A, or 1040EZ form unless
 you want to throw your Constitutional rights in the toilet! If you determine that you must file a tax form with the
 IRS, then only send in a 1040NR form in order to preserve your status as a “national of the United States” and a
 “nonresident alien” who is outside of federal jurisdiction! Nonresident aliens cannot be penalized under the
 Internal Revenue Code because they don’t reside there! When you send in the 1040NR form, make sure to change
 the perjury statement at the end to put yourself outside of federal jurisdiction as follows:

*"I declare under penalty of perjury under the laws of the United States of America in
 accordance with 28 U.S.C. §1746(1) that the foregoing facts are true, correct, and complete to
 the best of my knowledge and ability, but only when litigated with a jury in a court of a state of
 the Union and not a federal court."*

You will learn later in section 5.4.5 that the IRS has no legal authority to institute penalties against natural persons,
 but they will try to do it anyway. Since IRS likes to try to illegally penalize people for changing the “jurat” or
 perjury statement at the end of the 1040NR form, then you can accomplish the equivalent of physically modifying
 the words in the perjury statement by redefining the words in the statement or redefining the whole statement in it's
 entirety in an attached letter. Physically changing the words in the statement is the only thing IRS incorrectly
 “thinks” they can penalize for, and especially if the return was completed and submitted outside of federal
 jurisdiction in a state of the Union and the perjury statement accurately reflects that fact. Remember that crimes
 can only be punished based on where they are committed, and if your perjury statement reflects the fact that you
 are outside of federal jurisdiction, then IRS can’t penalize you no matter how hard they try or how many threats
 they make.

17 So being a “resident of the State” from the above description makes you a nonresident alien in your own state liable for
 18 state income taxes! And because as a “resident of the State” you are presumed to reside inside the federal zone, you don’t
 19 have any constitutional rights according to the U.S. supreme Court. Listen to the dissenting opinion from Justice Harlan in
 20 the case of *Downes v. Bidwell*, 182 U.S. 244 (1901) which ruled that the federal zone doesn’t have constitutional
 21 protections:

22 *"The idea prevails with some, indeed it has found expression in arguments at the bar, that we have in this*
 23 *country substantially two national governments; one to be maintained under the Constitution, with all of its*
 24 *restrictions; the other to be maintained by Congress outside the independently of that instrument, by exercising*
 25 *such powers [of absolutism] as other nations of the earth are accustomed to.. I take leave to say that, if the*
 26 *principles thus announced should ever receive the sanction of a majority of this court, a radical and*
 27 *mischievous change in our system of government will result. We will, in that event, pass from the era of*

constitutional liberty guarded and protected by a written constitution into an era of legislative absolutism. It will be an evil day for American liberty if the theory of a government outside the supreme law of the land finds lodgment in our constitutional jurisprudence. No higher duty rests upon this court than to exert its full authority to prevent all violation of the principles of the Constitution."

[Downes v. Bidwell, 182 U.S. 244 (1901)]

When you accept the false notion that you are "liable" for federal income taxes under Subtitle A of the Internal Revenue Code and subsequently file a 1040 tax return (bad idea!), you are admitting under penalty of perjury that you are an **alien** "individual" of your own country (not a "national" or "citizen" of the United States) who lives in the federal zone. The only definitions of "individual" found in 26 CFR §1.1441-1(c)(3) and 26 CFR § 1.1-1(a)(2)(ii) confirm that the only people who are "individuals" in the context of federal income taxes are "aliens"/"residents" residing in the federal "United States" or "nonresident aliens". That lie or mistake on the tax return you never should have submitted to begin with caused you to become the equivalent of a "virtual inhabitant" of the federal zone in law and from that point on you are treated as such by both the federal government and the state government, even if you don't want to be and never intended to do this! Here is more proof showing that even if you weren't located in the federal zone when you submitted the false 1040 return, you gave your tacit permission to be treated as a resident of the District of Columbia:

TITLE 26 > Subtitle F > CHAPTER 79 > Sec. 7701.

Sec. 7701. – Definitions

(a)(39) Persons residing outside [the federal] United States

If any **citizen or resident of the United States** does not reside in (and is not found in) any United States judicial district, such citizen or resident shall be treated as residing in the District of Columbia for purposes of any provision of this title relating to -

(A) jurisdiction of courts, or

(B) enforcement of summons.

What the above means is that if you filed a 1040 or 1040A form, you are telling the federal government that you are an "alien"/"resident" who lives in the federal zone and consequently, the courts will treat you like you live in the District of Columbia, which we call the District of Criminals. You are living in the King's Castle and you better bow down to the king, slave, by paying "tribute" with all your earnings! Important about the above is the fact that "U.S. nationals" and "nonresident aliens" are not included in the above, because they are outside the jurisdiction of the federal courts! One more big reason why you don't want to be a "U.S. citizen" in the context of federal statutes such as 8 U.S.C. §1401! That false 1040 tax return you submitted, which said "U.S. individual" at the top, became a contract with criminals from the "District of Criminals" (the "D.C." in "Washington D.C.") to take yourself out of the Constitutional Republic and out of the protections of the Bill of Rights. You united with or "married" Babylon the Great Harlot mentioned in Rev. 17 and 18 and you live where she lives: inside of a totalitarian socialist democracy devoid of constitutional rights and predicated solely on the love of money and luxury. You declared yourself to be an "employee" of the Harlot, and the false W-4 form you submitted proves that, because the upper left corner says "employee", and the only people who are "employees" as defined in 26 U.S.C. §3401(c) work for the federal government. You have joined the "Matrix" and become a socialist federal serf. Welcome, comrade!"

"You were bought at a price; **do not become slaves of men** [and remember that government is made up of men]." [1 Cor. 7:23, Bible, NKJV]

Who says we don't live in a police state, and you didn't even know it until now, did you? Can you see how insidious this lawyer deception is? The American people and our media are asleep at the wheel folks!...and it's going to take a lot more to fix than blind and ignorant patriotism and putting an idiotic flag or bumper sticker on your car. That's right: if you are a "resident of the United States" or of "the State", then you're a federal serf and a ward of the socialist government who is nonresident to his own state! You better to do what you're told, pay your taxes, and **shut up, BOY, or we'll confiscate all your property, give you 40 lashes and send you to bed without dinner or a blanket.** Watch out!

1 Now we'll examine and compare the word "domicile" to put it into context within our discussion:

2 **domicile.** *A person's legal home. That place where a man has his true, fixed, and permanent home and*
 3 *principal establishment, and to which whenever he is absent he has the intention of returning. Smith v. Smith,*
 4 *206 Pa.Super. 310m 213 A.2d 94. Generally, physical presence within a state and the intention to make it one's*
 5 *home are the requisites of establishing a "domicile" therein. The permanent residence of a person or the place*
 6 *to which he intends to return even though he may actually reside elsewhere. A person may have more than one*
 7 *residence but only one domicile. The legal domicile of a person is important since it, rather than the actual*
 8 *residence, often controls the jurisdiction of the taxing authorities and determines where a person may exercise*
 9 *the privilege of voting and other legal rights and privileges. The established, fixed, permanent, or ordinary*
 10 *dwellingplace or place of residence of a person, as distinguished from his temporary and transient, though*
 11 *actual, place of residence. It is his legal residence, as distinguished from his temporary place of abode; or his*
 12 *home, as distinguished from a place to which business or pleasure may temporarily call him. See also Abode;*
 13 *Residence.*

14 "Citizenship," "habitancy," and "residence" are severally words which in particular cases may mean precisely
 15 the same as "domicile," while in other uses may have different meanings.

16 "Residence" signifies living in particular locality while "domicile" means living in that locality with intent to
 17 make it a fixed and permanent home. Schreiner v. Schreiner, Tex.Civ.App., 502 S.W.2d 840, 843.

18 For purpose of federal diversity jurisdiction, "citizenship" and "domicile" are synonymous. Hendry v. Masonite
 19 Corp., C.A.Miss., 455 F.2d 955.
 20 [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 485]

21 Note the word "permanent" used in several places above. Note also that in the above definition that the taxes one pays are
 22 based on their "domicile" and "residence". Here is what it says again:

23 "The legal domicile of a person is important since it, rather than the actual residence, often controls the
 24 jurisdiction of the taxing authorities and determines where a person may exercise the privilege of voting and
 25 other legal rights and privileges."

26 This is very important. Now for the \$64 question: "If you are a Christian and God says you are a citizen of heaven and not
 27 of earth, then where is your permanent domicile?" The answer is that it is in heaven, and not anywhere on earth:

28 "For our citizenship is in heaven, from which we also eagerly wait for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ"--
 29 Philippians 3:20

30 "Now, therefore, you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and members
 31 of the household of God." --Ephesians 2:19, Bible, NKJV

32 "These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off were assured of them,
 33 embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth." --Hebrews 11:13

34 "Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul..." --1
 35 Peter 2:11

36 Furthermore, if "the wages of sin is death" (see Romans 6:23) and you are guaranteed to die eventually and soon because of
 37 your sin, then can anything here on earth be called "permanent" in the context of God's eternal plan? If you look in the
 38 book of Revelations, you will find that the earth will be completely transformed when Jesus returns to become a new and
 39 different earth, so can our present earth even be called "permanent"? The answer is NO. Therefore, as a Christian, you
 40 cannot claim to have a "domicile" or a "residence" anywhere here on the present earth without committing idolatry and
 41 blaspheming God. To admit that your physical or spiritual "domicile" or your "residence" is here on earth and/or is
 42 "permanent" is to admit that there is no God and no Heaven and that life ends both spiritually and physically when you die!
 43 You are also admitting that the only thing even close to being permanent is the short life that you have while you are here.
 44 So as a Christian, you can't have a "domicile" or a "residence" anywhere on the present earth from a legal perspective
 45 without blaspheming God. Consequently, it also means that you can't be subject to taxes based on having a "domicile" or
 46 "residence" in any earthly jurisdiction: state or federal. You are a child of God and you are His "bondservant" while you
 47 are here.

48 "For this is the will of God, that by doing good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men— as free,
 49 yet not using liberty as a cloak for vice, but as bondservants of God." [1 Peter 2:15-16, Bible, NKJV]

1 You are “just passing through”. This life is only a temporary test to see whether you will evidence by your works the
 2 saving faith you have which will allow you to gain entrance into Heaven and the new earth God will create for you to dwell
 3 in mentioned in Rev. 21:1.

4 The definition of “domicile” above establishes also that “intent” is an important means of determining domicile as follows:

5 *“...the place to which he intends to return even though he may actually reside elsewhere”. [Black’s Law
 6 Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 485, under “domicile”]*

7 As a Christian, the only place you should want to reside in or return to is heaven, because the present earth is a temporal
 8 place full of sin and death that is ruled by Satan. Your proper biblical “intent”, should therefore be to return to heaven and
 9 to leave the present corrupted earth as soon as possible and as God in His sovereignty allows. God has prepared a mansion
 10 for you to live in with the Father, and that mansion cannot be part of the present corrupted earth:

11 *“In My Father’s house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for
 12 you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself; that where I am,
 13 there you may be also. And where I go you know, and the way you know.” [John 14:2-4, Bible, NKJV]*

14 So why don’t they teach these things in school? Remember who runs the public schools?: Your wonderful state
 15 government. Do you think they are going to volunteer to clue you in to the fact that you’re the sovereign in charge of the
 16 government and don’t have to put up with being their slave, which is what their legal treachery has made you into? The
 17 only kind of volunteering they want you to do is to volunteer to be subject to their corrupt laws and become a “taxpayer”,
 18 which is a person who voluntarily enlisted to become a whore for the government as you will find out in chapter 5. Even
 19 many of our Christian schools have lost sight of the great commission and awesome responsibility they have to teach our
 20 young people the profound truths in the Bible and this book in a way that honors and glorifies God and allows them to be
 21 the salt and light of the world.

22 There is much which can be said about our earlier legally acceptable definition of the term “resident” from Black’s Law
 23 Dictionary, but one thing which is perfectly clear, nowhere does it say a word about a “resident” being a Citizen, of
 24 anything. As a matter of fact if you are not a citizen, then there is only one other thing you can be, and that is an alien. It
 25 does not matter what other name they might decide to call it. Here then is an example of its usage:

26 Let’s say, for whatever reason, you move to France for a time. First, it is obvious you are an alien to France. Right? After
 27 having moved to France you then become a resident of France.

28 Why are you a resident of France? Because you are now living there, but you still are not a citizen. Why are you not a
 29 citizen of France? Because you are an alien. So, it goes that a resident is an alien. Why? Because he is not a citizen,
 30 hence the term resident alien. Get it?

31 Now, the question becomes: what are you when you answer to the question “are you a resident of the state of Illinois?”
 32 Like we do when we go to the Motor Vehicle Dept. Are you not declaring that you are an alien? Well that is exactly what
 33 you are doing. Why is this important? Because, only Citizens of the several states of the Union have Constitutional Rights,
 34 aliens do not. [Whoops]

35 So, if you are a Citizen of any one of the several states of the Union, then you are not an alien and therefore not a
 36 “resident”. You then have your full Constitutional Rights, which includes the Right to “Liberty”, which is the Right to
 37 travel FREELY amongst the several States, untaxed and unlicensed.

38 You simply can not regulate a Right. If you could it wouldn't be a Right, it would be a privilege. Our Creator granted these
 39 Rights to us, and no man or government can legislate or regulate an (unalienable) Right. The government can only legislate
 40 and regulate the benefits offered by their statute-laws, which can only offer immunities and privileges, but not Rights.
 41 Hence all the trickery to coerce you into saying you are something you are not.

42 We must stop looking to Webster's Dictionary for the legal definitions. Buy a copy of Black's Law Dictionary – it is there
 43 that you will find a new world of meaning. The biggest trick of all has been to redefine common, every day terms to mean
 44 something else within the statute-laws, and you didn't know they did it [to you], did you.. that is, until you read this book?

1 “The sovereignty has been transferred from one man to the collective body of the people - and he who before
 2 was a 'subject of the king' is now 'a citizen of the State'.” [State v. Manuel, North Carolina, Vol. 20, Page 121
 3 (1838)] [Underline added]

4 Think about it. The Constitution talks about Citizens. Why then do state governments feel the need to change it to
 5 “residents”? It just seems that to be clear and unambiguous, they would have used the same words and phrases already
 6 understood and accepted and stated as part of the Constitution and the Bill of Rights.

7 Oh, by the way, here is the definition of a resident alien:

8 *Black’s Law Dictionary 6th edition, page 1309:*

9 Resident alien. “One, not yet a citizen of this country, who has come into the country from another with the
 10 intent to abandon his former citizenship and to reside here.” [Underlines added]

11 Remember the phrase “transitory in nature” in the above definition of a resident? The nature part is the Creator. As a child
 12 of God we are merely traveling through life (“Liberty”), hopefully on our way to the great beyond, which is the transitory
 13 part. But, if you claim to be a “resident” you are not a child of God and therefore *not* a Sovereign Citizen of the State, and
 14 therefore an alien of God, who has NO CONSTITUTIONAL RIGHTS. This is accomplished when we accept the term
 15 “person” as underlined in the above definition of the term “resident”, and as you will also come to realize, this too is a trick
 16 to coerce you into subjection to government regulation.

17 Below is a table that succinctly summarizes everything we have learned in this section in tabular form:

18 **Table 4-9: Residency summary**

	“Individuals” (see 26 CFR § 1.1441-1(c)(3))	
	“Alien” (see 26 CFR § 1.1441-1(c)(3)(i))	“Nonresident alien” (see 26 CFR § 1.1441-1(c)(3)(ii) and 26 U.S.C. §7701(b)(1)(B))
“citizen of the United States” (see 8 U.S.C. §1401)	“citizen” may unknowingly elect to be treated as an “alien” by filing 1040, 1040A, or 1040EZ form. This election, however, is <i>not</i> authorized by any statute or regulation, and consequently, the IRS is <i>not</i> authorized to process such a return! It amounts to constructive fraud for a “citizen” to file as an “alien”, which is what submitting a 1040 or 1040A form does.	No “citizen of the United States” can be a “nonresident alien”, nor is he authorized under the I.R.C. to “elect” to become one. Likewise, no “nonresident alien” is authorized by the I.R.C. to elect to become a “citizen of the United States” under 8 U.S.C. §1401.
“resident” (not defined anywhere in the Internal Revenue Code)	All “residents” are “aliens”. “Resident”, “resident alien”, and “alien” are equivalent terms.	A “nonresident alien” may elect to be treated as an “alien” and a “resident” under the provisions of 26 U.S.C. §6013(g) or (h).

19 **4.11 Citizenship**

20 “*Nobody can deny that the question of citizenship in a nation is of the most vital importance. It is a precious*
 21 *heritage, as well as an inestimable acquisition;*” [U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark, 169 U.S. 649 (1898)]

22 Citizenship is something that very few Americans fully understand. We’ll therefore devote the next twelve subsections to
 23 covering this most important subject. Before we begin, let us clarify some important aspects about citizenship in general,
 24 whether it be state or federal. First of all, citizenship results directly from a combination of two coinciding and interacting
 25 factors: domicile and intent. In order to legally be a “citizen”, we must simultaneously be domiciled within the jurisdiction
 26 of a political body and do so with the *specific intent* of becoming a “citizen” of that political body. Here is how one early
 27 federal court describes it:

1 “The fourteenth amendment does not make a resident in a state a citizen of such state, unless he intends, by
2 residence therein, to become a citizen.”

3 “‘Citizenship’ and ‘residence,’ as has often been declared by the courts, are not convertible terms. *Parker v.*
4 *Overman* 18 How. 141; *Robertson v. Cease*, 97 U.S. 648; *Grace v. American Cent. Ins. Co.*, 109 U.S. 283; S.C.
5 3 Sup.Ct. Rep. 207; *Prentiss v. Barton*, 1 Brock. 389. Citizenship is a status or condition, and is the result of
6 both act and intent. An adult person cannot become a citizen of a state by simply intending to, nor does any
7 one become such citizen by mere residence. The residence and the intent must co-exist and correspond; and
8 though, under ordinary circumstances, the former may be sufficient evidence of the latter, it is not
9 conclusive, and the contrary may always be shown; and when the question of citizenship turns on the
10 intention with which a person has resided in a particular state, his own testimony, under ordinary
11 circumstances, is entitled to great weight on the point.

12 [...]

13 “But, certainly, it was not the intention of the [Fourteenth] amendment to make any citizen of the United States
14 a citizen of any particular state against his will, in which the exigencies of his business, his social relations or
15 obligations, or other cause, might require his presence for a greater or less length of time, without any intention
16 on his part to become such citizen.

17 “The better opinion seems to be that a citizen of the United States is, under the amendment, *prima facie* a
18 citizen of the state wherein he resides, and cannot arbitrarily be excluded therefrom by such state, but that he
19 does not become a citizen of the state against his will, and contrary to his purpose and intention to retain an
20 already acquired citizenship elsewhere. The amendment is a restraining on the power of the state, but not on
21 the right of the person to choose and maintain his citizenship or domicile; but it protects him in the exercise of
22 that right by making him a citizen of that state in which he may choose to reside with such intention. In
23 *Robertson v. Cease*, 97 U.S. 648, the court held that, for the purpose of giving the jurisdiction to the circuit
24 court, an allegation that a party is a resident of a particular state is not equivalent to an allegation that he is a
25 citizen thereof, for the reason, as suggested by Mr. Justice Harlan, that, even under the amendment, mere
26 residence in a state does not necessarily or conclusively prove one to be a citizen thereof. And if an allegation
27 of residence in a state is not necessarily, even under the amendment, the equivalent of an allegation of
28 citizenship, then the mere fact of residence in a state is not necessarily the equivalent of citizenship.” [*Sharon*
29 *v. Hill*, 26 F.337 (1885), *Emphasis added*]

30 The most important aspect of the citizenship equation above is *intent* and the reason there must be intent is because
31 citizenship must result from a voluntary and free choice. There is a lot of needless contention in the freedom movement
32 revolving around a misunderstanding of this fundamental issue of the voluntary nature of citizenship. People in the
33 freedom movement argue all the time about being “subject to the jurisdiction of the United States” and how the Fourteenth
34 Amendment **forced** them to become “citizens of the United States” as defined in section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment.
35 This is all **hogwash** if you ask us, because you are entitled by law to acquire and maintain whatever citizenship status you
36 choose as an adult and can voluntarily renounce whatever aspects of your citizenship that you don’t want without
37 the consent of your government, as long as you properly notify them of your choice with the appropriate forms and
38 correspondence.¹¹³ The bottom line is that you can be whatever type of citizen you choose so its meaningless to argue that
39 the government **forced** you to do anything or invaded your rights. The ability to choose one’s citizenship status, as a matter
40 of fact, is the essence of what it means to live in a free country. The only basis that people have to complain about in the
41 context of citizenship is usually that their relative ignorance about citizenship issues has eliminated choices that they
42 thought they were entitled to by right, and you have no one to blame but yourself for that problem.

43 Citizenship cannot be compelled and cannot be either accepted or expatriated under duress, because it amounts to a
44 personal commitment of allegiance to a political body. Those who are minors or mentally incompetent are technically
45 unable to legally make such an informed and voluntary choice to have allegiance. Consequently, the citizenship of minors
46 who are traveling with their parents or family is legally “presumed” to be the same as that of their parents. However, one
47 important exception to this rule is that for the purposes of federal diversity jurisdiction, citizenship and domicile are
48 equivalent:

49 “For purpose of federal diversity jurisdiction, “citizenship” and “domicile” are synonymous.” [*Hendry v.*
50 *Masonite Corp.*, 455 F.2d 955 (1972)]

51 Based on what we just learned, if we simply reside somewhere but do not intend to be a “citizen”, then we are considered to
52 be an “alien” where we are living and a “citizen” in the state we “intend” to live. For instance, if we are citizens of

¹¹³ See *Savorgnan v. United States*, 338 U.S. 491 (1950).

1 California but not a “citizen of the United States” and then we take temporary employment in Arizona but intend to remain
 2 California citizens, then we are “aliens” in Arizona and “citizens” in California so far as our state citizenship.
 3 Understanding this critical distinction will become important in later sections.

4 After reading about the “federal zone” and the terms “United States” v. “United States of America” in the last few sections,
 5 you may be a little confused. You may, for instance, now be saying to yourself:

6 *“This is all just a little crazy. How can there be two jurisdictions within the a single federal government? How*
 7 *can these two distinct jurisdictions have their own types of citizenship?”*

8 The fact is, even most of the legal profession doesn't know or fully understand this simple truth. There are those who do
 9 understand this, for as you will come to see and realize, this is part of the scheme to trick us into accepting federal
 10 regulation, which in turn gives them federal jurisdiction over us in the courts. This causes us to be outside the protection of
 11 our Constitutional Rights and destroys the separation of powers between the States and the federal government that our
 12 founding fathers put there for the protection of our liberties.

13 First, we must look at the legal facts of the matter. So, let us take a moment to review the Constitution. For a legally
 14 acceptable copy please refer to the back of Black's Law Dictionary (6th addition) (available at your local library or
 15 courthouse law library and sold at most bookstores).

16 Note the capitalization of the term Citizen all the way through the Constitution and the first thirteen Amendments.
 17 Thereafter (from the Fourteenth Amendment on), it is shown in lower case only. Why? Because, the former is a sovereign
 18 Citizen of the several States (“We the People...”) with Unalienable Rights granted to us by our Creator and protected by the
 19 Constitution, while the latter is a Federal citizen of the United States with legislative Immunities and Privileges only (No
 20 Rights).

21 Our federal government knows and understands this difference and so should we. Again, refer to Black's Law Dictionary,
 22 Sixth Edition, for the definition of the Fourteenth Amendment:

23 *“The Fourteenth Amendment of the Constitution of the United States, ratified in 1868, creates or at least*
 24 *recognizes for the first time a citizenship of the United States, as distinct from that of the states; forbids the*
 25 *making or enforcement by any state of any law abridging the privileges and immunities of citizens of the United*
 26 *States; and secures all “persons” against any state action which results in either deprivation of life, liberty, or*
 27 *property without due process of law....” [Underlines added]*

28 Some people believe that the Fourteenth Amendment created a new and inferior status of citizenship (that of the federal
 29 United States) but this is simply untrue, as you will learn by reading the following subsections. In fact, people born in states
 30 of the Union are and always were “citizens of the United States” under the Constitution and the Fourteenth Amendment
 31 because of the following very significant consideration that most freedom fighters overlook:

32 *The term “United States” in the Constitution means the states of the Union collectively and excludes the federal*
 33 *zone whereas “United States” in federal statutes and “acts of Congress”, including the Internal Revenue Code,*
 34 *means the federal zone.”*

35 Most of the confusion that people have over their citizenship status derives very simply from a difference in meaning
 36 between the term “United States” in the Constitution and “United States” in federal statutes. These two contexts have
 37 completely different and opposing meanings. The context is so very important and is most often overlooked. This
 38 ignorance of the law leads the freedom community to many irrational and unwarranted conclusions that have made it the
 39 deserving object of ridicule and defeat in courts, the media, and political communities for decades. We must eliminate this
 40 confusion and demonstrate unity of purpose and understanding if we are to make any headway in the future to restore our
 41 society to its de jure foundation.

42 The implications of the confusion over the term “United States” appearing in the Constitution and federal statutes leads
 43 people to false and very damaging conclusions, such as the following, none of which are true:

- 1 1. If a person is a “citizen of the United States” under section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment, then they must also be a
2 “citizen of the United States” under 8 U.S.C. §1401 and under the Internal Revenue Code. In fact, these two types of
3 citizens are *completely different* and opposite, even though they have the same name.
- 4 2. If a person lives in a state of the Union, then they reside in the “United States” under the Internal Revenue Code and
5 under Title 8 of the U.S. Code.
- 6 3. Those people who are born outside the “United States” under federal statutes are “U.S. citizens” under 8 U.S.C. §1401.
7 This is simply not true. They are “U.S. Nationals” under 8 U.S.C. §1408(2) because “United States” means the District
8 of Columbia, Puerto Rico, Guam, and the Virgin Islands under 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(38), 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(36), and 8
9 CFR §215.1.

10 **Note:** It is significant that the word “persons” is in quotations. You will come to notice that they use the word “person” in
11 all government (local, state and federal) applications and other documents to insinuate a living being, when in fact they are
12 referring to a legislative entity, a “citizen of the United States”, a “federal citizen”, to be precise, a “Fourteenth Amendment
13 citizen of the United States”. It does not refer to a Sovereign Citizen of any one of the several States. We should all
14 remember this, because it is everywhere and it is the difference between your Rights and Freedoms guaranteed by the
15 Constitution and those Legislative Privileges under Statute Laws, which are merely private contracts we are being coerced
16 into with the government.

17 While the United States has no direct authority over a Sovereign Citizen, neither does a state of the Union have authority
18 over a “U.S. citizen” as defined in the federal statutes. This in part explains the difference in the term “STATE of
19 ILLINOIS” with respect to the term Illinois Republic. The former is also a corporate entity created under the Buck Act of
20 1940 and is a possession of the United States. Meanwhile, the Illinois Republic is the Sovereign State, one amongst the
21 several states.

22 When Cornwallis surrendered on Oct 17, 1781 at the end of the Revolutionary War, did he surrender to THE UNITED
23 STATES? No, in fact he surrendered 13 times, to the regiment leaders of each of the states. In 1783, Benjamin Franklin
24 went to France. There, a treaty was signed by King George's representative, which came to be known as The Treaty of
25 Paris. In it, King George relinquished his sovereignty and passed it to The 13 FREE AND INDEPENDENT STATES, THE
26 PEOPLE AND THEIR POSTERITY, FOREVER! Independent from England, and Independent from each other. They
27 were then, and are now, Republics, technically NATIONS. I recently found a copy of the Treaty of Paris on the United
28 States Congress web page of international treaties. It is *STILL* recognized by International Law!

29 The Articles of Confederation had been written and approved in June of 1776, One month before Thomas Jefferson wrote
30 the Declaration of Independence. Here is how some have described the purpose of both the Articles of Confederation and
31 the Constitution which followed it:

32 *"The idea of State sovereignty was to ensure that the federal government would be kept in a box. The power of*
33 *the United States was to be scattered to the four corners of the country, to ensure that no man would have*
34 *enough power to be a tyrant."*
35 *Howard, Webmaster of Freedom Hall*

36 *"The capital and leading object of the Constitution was to leave with the States all authorities which respected*
37 *their citizens only, and to transfer to the United States those which respected citizens of foreign or other States,*
38 *to make us several as to ourselves, but one as to all others"*
39 *Thomas Jefferson; Letter to Judge William Johnson June 12, 1823*

40 The important thing to note about the Articles of Confederation is that the sovereign states were referred to collectively as
41 the “United States of America” while the federal government they created was referred to as the “United States”. The
42 sovereign states, however, subsequently deemed that the Articles of Confederation needed refinement, so they convened the
43 First Constitutional Convention. After the Constitution was written, 9 of the 13 states were required to ratify it. Eleven
44 ratified it in 1787, two did not until 1789.

45 In the Constitution, congress was GRANTED 17 specific powers having to do with the states. Things like lay and collect
46 taxes, coin money, declare war, establish post offices, and regulate commerce. For some of these items, like COLLECT
47 TAXES, there are *very specific rules* that congress MUST follow.

1 There was another power granted to the congress, having to do with the seat of government. The continental congress did
2 not want the federal government located in a particular state, lest that state gain some advantage. So it was written, that a
3 ten mile square area of land be the seat of government, which is what we call today, the District of Columbia.

4 Congress was granted *EXCLUSIVE LEGISLATIVE AUTHORITY* over this area. This meant that, for District of Columbia,
5 congress was kind of like a city government. It could pass laws, speed limits or what have you, but these laws *were not*
6 *binding* on ordinary Americans outside the District.

7 But something SINISTER happened..

8 In 1884 there had been a case dealing with citizenship. The Fourteenth amendment had been ratified, and said, in part: All
9 persons born or naturalized in the United States, AND SUBJECT TO THE JURISDICTION THEREOF, are citizens of the
10 United States and of the state wherein they reside. The case was called *Elk v. Wilkins*, 112 U.S. 94 (1884) and the court
11 said:

12 "The persons declared to be citizens are ALL PERSONS BORN OR NATURALIZED IN THE UNITED
13 STATES AND SUBJECT TO THE JURISDICTION THEREOF. The evident meaning of these last
14 words is, not merely subject in some respect or degree to the jurisdiction of the United States, but
15 COMPLETELY SUBJECT..."

16 Got that? COMPLETELY SUBJECT! What does "completely subject" mean? It means subject to the *exclusive legislative*
17 *territorial jurisdiction* (also called sovereignty) under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the U.S. constitution.

18 "To be 'completely subject' to the political jurisdiction of the United States is to be in no respect or degree
19 subject to the political jurisdiction of any other government." *United States v. Wong Kim Ark* 169 U.S. 649, 18
20 S.Ct. 456; 42 L.Ed. 890 (1898)

21 The only place where exclusive legislative jurisdiction exists is in the *federal zone* because being subject to the jurisdiction
22 of a state qualifies as "subject to the political jurisdiction of any other government" above. The nail in the coffin. If you
23 doubt where those places are that the federal government has jurisdiction over, we refer you to 40 U.S.C. §255, which
24 states:

25 *United States Code*
26 *TITLE 40 - PUBLIC BUILDINGS, PROPERTY, AND WORKS*
27 *CHAPTER 3 - PUBLIC BUILDINGS AND WORKS GENERALLY*
28 *Sec. 255. Approval of title prior to Federal land purchases; payment of title expenses; application to Tennessee*
29 *Valley Authority; Federal jurisdiction over acquisitions*

30 *Notwithstanding any other provision of law, the obtaining of exclusive jurisdiction in the United States over*
31 *lands or interests therein which have been or shall hereafter be acquired by it shall not be required; but the*
32 *head or other authorized officer of any department or independent establishment or agency of the Government*
33 *may, in such cases and at such times as he may deem desirable, accept or secure from the State in which any*
34 *lands or interests therein under his immediate jurisdiction, custody, or control are situated, consent to or*
35 *cession of such jurisdiction, exclusive or partial, not theretofore obtained, over any such lands or interests as*
36 *he may deem desirable and indicate acceptance of such jurisdiction on behalf of the United States by filing a*
37 *notice of such acceptance with the Governor of such State or in such other manner as may be prescribed by*
38 *the laws of the State where such lands are situated. Unless and until the United States has accepted*
39 *jurisdiction over lands hereafter to be acquired as aforesaid, it shall be conclusively presumed that no such*
40 *jurisdiction has been accepted.*

41 That's right. *Unless a state has explicitly ceded a territory to the federal government, the feds have no jurisdiction to*
42 *prosecute federal crimes committed on a property and only the state may do so.* In spite of all this, it will be like pulling
43 teeth to get anyone who works for the federal government or especially the legal profession to admit this simple fact!

44 As we said in section 4.6, in 1901 there was a case that came up in front of the Supreme Court called *Downes v. Bidwell*,
45 182 U.S. 244 (1901). It was a case about exports from Puerto Rico, which was a territory, and part of the area congress
46 had exclusive legislative authority over. The Court said:

47 "CONSTITUTIONAL RESTRICTIONS AND LIMITATIONS [Bill of Rights] WERE NOT APPLICABLE to the
48 areas of lands, enclaves, territories, and possessions over which Congress had EXCLUSIVE LEGISLATIVE
49 JURISDICTION"

1 [...]

2 "The idea prevails with some -- indeed, it found expression in arguments at the bar -- that we have in this
3 country substantially or practically two national governments; one, to be maintained under the Constitution,
4 with all its restrictions; the other to be maintained by Congress outside and independently of that instrument, by
5 exercising such powers as other nations of the earth are accustomed to exercise."

6 Note that they are not talking here about Constitutional protections for the *land*, the Constitution protects **PEOPLE!** This
7 was confirmed by another case called *Hooven & Allison Co. v. Evatt*, 324 U.S. 652 (1945).

8 **SO, IF YOU LIVE IN THE FEDERAL "UNITED STATES", OR ARE A "CITIZEN OF THE "UNITED STATES", THE**
9 **CONSTITUTION AND BILL OF RIGHTS DO NOT APPLY TO YOU!**

10 So I ask again... ARE YOU A "CITIZEN OF THE UNITED STATES"?

11 If you say YES(!)...you have THROWN YOUR BILL OF RIGHTS IN THE TOILET!!!

12 The answer most likely is NO! The Fourteenth Amendment says ... "and subject to **the** jurisdiction thereof". If they meant
13 the jurisdiction of the 50 Union states, it would have read "and subject to **their** jurisdiction" as the Thirteenth Amendment
14 says regarding slavery. The jurisdiction of the United States has been held over and over by the courts to be the District of
15 Columbia, territories, enclaves, any area of land the Federal government "OWNS". The Federal government does not
16 "OWN" the 50 Union states, it was **CREATED** by these States! **If you are a regular AMERICAN, born in one of the 50**
17 **Union states, you are a NATURAL BORN CITIZEN, a Citizen of the state you were born in, a national of the United**
18 **States, one of "We The People".**

19 *3C Am Jur 2d §2689, Who is born in United States and subject to United States jurisdiction*

20 "A person is born subject to the jurisdiction of the United States, for purposes of acquiring citizenship at birth,
21 if his or her birth occurs in **territory over which the United States is sovereign**, even though another
22 country provides all governmental services within the territory, and the territory is subsequently ceded to the
23 other country."

24 The 50 Union states ARE NOT TERRITORIES and the UNITED STATES IS NOT SOVEREIGN OVER THEM!! Why
25 would anyone want to be a federal citizen anyway? Some people say they can't vote in a national election without being a
26 U.S. citizen, but if they aren't paying income taxes, who cares if they have representation?

27 (If we elect people in our state to REPRESENT US in the federal government anyway!!)

28 "Since in common usage the term 'person' does not include the SOVEREIGN, statutes employing that term are
29 ordinarily construed to exclude it"

30 U.S. v Cooper, 312 U.S. 600 (1941)

31 U.S. v General Motors, 2 F.R.D. 528

32 U.S. v United Mine Workers, 330 U.S. 258 (1947)

33 Here we have 3 cites that ADMIT THERE IS SOMETHING CALLED SOVEREIGN, IMPLY THAT PEOPLE CAN BE
34 SOVEREIGN, AND ADMIT THAT STATUTORY LAW IS NOT BINDING ON THEM.

35 We have prepared a series of deposition questions that focus on citizenship for use in an administrative due process hearing
36 or an IRS deposition. You can use this series of questions to reveal the truth to the IRS and defeat most of their bogus
37 arguments. The IRS Deposition questions are found at:

38 <http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Discovery/Deposition/Deposition.htm>

39 And the 861 position questions that are part of this deposition are found at:

<http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Discovery/Deposition/Section 14.htm>

4.11.1 Sovereignty

Sovereign Citizenship is the status fought for and won by our forefathers from the British Empire, and has since become the birthright of all Natural Born Americans, and via our Constitution, we extend this status to foreign-born persons as well through our naturalization laws.

Black's Law Dictionary, 6th edition defines "sovereign" as:

"A person, body, or state in which independent authority is vested; a chief ruler with supreme power; a king or other ruler in a monarchy."

At the time of the Revolution, the King of England was the sovereign and the people within the Colonies were his subjects. After the colonies won the war with Britain, the people wanted a different status, which did not call for them to serve any man, King or body government:

"The sovereignty has been transferred from one man to the collective body of the people - and he who before was a 'subject of the king' is now 'a citizen of the State.'"
[State v. Manuel, North Carolina, Vol. 20, Page 121 (1838)]

The U.S. Supreme Court has said about Sovereignty:

"When we consider the nature and the theory of our institutions of government, the principles on which they are supposed to rest, and review the history of their development, we are constrained to conclude that they do not mean to leave room for the play and action of purely personal and arbitrary power. Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law; but in our system, while sovereign powers are delegated to the agencies of government, sovereignty itself remains with the people, by whom and for whom all government exists and acts. And the law is the definition and limitation of power. It is, indeed, quite true that there must always be lodged somewhere, and in some person or body, the authority of final decision; and in many cases of mere administration, the responsibility is purely political, no appeal lying except to the ultimate tribunal of the public judgment, exercised either in the pressure of opinion, or by means of the suffrage. But the fundamental rights to life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness, considered as individual possessions, are secured by those maxims of constitutional law which are the monuments showing the victorious progress of the race in securing to men the blessings of civilization under the reign of just and equal laws, so that, in the famous language of the Massachusetts bill of rights, the government of the commonwealth 'may be a government of laws and not of men.' For the very idea that one man may be compelled to hold his life, or the means of living, or any material right essential to the enjoyment of life, at the mere will of another, seems to be intolerable in any country where freedom prevails, as being the essence of slavery itself." [Yick Wo v. Hopkins, 118 U.S. 356 (1886)]

4.11.2 Two Classes and Four Types of Citizens

The government recognizes two distinct classes of citizens:

1. State Citizens/Nationals
2. Federal citizens.

A State Citizen, also called a de jure Citizen, is an individual whose inalienable natural rights are recognized, secured, and protected by his/her state Constitution against state actions and against federal intrusion by the Constitution for the United States of America.

There are three types of federal citizens:

1. Statutory "U.S.** national" or "non-citizen U.S.** national" (where "United States" or "U.S." means the federal United States)
 - 1.1. Defined in 8 U.S.C. §1408, 8 U.S.C. §1452, and 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21).
 - 1.2. Born anywhere American Samoa or Swain's Island.
 - 1.3. May not participate politically in federal elections or as federal jurists.
 - 1.4. Owes allegiance to the federal "United States**".

1 **2. “state U.S.*** national” or “national of the United States***” (where “U.S.” or “United States” means only the**
 2 **union of states)”**

- 3 2.1. Called a “citizen of the United States” by the Supreme Court and in Section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment.
 4 2.2. Born anywhere in any one of the states of the Union but not in a federal territory, possession, or the District of
 5 Columbia.
 6 2.3. Not subject to the “police power” of the federal government or most “acts of Congress”.
 7 2.4. A citizen of the country called “United States” under the Law of Nations and under state law.
 8 2.5. Owes allegiance to the “United States***” that comprise the states of the Union.
 9 2.6. May serve as a federal jurist or grand jurist involving only parties with his same citizenship status.
 10 2.7. May vote in federal elections.
 11 2.8. Status not defined directly anywhere in federal statutes in the case of persons born in states of the Union. People
 12 born in the states are mentioned indirectly in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21).

13 **3. “U.S. citizen” or “citizen of the [federal] United States”**

- 14 3.1. A statutory privileged status defined and found in 8 U.S.C. §1401, in the implementing regulations of the Internal
 15 Revenue Code at 26 CFR §1.1-1(c), and in most other federal statutes.
 16 3.2. Lives in or was born in the federal zone only, and most inhabit the District of Columbia and the territories and
 17 possessions of the United States identified in Title 48 of the U.S. Code.
 18 3.3. Subject to the “police power” of the federal government and all “acts of Congress”.
 19 3.4. Treated as a citizen of the municipal government of the District of Columbia (see 26 U.S.C. §7701(a)(39))
 20 3.5. Have no common law rights, because there is no federal common law. See *Jones v. Mayer*, 392 U.S. 409 (1978).
 21 3.6. Also called “federal U.S. citizens” throughout this book.

22 “U.S. citizens” under 8 U.S.C. §1401 have civil rights under federal law that are similar but inferior to the natural rights
 23 that state Citizens have in state courts. I say almost because civil rights are created by Congress and can be taken away by
 24 Congress. “U.S. citizens” are privileged *subjects/servants* of Congress, under their protection as a “resident” and “ward” of
 25 a federal State, a person enfranchised to the federal government (the incorporated United States defined in Article I, Section
 26 8, Clause 17 of the Constitution). The individual Union states may not deny to these persons any federal privileges or
 27 immunities that Congress has granted them within “acts of Congress” or federal statutes. Federal citizens come under
 28 admiralty law (International Law) when litigating in federal courts. As such they do not have inalienable common rights
 29 recognized, secured and protected in federal courts by the Constitutions of the States, or of the Constitution for the United
 30 States of America, such as “allodial” (absolute) rights to property, the rights to inheritance, the rights to work and contract,
 31 and the right to travel among others.

32 Another important element of citizenship is that artificial entities like corporations are citizens for the purposes of taxation
 33 but cannot be citizens for any other purpose.

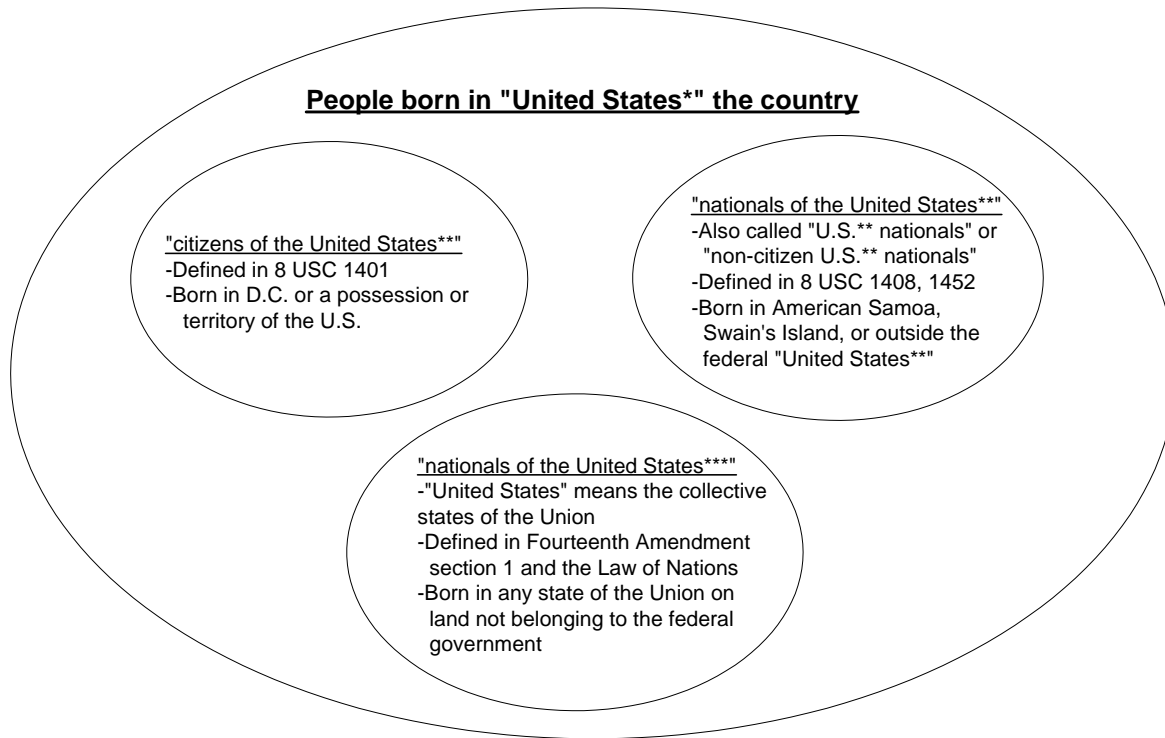
34 *“A corporation is not a citizen within the meaning of that provision of the Constitution, which declares that the*
 35 *citizens of each State shall be entitled to all the privileges and immunities of citizens of the several States.”*
 36 *[Paul v. Virginia, 8 Wall (U.S.) 168; 19 L.Ed 357 (1868)]*

37 We have prepared a venn diagram showing all of the various types of citizens so that you can properly distinguish them.
 38 The important thing to notice about this diagram is that there are multiple types of “citizens of the United States” and
 39 “nationals of the United States” because there are multiple definitions of “United States” according to the Supreme Court,
 40 as we showed earlier in section 4.6. Above the diagram is a table showing the three definitions of “United States”
 41 appearing in the diagram from section 4.6 of the Great IRS Hoax book:

42 **Table 4-10: Terms used in the citizenship diagram**

<i>Term</i>	<i>Meaning</i>
United States*	The country “United States” in the family of nations throughout the world.
United States**	The “federal zone”.
United States***	Collective states of the Union mentioned throughout the Constitution.

43
 44 **Figure 4-4: Citizenship diagram**



1

2 **4.11.3 Federal citizens**

3 "All government without the consent of the governed is the very definition of slavery."
 4 -Jonathan Swift

5 **4.11.3.1 Background and history of federal citizenship**

6 At present, there are two types of federal citizenship identified in Title 8 of the U.S. Code, which is an "act of Congress":

- 7 • **"U.S. national"**: defined in [8 U.S.C. §1408](#) and [8 U.S.C. §1101\(a\)\(22\)](#). The U.S. Supreme Court and the
- 8 Constitution call these people "citizens of the United States". See section 4.11.3.7 later for details.
- 9 • **"U.S. citizen" or "citizens of the United States"**: defined in 8 U.S.C. §1401. All "U.S. citizens" are also "U.S.
- 10 nationals" as per [8 U.S.C. §1101\(a\)\(22\)](#) but "U.S. nationals" are not necessarily "U.S. citizens".¹¹⁴

11 It is very important to be mindful of the *context* whenever you hear or use the term "citizen of the United States" or "U.S.

12 citizen", because the term "United States" has an *entirely different meaning* in federal statutes or "acts of Congress" than it

13 has in the Constitution. This is especially true when filling out government forms. The differences in meaning of these

14 terms between the Constitution and "acts of Congress" is a direct result of the fact that the federal government has no police

15 powers within the states, as we discussed earlier in section 4.9. In the Constitution and the rulings of the Supreme Court,

16 the term "United States" means *the country*, while in federal statutes or "acts of Congress", it means the federal zone.

17 Watch out! Here is a quick summary of the affects on meanings based on this very important observation:

18 **Table 4-11: Summary of citizenship terms within their context**

#	Term	Contextual meaning		
		Constitution and rulings of the U.S. supreme Court	Federal statutes or "acts of Congress"	State statutes

¹¹⁴ See 7 Foreign Affairs Manual, section 1111.1 available from:
<http://foia.state.gov/famdir/masterdocs/07fam/07m1110.pdf>

		<i>Contextual meaning</i>		
1	<i>“citizen”</i>	“National” of the country “United States” as described in <i>Minor v. Happersett</i> , 88 U.S. 162 (1874)	“National” of the federal zone as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1401	“national” of the state”
2	<i>“citizen of the United States”</i>	“National” of the country “United States” as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1408	“National” of the federal zone as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1401	“National” of the country “United States” as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1408
3	<i>“U.S. citizen”</i>	Not used	“National” of the <i>federal zone</i> as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1401	“National” of the <i>country</i> “United States” as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1408
4	<i>“national of the United States”</i>	Not used	“National” of the <i>country</i> “United States” as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1408	Not used
5	<i>“U.S. national”</i>	Not used	“National” of the <i>country</i> “United States” as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1408	Not used
6	<i>“citizen of the United States of America”</i>	“National” of the <i>country</i> “United States” as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1408	Not used	Not used

1 “citizen of the United States” status under the Constitution is the equivalent of “national of the United States” status under
2 federal statutes and it is a “privileged” status:

3 *“To be a citizen of the United States is a political privilege which no one, not born to, can assume without its*
4 *consent in some form.” [Elk v. Wilkins, 112 U.S. 94 (1884)]*

5 The Fourteenth Amendment did *not* create “citizen of the United States” status or add any restrictions to the existing
6 citizenship laws, but simply allayed doubts and controversies that had arisen prior to that time:

7 *“..the opening sentence of the fourteenth amendment is throughout affirmative and declaratory, intended to*
8 *ally doubts and to settle controversies which had arisen, and not to impose any new restrictions upon*
9 *citizenship.” [U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark, 169 U.S. 649; 18 S.Ct. 456; 42 L.Ed. 890 (1898)]*

10 “U.S. citizen” or “citizen of the United States” status under federal statutes and “acts of Congress” is *different* from “citizen
11 of the United States” status under the Fourteenth Amendment Section 1. “U.S. citizen” status under federal statutes is a
12 result of the operation of *The Law of Nations* and *not* of the Fourteenth Amendment . The Fourteenth Amendment didn’t
13 create the status of “citizen of the United States”. The only thing that the ratification of the 14th Amendment in 1868
14 accomplished was to:

- 15 • Extend the status of “citizen of the United States” to persons of *all* races, instead of only the whites who were
16 previously the only citizens recognized under the Constitution.
- 17 • Further extend the privileges and immunities of those persons who were *already* “citizens of the United States”
- 18 • Clarify and further define the meaning of the term “citizen of the United States” under the Constitution

19 White persons born in states of the Union *always were* the equivalent “U.S. nationals” under federal statutes from the very
20 beginning of our country under the *Law of Nations*, Book I, section 212 and they had this status long before the creation of
21 the 14th Amendment in 1868.¹¹⁵ This is true because a “national” is defined in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21) as someone who
22 “owes allegiance to a state” and 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(22)(b) defines a “national of the United States” as someone who owes
23 allegiance to the “United States”. Nationality and allegiance are the only thing you need in order to be regarded as a
24 “citizen” in our country:

¹¹⁵ The *Law of Nations*, incidentally, was one of the reference documents that the founders used to write the Constitution.

1 “There cannot be a nation without a people. The very idea of a political community, such as a nation is, implies
2 an [88 U.S. 162, 166] association of persons for the promotion of their general welfare. Each one of the
3 persons associated becomes a member of the nation formed by the association. He owes it allegiance and is
4 entitled to its protection. Allegiance and protection are, in this connection, reciprocal obligations. The one is
5 a compensation for the other; allegiance for protection and protection for allegiance.

6 “For convenience it has been found necessary to give a name to this membership. The object is to designate by
7 a title the person and the relation he bears to the nation. For this purpose the words 'subject,' 'inhabitant,' and
8 'citizen' have been used, and the choice between them is sometimes made to depend upon the form of the
9 government. Citizen is now more commonly employed, however, and as it has been considered better suited to
10 the description of one living under a republican government, it was adopted by nearly all of the States upon
11 their separation from Great Britain, and was afterwards adopted in the Articles of Confederation and in the
12 Constitution of the United States. When used in this sense it is understood as conveying the idea of
13 membership of a nation, and nothing more.”

14 “To determine, then, who were citizens of the United States before the adoption of the amendment it is
15 necessary to ascertain what persons originally associated themselves together to form the nation, and what
16 were afterwards admitted to membership.”

17 “Looking at the Constitution itself we find that it was ordained and established by 'the people of the United
18 States,'³ and then going further back, we find that these were the people of the several States that had before
19 dissolved the political bands which connected them with Great Britain, and assumed a separate and equal
20 station among the powers of the earth,⁴ and that had by Articles of Confederation and Perpetual Union, in
21 which they took the name of 'the United States of America,' entered into a firm league of [88 U.S. 162, 167]
22 friendship with each other for their common defence, the security of their liberties and their mutual and general
23 welfare, binding themselves to assist each other against all force offered to or attack made upon them, or any of
24 them, on account of religion, sovereignty, trade, or any other pretence whatever. ⁵

25 “Whoever, then, was one of the people of either of these States when the Constitution of the United States
26 was adopted, became ipso facto a citizen—a member of the nation created by its adoption. He was one of the
27 persons associating together to form the nation, and was, consequently, one of its original citizens. As to this
28 there has never been a doubt. Disputes have arisen as to whether or not certain persons or certain classes of
29 persons were part of the people at the time, but never as to their citizenship if they were.” [Minor v.
30 Happersett, 88 U.S. 162 (1874)]

31 The treatment of the term “allegiance” above is significant. We must understand exactly what this word means in order to
32 understand the foundation of our republican form of government. Below is a definition of “allegiance” from the law
33 dictionary:

34 “**Allegiance.** Obligation of fidelity and obedience to **government** in consideration for protection that
35 government gives. U.S. v. Kyh, D.C.N.Y., 49 F.Supp 407, 414. See also Oath of allegiance or loyalty.”
36 [Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 74]

37 The person who is a “national” does not have the kind of “allegiance” as that described above. Allegiance above is to the
38 government, while “nationals” instead have their allegiance to the “state”, which is the sovereign people within the
39 territorial boundaries of the political body and not exclusively the “government”:

40 8 U.S.C. §1101 Definitions

41 (a) (21) The term "national" means a person owing permanent allegiance to a state.

42 The term “state” is then defined as follows:

43 “**State.** A people permanently occupying a fixed territory bound together by common-law habits and custom
44 into one body politic exercising, through the medium of an organized government, independent sovereignty and
45 control over all persons and things within its boundaries, capable of making war and peace and of entering into
46 international relations with other communities of the globe. United States v. Kusche, D.C.Cal., 56 F.Supp. 201
47 207, 208. The organization of social life which exercises sovereign power in behalf of the people. Delany v.
48 Moralitis, C.C.A.Md., 136 F.2d 129, 130. In its largest sense, a “state” is a body politic or a society of men.
49 Beagle v. Motor Vehicle Acc. Indemnification Corp., 44 Misc.2d 636, 254 N.Y.S.2d 763, 765. A body of people
50 occupying a definite territory and politically organized under one government. State ex re. Maisano v.
51 Mitchell, 155 Conn. 256, 231 A.2d 539, 542. A territorial unit with a distinct general body of law.
52 Restatement, Second, Conflicts, §3. Term may refer either to body politic of a nation (e.g. United States) or to
53 an individual government unit of such nation (e.g. California).

1 [...]

2 *The people of a state, in their collective capacity, considered as the party wronged by a criminal deed; the*
 3 *public; as in the title of a cause, "The State vs. A.B." [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1407]*

4 To have "allegiance" to "a state" as a "national" is to have allegiance to the sovereign within the body politic, which in a
 5 republican system of government is the people collectively and individually and not necessarily the government. We
 6 *cannot* "assume" or "presume" that the government represents the will of the people. This is especially true when the
 7 government has gone bad and is not representing the will of the people. When we have a rebellious government that has
 8 strayed from the Constitution and its "de jure" foundation to become a "de facto" government, then the allegiance we have
 9 to the Constitution and the people who ordained it must supercede our allegiance to the government that has violated its
 10 charter to implement the Constitution. The people, not the government, must always be regarded as the ultimate sovereigns
 11 within republican systems of governance.

12 Ironically, the very definition of the word "privilege" in Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, seems to contradict the
 13 conclusion that "citizenship" can be a privilege to begin with!:

14 *"Privilege. A particular benefit or advantage enjoyed by a person, company, or class beyond the common*
 15 *advantages of other citizens. An exceptional or extraordinary power or exemption. A peculiar right,*
 16 *advantage, exemption, power, franchise, or immunity held by a person or class, not generally possessed by*
 17 *others." [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 1197]*

18 Note above that it says "beyond the common advantages of other citizens", thus implying that citizenship itself cannot be a
 19 "privilege" and that you must also be accepting some kind of benefit beyond that of "citizenship" in order to be classified as
 20 "privileged". Furthermore, if everyone accepts this "privilege" (as the government calls it) called "U.S. citizen" status in
 21 federal statutes or even if more than half of all natural persons do, then it becomes a "common advantage", and thus no
 22 longer a special privilege granted only to a minority or a select few. This is the situation today with most Americans,
 23 where most falsely believe they are "U.S. citizens" as defined by federal statutes. By the above logic and definition, then, a
 24 reasonable man could easily conclude that "U.S. citizen" status cannot be classified as a "privilege" because it is
 25 "common" and is shared by a majority rather than a minority.

26 So far we have not given any proof that the government actually recognizes two distinct classes of federal citizenship. We
 27 will give that evidence now by describing the 13th and 14th Amendments. Prior to the Thirteenth and Fourteenth
 28 Amendments, all persons born in a state of the Union were "citizens of the United States" under the Constitution and under
 29 the rulings of the U.S. Supreme Court, but NOT under federal statutes or "acts of Congress":

30 *"There is no doubt that women may be citizens. They are persons, and by the fourteenth amendment 'all*
 31 *persons born or naturalized in the United States and subject to the jurisdiction thereof' are expressly*
 32 *declared to be 'citizens of the United States and of the State wherein they reside.' But, in our opinion, it did*
 33 *not need this amendment to give them that position. Before its adoption the Constitution of the United States*
 34 *did not in terms prescribe who should be citizens of the United States or of the several States, yet there were*
 35 *necessarily such citizens without such provision.*

36 [...]

37 *"The fourteenth amendment did not affect the citizenship of women any more than it did of men. In this*
 38 *particular, therefore, the rights of Mrs. Minor do not depend upon the amendment. She has always been a*
 39 *citizen from her birth, and entitled to all the privileges and immunities of citizenship. The [Fourteenth]*
 40 *Amendment prohibited the State, of which she is a citizen, from abridging any of their privileges and*
 41 *immunities as a citizen of the United States; but it did not confer citizenship on her. That she had before its*
 42 *adoption.*

43 *"The Constitution does not define the privileges and immunities of citizens. For that definition we must look*
 44 *elsewhere.*

45 *"The [Fourteenth] Amendment did not add to the privileges and immunities of a citizen. It simply furnished*
 46 *an additional guaranty for the protection of such as he already had. No new voters were necessarily made by*
 47 *it. Indirectly it may have had that effect, because it may have increased the number of citizens entitled to*
 48 *suffrage under the Constitution and laws of the States, but it operates for this purpose, if at all, through the*
 49 *States and the state laws, and not directly upon the citizen.*

1 "All the States had government when the Constitution was adopted. **These governments the Constitution did**
2 **not change.**" [*Minor v. Happersett*, 88 U.S. 162 (1874)]

3 Therefore, "citizen of the United States" status under our Constitution and under the rulings of the Supreme Court existed
4 before the passage of the Fourteenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution. The status of being a "citizen of the United
5 States" under the Constitution and under Supreme Court rulings is equivalent to the status of being a "national of the United
6 States" under federal statutes or "acts of Congress" and is defined in 8 U.S.C. §1408. We will cover this in greater detail
7 later in section 4.11.10.

8 In 1865, the 13th Amendment was ratified and thereby abolished slavery and involuntary servitude except as punishment
9 for a crime. The Supreme Court ruled that the 13th Amendment operated to free former slaves and prohibit slavery, but it
10 in no way conferred citizenship to the former slaves, or to those races other than white, because the founders of the
11 Constitution were all of the white race.

12 Even after the end of the Civil War and the passage of the Thirteenth Amendment, Southern states were openly
13 discriminating against blacks by denying them state citizenship and political rights. Congress was under political pressure
14 from the northern states and had to do something about this problem. The Fourteenth Amendment was introduced as the
15 answer to this problem because it extended citizenship to persons of all races instead of only the whites covered by our
16 original Constitution. The "big daddy" and chief protector of blacks then became the federal government under the new
17 Fourteenth Amendment. This protection was extended by extending national citizenship, which then made blacks "subject
18 to the jurisdiction of the United States".

19 "The first section of the fourteenth amendment of the constitution [169 U.S. 649, 676] begins with the
20 words, 'All persons born or naturalized in the United States, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof, are citizens
21 of the United States and of the state wherein they reside.' As appears upon the face of the amendment, as well as
22 from the history of the times, this was not intended to impose any new restrictions upon citizenship, or to
23 prevent any persons from becoming citizens by the fact of birth within the United States, who would thereby
24 have become citizens according to the law existing before its adoption. It is declaratory in form, and enabling
25 and extending in effect. Its main purpose doubtless was, as has been often recognized by this court, to
26 establish the citizenship of free negroes, which had been denied in the opinion delivered by Chief Justice
27 Taney in Scott v. Sandford (1857) 19 How. 393; and to put it beyond doubt that all blacks, as well as whites,
28 born or naturalized within the jurisdiction of the United States, are citizens of the United States. Slaughter
29 House Cases (1873) 16 Wall. 36, 73; *Strauder v. West Virginia* (1879) 100 U.S. 303, 306; *Ex parte Virginia*
30 (1879) Id. 339, 345; *Neal v. Delaware* (1880) 103 U.S. 370, 386; *Elk v. Wilkins* (1884) 112 U.S. 94, 101, 5 S.
31 Sup. Ct. 41. But the opening words, 'All persons born,' are general, not to say universal, restricted only by place
32 and jurisdiction, and not by color or race, as was clearly recognized in all the opinions delivered in the
33 Slaughter House Cases, above cited. " [*U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark*, 169 U.S. 649 (1898)]

34 The Fourteenth Amendment approach that Congress devised would only work if it could confer national citizenship without
35 conferring state citizenship. This approach was the only remedy available to Congress to end slavery and discrimination in
36 the southern states because the federal government did not have the authority under our the Constitution to determine if a
37 former slave could become a Citizen of one of the several states since the 9th and 10th Amendments said that powers not
38 granted specifically to the federal government by the Constitution are reserved to the states or to the People.

39 History shows that the Pennsylvania Commonwealth and New York State were nationalizing blacks as State Citizens
40 before the outbreak of the Civil War. In other southern states, blacks were not Citizens and therefore did not have standing
41 in any court based on the privileges and immunities of "citizens of the United States". The 14th Amendment was written
42 primarily to afford citizenship to those of the black race that were recently freed by the 13th Amendment (*Slaughter-House*
43 *Cases*, 16 Wall. 36, 71), and did not include Indians and others NOT born in and subject to the jurisdiction of the United
44 States (*McKay v. Cambell*, 2 Sawy. 129). Thus, the 14th Amendment recognized that an individual can be a "citizen of the
45 United States" under the Constitution without being a Citizen of a State." (*Slaughter-House Cases*, supra; cf. *U.S. v.*
46 *Cruikshank*, 92 U.S. 542 (1875)).

47 The Fourteenth Amendment was introduced for ratification to the states on June 16, 1866 and ratification was completed on
48 July 28, 1868 at the end of the Civil War by the three fourths of the states required by the Constitution.¹¹⁶ Ratification of
49 the amendment by the southern states was made a precondition of them being readmitted back into the Union after the war.

¹¹⁶ See dissenting opinion of Chief Justice Fuller in *U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark*, 169 U.S. 649 (1898).

1 Until they were readmitted into the union, they were conquered federal territories.¹¹⁷ Many of the southern states that voted
 2 in favor of ratifying the amendment did so at gunpoint while they were occupied by federal troops! Their legislatures in
 3 many such cases were summarily dismissed as “rebels” by Congress and replaced with a puppet legislatures hand-selected
 4 by Congress following the cessation of war. You could say that they ratified the amendment under duress because of this,
 5 and that the amendment is therefore invalid because the ratification must be entirely voluntary to be legally binding.
 6 Furthermore, before they voted on this ratification, they had no representation in Congress and were “outnumbered” until
 7 they gave in.

8 The blacks following the civil war therefore had to be “collectively naturalized” into the status of being “citizens of the
 9 United States” so they could then freely roam to any state and be citizens of the state they were in, even if that state refused
 10 to grant them state citizenship. In order to do this, “citizen of the United States” status under the Constitution had to be
 11 made paramount and dominant over state citizenship

12 *“The first of these questions is one of vast importance, and lies at the very foundations of our government. **The***
 13 ***question is now settled by the fourteenth amendment itself, that citizenship of the United States is the primary***
 14 ***citizenship in this country; and that State citizenship is secondary and derivative, depending upon citizenship***
 15 ***of the United States and the citizen’s place of residence. The States have not now, if they ever had, any power***
 16 ***to restrict their citizenship to any classes or persons. A citizen of the United States has a perfect constitutional***
 17 *right to go to and reside in any State he chooses, and to claim citizenship therein, [83 U.S. 36, 113] and*
 18 *an equality of rights with every other citizen; and the whole power of the nation is pledged to sustain him in that*
 19 *right. He is not bound to cringe to any superior, or to pray for any act of grace, as a means of enjoying all the*
 20 *rights and privileges enjoyed by other citizens. And when the spirit of lawlessness, mob violence, and sectional*
 21 *hate can be so completely repressed as to give full practical effect to this right, we shall be a happier nation,*
 22 *and a more prosperous one than we now are. **Citizenship of the United States ought to be, and, according to***
 23 ***the Constitution, is, a sure and undoubted title to equal rights in any and every States in this Union,*** subject to
 24 *such regulations as the legislature may rightfully prescribe. If a man be denied full equality before the law, he*
 25 *is denied one of the essential rights of citizenship as a citizen of the United States.” [Slaughter-House Cases, 83*
 26 *U.S. 36 (1872)]*

27
 28 *“By the thirteenth amendment of the constitution slavery was prohibited. The main object of the opening*
 29 *sentence of the fourteenth amendment was to settle the question, upon which there had been a difference of*
 30 *opinion throughout the country and in this court, as to the citizenship of free negroes, (Scott v. Sandford, 19*
 31 *How. 393;) and to put it beyond doubt that all persons, white or black, and **whether formerly slaves** or not,*
 32 *born or naturalized [collectively naturalized, in the case of slaves] in the [federal] United States, and **owing no***
 33 ***allegiance to any alien power,** should be citizens of the United States and of the state in which they reside.*
 34 *Slaughter-House Cases, 16 Wall. 36, 73; Strauder v. West Virginia, 100 U.S. 303 , 306. ”*
 35 *[Elk v. Wilkins, 112 U.S. 94 (1884)]*

36 The blacks were therefore collectively naturalized *without their consent* following the Civil War in the *Civil Rights Act of*
 37 *1866* on April 9, 1866, 14 Stat. 27 so they could be protected from state government abuses of their natural rights.

38 *“By the act of April 9, 1866, entitled ‘An act to protect all persons in the United States in their civil rights, and*
 39 *furnish means for their vindication,’ (14 St. 27,) it is provided that ‘all persons born in the United States, and*
 40 *not subject to any foreign power, excluding Indians not taxed, are hereby declared to be citizens of the United*
 41 *States.’ This, so far as we are aware, is the first general enactment making persons of the Indian race citizens of*
 42 *the United States. Numerous statutes and treaties previously provided for all the individual members of*
 43 *particular Indian tribes becoming, in certain contingencies, citizens of the United States. But the act of 1866*
 44 *reached Indians not in tribal relations. **Beyond question, by that act, national citizenship was conferred***
 45 ***directly upon all persons in this country, of whatever race, (excluding only ‘Indians not taxed,’) who were***
 46 ***born within the territorial limits of the United States, and were not subject to any foreign power.’** [Elk v.*
 47 *Wilkins, 112 U.S. 94 (1884)]*

48 Congress had the exclusive authority to collectively naturalize the blacks under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 4 of the U.S.
 49 Constitution. Collective naturalization also occurs, for instance, when a new territory is annexed to the “United States”.
 50 An example of this was the case of the Louisiana Purchase from France or the Alaska Purchase from Russia.

51 To restate: In the *Slaughter-House Cases*, 16 Wall. 36, 71 supra the supreme Court said:

¹¹⁷ See Dyett v. Turner, 439 P.2d 266 (1968). Available at:
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/LawAndGovt/Citizenship/Dyett/dyett.htm>

"It is quite clear, then, that there is a citizenship of the United States and a citizenship of a state, which are distinct from each other and which depend upon different characteristics or circumstances of the individual. Of the privileges and immunities of the citizens of the United States and of the privileges and immunities of the citizen of the state, and what they respectively are, we will presently consider; but we wish to state here that it is only the former which are placed by this clause under the protection of the Federal Constitution, and the latter, whatever they may be, are not intended to have any additional protection by this paragraph of the amendment."

The Supreme court has also ruled that "The term United States is a metaphor [a figure of speech]". *Cunard S.S. Co. V. Mellon*, 262 U.S. 100, 122; and that

"The term 'United States' may be used in one of several senses. It may be merely the name of a sovereign occupying the position analogous to that of sovereign in a family of nations. It may designate territory over which sovereignty of the United States extends, or it may be a collective name of the states which are united by and under the Constitution." [*Hooven & Allison Co. v. Evatt*, 324 U.S. 652, 672-73.]

Did the Courts really say that someone could be a Citizen of a State without being a "citzien of the United States" (which means "national of the United States" in federal statutes)? Yes, they did. Who would fit this description? How about a national from another country who resides in a state of the union and who has not yet been naturalized under the laws of this country. It's true that the cases cited above are old, some over 100 years old. None of these cases have ever been overturned by a more recent decision, so they are valid. A more recent case is *Crosse v. Bd. of Supervisors*, 221 A.2d 431 (1966) which says:

"Both before and after the Fourteenth Amendment to the federal Constitution, it has not been necessary for a person to be a citizen of the United States in order to be a citizen of his state." Citing *U.S. v. Cruikshank*, *supra*.

The Pennsylvania Commonwealth, for instance, is one of the "several states" described in the Constitution. The Constitution treats the several states of the Union as independent countries and jurisdictions that are "foreign" to each other for the purposes of legislative jurisdiction and internal "police powers". 28 U.S.C. §297 makes it very clear that the states of the union are "foreign countries" with respect to each other, as we talk about later in section 5.2.13. Each state is on an equal footing with all the other states of the Union in terms of its sovereignty and nearly exclusive control over everything that happens internal to its borders. The Buck Act in 1940 created federal areas inside the 50 Union states. If you live in a federal area, you are subject to federal territorial laws and the municipal laws of the District of Columbia. The Internal Revenue Service (IRS) is *internal* to the federal zone. The Pennsylvania Commonwealth is not part of the federal zone, but the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania is. PA is the name that the post office recognizes for mail sent into the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, which is a federal area. Pa., Penna., and Pennsylvania are the names that the post office uses for mail sent into the Pennsylvania Commonwealth, which is not a federal area. If I accept mail sent to PA, I am saying that I live in the federal zone. The same situation exists in the other states.

One important outcome of being a "U.S. citizen" under federal statutes and "acts of Congress" is that the federal government may tax only its own "U.S. citizens" when they reside outside of federal territorial jurisdiction, for instance when they are in foreign countries. In the U.S. Constitution Annotated, under the Fifth Amendment (see <http://caselaw.lp.findlaw.com/data/constitution/amendment05/13.html> - 6), here is what it says about this subject:

In laying taxes, the Federal Government is less narrowly restricted by the Fifth Amendment than are the States by the Fourteenth. **The Federal Government may tax property belonging to its ["U.S."] citizens, even if such property is never situated within the jurisdiction of the United States.**¹¹⁸ and it may tax the income of a citizen resident abroad, which is derived from property located at his residence.¹¹⁹ The difference is explained by the fact that protection of the Federal Government follows the citizen wherever he goes, whereas the benefits of state government accrue only to persons and property within the State's borders.

It is important, however, to point out that the Union states are exempted from direct taxes under Article 1, Section 9, Clause 4 and Article 1, Section 2, Clause 3 of the Constitution but foreign countries where "U.S. citizens" (under federal statutes) reside are not. This point is VERY important, and clearly indicates from where the tax jurisdiction of the United States government derives. It isn't mainly a geographical jurisdiction as far as taxes *internal* to the federal zone go, but instead originates mainly from our "U.S. citizen" status under federal statutes and "acts of Congress". Through this devious

¹¹⁸ United States v. Bennett, [232 U.S. 299, 307](#) (1914).

¹¹⁹ Cook v. Tait, [265 U.S. 47](#) (1924).

1 mechanism of fooling sovereign state Citizens and "U.S. nationals" into becoming privileged "U.S. citizens" under federal
 2 statutes and "acts of Congress", the federal government usurped the Sovereignty of the People, as well as the Sovereignty
 3 of the several Union states. They also usurped the authority of sovereign state Citizens by creating "Federal areas" within
 4 the authority of Article IV, Section 3, Clause 2 in the Constitution for the United States of America which states:

5 *"The Congress shall have Power to dispose of and make all needful Rules and Regulations respecting the*
 6 *Territory or other Property belonging to the United States, and nothing in this Constitution shall be so*
 7 *construed as to prejudice any claims of the United states, or of any particular State."*

8 **Therefore, all "U.S. citizens" [i.e. citizens of the District of Columbia described in federal statutes] residing in one of the**
 9 **states of the Union, are classified as property and franchisees of the federal government,** and as an "individual entity!"
 10 These serfs are "completely subject to the jurisdiction of the United States" no matter where they reside because they are
 11 chattel and slaves of that government. See *Wheeling Steel Corp. v. Fox*, 298 U.S. 193, 80 L.Ed. 1143, 56 S.Ct. 773 (1936).
 12 Under the "Buck Act," 4 U.S.C Secs. 105-113, the federal government has created a "Federal area" or "enclave" within the
 13 boundaries of the several states. This area is similar to any territory that the federal government acquires through purchase,
 14 conquest or treaty, thereby imposing federal territorial law upon the people in this "Federal area." Federal territorial law is
 15 evidenced by the Executive Branch's Admiralty flag (a federal flag with a gold or yellow fringe on it) flying in schools,
 16 offices and courtrooms. As you will find out later, in section 11.3.2, "acts of Congress" and all federal crimes falling under
 17 Title 18, the Criminal Code, only apply inside these federal areas and not within states of the Union.

18 There are actually four sources of federal jurisdiction over U.S. nationals living in the state:

- 19 1. In personam jurisdiction
- 20 2. Citizenship
- 21 3. Territorial jurisdiction
- 22 4. Subject matter jurisdiction

23 "U.S. Nationals", also called "citizens of the United States" by the Supreme Court, are subject to the jurisdiction of their
 24 parent country even when they are outside the territorial jurisdiction of that country. That is the whole reason why we have
 25 embassies in foreign countries: to protect citizens residing in foreign lands. States of the union, however do not have
 26 jurisdiction over their citizens when they are outside the state but the federal government has jurisdiction when they are
 27 outside the country. Federal jurisdiction derives from being either a "U.S. citizen" under 8 U.S.C. §1401 or a "national of
 28 the United States" under 8 U.S.C. §1408. Being a "U.S. citizen" under federal statutes is a privilege while being a
 29 "national of the United States" in all cases is a right. We hope this clears up all remaining doubts you might have about the
 30 nature of federal citizenship.

31 Now for a little history on citizenship prior to the Civil War. To begin, the "citizen of the United States" in 26 CFR §
 32 31.3121(e)-1 is a citizen of a territory or possession of the United States under Title 48 of the U.S. Code. This citizenship
 33 doesn't have anything to do with the Fourteenth Amendment, nor does it have anything to do with Article 1, Section 8,
 34 Clause 17 of the Constitution. It is a special "non-constitutional" class of citizenship. This misunderstanding dates back to
 35 1803 at the time of the Louisiana Purchase. Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 jurisdiction applies exclusively to:

- 36 1. The District of Columbia as the seat of government, and
- 37 2. Territory within states of the Union ceded to the United States for purposes specified.

38 The territorial clause, at Article 4, Section 3, applied only to what was known as the Northwest Territory ceded by New
 39 York and other new sovereign states in 1787 to help pay off debts of the Revolution.

40 In the cession treaty with France, there were two important provisions for territory ceded as a result of the Louisiana
 41 Purchase:

- 42 1. Those who lived in the territory would enjoy all rights, benefits and protections of "citizens of the United States," and
- 43 2. As the territory was settled, it would become one or more States of the Union.

1 Thomas Jefferson was President at the time. He knew that the Constitution makes no provision for acquisition of new
 2 territories so he drafted two proposed amendments to accommodate the Louisiana Purchase and the treaty provisions.
 3 However, Congress elected to do nothing, reasoning that territorial acquisition was implicit from the constitutional
 4 provisions relating to waging war & making treaties. As a consequence, the U.S. Government has been operating under
 5 implied rather than constitutionally enumerated powers for territorial acquisition ever since.

6 Until the Spanish-American War (1898), cession treaties all included the two key elements that were in the Louisiana
 7 Purchase -- the acquired territory would become one or more States of the Union, and those living in the territory would
 8 enjoy all rights, benefits and protections the Constitution affords citizens of the several States until such time as the territory
 9 was admitted to the Union. When Spain ceded Puerto Rico & the Philippines, the cession treaty did not include those
 10 provisions.

11 If you will read the *Downes v. Bidwell* case, that Supreme Court decision, and the other Insular Tax Cases decided in the
 12 same general timeframe, a distinction was made between incorporated territories such as Alaska and Hawaii (destined to
 13 become States of the Union, per cession treaties), and the new "unincorporated" insular possessions. They were deemed
 14 "foreign" to States of the Union, i.e., to the "United States," in that they were not under the "constitutional umbrella."

15 In 1917, Congress extended "citizen of the United States" status to the people of Puerto Rico; in 1927, the status was
 16 extended to the people of the Virgin Islands, etc., until citizenship was finally extended to the people of Guam, American
 17 Samoa and the Northern Mariana Islands. It appears that "citizen of the United States" status was also extended to the
 18 people of Alaska and Hawaii prior to the two being admitted to the Union, but in all cases it was a "non-constitutional"
 19 citizenship -- the Fourteenth Amendment didn't have a thing to do with it, because these were territories at the time and
 20 were not part of the "United States" as referred to in the Constitution.

21 One of the important declarations in *Downes v. Bidwell* is that once the Constitution has been extended to a territory, it
 22 cannot be withdrawn. The District of Columbia, federal enclaves ceded by states of the Union for Article 1, Section 8,
 23 Clause 17 purposes, the Northwest Territory, and territories acquired from 1803 to 1898 all enjoyed the same benefit of
 24 falling under the constitutional umbrella without being part of the "United States" within the meaning of the Constitution.
 25 However, until admitted to the Union, people in the territories, as well as those in today's unincorporated insular
 26 possessions:

- 27 1. Did not elect Senators and Representatives to Congress, and
- 28 2. could not vote in presidential elections. Additionally, both incorporated territories and unincorporated possessions are
 29 or were subject to Congress' plenary power, i.e., the "municipal" authority of the United States.

30 Note that the Fourteenth Amendment declares that the "citizen of the United States" has dual citizenship in the State where
 31 he lives. That was the whole point of that portion of the Fourteenth Amendment. Today that portion is obsolete. Since 1865
 32 each State of the Union has amended its constitution so it extends state citizenship to anyone who is born within the state or
 33 moves to the state from another state of the Union. The special "citizen of the United States" status was created for liberated
 34 slaves and other people of color who were to that point denied state citizenship status. When the living and first post-Civil
 35 War generation died out, the Fourteenth Amendment "citizen of the United States" died with it even though the status has
 36 colorably been used for litigation purposes since.

37 An essential necessary to understand the scheme is to understand that "all legislation is geographical in nature." In other
 38 words, it applies to a territory. The Social Security Act of 1935 applied to the "geographical United States," i.e., to
 39 territories and possessions of the United States. It did not apply to states of the Union, and there is no special provision that
 40 extends application to federal enclaves within States of the Union. This is one of the reasons there are some code sections
 41 that conditionally include the District of Columbia where others don't.

42 **4.11.3.2 Constitutional Basis of federal citizenship**

43 Here is Section 1 of the 14th Amendment that confers "U.S. national" or "national of the United States" citizenship upon
 44 persons born in the United States under federal statutes:

1 Section 1. All persons born or naturalized in the [federal] United States, and subject to **the** jurisdiction
 2 thereof, are citizens of the United States and of the state wherein they reside. No state shall make or enforce
 3 any law which shall abridge the privileges or immunities of citizens of the United States; nor shall any state
 4 deprive any person of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law; nor deny to any person within its
 5 jurisdiction the equal protection of the laws.

6 Prior to the introduction of the Fourteenth Amendment after the Civil War, the U.S. Constitution only established the
 7 individual rights enumerated by the first eight Amendments to the U.S. Constitution at the federal level. This meant that
 8 prior to the Fourteenth Amendment, the individual rights enumerated by the first eight amendments to the U.S. Constitution
 9 were not guaranteed to Americans by the states of the Union and many state constitutions did not universally include all of
 10 these rights. The Fourteenth Amendment was introduced at the federal level to compel states to honor the first 8
 11 amendments of the constitution in the case of all “citizens of the United States”.¹²⁰ These “citizens of the United States”
 12 identified by both the Fourteenth Amendment and the U.S. Supreme Court are referred to as “U.S. nationals” within federal
 13 statutes.¹²¹

14 Following the introduction of the Fourteenth Amendment, it became quite common for people to confuse “citizens of the
 15 United States” under the Fourteenth Amendment and under Supreme Court rulings with “U.S. citizens” under federal
 16 statutes and “acts of Congress” such as 8 U.S.C. §1401, which are two completely different statuses. Because of this
 17 confusion, people in states of the Union would almost universally but mistakenly identify themselves as “U.S. citizens”
 18 under the authority of federal statutes on the many government forms they would eventually submit in the context of
 19 federal taxes. This created a “false presumption” and evidence supporting the belief that they are residents of the federal
 20 zone and feudal serfs of Congress. Through this devious obfuscation mechanism, people who were victims of such
 21 confusion became “property and franchisees of the federal government” in receipt of taxable privileges who were aliens in
 22 their own state and whose “U.S. citizen” status made them into residents and citizens of the federal zone from a legal
 23 perspective. Sneaky politicians would later introduce the Buck Act of 1940 following the passage of the Fourteenth
 24 Amendment in 1868 as a way to allow states to tax this franchise and states would later introduce income tax laws of their
 25 own to cash in on these federal slaves.

26 Remember the Supreme Court’s definition of the term “United States” in *Hooven and Allison v. Evatt*, 324 U.S. 652 (1945)
 27 which we talked about earlier in section 4.6 in which there were three definitions of “United States”? The key to
 28 understanding the meaning of the 14th Amendment shown above are the words “United States”, which means the collective
 29 states of the Union of states in the context of the Constitution, and “**the** jurisdiction”, which means the jurisdiction of these
 30 states.

31 “**It is impossible** to construe the words ‘subject to the jurisdiction thereof,’ in the opening sentence [of the
 32 Fourteenth Amendment], as less comprehensive than the words ‘within its jurisdiction,’ in the concluding
 33 sentence of the same section; or **to hold that persons ‘within the jurisdiction’ of one of the states of the Union**
 34 **are not ‘subject to the jurisdiction of the United States.’**” [U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark, 169 U.S. 649 (1898)]

35 Now do you understand? Can you also understand then why your government would want you to be a federal statutory
 36 “U.S. citizen” defined in 8 U.S.C. §1401 and who lives in the federal zone from a legal perspective? They can legally make
 37 you into a slave with no rights who is completely subject to their jurisdiction! Tricky, huh? The Supreme Court confirmed
 38 these conclusions in *Downes v. Bidwell*, 182 U.S. 244 (1901), when it said in pertinent part:

39 “The 13th Amendment to the Constitution, prohibiting slavery and involuntary servitude ‘within the United
 40 States, or in any place subject to **their** jurisdiction,’ is also significant as showing that there may be places
 41 within the jurisdiction of the United States that are no part of the Union. To say that the phraseology of this
 42 amendment was due to the fact that it was intended to prohibit slavery in the seceded states, under a possible
 43 interpretation that those states were no longer a part of the Union, is to confess the very point in issue, since it
 44 involves an admission that, if these states were not a part of the Union, they were still subject to the jurisdiction
 45 of the United States.

46 Upon the other hand, the 14th Amendment, upon the subject of citizenship, declares only that ‘all persons born
 47 or naturalized in the United States, and subject to **the** jurisdiction thereof, are citizens of the United States, and
 48 of the state wherein they reside.’ **Here there is a limitation to persons born or naturalized in the United States,**
 49 **which is not extended to persons born in any place ‘subject to their jurisdiction.’**”

¹²⁰ See Cong. Globe, 39th Cong., 1st Sess., pt. 3, p. 2765 through 2766 (May 23, 1866).

¹²¹ See 8 U.S.C. §1408.

1 The Social Security Program Operations Manual (POM) clarifies the meaning of “subject to **the** jurisdiction” found in
2 section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment:

3 [GN 00303.100 U.S. Citizenship\[...\]](#)

4 **5. SUBJECT TO THE JURISDICTION OF THE U.S.**

5 **Individuals under the purview of the Fourteenth Amendment (which states that all individuals born in the**
6 **U.S. and to whom U.S. laws apply are U.S. citizens).** Acquisition of citizenship is not affected by the fact that
7 the alien parents are only temporarily in the U.S. at the time of the child's birth. Under international law,
8 children born in the U.S. to foreign sovereigns or foreign diplomatic officers listed on the State Department
9 Diplomatic List are not subject to the jurisdiction of the U.S.

10 The legal encyclopedia, American Jurisprudence, further clarifies the meaning of U.S. citizenship as follows:

11 **3C Am Jur 2d §2689 Who is born in United States and subject to United States jurisdiction** "A person is born
12 subject to the jurisdiction of the United States, for purposes of acquiring citizenship at birth, if his or her birth
13 occurs **in territory over which the United States is sovereign**, even though another country provides all
14 governmental services within the territory, and the territory is subsequently ceded to the other country."

15 Therefore, an individual may not legally be a “U.S. citizen” or “citizen of the United States” under federal statutes unless he
16 or she was born on a federal **territory**, such as in Guam, the Virgin Islands, or Puerto Rico. States of the Union are *not*
17 territories of the central government. Below is the definition of the word “territory” so you can see for yourself, right from
18 Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 1473:

19 **“Territory:** A part of a country *separated from the rest*, and subject to a particular jurisdiction. Geographical
20 area under the jurisdiction of another country or sovereign power.

21 **A portion of the United States not within the limits of any state,** which has not yet been admitted as a state of
22 the Union, but is organized with a separate legislature, and with executive and judicial powers appointed by the
23 President."

24 The major legal encyclopedia, Corpus Juris Secundum (C.J.S.), has the following enlightening things to say about the word
25 “territory”:

26 86 Corpus Juris Secundum, Territories

27 §1. Definitions, Nature, and Distinctions

28 **The word “territory,” when used to designate a political organization has a distinctive, fixed, and legal**
29 **meaning under the political institutions of the United States, and does not necessarily include all the**
30 **territorial possessions of the United States, but may include only the portions thereof which are organized**
31 **and exercise governmental functions under act of congress.**

32 While the term “territory” is often loosely used, and has even been construed to include municipal subdivisions
33 of a territory, and “territories of the” United States is sometimes used to refer to the entire domain over which
34 the United States exercises dominion, the word “territory,” when used to designate a political organization, has
35 a distinctive, fixed, and legal meaning under the political institutions of the United States, but may include only
36 a portion or the portions thereof which are organized and exercise governmental functions under acts of
37 congress. The term “territories” has been defined to be political subdivisions of the outlying dominion of the
38 United States, and in this sense the term “territory” is not a description of a definite area of land but of a
39 political unit governing and being governed as such. The question whether a particular subdivision or entity is
40 a territory is not determined by the particular form of government with which it is, more or less temporarily
41 invested.

42 “Territories” or “territory” as including “state” or “states.”

43 While the term “territories of the” United States may, under certain circumstances, include the states of the
44 Union, as used in the federal Constitution, and in ordinary acts of congress “territory” does not include a
45 foreign state.

46 As used in this title, the term “territories” generally refers to the political subdivisions created by congress, and
47 not within the boundaries of any of the several states.”

[86 Corpus Juris Secundum, Territories §1]

The U.S. Supreme Court also defined precisely what “territory” meant as follows:

"Various meanings are sought to be attributed to the term 'territory' in the phrase 'the United States and all territory subject to the jurisdiction thereof.' We are of opinion that it means the regional areas- of land and adjacent waters-over which the United States claims and exercises dominion and control as a sovereign power. The immediate context and the purport of the entire section show that the term is used in a physical and not a metaphorical sense-that it refers to areas or districts having fixity of location and recognized boundaries. See United States v. Bevans, 3 Wheat. 336, 390.

*"It now is settled in the United States and recognized elsewhere that the territory subject to its jurisdiction includes the land areas under its dominion and control, the ports, harbors, bays and other enclosed arms of the sea along its coast and a marginal belt of the sea extending from the coast line outward a marine league, or three geographic miles. Church v. Hubbart, 2 Cranch, 187, 234; The Ann, 1 Fed. Cas. No. 397, p. 926; United States v. Smiley, 27 Fed. Cas. No. 16317, p. 1132; Manchester v. Massachusetts, 139 U.S. 240, 257, 258 S., 11 Sup. Ct. 559; Louisiana v. Mississippi, 202 U.S. 1, 52, 26 S. Sup. Ct. 408; 1 Kent's Com. (12th Ed.) *29; 1 Moore, [262 U.S. 100, 123] International Law Digest, 145; 1 Hyde, International Law, 141, 142, 154; Wilson, International Law (8th Ed.) 54; Westlake, International Law (2d Ed.) p. 187, et seq; Wheaton, International Law (5th Eng. Ed. [Phillipson]) p. 282; 1 Oppenheim International Law (3d Ed.) 185-189, 252. This, we hold, is the territory which the amendment designates as its field of operation; and the designation is not of a part of this territory but of 'all' of it." [Cunard S.S. Co. v. Mellon, 262 U.S. 100; 43 S.Ct. 504 (1923)]*

It is extremely important to emphasize once again the need to consider the context of the words being used in order to properly and clearly understanding federal jurisdiction. The term “subject to the jurisdiction” as used in the Fourteenth Amendment of the Constitution has an entirely different meaning than the term “subject to its jurisdiction” as used in federal statutes or “acts of Congress”. Below is a table that hopefully will make the distinctions clear in your mind:

Table 4-12: Constitution v. Federal Statute jurisdiction

Context	Term used	Authority where cited	Where term used within authority cited	Jurisdiction
Federal statute or “act of Congress”	“subject to <u>its</u> jurisdiction”	<i>Cunard S.S. Co. v. Mellon</i> , 262 U.S. 100 (1923)	National Prohibition Act (41 Stat. 305)	Federal zone only under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the Constitution
U.S. Constitution	“subject to <u>the</u> jurisdiction”	<i>U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark</i> , 169 U.S. 649 (1898)	Fourteenth Amendment, section 1	The collective states of the Union. Does not include any part of the federal zone.

An interesting and important outcome of the above analysis regarding the Fourteenth Amendment is the following very reasonable conclusion:

*If you claim to be a federal “U.S. citizen” under the Internal Revenue Code and yet do not live in the federal United States**/federal zone, the only way you can be subject to the jurisdiction of the United States is to yourself be property or territory of the United States! **That's right: you are a slave!** The only thing subject to the jurisdiction of the United States is its territory, and if you aren't on federal property then YOU are federal territory!*

Persons born in the sovereign 50 Union states outside of the “federal zone” are technically not “U.S. citizens” under federal statutes, but “U.S. nationals” as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1408 and 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21) through (a)(22). As “U.S. nationals”, they are classified as “nonresident aliens” within the Internal Revenue Code:

26 U.S.C. §7701 Definitions

(B) Nonresident alien

An individual is a nonresident alien if such individual is neither a citizen of the United States nor a resident of the [federal] United States (within the meaning of subparagraph (A)).

1 One of our readers took this section a step further and actually examined her passport. Below is a snapshot of what the
 2 cover of the U.S. passport says, which confirms the fact that U.S. passports recognize two classes of citizenship: “U.S.
 3 citizens” and “U.S. nationals”:

4 **Figure 4-5: Copy of U.S. Passport Cover**



5

6 We can now apply what we have just learned above to the federal government’s definition of “U.S. citizen” found in the
 7 Internal Revenue Code and explain why they defined it the way they did. Are you a “U.S. citizen”? Here’s the only
 8 definition of “citizen of the United States” found anywhere in the I.R.C. or 26 CFR:

9

26 CFR 31.3121(e)-1 State, United States, and citizen.

10

(b)...The term 'citizen of the United States' includes a citizen of the Commonwealth of Puerto Rico or the Virgin Islands, and, effective January 1, 1961, a citizen of Guam or American Samoa.

11

12 The answer is **EMPHATICALLY NO!** The above definition, you will note, also depends on the definition of “United
 13 States” or “U.S.” appearing in [26 U.S.C. §7701\(a\)\(9\)](#) and [26 U.S.C. §7701\(a\)\(10\)](#), which we showed earlier in sections
 14 3.11.1.23 and 3.11.1.19 means the federal United States in the context of the Internal Revenue Code. The context must
 15 always be examined to determine which of the two types of federal citizens (nationals or citizens) they are talking about.
 16 Therefore, the only thing “U.S. citizen” or “citizen of the United States” can mean in Subtitles A and C of the Internal
 17 Revenue Code is persons born in federal territories and possessions, which doesn’t include most of us. Based on what we
 18 just learned, we can now understand why the conniving lawyers inhabiting the District of Criminals (Washington, D.C.)
 19 defined it the way they did! Puerto Rico, the Virgin Islands, American Samoa, and Guam are all **federal TERRITORIES**
 20 and territories are the only place that “U.S. citizens” as defined above can be born and reside! The District of Columbia is
 21 NOT a territory as the word is correctly defined!

22 The Fourteenth Amendment has two requirements in order to be a “citizen of the United States ”:

23

1. Born in the federal United States **AND**
2. “subject to **the** jurisdiction” of the federal government.

24

25 We must therefore think very clearly about what it means to be “subject to **the** jurisdiction” above and what context we are
 26 talking about: federal statutes versus the Constitution. You will find out later in section 4.11 that the term “subject to **the**
 27 jurisdiction” means the **political** jurisdiction, which means the ability to vote or serve on jury duty within the 50 states of

1 the Union. If we therefore reside in the 50 Union states and outside of the federal zone, then we are technically “subject to
2 **the** [political] jurisdiction” of the federal government under the Constitution, but at the same time, we are **not** subject to
3 most federal statutes and regulations or to the Internal Revenue Code. The founding fathers endowed us with the ability to
4 participate politically in voting and jury service within our country without subjecting ourselves to federal police powers or
5 legislative jurisdiction.

6 How does the government rope us into the jurisdiction of federal statutes and “acts of Congress” so they can tax and pillage
7 us? They use confusing terms and definitions on tax and voter registration and jury duty forms to get us to “volunteer” or
8 “elect” to be treated as though we are statutory federal “U.S. citizens” under 8 U.S.C. §1401 who are subject to federal law
9 and who reside inside the federal zone. For instance, they scare us into filling out an IRS form 1040 that creates a false but
10 prima facie presumption that we occupy the federal zone as a “alien”.¹²² In effect, they trick us by abusing language into
11 admitting that we occupy the federal zone so they can make us into financial slaves, and it’s perfectly legal because the
12 Thirteenth Amendment prohibition against involuntary servitude doesn’t apply inside the federal zone!

13 **4.11.3.3 The voluntary nature of citizenship: Requirement for “consent” and “intent”**

14 As we said in section 4.11, the act of becoming a citizens is a voluntary act and requires an intent and consent on your part.
15 The government likes to rig its forms to deceive you into admitting that you are a “U.S. citizen” under federal statutes and
16 the Internal Revenue Code, which most people aren’t. Whenever you see any kind of state or federal government form that
17 asks you whether you are a “U.S. citizen”, remember that they are asking about your “intent” and asking for your “consent”
18 to treat you as a “U.S. citizen”. In doing so, what they are really asking you but can’t say outright:

19 *“Do you want to volunteer to give up all of your rights and become a slave to state and federal income taxes
20 who is devoid of Constitutional rights? Do you want to be a Socialist puppet of your government?”*

21 If your answer yes, you have just volunteered into slavery and servitude to the federal government, in effect, and there is
22 absolutely no advantage whatsoever to becoming a “U.S. citizen” because as we said before, your rights don’t come from
23 your citizenship, but from where you live. Even the U.S. Supreme Court says that citizenship is an optional and voluntary
24 act:

25 *“The people of the United States resident within any State are subject to two governments: one State, and the
26 other National; but there need be no conflict between the two. The powers which one possesses, the other
27 does not. They are established for different purposes, and have separate jurisdictions. Together they make one
28 whole, and furnish the people of the United States with a complete government, ample for the protection of all
29 their rights at home and abroad. True, it may sometimes happen that a person is amenable to both jurisdictions
30 for one and the same act. Thus, if a marshal of the United States is unlawfully resisted while executing the
31 process of the courts within a State, and the resistance is accompanied by an assault on the officer, the
32 sovereignty of the United States is violated by the resistance, and that of the State by the breach of peace, in the
33 assault. So, too, if one passes counterfeited coin of the United States within a State, it may be an offence against
34 the United States and the State: the United States, because it discredits the coin; and the State, because of the
35 fraud upon him to whom it is passed. This does not, however, necessarily imply that the two governments
36 possess powers in common, or bring them into conflict with each other. It is the natural consequence of a
37 citizenship [92 U.S. 542, 551] which owes allegiance to two sovereignties, and claims protection from both.*

38 **The citizen cannot complain, because he has**
39 **voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of**
40 **government.** *He owes allegiance to the two departments, so to speak, and within their respective
41 spheres must pay the penalties which each exacts for disobedience to its laws. In return, he can demand
42 protection from each within its own jurisdiction.”* *United States v. Cruikshank, 92 U.S. 542 (1875) [emphasis
43 added]*

44 Returning to the Cruikshank cite above and the meaning of the word “voluntarily” in the context of “U.S. citizen” status,
45 you might at this point want to go forward to Chapter 14, which is Definitions, and look at the definition of “voluntary”.
46 Here is it again:

¹²² See 26 CFR §1.1-1(a)(2)(ii) and 26 CFR §1.1441-1(c)(3) for confirmation of the fact that the only “individuals” who are
“subject” to the Internal Revenue Code are aliens and nonresident aliens.

1 “Voluntary: (Black’s Law Dictionary, 6th Edition, page 1575) “Unconstrained by interference; unimpelled by
 2 another’s influence; spontaneous; acting of oneself. Coker v. State, 199 Ga. 20, 33 S.E.2d 171, 174. Done by
 3 design or intention. Proceeding from the free and unrestrained will of the person. Produced in or by an act
 4 of choice. Resulting from free choice, without compulsion or solicitation. The word, especially in statutes,
 5 often implies knowledge of essential facts. Without valuable consideration; gratuitous, as a voluntary
 6 conveyance. Also, having a merely nominal consideration; as, a voluntary deed.”

7 The implications here are profound, because the Supreme Court is implying here that we don’t have to choose to be either
 8 state citizens or “U.S. citizens” or even “U.S. nationals” because it is voluntary! Voluntary citizenship and voluntary
 9 political rights are the very heart and soul of what it means to live in a free country and have liberty! We can’t be citizens
 10 by compulsion or by presumption, and must do so by choice. We can simply be “residents” or inhabitants instead of
 11 “citizens” if that status affords us the most protections for our God-give rights and liberties. The reason why citizenship
 12 MUST be voluntary is because of what we find in the Declaration of Independence, which states:

13 “We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator
 14 with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness.--That to
 15 secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men, deriving their just powers
 16 from the consent of the governed, --That whenever any Form of Government becomes
 17 destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new Government,
 18 laying its foundation on such principles and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most
 19 likely to effect their Safety and Happiness.” [emphasis added]

20 The key word here is “consent”. If you don’t want to be a “U.S. citizen” or accept the so-called “benefits” or “privileges
 21 and immunities” of a highly litigious and corrupt and greedy socialist democracy, or submit yourself to its corrupt laws
 22 that are clearly in conflict with God’s sovereign laws, then you don’t have to! Consent can’t be compelled and if it is, then
 23 the exercise of government power in such a case is no longer “just” as Thomas Jefferson says here, and represents
 24 “injustice”. Please remember that the purpose of our court system is to effect justice, not injustice, so the courts can’t
 25 enforce that which isn’t consensual. The only exception to this rule is if a person does something that infringes on the
 26 equal rights or liberties of a bona fide, flesh and blood third party and nonpayment of income taxes does not accomplish
 27 this because the state/government isn’t a natural or real person, but an artificial legal entity. The problem is, even if your
 28 choice or consent was procured by force or fraud or trickery on the part of the government or its treacherous lawyers, as it
 29 is in most cases, the judges in our corrupt federal courts are so eager to get their hands in your pocket that they won’t give
 30 you the benefit of the doubt as their very own precedents and rulings clearly establish. Here is what the U.S. Supreme
 31 Court said about this subject:

32 “Keeping in mind the well-settled rule that the citizen is exempt from taxation unless the same is imposed by
 33 clear and unequivocal language, and that where the construction of a tax law is doubtful, the doubt is to be
 34 resolved in favor of those upon whom the tax is sought to be laid.” Spreckels Sugar Refining Co. v. McClain,
 35 192 U.S. 397 (1904)

36 “Waivers of constitutional rights not only must be voluntary, but must be knowing, intelligent acts done with
 37 sufficient awareness of the relevant circumstances and likely consequences.” Brady v. United States, 397 U.S.
 38 742, 90 S.Ct. 1463 (1970)

39 Powerful stuff, folks! By the way, there are LOTS of similar quotes like the first quote above that use the word “taxpayer”
 40 instead of “citizen”, but we positively refuse to use them because the word “taxpayer” is a due process trap and a
 41 government scam, as you will learn later in section 5.6.5. Based on the above, if most judges really were “honorable”
 42 (which is why we are supposed to call them “your honor” but also why they seldom merit that name), they would presume
 43 we are “U.S. nationals” unless and until **THE GOVERNMENT** meets the burden of proof that we chose to become
 44 privileged “U.S. citizens” by an informed and deliberate choice and consent rather than by presumption and by fraud
 45 because of our own legal ignorance when filling out government forms. The foundation of this is that in our system of
 46 justice, we are “innocent until proven guilty”. In the commercial world, a contract becomes valid only when there is:

- 47 1. An offer: government offers to make us “U.S. citizens”
- 48 2. Acceptance: we accept their offer voluntarily and without duress. Being deceived constitutes duress insofar as the
 49 actions of our government are concerned.
- 50 3. Consideration: receipt of the privileges and immunities of “U.S. citizen” status in our case or income tax on the
 51 part of the government

- 1 4. Mutual assent by both parties: informed choice and a full understanding of the rights that are being surrendered or
2 waived in the process of procuring the perceived benefit.

3 The fourth element above is missing from the “citizenship contract” we signed when we submitted our government
4 application for voter registration, passport, or social security benefits, and therefore the “citizenship contract” cannot and
5 should not be legally enforced by our dishonorable courts, but it is anyway in a massive conspiracy to deprive us of rights
6 under [18 U.S.C. §241](#) and in violation of the spirit and intent of the “social contract” called U.S. Constitution and that of
7 the framers who wrote it. The goal of this document is to ensure that your consent from this day forward is fully informed
8 so that the government can no longer use your own ignorance as a weapon against you to STEAL your property. After you
9 have read this document, if you continue to remain a “U.S. citizen”, then you will have no one to blame but yourself for
10 your inaction at eliminating that status and regaining your God-given rights. The choice to do NOTHING is a choice to
11 remain a slave. As Sherry Peel Jackson, an X IRS Examination agent very powerfully said at the We The People Truth In
12 Taxation Hearings on February 28, 2002 (<http://www.bostonteaparty2.com>):

13 *“You can remain an informed slave, or you can leave the plantation entirely!”*

14 So the question is, why on earth would anyone want to “volunteer” to be a citizen of either their state or federal government
15 and thereby volunteer to be subject to the legislative jurisdiction of our corrupt and covetous government? What if you
16 don’t want government “protection” as the Supreme Court describes above and want to fend for yourself or better yet have
17 God protect you? Remember that a compelled benefit is not a benefit, but slavery disguised as government benevolence!
18 If the government abuses its power by threatening anyone who doesn’t want protection [from harassment by IRS computers
19 in the collection of taxes when they aren’t paid, for instance] and thereby forces you to accept protection and to pay taxes
20 for that protection, then government becomes nothing more than a mafia protection racket under such circumstances, who
21 charges you for protection from its own bad deeds! This kind of arrangement is no different than Racketeer Influenced
22 Corrupt Organizations (RICO), which is a serious crime under [18 U.S.C. §225](#). I certainly don’t choose to “volunteer” to
23 be a citizen of my federal government under such compelled circumstances and you shouldn’t either.

24 We should never forget that God in the Bible clearly states that we should not be citizens of any state or government,
25 because in doing so we surrender our sovereignty and the protection of God, and trade our God-given rights for taxable
26 government “privileges” and protection, thereby becoming slaves!:

27 *“Protection draws subjection.” Steven Miller*

28 *“Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the
29 yoke of bondage [to the government or the income tax].”
30 *[Bible, Galatians 5:1]**

31 *“For our citizenship is in heaven, from which we also eagerly wait for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ”--
32 Philippians 3:20*

33 *“Now, therefore, you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and members
34 of the household of God.” --Ephesians 2:19, Bible, NKJV*

35 *“These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off were assured of them,
36 embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.” --Hebrews 11:13*

37 *“Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul...” --1
38 Peter 2:1*

39 4.11.3.4 How you unknowingly volunteered to become a “citizen of the United States” under federal statutes

40 Armed with the knowledge that “U.S. citizen” status under federal statutes and “acts of Congress” is entirely voluntary,
41 let’s now examine the federal government’s definition of the term “naturalization” to determine at what point we
42 “volunteered”:

43 [8 U.S.C. §1101\(a\)\(23\)](#) naturalization defined

(a)(23) The term "naturalization" means the conferring of **nationality** [NOT "citizenship" or "U.S. citizenship", but "nationality", which means "[U.S. national](#)"] of a state upon a person after birth, by any means whatsoever.

And here is the definition in Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 1026 of *naturalization*:

Naturalization. The process by which a person acquires nationality [not citizenship, but nationality] after birth and becomes entitled to the privileges of U.S. citizenship. [8 U.S.C.A. §1401](#) et seq..

In the United States collective naturalization occurs when designated groups are made citizens by treaty (as Louisiana Purchase), or by a law of Congress (as in annexation of Texas and Hawaii). Individual naturalization must follow certain steps: (a) petition for naturalization by a person of lawful age who has been a lawful resident of the United States for 5 years; (b) investigation by the Immigration and Naturalization Service to determine whether the applicant can speak and write the English language, has a knowledge of the fundamentals of American government and history, is attached to the principles of the Constitution and is of good moral character; (c) hearing before a U.S. District Court or certain State courts of record; and (d) after a lapse of at least 30 days a second appearance in court when the oath of allegiance is administered.

Hmmm. Well then, if you were a foreigner who was "naturalized" to become a "U.S. national" (and keep in mind that all of America is mostly a country of immigrants), then some questions arise:

- At what point did you become a "U.S. citizen", because "naturalization" didn't do it?
- By what means did you inform the government of your "informed choice" in this voluntary process?

The answer is that when you applied for a passport or registered to vote or participated in jury duty, the government asked you whether you were a "U.S. citizen" and you lied by saying "YES". In effect, although you never made an informed choice to surrender your sovereign status as a "U.S. national" to become a "U.S. citizen", you created a "presumption" on their part that you were a "U.S. citizen" just because of the erroneous paperwork you sent them which they can later use as evidence in court to prove you are a "U.S. citizen". Even worst, they ENCOURAGED you to make it erroneous because of the way they designed the forms by not even giving you a choice on the form to indicate that you were a "U.S. national" instead of a "U.S. citizen"! By you checking the "U.S. citizen" block on their rigged forms, that is all the evidence they needed to conclude, incorrectly and to their massive financial benefit I might add, that you were a "U.S. citizen" who was "completely subject to the jurisdiction" of the United States. BAD IDEA!

Technically and lawfully, the federal government does not have the lawful authority to confer "citizen of the United States" status upon a person born inside a Union state on land that is not part of the federal zone. If they did, they would be "sheep poachers" who were stealing citizens from the Union states and depriving those states of control over persons born within their jurisdiction. This is so because "citizen of the United States" status is superior and dominant over state citizenship according to the Supreme Court in the *Slaughter-House Cases*, 83 U.S. 36 (1872)"

"The first of these questions is one of vast importance, and lies at the very foundations of our government. **The question is now settled by the fourteenth amendment itself, that citizenship of the United States is the primary citizenship in this country; and that State citizenship is secondary and derivative, depending upon citizenship of the United States and the citizen's place of residence. The States have not now, if they ever had, any power to restrict their citizenship to any classes or persons.** A citizen of the United States has a perfect constitutional right to go to and reside in any State he chooses, and to claim citizenship therein, [83 U.S. 36, 113] and an equality of rights with every other citizen; and the whole power of the nation is pledged to sustain him in that right. He is not bound to cringe to any superior, or to pray for any act of grace, as a means of enjoying all the rights and privileges enjoyed by other citizens. And when the spirit of lawlessness, mob violence, and sectional hate can be so completely repressed as to give full practical effect to this right, we shall be a happier nation, and a more prosperous one than we now are. **Citizenship of the United States ought to be, and, according to the Constitution, is, a sure and undoubted title to equal rights in any and every States in this Union,** subject to such regulations as the legislature may rightfully prescribe. If a man be denied full equality before the law, he is denied one of the essential rights of citizenship as a citizen of the United States." [*Slaughter-House Cases*, 83 U.S. 36 (1872)]

Therefore, persons born in the Union states but outside the federal zone (federal areas or enclaves within the states) must be naturalized technically in order to become "citizens of the United States". However, the rules for naturalization in the case of federal citizenship are so lax and transparent that people are fooled into thinking they always were "citizens of the United States"! Whenever you fill out a passport or voter registration form and claim you are a "citizen of the United States" or a "U.S. citizen", for instance, even if you technically weren't because you weren't born inside the federal zone,

1 then you have effectively and formally “naturalized” yourself into federal citizenship and given the government evidence
2 admissible under penalty of perjury proving that you are a federal serf and slave!

3 I therefore like to think of the term “U.S. citizen” used by the Internal Revenue Service and the Internal Revenue Code as
4 being like the sign that your enemies taped on your back in grammar school without you knowing which said “HIT ME!”,
5 and the only people who can see the sign or understand what it means are those who work for the government and the IRS
6 and the legal profession! Your own legal ignorance is the only reason that you don’t know that you have this sign on your
7 back.

8 **4.11.3.5 Presumptions about “citizen of the United States” status**

9 The courts often presume you to be a statutory federal citizen under 8 U.S.C. §1401, without even telling you that there are
10 different classes of citizens. It is up to you dispute this.

11 *“Unless the defendant can prove he is not a citizen of the United States, the IRS has the right to inquire and*
12 *determine a tax liability.” [U.S. v. Slater, 545 Fed. Supp. 179,182 (1982)]*

13 The legal encyclopedia, American Jurisprudence, further helps explain the nature of the above presumption as shown
14 below:

15 *“As a general rule, it is presumed, until the contrary is shown, that every person is a citizen of the country*
16 *[nation, meaning “U.S. national”] in which he or she resides.¹²³ Furthermore, once granted, citizenship is*
17 *presumably retained unless voluntarily relinquished,¹²⁴ and the burden rests upon one alleging a change of*
18 *citizenship and allegiance to establish that fact. Consequently, a person born in the United States is presumed*
19 *to continue to be a citizen until the contrary is shown, and where it appears that a person was once a citizen of*
20 *a particular foreign country, even though residing in another, the presumption is that he or she still remains a*
21 *citizen of such foreign country, until the contrary appears.” [3C AmJur 2d 204 Presumptions concerning*
22 *citizenship]*

23 The above quote is obviously written so that it could very easily mislead those who do not understand the separation of
24 powers doctrine or the nature of federal jurisdiction. As we said earlier in section 4.6, the “United States” is *not* a “nation”,
25 but a “federation” of independent states. Within the context of *The Law of Nations* (see Vattel), the federal zone *in*
26 *combination with* the 50 states are collectively considered a “country”, but *not* a nation. Politicians and judges do
27 frequently refer to the federal government as the “national government” to deliberately mislead people, but you would be
28 mistaken to conclude that we are a “nation” in the legal sense.¹²⁵ When the above cite says we are “presumed” to be a
29 “citizen” of the “country in which he or she resides”, what they are saying is that we are to be presumed to be a “national of
30 the United States” but not necessarily a “citizen of the United States” under federal statutes and “acts of Congress” if we
31 were born anywhere in the *country*, meaning if we were born either in a state of the Union or in the federal zone. We will
32 explain this further later in section 4.11.10, where we will show that the word “citizen” used independently of the name of a
33 geographic region, simply implies “national”. This confusion over definitions was not our doing, but a creation of the
34 politicians and the courts to keep you confused and enslaved to their corrupt jurisdiction.

35 As we covered earlier in section 2.8.2, having a Social Security Number (SSN) also creates a rebuttable presumption that
36 you are a “U.S. citizen”, according to the Internal Revenue Code:

37 [26 CFR § 301.6109-1\(g\)](#)

38 *(g) Special rules for taxpayer identifying numbers issued to foreign persons--(1) General rule--(i) Social*
39 *security number. **A social security number is generally identified in the records and database of the Internal***
40 *Revenue Service as a number belonging to a U.S. citizen or resident alien individual. A person may establish*
41 *a different status for the number by providing proof of foreign status with the Internal Revenue Service under*
42 *such procedures as the Internal Revenue Service shall prescribe, including the use of a form as the Internal*
43 *Revenue Service may specify. Upon accepting an individual as a nonresident alien individual, the Internal*
44 *Revenue Service will assign this status to the individual's social security number.*

¹²³ Shelton v. Tiffin, 47 U.S. 163, 6 How. 163, 12 L.Ed. 387 (1848).

¹²⁴ Afroyim v. Rusk, 387 U.S. 253, 87 S.Ct. 1660, 18 L.Ed. 2d 757 (1967).

¹²⁵ See *Chisholm v. Georgia*, [2 Dall. \(U.S.\) 419](#), 1 L.Ed. 440 (1793)

1 The reason you can rebut this presumption is that the Social Security Administration Program Operations Manual says that
2 both “U.S. citizens” and “U.S. nationals” can participate in the Social Security program, and because foreigners can acquire
3 a Socialist Security Number as well using an SS-5 form.

4 To rebut the presumption that you are a statutory “U.S. citizen” under 8 U.S.C. §1401, simply present your SS-5 form
5 reflecting your correct status as a “U.S. national”, along with your birth certificate. You can also show them a copy of any
6 of the following documents, which we show you how to prepare so as to reflect your correct citizenship status in section
7 3.5.3.13 of our [Tax Freedom Solutions Manual](#):

- 8 1. Voter registration
- 9 2. Passport application
- 10 3. Government security clearance application
- 11 4. Jury summons

12 Using the above evidence to rebut incorrect presumptions about your citizenship status can be useful when you are filing
13 tax returns and when you are litigating in court and you want the judge to respect your choice of citizenship status.

14 **WARNING!:** If you have a Socialist Security Number and you don’t rebut the presumption that you are a statutory “U.S.
15 citizen” with evidence in a court proceeding, then the state and federal courts will automatically presume that you are
16 without even telling you that they are! This can have disastrous results!

17 4.11.3.6 Privileges and Immunities of U.S. citizens

18 Some people claim that a “U.S. citizen” under 8 U.S.C. §1401 is a taxable entity like a corporation, and is subject to pay an
19 excise tax for the privileges that Congress has granted him/her. However, there is no basis in federal law to support this
20 conclusion.

21 *“The individual, unlike the corporation, cannot be taxed for the mere privilege of existing. The corporation is
22 an artificial entity which owes its existence and charter power to the State, but the individual’s right to live and
23 own property are natural rights for the enjoyment of which an excise cannot be imposed.” [Redfield v. Fisher,
24 292 Oregon 814, 817]*

25 The rights that most people believe they have are not natural rights but civil rights which are actually privileges granted by
26 Congress only to statutory “citizens of the United States” under 8 U.S.C. §1401. Some of these civil rights parallel the
27 protection of the Bill of Rights (the first 10 Amendments to the Constitution), but by researching the Civil Rights Act along
28 with case law decisions involving those rights, it can be shown that these so-called civil rights do not include the Ninth or
29 Tenth Amendments and have only limited application with regard to Amendments One through Eight.

30 If you accept any benefit from the federal government or you claim any civil right, you are making an "adhesion contract"
31 with the federal government. You may not be aware of any adhesion contracts but the courts are. The other aspect of such
32 a contract is that you will obey every statute that Congress passes. For example, if you want to be in receipt of the
33 “privilege” of becoming a commissioned officer in the U.S. military, 10 U.S.C. §532(a)(1) requires that you must be a
34 “citizen of the United States”. That same statute in paragraph (3) requires that officers must be “of good moral character”.
35 Does supreme ignorance fit the description of “good moral character”? No one other than either an idiot or a liar would
36 claim to be a “citizen of the United States” if they were born in a Union state outside of the federal zone based on the
37 content of this section. Does that meet the definition of “good moral character?” We think not! We must also conclude
38 that there are an awful lot of officers in the U.S. military who don’t belong there, because the vast majority of them no
39 doubt had to be born inside the Union states instead of inside the federal zone. Wouldn’t this make a GREAT subject for a
40 lawsuit: getting most of the officers in the military kicked out of the military because they are not, in fact, “U.S. citizens”?
41 Can you see just how insidious this “privilege-induced slavery” is that our government uses to trap us into their corrupt
42 jurisdiction? The most distressing part is that it’s all based on fraud and lies, and the government in this case loves being
43 lied to and won’t question the lies, because willfully acquiescing to lies is the only way they can manufacture “taxpayers”
44 and idiots they can govern and have jurisdiction over!

1 Privileged "U.S. citizens" under 8 U.S.C. §1401 are presumed to be operating in the jurisdiction of private commercial law
 2 because that is the jurisdiction of their creator -- Congress. This is evidenced by the existence of various contracts and the
 3 use of negotiable instruments. All are products of international law or commercial law [Uniform Commercial Code]. Under
 4 Common Law your intent is important; in a court of equity and contract (commercial law) the only thing that matters is that
 5 you live up to the letter of the contract. Because you have adhesion contracts with Congress, you cannot use the
 6 Constitution or Bill of Rights as a defense because it is irrelevant to the contract. As stated previously, the contract says you
 7 will obey every Act of Congress. A federal "U.S. citizen" under 8 U.S.C. §1401 does not have access to Common Law. If
 8 you doubt this, appoint a counsel of your choice and under contract who is not licensed by the socialist state to practice law
 9 to represent you in court. Go in front of the federal court and when they ask for his state bar number, tell them the counsel
 10 isn't licensed and doesn't need to be licensed. If they try to dismiss your counsel for not being licensed, cite Article 1,
 11 Section 10 of the Constitution says

12 *U.S. Constitution, Article I, Section 10*

13 *"No State shall ... pass any Bill of Attainder, ex post facto Law, or Law impairing the Obligation of Contracts,*
 14 *or grant any Title of Nobility."*

15 By removing your counsel, they have effected a Bill of Attainder by penalizing you without a law or even a trial related to
 16 attorney licensing for exercising your right to contract. They have in effect created a Title of Nobility for all those who are
 17 licensed to practice law in the state. They have also penalized you in effect for exercising your right of free speech in the
 18 process of removing the person you chose to be your spokesperson, who is then prevented from representing you. They
 19 have done this in furtherance of the private lawyer's labor union called the American Bar Association (ABA).

20 Section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment says that "citizens of the United States", which we will show later are actually
 21 "U.S. nationals" or "nationals of the United States" under 8 U.S.C. §1408, have special "privileges and immunities" above
 22 and beyond those of purely state Citizens, but what exactly are they? The annotated Fourteenth Amendment answers this
 23 question. Below is an excerpt from the annotated Fourteenth Amendment on the "privileges and immunities" of U.S.
 24 citizens:

25 ***SECTION 1. RIGHTS GUARANTEED: PRIVILEGES AND IMMUNITIES***

26 *Unique among constitutional provisions, the privileges and immunities clause of the Fourteenth Amendment*
 27 *enjoys the distinction of having been rendered a "practical nullity" by a single decision of the Supreme Court*
 28 *issued within five years after its ratification. In the Slaughter-House Cases, 15 a bare majority of the Court*
 29 *frustrated the aims of the most aggressive sponsors of this clause, to whom was attributed an intention to*
 30 *centralize "in the hands of the Federal Government large powers hitherto exercised by the States" with a view*
 31 *to enabling business to develop unimpeded by state interference. This expansive alteration of the federal system*
 32 *was to have been achieved by converting the rights of the citizens of each State as of the date of the adoption of*
 33 *the Fourteenth Amendment into privileges and immunities of United States citizenship and thereafter*
 34 *perpetuating this newly defined status quo through judicial condemnation of any state law challenged as*
 35 *"abridging" any one of the latter privileges. To have fostered such intentions, the Court declared, would have*
 36 *been "to transfer the security and protection of all the civil rights . . . to the Federal Government, . . . to bring*
 37 *within the power of Congress the entire domain of civil rights heretofore belonging exclusively to the States,"*
 38 *and to "constitute this court a perpetual censor upon all legislation of the States, on the civil rights of their own*
 39 *citizens, with authority to nullify such as it did not approve as consistent with those rights, as they existed at the*
 40 *time of the adoption of this amendment. . . . [The effect of] so great a departure from the structure and spirit of*
 41 *our institutions . . . is to fetter and degrade the State governments by subjecting them to the control of Congress,*
 42 *in the exercise of powers heretofore universally conceded to them of the most ordinary and fundamental*
 43 *character. . . . We are convinced that no such results were intended by the Congress . . . , nor by the legislatures*
 44 *. . . which ratified" this amendment, and that the sole "pervading purpose" of this and the other War*
 45 *Amendments was "the freedom of the slave race."*

46 *Conformably to these conclusions, the Court advised the New Orleans butchers that the Louisiana statute,*
 47 *conferring on a single corporation a monopoly of the business of slaughtering cattle, abrogated no rights*
 48 *possessed by them as United States citizens; insofar as that law interfered with their claimed privilege of*
 49 *pursuing the lawful calling of butchering animals, the privilege thus terminated was merely one of "those which*
 50 *belonged to the citizens of the States as such." Privileges and immunities of state citizenship had been "left to*
 51 *the state governments for security and protection" and had not been placed by this clause "under the special*
 52 *care of the Federal Government." The only privileges which the Fourteenth Amendment protected against state*
 53 *encroachment were declared to be those "which owe their existence to the Federal Government, its National*
 54 *character, its Constitution, or its laws." 16 These privileges, however, had been available to United States*
 55 *citizens and protected from state interference by operation of federal supremacy even prior to the adoption of*

1 the Fourteenth Amendment. The Slaughter-House Cases, therefore, reduced the privileges and immunities
2 clause to a superfluous reiteration of a prohibition already operative against the states.

3 Although the Court has expressed a reluctance to attempt a definitive enumeration of those privileges and
4 immunities of United States citizens which are protected against state encroachment, it nevertheless felt obliged
5 in the Slaughter-House Cases "to suggest some which owe their existence to the Federal Government, its
6 National character, its Constitution, or its laws." 17 Among those which it then identified were the right of
7 access to the seat of Government and to the seaports, subtreasuries, land officers, and courts of justice in the
8 several States, the right to demand protection of the Federal Government on the high seas or abroad, the right
9 of assembly, the privilege of habeas corpus, the right to use the navigable waters of the United States, and
10 rights secured by treaty. In Twining v. New Jersey, 18 the Court recognized "among the rights and privileges"
11 of national citizenship the right to pass freely from State to State, 19 the right to petition Congress for a redress
12 of grievances, 20 the right to vote for national officers, 21 the right to enter public lands, 22 the right to be
13 protected against violence while in the lawful custody of a United States marshal, 23 and the right to inform the
14 United States authorities of violation of its laws. 24 Earlier, in a decision not mentioned in Twining, the Court
15 had also acknowledged that the carrying on of interstate commerce is "a right which every citizen of the United
16 States is entitled to exercise." 25

17 In modern times, the Court has continued the minor role accorded to the clause, only occasionally manifesting
18 a disposition to enlarge the restraint which it imposes upon state action. Colgate v. Harvey, 26 which was
19 overruled five years later, 27 represented the first attempt by the Court since adoption of the Fourteenth
20 Amendment to convert the privileges and immunities clause into a source of protection of other than those
21 "interests growing out of the relationship between the citizen and the national government." Here, the Court
22 declared that the right of a citizen resident in one State to contract in another, to transact any lawful business,
23 or to make a loan of money, in any State other than that in which the citizen resides was a privilege of national
24 citizenship which was abridged by a state income tax law excluding from taxable income interest received on
25 money loaned within the State. In Hague v. CIO, 28 two and perhaps three justices thought that freedom to use
26 municipal streets and parks for the dissemination of information concerning provisions of a federal statute and
27 to assemble peacefully therein for discussion of the advantages and opportunities offered by such act was a
28 privilege and immunity of a United States citizen, and in Edwards v. California 29 four Justices were prepared
29 to rely on the clause. 30 In Oyama v. California, 31 in a single sentence the Court agreed with the contention of
30 a native-born youth that a state Alien Land Law, applied to work a forfeiture of property purchased in his name
31 with funds advanced by his parent, a Japanese alien ineligible for citizenship and precluded from owning land,
32 deprived him "of his privileges as an American citizen." The right to acquire and retain property had previously
33 not been set forth in any of the enumerations as one of the privileges protected against state abridgment,
34 although a federal statute enacted prior to the proposal and ratification of the Fourteenth Amendment did
35 confer on all citizens the same rights to purchase and hold real property as white citizens enjoyed. 32

36 [Extracted from Findlaw website at:

37 <http://caselaw.lp.findlaw.com/data/constitution/amendment14/02.html - 1/>

38 It is important to realize that the status of "citizen of the United States" under Section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment
39 makes state citizenship "derivative and dependent" upon federal citizenship.

40 "Thus, the dual character of our citizenship is made plainly apparent. That is to say, a citizen of the United
41 States is ipso facto and at the same time a citizen of the state in which he resides. And while the Fourteenth
42 Amendment does not create a national citizenship, it has the effect of making that citizenship 'paramount
43 and dominant' instead of 'derivative and dependent' upon state citizenship. 3. In reviewing the subject,' Chief
44 Justice White said, in the Selective Draft Law Cases, 245 U.S. 366, 377, 388 S., 389, 38 S.Ct. 159, 165, L.R.A.
45 1918C, 361, Ann.Cas. 1918B, 856: 'We have hitherto considered it as it has been argued from the point of view
46 of the Constitution as it stood prior to the adoption of the Fourteenth Amendment. But to avoid all
47 misapprehension we briefly direct attention to that (the fourteenth) amendment for the purpose of pointing out,
48 as has been frequently done in the past, how completely it broadened the national scope of the government
49 under the Constitution by causing citizenship of the United States to be paramount and dominant instead of
50 being subordinate [296 U.S. 404, 428] and derivative, and therefore operating as it does upon all the powers
51 conferred by the Constitution leaves no possible support for the contentions made if their want of merit was
52 otherwise not to clearly made manifest.' " [Colgate v. Harvey, 296 U.S. 404 (1935)]

53 Five years later, in Madden v. Commonwealth of Kentucky, 309 U.S. 83 (1940), the Supreme Court contradicted itself by
54 overruling Colgate v. Harvey in its majority opinion, but the above does help you to understand how the courts think about
55 statutory "U.S. nationals". The court also ruled in Madden that the main goal of the Fourteenth Amendment was to protect
56 Negro slaves in their freedom, and was therefore not intended to apply to the rest of the predominantly white population.

57 "This Court declared in the Slaughter-House Cases¹⁵ that the Fourteenth Amendment as well as the Thirteenth
58 and Fifteenth were adopted to protect the negroes in their freedom. This almost contemporaneous
59 interpretation extended the benefits of the privileges and immunities clause to other rights which are inherent in

1 national citizenship but denied it to those which spring from [309 U.S. 83, 92] state citizenship."
2 [Madden v. Commonwealth of Kentucky, 309 U.S. 83 (1940)]

3 4.11.3.7 Definitions of federal citizenship terms

4 We'd like to clarify one more *very important point* about the meaning of the term "citizen of the United States" based on
5 the definition of "naturalization" offered earlier. Because "naturalization" is defined statutorily in [8 U.S.C. §1101\(a\)\(23\)](#) as
6 the process of conferring "**nationality**" rather than "federal U.S. citizen" status, then some people believe that the "citizen
7 of the United States" that section 1 of the Fourteenth is referring to must *actually* be that of a "U.S. national" rather than
8 "U.S. citizen". We agree wholeheartedly with this conclusion, and you will learn many additional reasons why this is the
9 case later in section 4.11.10, where we show how the government has deliberately confused definitions to deceive you.

10 There is additional evidence found earlier in section 4.6 which corroborates the view that a "citizen of the United States"
11 mentioned repeatedly by the Supreme Court is actually a "U.S. national". In that section, we quoted the Black's Law
12 Dictionary Fourth Edition definition of "National Government" as well as the Supreme Court case of *Chisholm v. Georgia*,
13 2 Dall. (U.S.) 419, 1 L.Ed. 440 (1793) to conclusively show that the "United States" is not a "nation", but a "federation" of
14 sovereign states. Now if the "United States" is defined as a "federation" and *not* a "nation", then what exactly does it mean
15 to say that a person is a "U.S. national"? What "nation" are they a "citizen" of under such a circumstance if isn't the
16 "United States"? Well, 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21) answers this question authoritatively:

17 [TITLE 8](#) > [CHAPTER 12](#) > [SUBCHAPTER I](#) > **Sec. 1101.**

18 [Sec. 1101. - Definitions](#)

19 (a)(21) The term "national" means a person owing permanent allegiance to **a state**.

20 It's important to realize that federal statutes and most "acts of Congress" are simply municipal legislation that only have
21 force and effect over the federal zone in most cases. The term "state" in the context of federal statutes, since it is not
22 capitalized, means a foreign state, which can either be a foreign country or a state of the Union. So it is therefore
23 reasonable to conclude that a "U.S. national" can *only* mean a person born in a state of the Union or a foreign country to
24 parents who were also "U.S. nationals" and who owes allegiance to the federation of states called the "United States".

25 If you were born in a state of the Union, you are a "national of the United States", and this is so because of section 1 of the
26 Fourteenth Amendment and state law, and not because of any federal statute. The courts of your state, in fact, have the
27 authority under the Law of Nations to declare your "citizen of the United States" status under the Fourteenth Amendment
28 based on your birth certificate. Remember always that Congress wears *two* hats:

- 29 1. The equivalent of a state government over the federal zone.
- 30 2. An independent contractor for the states of the union that handles **external** affairs for the entire country only.

31 The laws that Congress writes pertain to *one* of these two political jurisdictions, and it is often difficult to tell which of
32 these two that a specific federal law applies to. The only thing that federal statutes pertain to in most cases are statutory
33 *federal* "U.S. citizens" or "citizens and nationals of the United States" as defined under 8 U.S.C. §1401, which are people
34 who are born on federal property that is within the federal zone, because Congress is the municipal "city hall" for the
35 federal zone. The "States" they legislate for in this capacity are *federal* "States", which are in fact territories and
36 possessions of the United States such as Guam and Puerto Rico. Federal statutes and the U.S. Codes do *not* and *cannot*
37 address what happens to people who are born in a state of the Union because Congress has no police power or legislative
38 jurisdiction over states of the Union for the vast majority of subject matters. All legislation and statutes of the states,
39 including the power of taxation of internal commerce, are "plenary" and exclusive within their own respective territorial
40 jurisdictions. Therefore, don't go looking for a federal statute that confers citizenship upon you as someone who was born
41 in a state of the Union, because there *isn't* one! No government is authorized to write legislation that operates *outside* its
42 territory, which is called "extraterritorial legislation".

43 *"The Constitution of the United States [before the Fourteenth Amendment] does not declare who are and who
44 are not its citizens, nor does it attempt to describe the constituent elements of citizenship; it leaves that quality*

where it found it, resting upon the fact of home birth and upon the laws of the several states.” [8 U.S.C. §1401, Notes]

A “citizen” in the context of most federal statutes is someone who is either born or naturalized in federal territory within the federal “United States” (federal zone). A “national”, however, is someone who was born anywhere within the country called the “United States”. A “citizen” in state statutes and regulations usually refers to someone who is a state citizen, and not necessarily a federal citizen. These points are very important to remember as you read through this book.

So how do we conclusively relate what a “citizen of the United States” is under the Fourteenth Amendment to a specific citizenship status found in federal statutes? We have to look at Title 8, Aliens and Nationality and compare the terms they use to describe each and reach our own conclusions, because the government gives us absolutely no help doing this. Does it surprise you that the Master doesn’t want to educate the slaves how to take off their chains by eliminating their captivity to “words of art”? Title 8 of the U.S. Code does not even define “U.S. citizen” and only defines the term “citizens and nationals of the United States” in 8 U.S.C. §1401 or “nationals but not citizens of the United States” in 8 U.S.C. §1408. Upon trying to resolve the distinctions between these two terms and how they relate to the term “citizen of the United States” used in section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment, we searched diligently for authorities and found no authority or cite in federal statutes that makes the term “citizens and nationals of the United States” used in 8 U.S.C. §1401 equivalent to the term “citizen of the United States” used in section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment or the term “citizen” used in the 26 CFR §1.1-1.

Both the IRC in Subtitle A of Title 26 and Title 8 of the U.S.C. use equivalent definitions for “United States” (see 26 U.S.C. §7701(a)(9) and (a)(10), 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(38), and 8 CFR §215.1(f)), and all three mean the federal zone only. The “citizen” appearing in 26 CFR §1.1-1, is a federal “U.S. citizen” only, which is defined in 26 CFR §31.3121(e)-1 as a person born in Puerto Rico, Virgin Islands, Guam, or American Samoa, which are all territories or possessions of the United States. The “citizens and nationals of the United States” appearing in the 8 U.S.C. §1401 are the same federal “U.S. citizens” as that appearing in Title 26 and are equivalent. If you are a “U.S. National” born in a state of the Union, you should never admit to being a “U.S. citizen” or a “citizen of the United States” under federal statutes or the Internal Revenue Code because people born in states of the Union are the equivalent of a “U.S. National” under federal statutes or “citizens of the United States” under the Fourteenth Amendment.

We believe the confusion the government has created by mixing up the meanings of “citizenship” and “nationality” in federal statutes and cases construing them is deliberate, and is meant to help induce ignorant Americans everywhere into falsely claiming they are “U.S. citizens” on their tax returns and voter registration, which is defined as an entirely different type of citizenship under Title 26 than the one referred to in either the Fourteenth Amendment as “citizens of the United States” or the cases construing it that we mention in this section. We will now summarize our findings and research in graphical form to make the definitions and distinctions we have just made crystal clear:

Table 4-13: Summary of findings on meaning of citizenship

Term	U.S. Supreme Court	Title 8: Aliens and Nationality	Title 26: Internal Revenue Code
“U.S. national”	Not defined	Defined in 8 U.S.C. §1102(a)(22) and 8 U.S.C. §1408.	Not defined in Title 26 but is equivalent to “nonresident alien” as defined in 26 U.S.C. §7701(b)(1)(B).
“citizen”	Not explicitly defined by the Supreme Court.	Not defined in Title 8.	Defined in 26 CFR §1.1-1(c).
“citizen of the United States”	Means a “U.S. National” under 8 U.S.C. §1408 but <u>not</u> necessarily a “U.S. citizen” in the Internal Revenue Code, which is defined in 26 U.S.C. §3121(e) See: 1. Slaughter-House Cases, 83 U.S. 36 (1873) 2. U.S. v. Wong Kim Art, 169 U.S. 649 (1898)	Not defined separately in Title 8. 8 U.S.C. §1401 defines “citizens and nationals of the United States” but this type of citizen is a <u>federal zone</u> citizen <u>ONLY</u> , not unlike that of a citizen of a state of the Union. This is because federal statutes only apply to federal territory. This is NOT the same as a “citizen of the United States” defined by the Supreme Court.	Defined in 26 CFR §31.3121(e)-1

Term	U.S. Supreme Court	Title 8: Aliens and Nationality	Title 26: Internal Revenue Code
“citizens and nationals of the United States”	Not explicitly defined by the Supreme Court.	Defined in 8 U.S.C. §1401 and mentioned in Section 1 of Fourteenth Amendment.	Not defined in Title 26.

1 Based on the above, there is no legal basis to conclude that a “citizen of the United States” under the tax code at 26 CFR §
2 31.3121(e)-1 and a “citizen of the United States” as used by the Supreme Court or the Fourteenth Amendment, are
3 equivalent because nowhere in the law are they made equivalent, and each depends on a *different* definition of “United
4 States”. However, if you read through court cases on citizenship, you will find that the federal courts like to create a false
5 “presumption” that they are equivalent in order to help expand federal jurisdiction. If you want to understand the meanings
6 of the terms provided above, you will therefore have to read through all of the authorities cited above and convince yourself
7 of the validity of the table.

8 If you look closely at 26 CFR §1.1-1(c) where income taxes are “imposed”, you will find that it does *not* use or define
9 “U.S. citizen” but does refer to “citizens”. Remember that under 26 U.S.C. §7806(b), the title of a section or subsection in
10 the Internal Revenue Code has no legal significance. Since that regulation implements 26 U.S.C. §1, which imposes the tax
11 on “individuals”, one can “presume” but not conclusively prove that the regulation is describing what a “U.S. citizen” is
12 under 8 U.S.C. §1401. Keep in mind, however, that the term “citizen” refers to the *federal* United States** in the Internal
13 Revenue Code because of the definition it depends on in [26 U.S.C. §7701\(a\)\(9\)](#) and (a)(10). Nowhere in Titles 8 or 26,
14 however, are the terms “U.S. citizen” and “citizen of the United States” ever correlated or identified as being equivalent,
15 but we must conclude that they are the same because the definition of “United States” found in 26 U.S.C. §7701(a)(9) and 8
16 U.S.C. §1101(a)(38) are equivalent and include only the District of Columbia and the territories and possessions of the
17 United States.

18 4.11.3.8 Further Study

19 If you want to know who the Social Security Administration thinks is a “U.S. citizen”, refer to the link below, which is a
20 section from the SSA’s Program Operation Manual System (POMS). Note that all the references in the POMS manual we
21 are about to cite below use the term “State” and “United States” as meaning *federal* States and the *federal* United States**
22 only. The link below from POMS is entitled “Who is a U.S. citizen”:

23 [http://policy.ssa.gov/poms.nsf/lnx/0200303120 - A](http://policy.ssa.gov/poms.nsf/lnx/0200303120-A)

24 Another useful link in the SSA’s POMS manual is the section entitled “Developing Evidence of U.S. citizenship”:

25 <http://policy.ssa.gov/poms.nsf/lnx/0300204015>

26 And finally, another useful section from the POMS manual on the SSA website is entitled “GN 00303.300 Establishing
27 U.S. Citizenship for All SSA Programs” at:

28 [http://policy.ssa.gov/poms.nsf/36f3b2ee954f0075852568c100630558/9dfd4c7264a3070f85256a4e004e2c7d?OpenDocume
29 nt](http://policy.ssa.gov/poms.nsf/36f3b2ee954f0075852568c100630558/9dfd4c7264a3070f85256a4e004e2c7d?OpenDocument)

30 In conclusion, we need not be afraid because we are not legally obligated to be federal citizens or “U.S. citizens” and can
31 choose to be a state citizen only (or natural born Sovereign). State Citizens are also called “U.S. nationals”. Our right of
32 expatriating our federal citizenship is absolute and cannot be abridged. U.S.** citizenship didn’t even exist until passage of
33 the 14th Amendment in 1868, and was intended mainly for slaves. One can become a “national of the United States***” (a
34 state only citizen) without being a “citizen of the United States***” (a federal citizen). That is why we repeatedly advise
35 expatriating from federal United States** citizenship in section 3.5.3.13 of our *Tax Freedom Solutions Manual*.

36 **WARNING:** The feds apparently are so sure that you will be angry and violent after finding out the devious scam they
37 played with “U.S. citizenship” that they made it illegal to be a gun dealer if you were once a U.S. citizen and renounced
38 your U.S. citizenship to become a U.S. national! Take a look at [18 U.S.C. §922\(g\)\(7\)](#) to see for yourself at:

<http://www4.law.cornell.edu/uscode/18/922.html>

Note that because Constitutional rights only apply in the sovereign 50 Union states, this statute can only apply inside the federal zone.

For further detailed information on federal citizenship, we refer you to section 3.10.10 on the Fourteenth Amendment.

4.11.4 State Citizens/Nationals

The term “State Citizen” and “State National” are equivalent. For instance, if you were born in California, you would be called a “California National”. The basis for this name is found in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21), which says in pertinent part:

TITLE 8 > CHAPTER 12 > SUBCHAPTER I > Sec. 1101.

Sec. 1101. - Definitions

(a) *As used in this chapter -*

(21) The term "national" means a person owing permanent allegiance to a state.

A State National owes permanent allegiance to his state. If he wants to have federal citizenship, then he must also have allegiance to the confederation of states called the “United States” under 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(22)(B).

“A citizen of the United States is a citizen of the federal government and of the state in which he resided, and one possessing such double citizenship owes allegiance and is entitled to protection from each sovereign to whose jurisdiction he is subject.

“No fortifying authority is necessary to sustain the proposition that in the United States a double citizenship exists. A citizen of the United States is a citizen of the Federal Government and at the same time a citizen of the State in which he resides. Determination of what is qualified residence within a State is not here necessary. Suffice it to say that one possessing such double citizenship owes allegiance and is entitled to the protection from each sovereign to whose jurisdiction he is subject.” [Kitchens v. Steele, 112 F.Supp. 383 (1953)]

We also use the term “State U.S. nationals” in this book. These people are those who obtained their federal citizenship by virtue of being born in a state of the Union. This is a term we invented, because there is no standard term to describe these people within the legal field. Since federal statutes cannot and do not recognize events which happen *within* sovereign states, they do not mention this status but it certainly exists, and it exists under *The Law of Nations*, Book I, Section §212, which is what the founders used to write the U.S. Constitution and which is recognized in Article 1, Section 8, Clause 10 of that document. The reason federal statutes do not and cannot mention the citizenship status of persons born in states of the Union is because these states are “sovereign nations” and “foreign countries” with respect to the federal government under the Law of Nations. Under the Law of Nations, the federal government does *not* have the authority delegated by the Constitution to proscribe or even define the citizenship status of people born in states of the Union. Here are some examples of cases from the Supreme Court which confirm this conclusion:

“It has been repeatedly held by the Supreme Court of the United State, that a State may determine the status of persons within its jurisdiction: Groves v. Slaughter, 15 Pet., 419; Moore v. Illinois, 14 How., 13; 11 Pet., 131; Story Const., §§1098, 1804, 1809.” [Doc. Lonas v. State, 59 Tenn. 287 (1871)]

*“The question, now agitated, depends upon another question; whether the State of Pennsylvania, since the 26th of March, 1790, (when the act of Congress was passed) has a right to naturalize an alien? And this must receive its answer from the solution of a third question; whether, according to the constitution of the United States, the authority to naturalize is exclusive, or concurrent? **We are of opinion, then, that the States, individually, still enjoy a concurrent authority upon this subject; but that their individual authority cannot be exercised, so as to contravene the rule established by the authority of the Union.**”*

“The true reason for investing Congress with the power of naturalization has been assigned at the Bar;--It was to guard against too narrow, instead of too liberal, a mode of conferring the rights of citizenship. Thus,

1 *the individual States cannot exclude those citizens, who have been adopted by the United States; but they can*
2 *adopt citizens upon easier terms, than those which Congress may deem it expedient to impose.*

3 *“But the act of Congress itself, furnishes a strong proof that the power of naturalization is concurrent. In the*
4 *concluding proviso, it is declared, ‘that no person heretofore proscribed by any State, shall be admitted a*
5 *citizen as aforesaid, except by an act of the Legislature of the State, in which such person was proscribed.’*
6 *Here, we find, that Congress has not only circumscribed the exercise of its own authority, but has recognized*
7 *the authority of a State Legislature, in one case, to admit a citizen of the United States’ which could not be done*
8 *in any case, if the power of naturalization, either by its own nature, or by the manner of its being vested in the*
9 *Federal Government, was an exclusive power.” [Collet v. Collet, 2 U.S. 294; 1 L.Ed. 387 (1792)]*

10 State Citizens cannot be subjected in state courts to any jurisdiction of law outside the Common Law without their knowing
11 and willing consent after full disclosure of the terms and conditions, and such consent must be under agreement/contract
12 sealed by signature. This is because the Constitution is a compact/contract created and existing in the jurisdiction of the
13 Common Law, therefore, any rights secured thereunder or disabilities limiting the powers of government also exist in the
14 Common Law, and in no other jurisdiction provided for in that compact!

15 Both State Citizens and federal citizens are Americans. “U.S. citizens” described within “acts of Congress” are “resident”
16 in the federal zone and are privileged aliens to the state of the Union wherein they reside. State Citizens are domiciled in
17 their state and not aliens in their state. They also do not “reside” in their state; they are instead Citizens of the state. The
18 only people who are “residents” in regards to the tax laws are usually aliens domiciled in the state or nonresidents
19 occupying federal enclaves within the state. The distinction may seem insignificant to you but it is not to the court. A state
20 Citizen has the right to travel in each of the 50 Union states. He/she can file papers at any county courthouse in any state
21 and become a Citizen of that state.

22 Nearly all federal statute laws *do not* apply to State Citizens/Nationals. If the authority for the statute can be found in the
23 organic Constitution, then the statute is of a National character, as it applies to both state Citizens and aliens. Acts of
24 Congress *do not* protect the Constitutional rights of State Citizens. Only state law serves this purpose.

25 *“With these decisions, and many others that might be cited, before us, it is vain to contend that the Federal*
26 *Constitution secures to a citizen of the United States the right to work at a given occupation or particular*
27 *calling free from injury, oppression, or interference by individual citizens.*

28 *“Even though such right be a natural and inalienable right, the duty of protecting the citizen in the*
29 *enjoyment of such right, free from the individual interference, rests alone with the state.” [Hodges v. United*
30 *States, 203 U.S. 1; 27 S.Ct. 6 (1906)]*

31 If the rights of a State Citizen are being violated directly by a federal officer or indirectly by third parties who the federal
32 officer is in contact with, the appropriate place to litigate to protect those rights is ONLY in a state court. Federal courts are
33 *administrative courts* which only have jurisdiction over the federal zone for nearly all “acts of Congress”, and the federal
34 zone as we said earlier in section 4.8, is *not* covered by the Bill of Rights. We call the “federal zone” is the “plunder zone”
35 and state citizens have absolutely no business whatsoever going into these courts because doing so needlessly confers
36 unfounded jurisdiction upon the court over their lives and their fortunes. We will show later in section 6.7 that federal
37 judges are either incompetent or malicious or both when it comes to protecting the rights of “State U.S. nationals”, so you
38 ought to distance yourself to be as far away as possible from these tyrants, and this is especially true in regards to matters
39 relating to federal taxation.

40 The terms “State” and “state” are not equivalent in federal statutes and nearly all “acts of Congress”. When we capitalize
41 the word “State”, we are referring to the “federal zone” areas within the contiguous borders of a state that are subject to the
42 exclusive federal jurisdiction of the U.S. Government under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the U.S. Constitution. When
43 we don’t capitalize the word “state”, we are referring to the contiguous areas of a state that are under the exclusive
44 jurisdiction of a state government and not the federal government.

45 Whenever we describe ourselves as “citizens of a State” or a “citizen of the United States” in the context of federal statutes
46 or “acts of Congress”, then we declare ourselves to live in a federal territory as “U.S. citizens” or “citizens of the [federal]
47 United States”. That puts us in the same status as the slaves who were freed after the civil war in 1868. Do you want to be
48 a slave? We should therefore NEVER say “I am a citizen of the State of _____” or “I am a citizen of this State.” Why?
49 Well, because, for instance, the California Revenue and Taxation Code §6017 defines the term “State” as follows:

6017. "In this State" or "in the State" means within the exterior [outside] limits of the [Sovereign union] state of California and includes [only] all territory within these limits owned by or ceded to the United States

Now do you understand why California has the same definition of "gross income" as the federal government and why they can impose a constitutional income tax? Because by playing with the definition of words, they have deceived you into convincing them (quite incorrectly and unnecessarily) that you are a "citizen of the [federal] United States**" (the federal zone) under the exclusive jurisdiction of Congress and consequently you are not subject to the same Constitutional protections that other Sovereign Citizens of the California Republic enjoy! You must rebut this presumption vigorously at all times by watching the language and the words you use. They have effectively deceived and enticed you into the "federal zone" so they could abuse and enslave you with the income tax. This amounts to "enticement into slavery", which clearly violates [18 U.S.C. §1581](#) and [14 U.S.C. §1994](#) and is a felony!

Instead, we should always use the name of the state in our description as follows: "I am a national of California" or "I am a Citizen of the California Republic". The word "Citizen" should always be capitalized to emphasize that we are a "Sovereign state citizen/national."

You will find out later in section 5.2.13 of this book that the states of the Union are considered to be "foreign countries" and "foreign nations" and "foreign states" with respect to the federal government.

*"New states, upon their admission into the Union, become invested with equal rights and are subject only to such restrictions as are imposed upon the states already admitted. There can be no state of the Union whose sovereignty or freedom of action is in any respect different from that of any other state. There can be no restriction upon any state other than one prescribed upon all the states by the Federal Constitution. Congress, in admitting a state, cannot restrict such state by bargain. The state, by so contracting with Congress, is in no way bound by such a contract, however irrevocable it is stated to be. **It is said that subject to the restraint and limitations of the Federal Constitution, the states have all the sovereign powers of independent nations over all persons and things within their respective territorial limits.**" [16 American Jurisprudence (AmJur) 2d, Sovereignty of states §281]*

Because the 50 Union states are technically "nations" and "foreign states", then persons who are "state nationals" and who have no federal citizenship and claim no allegiance to the "United States":

1. Are "nationals of California" and **not** "U.S. citizens" on their application for a U.S. passport. Several of our readers have obtained U.S. passports by claiming to be, for instance, "CALIFORNIA NATIONAL" in block 16 of their DS-011 Passport Application.
2. Can correctly claim that they are a "nonresident alien" when they file their federal income tax return if they do not live in a federal enclave within their state. Money they earn within their state as a nonresident alien will also not be under the jurisdiction of the Internal Revenue Code and need not be entered on their tax return.
3. Can correctly claim that they are nonresidents of the "United States" as defined in [26 U.S.C. §7701\(a\)\(9\)](#).
4. Are not be subject to most federal laws or any of the criminal laws in [Title 18](#) of the U.S. Codes unless they are physically on federal property, which most people seldom are.
5. If they sue or convict a federal employee for wrongdoing or the federal government tries to convict them under federal law, they can file their claim under "diversity of citizenship", [28 U.S.C. §1332\(a\)\(2\)](#) in the federal court as "citizens of a foreign state".
6. May not declare themselves on any federal government form to be "U.S. citizens" because they were not born in the federal "United States" as required by [8 U.S.C. §1401](#).
7. May declare themselves to be "U.S. nationals" or "nationals of the United States" under federal law.
8. May vote in any election that requires them to be "U.S. citizens" in order to vote, which is the case in most states. They must clarify the meaning of "U.S. citizen" on their voter application form to prevent false assumptions about their citizenship when they register.
9. May not collect any Social Security benefits, because the Social Security Program Operations Manual (POM) section [GN 00303.001](#) states that only "U.S. citizens" and "U.S. nationals" can collect benefits.
10. May not hold a U.S. security clearance unless they become either a "U.S. citizen" or "U.S. national" under federal statutes.

Now a little history. Before the second world war, some states of the Union issued their own passports to their citizens for foreign travel. That's right, you didn't need a U.S. passport because each state was the equivalent of an independent nation.

1 The states still have this status, but they act like they don't and delegate the passport function to the federal government.
 2 Our public servants in the federal government are abusing this power to create a presumption that the applicant is a "U.S.
 3 citizen" so they can illegally obtain jurisdiction over the applicant and subject them to the income tax laws and other federal
 4 laws. Most states even require persons who wish to vote in federal elections to be "U.S. citizens". Such unethical tactics
 5 on the part of the states are what we call "cooperative federalism", where the states help the federal government to "poach"
 6 sheep in the states and put them primarily under federal jurisdiction as "U.S. citizens" in a conspiracy against rights that is a
 7 federal crime under [18 U.S.C. §241](#).

8 If you don't want to collect Socialist Security Benefits nor serve in the military nor hold a U.S. government security
 9 clearance, then state-only citizenship is the *best* type of citizenship that provides the best protection for your liberties and
 10 complete immunity from both state and federal income taxes in most cases. On the other hand, if you need any of these
 11 "privileges", then the best status to have is that of being a "U.S. national", which we will discuss in detail later in section
 12 4.11.6. The "U.S. national" status avoids all the disadvantages of "U.S. citizen" status, including:

- 13 1. Not a "U.S. citizen" under federal statutes or "acts of Congress". The Internal Revenue Code is an "act of Congress".
- 14 2. Not "subject to the laws" of the United States or the jurisdiction of the corrupt and covetous federal courts except when
 15 on federal property.
- 16 3. Can hold a U.S. government security clearance.
- 17 4. Can collect Socialist Security benefits.
- 18 5. Can vote in states that don't require you to be a "U.S. citizen" under "acts of Congress".

19 "state U.S. nationals" are synonymously described with any of the terms below:

- 20 • Natural Born Citizens
- 21 • Natural Born Sovereigns
- 22 • state U.S. nationals
- 23 • American Citizens
- 24 • American Nationals
- 25 • Nonresident Aliens (under the Internal Revenue Code, as defined in 26 U.S.C. §7701(b)(1)(B)).

26 We will now analyze the legal foundations for state U.S. national status:

- 27 1. The term "United States" has 3 separate and distinct meanings in American Law (see *Hooven & Allison Co. v. Evatt*,
 28 324 U.S. 652 (1945)):
 29 1.1. The name of the sovereign nation, occupying the position of other sovereigns in the family of nations
 30 1.2. The federal government and the limited territory over which it exercises exclusive sovereign authority
 31 1.2.1. To be a federal citizen is to be a "citizen of the United States" in this second sense of the term
 32 1.3. The collective name for the States united by and under the Constitution for the United States of America
 33 1.3.1. To be a Natural Born state Citizen is to be a "Citizen of the United States" in this third sense of the
 34 term (i.e. a "Citizen of one of the States United")
 35 2. One can be a State National without also being a federal citizen
 36 2.1. See *Crosse* case from Maryland Supreme Court:

37 *"Both before and after the Fourteenth Amendment to the federal Constitution, it has not been necessary for a*
 38 *person to be a citizen of the United States in order to be a citizen of his state."* [*Crosse v. Board of Elections,*
 39 *221 A.2d 431 at 433 (1966)*]

- 40 2.2. See *State vs Fowler* case from Louisiana Supreme Court:

41 *"But a person may be a citizen of a particular state and not a citizen of the United States. To hold otherwise*
 42 *would be to deny to the state the highest exercise of its sovereignty -- the right to declare who are its citizens."*
 43 [*State v. Fowler, 41 La. Ann. 380 6 S. 602 (1889)*]

- 44 2.3. See *United States v. Cruikshank*, 92 U.S. 542 (1875) for U.S. Supreme Court view:

45 *"We have in our political system a Government of the United States and a government of each of the several*
 46 *States. Each of these governments is distinct from the others, and each has citizens of its own who owe it*
 47 *allegiance, and whose rights, within its jurisdiction, it must protect. The same person may be at the same time a*
 48 *citizen of the United States and a citizen of a State, but his rights of citizenship under one of these governments*

will be different from those he has under the other. *Slaughter- House Cases*, 16 Wall. 74." [*United States v. Cruikshank*, 92 U.S. 542 (1875)]

3. "U.S. citizens" under federal statutes and "acts of Congress" are the object of Subtitle A federal income taxes under section 1 of the IRC; "U.S. nationals" or "state U.S. Nationals are not. The Internal Revenue Code is an "act of Congress".

3.1. State Nationals are protected by constitutional limits against direct taxation by the federal government:

3.1.1. Article 1, Section 2, Clause 3

3.1.2. Article 1, Section 9, Clause 4

3.2. "U.S. citizens" under "acts of Congress" are not protected by these same constitutional limits

3.2.1. Constitution for the "United States" as such does not extend beyond the boundaries of the States which are united by and under it.

3.2.1.1. The Insular Cases established this dubious precedent at the turn of the century

3.2.2. A "citizen of the United States" under "acts of Congress" is, effectively, a citizen of the District of Columbia, which never joined the Union

3.2.3. Congress can enact local, "municipal" law for D.C. which is not constrained by the federal Constitution. See *Downes v. Bidwell*, 182 U.S. 244 (1901) for further information.

4.11.5 Citizenship and all political rights are INVOLUNTARILY exercised and therefore CANNOT be taxable and cannot be called "privileges"

Earlier in section 4.11.3 on Federal (U.S.) citizens, we quoted the U.S. Supreme Court as saying that federal and state citizenship were "voluntary". Here is the quote:

"The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government. He owes allegiance to the two departments, so to speak, and within their respective spheres must pay the penalties which each exacts for disobedience to its laws. In return, he can demand protection from each within its own jurisdiction." *United States v. Cruikshank*, 92 U.S. 542 (1875) [emphasis added]

And here is another similar quote by the same U.S. Supreme Court:

"A State does not owe its origin to the Government of the United States, in the highest or in any of its branches. It was in existence before it. It derives its authority from the same pure and sacred source as itself: The voluntary and deliberate choice of the people...A State is altogether exempt from the jurisdiction of the Courts of the United States, or from any other exterior authority, unless in the special instances when the general Government has power derived from the Constitution itself." [*Chisholm v. Georgia*, 2 Dall. (U.S.) 419 (Dall.) (1793)]

This section will examine this rather flawed premise of the U.S. Supreme Court in extreme detail to very clearly prove beyond any doubt not only that citizenship is not and cannot be "voluntary" or "consensual", but also that all the "political rights" that circumscribe how we exercise our citizenship are in fact compelled and involuntary. By proving this flawed premise of the U.S. Supreme Court incorrect, we open up the following intriguing possibilities:

1. Contrary to what the U.S. Supreme Court said above, those misguided individuals who do choose to become second class "U.S. citizens" do have a right to complain because their participation is coerced and involuntary.
2. We have a right to avoid government compulsion and compulsion from our fellow citizens by refusing to be "citizens" and refusing to exercise our civic duties.
3. If we choose to not participate as citizens in society, then the reward is not being subject to the laws of the government, which in most cases are dishonest and corrupt and covetous anyway. We are citizens of heaven and not of earth anyway (see Phil. 3:20). Once we are not subject to the laws of a society, it no longer matters what our fellow citizens do to the law to corrupt it for their own personal benefit, because we are sovereigns who are immune from government regulation for the most part. If we aren't paying taxes and the government can't do anything to control or regulate us, does it matter whether we have "taxation without representation"?

1 What is a “political right”? Below is the definition of that term from Black’s Law Dictionary:

2 **Political rights.** *Those which may be exercised in the formation or administration of the government. Rights of*
 3 *citizens established or recognized by constitutions which give them the power to participate directly or*
 4 *indirectly in the establishment or administration of the government. [Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition,*
 5 *page 1159]*

6 Political rights include such things as:

7 **Table 4-14: Political rights**

<i>Political right</i>	<i>Category</i>
Voting	Representation
Jury service	Representation
Serving in or running for political office	Representation
Paying taxes	Taxation

8 The concept of political rights and citizenship are tied together, and the reason they are tied together is that taxation and
 9 representation *must* be tied together in order to have a stable government. When taxation and representation are *not* tied
 10 together, governments become unstable and the people will eventually revolt. We therefore show in the above table the
 11 correlation between political rights on the left, and *taxation* and *representation* on the right. Remember that one of the
 12 main reasons for the American Revolution was to protest “taxation without representation”. The British colonies that
 13 comprised America at the time were paying taxes but had no say in their government in how those taxes were spent, and
 14 they didn’t like it so they started a revolution against Britain: the American Revolution! The representation part of political
 15 rights comes from voting, jury service, and serving in political office. The definition of “citizen” from the legal dictionary
 16 confirms the linkage between political rights and citizenship:

17 *citizen.* *One who, under the [Constitution](#) and laws of the [United States](#), or of a particular state, is a **member of**
 18 **the political community, owing allegiance and being entitled to the enjoyment of full civil rights.** All persons
 19 born or naturalized in the United States, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof, are citizens of the United States
 20 and of the state wherein they reside. [U.S. Const., 14th Amend.](#) See [Citizenship](#).*

21 *“Citizens” are members of a political community who, in their associated capacity, have established or*
 22 **submitted themselves to the dominion of a government for the promotion of their general welfare and the**
 23 **protection of their individual as well as collective rights.** *Herriott v. City of Seattle, 81 Wash.2d 48, 500 P.2d*
 24 *101, 109.*

25 *The term may include or apply to children of alien parents from in United States, Von Schwertmer v. Piper,*
 26 *D.C.Md., 23 F.2d 862, 863; U.S. v. Minoru Yasui, D.C.Or., 48 F.Supp. 40, 54; children of American citizens*
 27 *born outside United States, Haaland v. Attorney General of United States, D.C.Md., 42 F.Supp. 13, 22; Indians,*
 28 *United States v. Hester, C.C.A.Okl., 137 F.2d 145, 147; National Banks, American Surety Co. v. Bank of*
 29 *California, C.C.A.Or., 133 F.2d 160, 162; nonresident who has qualified as administratrix of estate of deceased*
 30 *resident, Hunt v. Noll, C.C.A.Tenn., 112 F.2d 288, 289. However, neither the United States nor a state is a*
 31 *citizen for purposes of diversity jurisdiction. Jizemerjian v. Dept of Air Force, 457 F.Supp. 820. On the other*
 32 *hand, municipalities and other local governments are deemed to be citizens. Rieser v. District of Columbia,*
 33 *563 F.2d 462. A corporation is not a citizen for purposes of privileges and immunities clause of the Fourteenth*
 34 *Amendment. D.D.B. Realty Corp. v. Merrill, 232 F.Supp. 629, 637.*

35 *Under diversity statute [28 U.S.C. §1332], which mirrors [U.S. Const, Article III](#)’s diversity clause, a person is a*
 36 *“citizen of a state” if he or she is a citizen of the United States and a domiciliary of a state of the United States.*
 37 *Gibbons v. Udaras na Gaeltachta, D.C.N.Y., 549 F.Supp. 1094, 1116. [Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition,*
 38 *page 244]*

39 Note from above definition of “citizen” that *when you become a citizen, you choose to subject yourself to the laws of the*
 40 *political community or jurisdiction of which you are part.* This is very important. We speculate that the reasoning behind
 41 this requirement is that you can’t have the protection of laws that you yourself refuse to obey, because this would be
 42 hypocritical. In the case of federal statutes and “legislative jurisdiction” and “Acts of Congress”, of which the Internal
 43 Revenue Code is a part, however, you don’t need to be subject to them because for the most part, they only apply inside the
 44 federal zone anyway, and most Americans don’t live in the federal zone.

1 The other thing that the above definition of “citizen” helps us to understand is that our government has defined citizenship
 2 such that *political rights depend on our citizenship status*, while the rest of our rights depend on where we reside. Look at
 3 these excerpts from the definition of “citizen” again:

4 “...owing allegiance and being entitled to the enjoyment of full civil rights...”

5 “‘Citizens’ are members of a political community who... submitted themselves to the dominion of a
 6 government for the promotion of their general welfare and the protection of their individual as well as
 7 collective rights. *Herriott v. City of Seattle, 81 Wash.2d 48, 500 P.2d 101, 109.”*

8 The implication of the above definition of “citizen” is that *unless we are citizens, we do not have full civil rights*. Based on
 9 the logic above, if we are not citizens, our *civil rights* are protected by (but we are not “subject to” or “subservient to”) the
 10 Bill of Rights and the rest of the Constitution, but we can only get political rights by becoming citizens, based on the
 11 government’s definition of “citizen” and “political rights”. There is a paradox here folks. Can you see it? We should
 12 always be looking for paradoxes and “cognitive dissonance” of this kind in order to properly challenge jurisdiction.
 13 Remember once again:

14 *“If it doesn’t make sense, it’s probably because politics is involved.”*

15 Here is “the rest of the story”, as Paul Harvey likes to say, that the government won’t tell you. Remember that from earlier
 16 discussions in sections 4.2 through 4.2.2, a right is not something the government can interfere with or take away or
 17 regulate or revoke or that is subject to their discretion or any aspect of our voluntary behavior. If the existence of our
 18 rights is conditional or based on any aspect of government discretion, then they aren’t rights, but privileges disguised as
 19 rights! The government can lawfully interfere with and regulate the exercise of privileges, but not with rights.
 20 Consequently, what our deceitful government calls “political rights” in the definition above really aren’t “rights” at all, but
 21 “privileges” which depend on the voluntary decision to accept citizenship (which is a *behavior*) and the privileges that go
 22 with citizenship. Consequently, our government has made both citizenship and political participation in the affairs of
 23 government into a privilege and not a right. This conclusion is also consistent with section 1 of the Fourteenth
 24 Amendment, which identifies “U.S. citizenship” as a “privilege” rather than a “right”:

25 *Section 1. All persons born or naturalized in the [federal] United States, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof,*
 26 *are citizens of the United States and of the state wherein they reside. No state shall make or enforce any law*
 27 *which shall abridge the privileges or immunities of citizens of the United States;*
 28 *nor shall any state deprive any person of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law; nor deny to any*
 29 *person within its jurisdiction the equal protection of the laws.*

30 The most important thing that we should have learned from this chapter is that whenever we receive a government privilege
 31 there will be strings attached that will destroy our rights. In this case, receipt of the “citizenship” privilege makes us subject
 32 to taxation and regulation and jurisdiction by the federal government, none of which we need or want, nor will such status
 33 protect or enhance our rights or liberties, but rather destroy them. We repeat the quote from the beginning of section 4.3.9
 34 to make this point crystal clear:

35 *“In the matter of taxation, every privilege is an injustice.” -- Voltaire*

36 Your covetous politicians are trying to fool you into thinking that it wasn’t a “privilege” you accepted by calling it
 37 “political rights”, but we have already established that it cannot be a right if it is conditioned on anything or on any aspect
 38 of your voluntary behavior, including the choice to become a “citizen”. Once again, our deceitful government has
 39 entrapped us with word games. If they are going to call it a “political right”, then they better treat it as right and remove the
 40 requirement to be a citizen in order to exercise that right, so that we really do have “rights” instead of “privileges”
 41 masquerading as “counterfeit rights”. As I like to say:

42 *If you want people to swallow a piece of shit, you have to wrap it in a pretty package by coating it in chocolate*
 43 *and calling it a “Babe Ruth” candy bar.*

44 In this case, the “chocolate coating” for the “shit” you don’t want to swallow called “citizenship” is the word “right” in
 45 “political rights”! Please pardon our language, but we just couldn’t resist this very appropriate metaphor!

1 One of our readers, after reading the foregoing analysis of “citizenship” and “political rights”, responded by saying:

2 *“But how are you going to keep foreigners from voting so they don’t commit treason and trash the country?”*

3 The answer is that so long as people are born in United States* *the country*, not United States** the *federal zone*, and as
 4 long as they have allegiance to that *country*, rather than the federal corporation called the United States**, then they should
 5 be able to vote because they have the best interests of the *country* in mind when they have allegiance to it. The status of
 6 being *both* born in the country and having allegiance to it, collectively, is called “U.S. nationality”, and *not* “U.S.
 7 citizenship”, and you will find out later in section 4.11.6 what being a “U.S. national” means, why that is the status you
 8 want to have, and why you don’t have to pay taxes or be in receipt of government privileges to have that status. You will
 9 also find out in that section that most states have colluded to deprive you of your rights by passing laws to force you to
 10 become a “U.S. citizen” in order to exercise political rights such as voting or serving on jury duty. The federal government
 11 has added to this injury by messing with the passport application forms to make it look like you have to be a privileged
 12 “U.S. citizen” in order to get a U.S. passport, but this also is not a lawful requirement. The states and the federal
 13 government have conspired against your rights in this fashion because they want to:

- 14 • Force you to lie to them in saying that you are a “U.S. citizen”, in direct violation of the ten commandments,
 15 which says in Exodus 20:16 that we shall not bear false witness. Remember our analysis in section 4.11.3.1: to be
 16 a “U.S. citizen”, you must be born in the *federal* United States (federal zone) in an area subject to the *sovereignty*
 17 of the United States Government under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the Constitution. Most Americans are
 18 *not* born there and more properly are classified as “U.S. nationals” born *outside* the *federal* United States**.
- 19 • Break down the separation of powers between the federal and state governments, and force you to serve *two*
 20 masters instead of one, in direct violation of the bible, Luke 16:13 (“...no man can serve two masters..”). The lie
 21 you committed by simultaneously declaring yourself to be both a U.S. and a state citizen also violates the rulings
 22 of the Supreme Court in *U.S. v. Lopez*, 514 U.S. 549 (1995) and the intent of the constitution, which says:

23 *We start with first principles. The Constitution creates a Federal Government of enumerated powers. See U.S.*
 24 *Const., Art. I, 8. As James Madison wrote, “[t]he powers delegated by the proposed Constitution to the federal*
 25 *government are few and defined. Those which are to remain in the State governments are numerous and*
 26 *indefinite.” The Federalist No. 45, pp. 292-293 (C. Rossiter ed. 1961). **This constitutionally**
 27 **mandated division of authority "was adopted by the Framers**
 28 **to ensure protection of our fundamental liberties.” Gregory v. Ashcroft,**
 29 **501 U.S. 452, 458 (1991) (internal quotation marks omitted). "Just as the separation and independence of**
 30 **the coordinate branches of the Federal Government serves to prevent the accumulation of excessive power in**
 31 **any one branch, a healthy balance of power between the States and the Federal Government will reduce the**
 32 **risk of tyranny and abuse from either front.” Ibid.***

33 Remember that by default, all federal legislation and “Acts of Congress” only apply *inside* the federal zone, and
 34 we will explain this matter in great detail in section 5.2 and subsections. But if the thieves and robbers who are
 35 our elected leaders can make you a “citizen” in receipt of “privileges”, then they can make you subject to their
 36 laws even if you don’t live on their property. By doing so, they can make you into property and a franchise of the
 37 United States government and treat you as though you occupy the federal zone anyway. Sneaky, huh? At that
 38 point, these covetous and arrogant thugs and murderers have succeeded in breaking down the wall of separation
 39 between the state and federal jurisdictions at great injury to your liberties. They have then forced you to serve *two*
 40 masters in direct violation of the bible in Luke 16:13. Ultimately, this leads to socialism, tyranny, and an
 41 oppression of and conspiracy against your constitutional rights, as we explain throughout this book.

- 42 • Once the government “thugs”, murderers, and thieves coax you into the federal zone, they can then legally deprive
 43 you of your constitutional rights and make you a slave of income taxes and not be held accountable by the courts
 44 or the law for their actions of trespass on your person, property, and liberty. The constitution and bill of rights,
 45 remember, do *not* apply in the federal zone. That is why we call the federal zone the “plunder and fraud” zone.

46 Justice Harlan of the Supreme Court warned us that this was going to happen in his dissenting opinion found in *Downes v.*
 47 *Bidwell*, 182 U.S. 244 (1901):

48 *“The idea prevails with some, indeed it has found expression in arguments at the bar, that we have in this*
 49 *country substantially two national governments; one to be maintained under the Constitution, with all of its*

1 restrictions; the other to be maintained by Congress outside the independently of that instrument, by exercising
 2 such powers [of absolutism] as other nations of the earth are accustomed to.. I take leave to say that, if the
 3 principles thus announced should ever receive the sanction of a majority of this court, a radical and
 4 mischievous change in our system of government will result. We will, in that event, pass from the era of
 5 constitutional liberty guarded and protected by a written constitution into an era of legislative absolutism.. It
 6 will be an evil day for American liberty if the theory of a government outside the supreme law of the land
 7 finds lodgment in our constitutional jurisprudence. No higher duty rests upon this court than to exert its full
 8 authority to prevent all violation of the principles of the Constitution."

9 [Downes v. Bidwell, 182 U.S. 244 (1901)]

10 When are people going to wake up? We believe the foregoing analysis also explains why there is a long term trend toward
 11 reduced participation of the people in the political process. Most states require you to be a "U.S. citizens" to vote and they
 12 do it so they can use voting as a way to get jurisdiction to impose income taxes. If corrupt politicians and lawyers writing
 13 our state laws have forced the people to give up their constitutional rights and their sovereignty and be subject to unwanted
 14 socialist federal jurisdiction in order to participate in the political process and have "political rights", is it any wonder that
 15 they no longer wish to participate? If our state governments sincerely want to fix the problem of low voter turnout and
 16 people being unwilling to serve on jury duty, then what they need to do is:

- 17 1. Admit in their election literature that most people are "U.S. nationals" and not "U.S. citizens".
- 18 2. Remove the legal requirement to be a "U.S. citizen" in order to vote or serve on jury duty. Instead, make the
 19 requirement that they must be "U.S. nationals" instead, under 8 U.S.C. §1408.
- 20 3. Tell people that by serving on jury duty and participating in elections, they are defending their liberty and that if they
 21 don't, the government and the laws will become corrupted. The state should remind people that keeping our
 22 government and the state laws honest and limited in power is everyone's job.

23 Of course, if the states did this, most of them would lose their jurisdiction to impose state income taxes. Don't hold your
 24 breath waiting for them to do the honorable thing documented above, because you will die of suffocation!

25 *"The love of money is the root of all evil." 1 Tim. 6:10*

26 In satisfying the goals of this section on the subject of political rights, we rely mainly upon the writings of Lysander
 27 Spooner and his brilliant essay entitled No Treason: The Constitution of No Authority available on our website at:

28 <http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Indiv/SpoonerLysander/NoTreason.htm>

29 In the above essay, Lysander Spooner uses reason and common sense alone to examine the two most important aspects of
 30 citizenship, that of voting and paying taxes, and concludes that the only reason people do these things is for selfish reasons
 31 and in defense of their personal liberties from what he aptly calls "bands of robbers, tyrants, and murderers" who he says
 32 inhabit "the government". His analysis is so compelling and indisputable that we repeat it here for your benefit and
 33 edification. His essay is also so irreverent towards the government and public "servants" (tyrants) that it is funny!

34 What Lysander does is simply prove that the exercise of civic responsibility in the form of voting and payment of taxes are
 35 done under compulsion from the government and under the implied influence and duress and coercion by other of his
 36 fellow citizens within a competitive and dog-eat-dog, democracy, who will trample his natural rights if he isn't politically
 37 involved and doesn't defend those rights by vigilantly exercising all of his civic responsibilities.

38 We'll start off the analysis in subsequent sections with a legal definition of the word "voluntary":

39 *"voluntary. Unconstrained by interference; unimpelled by another's influence; spontaneous; acting of oneself.*
 40 *Coker v. State, 199 Ga. 20, 33 S.E.2d 171, 174. Done by design or intention. Proceeding from the free and*
 41 *unrestrained will of the person. Produced in or by an act of choice. Resulting from free choice, without*
 42 *compulsion or solicitation. The word, especially in statutes, often implies knowledge of essential facts. Without*
 43 *valuable consideration; gratuitous, as a voluntary conveyance. Also, having a merely nominal consideration;*
 44 *as, a voluntary deed." [Black's Law Dictionary, 6th Edition, page 1575]*

45 In the next few subsections, we'll examine each aspect of political rights individually. However, before we start looking at
 46 the trees, consider the forest and the bigger picture. For instance, have you ever considered that our life and our existence

1 itself is *involuntary*? We never *asked* to be here: our parents chose to put us here without our consent or involvement. Life
 2 was an *involuntary gift* from our parents to us and we couldn't choose whether we wanted it or not before we received it.
 3 *Our very existence is involuntary and nonconsensual!* Everything we do *after* we are born and come into existence in order
 4 to maintain and protect a life that we never asked for to begin with is *involuntary*, because *our very life is involuntary*. This
 5 life, in fact, is a "death sentence" by God Himself for the original sin of Adam and Eve documented in the bible in the book
 6 of Genesis in chapter 3. Because Adam and Eve sinned by disobeying God and eating the fruit, and because the "wages of
 7 sin is death" (Romans 6:23), then His sentence was a death sentence. Before that sentence, Adam and Eve were immortal.
 8 In that context, God was the "judge" who administered His righteous death sentence according to His Laws. Recall also
 9 that the Fifth Amendment of our Constitution prohibits double jeopardy, which is two trials and two sentences for the same
 10 crime. If God already sentenced us to death for our sin, then the Fifth amendment is violated if the government tries to
 11 punish us a *second* time with direct taxes in the process of toiling to sustain and support a life we never asked for to begin
 12 with.

13 Remember the definition of "voluntary" above: "Unconstrained by interference; unimpelled by another's influence". In
 14 this case, that unwanted influence came from a combination of our parents bringing us into existence, and God allowing
 15 them to do that. Every other argument about political rights derives from this higher argument and is a product of reason
 16 and common sense, which are rare entities indeed in today's society and especially among democratic candidates. We have
 17 an article on our Life web page of our website from the French Supreme Court where one individual born with birth defects
 18 sued his doctor for the right to NOT be born because it was suffering for him! See the article for yourself:

19 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/AbortionCloning/News/RightNotToBeBorn.htm>

20 Common sense also confirms the validity of this premise. For instance, many parents choose *not* to have children because
 21 they don't want to *force* their children to undergo poverty or an unpleasant lifestyle in a corrupted or crowded society.
 22 Note that word "force". That argument applies to the author, for instance. Why would I want to bring more willing federal
 23 slaves and serfs to an illegal income tax into the world to serve a corrupted government unless and until our tax system is
 24 reformed?

25 As yet another example of why life is involuntary, the rate of teen suicide in America today is the highest it has ever been.
 26 Those teens who choose suicide have chosen to give back a gift from their parents that they apparently don't appreciate or
 27 want. We would argue that the reason these teens are committing suicide is because our public/government schools have
 28 become antiseptic prisonhouses devoid of God or any spiritual training. They have become training camps to brainwash
 29 gullible youth into becoming federal serfs. Our public schools are *fool factories* where psychologists are making children
 30 into drug addicts and forcing them in unprecedented numbers to take mind altering drugs to make them submissive to
 31 authority. Nonconformity and questioning of authority is *punished*, not encouraged or developed as the product of an
 32 inquisitive and sovereign mind and person.

33 If you would like to look at what the citizenship requirements for various political rights are within your state, we have
 34 compiled a listing by state at the web address below:

35 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/LegalGovRef/Citizenship/PoliticalRightsvCitizenshipByState.htm>

36 4.11.5.1 Voting¹²⁶

37 All the voting that has ever taken place under the Constitution, has been of such a kind that it not only did not pledge the
 38 whole people to support the Constitution, but it did not even pledge any one of them to do so, as the following
 39 considerations show.

40 1. In the very nature of things, the act of voting could bind nobody but the actual voters. But owing to the property
 41 qualifications required, it is probable that, during the first twenty or thirty years under the Constitution, not more than one-
 42 tenth, fifteenth, or perhaps twentieth of the whole population (black and white, men, women, and minors) were permitted to

¹²⁶ From an essay entitled *No Treason: The Constitution of No Authority*, by Lysander Spooner, part II.

1 vote. Consequently, so far as voting was concerned, not more than one-tenth, fifteenth, or twentieth of those then existing,
2 could have incurred any obligation to support the Constitution.

3 At the present time [1869], it is probable that not more than one-sixth of the whole population are permitted to vote.
4 Consequently, so far as voting is concerned, the other five-sixths can have given no pledge that they will support the
5 Constitution.

6 2. Of the one-sixth that are permitted to vote, probably not more than two-thirds (about one-ninth of the whole population)
7 have usually voted. Many never vote at all. Many vote only once in two, three, five, or ten years, in periods of great
8 excitement.

9 No one, by voting, can be said to pledge himself for any longer period than that for which he votes. If, for example, I vote
10 for an officer who is to hold his office for only a year, I cannot be said to have thereby pledged myself to support the
11 government beyond that term. Therefore, on the ground of actual voting, it probably cannot be said that more than one-
12 ninth or one-eighth, of the whole population are usually under any pledge to support the Constitution. [In recent years, since
13 1940, the number of voters in elections has usually fluctuated between one-third and two-fifths of the populace.]

14 3. It cannot be said that, by voting, a man pledges himself to support the Constitution, unless the act of voting be a perfectly
15 voluntary one on his part. Yet the act of voting cannot properly be called a voluntary one on the part of any very large
16 number of those who do vote. It is rather a measure of necessity imposed upon them by others, than one of their own
17 choice. On this point I repeat what was said in a former number, viz.:

18 *"In truth, in the case of individuals, their actual voting is not to be taken as proof of consent, even for the time*
19 *being. On the contrary, it is to be considered that, without his consent having even been asked a man finds*
20 *himself environed by a government that he cannot resist; a government that forces him to pay money, render*
21 *service, and forego the exercise of many of his natural rights, under peril of weighty punishments. He sees, too,*
22 *that other men practice this tyranny over him by the use of the ballot. He sees further, that, if he will but use the*
23 *ballot himself, he has some chance of relieving himself from this tyranny of others, by subjecting them to his*
24 *own. In short, he finds himself, without his consent, so situated that, if he use the ballot, he may become a*
25 *master; if he does not use it, he must become a slave. And he has no other alternative than these two. In self-*
26 *defence, he attempts the former. His case is analogous to that of a man who has been forced into battle, where*
27 *he must either kill others, or be killed himself. Because, to save his own life in battle, a man takes the lives of his*
28 *opponents, it is not to be inferred that the battle is one of his own choosing. Neither in contests with the ballot --*
29 *which is a mere substitute for a bullet -- because, as his only chance of self-preservation, a man uses a ballot,*
30 *is it to be inferred that the contest is one into which he voluntarily entered; that he voluntarily set up all his own*
31 *natural rights, as a stake against those of others, to be lost or won by the mere power of numbers. On the*
32 *contrary, it is to be considered that, in an exigency into which he had been forced by others, and in which no*
33 *other means of self-defence offered, he, as a matter of necessity, used the only one that was left to him.*

34 *"Doubtless the most miserable of men, under the most oppressive government in the world, if allowed the ballot,*
35 *would use it, if they could see any chance of thereby meliorating their condition. But it would not, therefore, be*
36 *a legitimate inference that the government itself, that crushes them, was one which they had voluntarily set up,*
37 *or even consented to.*

38 *"Therefore, a man's voting under the Constitution of the United States, is not to be taken as evidence that he*
39 *ever freely assented to the Constitution, even for the time being. Consequently we have no proof that any very*
40 *large portion, even of the actual voters of the United States, ever really and voluntarily consented to the*
41 *Constitution, EVEN FOR THE TIME BEING. Nor can we ever have such proof, until every man is left perfectly*
42 *free to consent, or not, without thereby subjecting himself or his property to be disturbed or injured by others."*

43 As we can have no legal knowledge as to who votes from choice, and who from the necessity thus forced upon him, we can
44 have no legal knowledge, as to any particular individual, that he voted from choice; or, consequently, that by voting, he
45 consented, or pledged himself, to support the government. Legally speaking, therefore, the act of voting utterly fails to
46 pledge ANY ONE to support the government. It utterly fails to prove that the government rests upon the voluntary support
47 of anybody. On general principles of law and reason, it cannot be said that the government has any voluntary supporters at
48 all, until it can be distinctly shown who its voluntary supporters are.

49 4. As taxation is made compulsory on all, whether they vote or not, a large proportion of those who vote, no doubt do so to
50 prevent their own money being used against themselves; when, in fact, they would have gladly abstained from voting, if
51 they could thereby have saved themselves from taxation alone, to say nothing of being saved from all the other usurpations
52 and tyrannies of the government. To take a man's property without his consent, and then to infer his consent because he

1 attempts, by voting, to prevent that property from being used to his injury, is a very insufficient proof of his consent to
2 support the Constitution. It is, in fact, no proof at all. And as we can have no legal knowledge as to who the particular
3 individuals are, if there are any, who are willing to be taxed for the sake of voting, we can have no legal knowledge that any
4 particular individual consents to be taxed for the sake of voting; or, consequently, consents to support the Constitution.

5 5. At nearly all elections, votes are given for various candidates for the same office. Those who vote for the unsuccessful
6 candidates cannot properly be said to have voted to sustain the Constitution. They may, with more reason, be supposed to
7 have voted, not to support the Constitution, but specially to prevent the tyranny which they anticipate the successful
8 candidate intends to practice upon them under color of the Constitution; and therefore may reasonably be supposed to have
9 voted against the Constitution itself. This supposition is the more reasonable, inasmuch as such voting is the only mode
10 allowed to them of expressing their dissent to the Constitution.

11 6. Many votes are usually given for candidates who have no prospect of success. Those who give such votes may
12 reasonably be supposed to have voted as they did, with a special intention, not to support, but to obstruct the execution of,
13 the Constitution; and, therefore, against the Constitution itself.

14 7. As all the different votes are given secretly (by secret ballot), there is no legal means of knowing, from the votes
15 themselves, who votes for, and who votes against, the Constitution. Therefore, voting affords no legal evidence that any
16 particular individual supports the Constitution. And where there can be no legal evidence that any particular individual
17 supports the Constitution, it cannot legally be said that anybody supports it. It is clearly impossible to have any legal proof
18 of the intentions of large numbers of men, where there can be no legal proof of the intentions of any particular one of them.

19 8. There being no legal proof of any man's intentions, in voting, we can only conjecture them. As a conjecture, it is
20 probable, that a very large proportion of those who vote, do so on this principle, viz., that if, by voting, they could but get
21 the government into their own hands (or that of their friends), and use its powers against their opponents, they would then
22 willingly support the Constitution; but if their opponents are to have the power, and use it against them, then they would
23 NOT willingly support the Constitution.

24 In short, men's voluntary support of the Constitution is doubtless, in most cases, wholly contingent upon the question
25 whether, by means of the Constitution, they can make themselves masters, or are to be made slaves.

26 Such contingent consent as that is, in law and reason, no consent at all.

27 9. As everybody who supports the Constitution by voting (if there are any such) does so secretly (by secret ballot), and in a
28 way to avoid all personal responsibility for the acts of his agents or representatives, it cannot legally or reasonably be said
29 that anybody at all supports the Constitution by voting. No man can reasonably or legally be said to do such a thing as
30 assent to, or support, the Constitution, *unless he does it openly, and in a way to make himself personally responsible for the*
31 *acts of his agents, so long as they act within the limits of the power he delegates to them.*

32 10. As all voting is secret (by secret ballot), and as all secret governments are necessarily only secret bands of robbers,
33 tyrants, and murderers, the general fact that our government is practically carried on by means of such voting, only proves
34 that there is among us a secret band of robbers, tyrants, and murderers, whose purpose is to rob, enslave, and, so far as
35 necessary to accomplish their purposes, murder, the rest of the people. The simple fact of the existence of such a band does
36 nothing towards proving that "the people of the United States," or any one of them, voluntarily supports the Constitution.

37 For all the reasons that have now been given, voting furnishes no legal evidence as to who the particular individuals are (if
38 there are any), who voluntarily support the Constitution. It therefore furnishes no legal evidence that anybody supports it
39 voluntarily.

40 So far, therefore, as voting is concerned, the Constitution, legally speaking, has no supporters at all.

41 And, as a matter of fact, there is not the slightest probability that the Constitution has a single bona fide supporter in the
42 country. That is to say, there is not the slightest probability that there is a single man in the country, who both understands
43 what the Constitution really is, *and sincerely supports it for what it really is.*

1 The ostensible supporters of the Constitution, like the ostensible supporters of most other governments, are made up of
 2 three classes, viz.: 1. Knaves, a numerous and active class, who see in the government an instrument which they can use for
 3 their own aggrandizement or wealth. 2. Dupes -- a large class, no doubt -- each of whom, because he is allowed one voice
 4 out of millions in deciding what he may do with his own person and his own property, and because he is permitted to have
 5 the same voice in robbing, enslaving, and murdering others, that others have in robbing, enslaving, and murdering himself,
 6 is stupid enough to imagine that he is a "free man," a "sovereign"; that this is "a free government"; "a government of equal
 7 rights," "the best government on earth,"¹²⁷ and such like absurdities. 3. A class who have some appreciation of the evils of
 8 government, but either do not see how to get rid of them, or do not choose to so far sacrifice their private interests as to give
 9 themselves seriously and earnestly to the work of making a change.

10 Lastly, the Fifteenth and the Nineteenth Amendments to the U.S. Constitution collectively make it a *right* for "citizens of
 11 the United States" to vote which cannot be abridged on the basis of race, color, previous servitude, or sex. Unfortunately,
 12 these two amendments say nothing about "U.S. nationals". Based on the definition of "U.S. national" in [8 U.S.C.](#)
 13 [§1101\(a\)\(22\)](#), calling yourself a "U.S. national" could also mean "citizen of the United States". However, whenever you
 14 fill out any government form, if you are not a "citizen of the United States", you should emphasize this so they don't use
 15 the form as evidence against you in court to suck you into their jurisdiction.

16 **4.11.5.2 Paying taxes**¹²⁸

17 The payment of taxes, being compulsory, of course furnishes no evidence that any one voluntarily supports the
 18 Constitution.

19 1. It is true that the THEORY of our Constitution is, that all taxes are paid voluntarily; that our government is a mutual
 20 insurance company, voluntarily entered into by the people with each other; that that each man makes a free and purely
 21 voluntary contract with all others who are parties to the Constitution, to pay so much money for so much protection, the
 22 same as he does with any other insurance company; and that he is just as free not to be protected, and not to pay tax, as he
 23 is to pay a tax, and be protected.

24 But this theory of our government is wholly different from the practical fact. The fact is that the government, like a
 25 highwayman, says to a man: "Your money, or your life." And many, if not most, taxes are paid under the compulsion of
 26 that threat.

27 The government does not, indeed, waylay a man in a lonely place, spring upon him from the roadside, and, holding a pistol
 28 to his head, proceed to rifle his pockets. But the robbery is none the less a robbery on that account; and it is far more
 29 dastardly and shameful.

30 The highwayman takes solely upon himself the responsibility, danger, and crime of his own act. He does not pretend that he
 31 has any rightful claim to your money, or that he intends to use it for your own benefit. He does not pretend to be anything
 32 but a robber. He has not acquired impudence enough to profess to be merely a "protector," and that he takes men's money
 33 against their will, merely to enable him to "protect" those infatuated travelers, who feel perfectly able to protect themselves,
 34 or do not appreciate his peculiar system of protection. He is too sensible a man to make such professions as these.
 35 Furthermore, having taken your money, he leaves you, as you wish him to do. He does not persist in following you on the
 36 road, against your will; assuming to be your rightful "sovereign," on account of the "protection" he affords you. He does not
 37 keep "protecting" you, by commanding you to bow down and serve him; by requiring you to do this, and forbidding you to
 38 do that; by robbing you of more money as often as he finds it for his interest or pleasure to do so; and by branding you as a
 39 rebel, a traitor, and an enemy to your country, and shooting you down without mercy, if you dispute his authority, or resist
 40 his demands. He is too much of a gentleman to be guilty of such impostures, and insults, and villainies as these. In short, he
 41 does not, in addition to robbing you, attempt to make you either his dupe or his slave.

42 The proceedings of those robbers and murderers, who call themselves "the government," are directly the opposite of these
 43 of the single highwayman.

¹²⁷ Suppose it be "the best government on earth," does that prove its own goodness, or only the badness of all other governments?

¹²⁸ From an essay entitled *No Treason: The Constitution of No Authority*, by Lysander Spooner, part III.

1 In the first place, they do not, like him, make themselves individually known; or, consequently, take upon themselves
 2 personally the responsibility of their acts. On the contrary, they secretly (by secret ballot) designate some one of their
 3 number to commit the robbery in their behalf, while they keep themselves practically concealed. They say to the person
 4 thus designated:

5 Go to A_____ B_____, and say to him that "the government" has need of money to meet the expenses of protecting him
 6 and his property. If he presumes to say that he has never contracted with us to protect him, and that he wants none of our
 7 protection, say to him that that is our business, and not his; that we CHOOSE to protect him, whether he desires us to do so
 8 or not; and that we demand pay, too, for protecting him. If he dares to inquire who the individuals are, who have thus taken
 9 upon themselves the title of "the government," and who assume to protect him, and demand payment of him, without his
 10 having ever made any contract with them, say to him that that, too, is our business, and not his; that we do not CHOOSE to
 11 make ourselves INDIVIDUALLY known to him; that we have secretly (by secret ballot) appointed you our agent to give
 12 him notice of our demands, and, if he complies with them, to give him, in our name, a receipt that will protect him against
 13 any similar demand for the present year. If he refuses to comply, seize and sell enough of his property to pay not only our
 14 demands, but all your own expenses and trouble beside. If he resists the seizure of his property, call upon the bystanders to
 15 help you (doubtless some of them will prove to be members of our band.) If, in defending his property, he should kill any of
 16 our band who are assisting you, capture him at all hazards; charge him (in one of our courts) with murder; convict him, and
 17 hang him. If he should call upon his neighbors, or any others who, like him, may be disposed to resist our demands, and
 18 they should come in large numbers to his assistance, cry out that they are all rebels and traitors; that "our country" is in
 19 danger; call upon the commander of our hired murderers; tell him to quell the rebellion and "save the country," cost what it
 20 may. Tell him to kill all who resist, though they should be hundreds of thousands; and thus strike terror into all others
 21 similarly disposed. See that the work of murder is thoroughly done; that we may have no further trouble of this kind
 22 hereafter. When these traitors shall have thus been taught our strength and our determination, they will be good loyal
 23 citizens for many years, and pay their taxes without a why or a wherefore.

24 It is under such compulsion as this that taxes, so called, are paid. And how much proof the payment of taxes affords, that
 25 the people consent to "support the government," it needs no further argument to show.

26 2. Still another reason why the payment of taxes implies no consent, or pledge, to support the government, is that the
 27 taxpayer does not know, and has no means of knowing, who the particular individuals are who compose "the government."
 28 To him "the government" is a myth, an abstraction, an incorporeality, with which he can make no contract, and to which he
 29 can give no consent, and make no pledge. He knows it only through its pretended agents. "The government" itself he never
 30 sees. He knows indeed, by common report, that certain persons, of a certain age, are permitted to vote; and thus to make
 31 themselves parts of, or (if they choose) opponents of, the government, for the time being. But who of them do thus vote,
 32 and especially how each one votes (whether so as to aid or oppose the government), he does not know; the voting being all
 33 done secretly (by secret ballot). Who, therefore, practically compose "the government," for the time being, he has no means
 34 of knowing. Of course he can make no contract with them, give them no consent, and make them no pledge. Of necessity,
 35 therefore, his paying taxes to them implies, on his part, no contract, consent, or pledge to support them -- that is, to support
 36 "the government," or the Constitution.

37 3. Not knowing who the particular individuals are, who call themselves "the government," the taxpayer does not know
 38 whom he pays his taxes to. All he knows is that a man comes to him, representing himself to be the agent of "the
 39 government" -- that is, the agent of a secret band of robbers and murderers, who have taken to themselves the title of "the
 40 government," and have determined to kill everybody who refuses to give them whatever money they demand. To save his
 41 life, he gives up his money to this agent. But as this agent does not make his principals individually known to the taxpayer,
 42 the latter, after he has given up his money, knows no more who are "the government" -- that is, who were the robbers --
 43 than he did before. To say, therefore, that by giving up his money to their agent, he entered into a voluntary contract with
 44 them, that he pledges himself to obey them, to support them, and to give them whatever money they should demand of him
 45 in the future, is simply ridiculous.

46 4. All political power, so called, rests practically upon this matter of money. Any number of scoundrels, having money
 47 enough to start with, can establish themselves as a "government"; because, with money, they can hire soldiers, and with
 48 soldiers extort more money; and also compel general obedience to their will. It is with government, as Caesar said it was in
 49 war, that money and soldiers mutually supported each other; that with money he could hire soldiers, and with soldiers
 50 extort money. So these villains, who call themselves governments, well understand that their power rests primarily upon

1 money. With money they can hire soldiers, and with soldiers extort money. And, when their authority is denied, the first
2 use they always make of money, is to hire soldiers to kill or subdue all who refuse them more money.

3 For this reason, whoever desires liberty, should understand these vital facts, viz.: 1. That every man who puts money into
4 the hands of a "government" (so called), puts into its hands a sword which will be used against him, to extort more money
5 from him, and also to keep him in subjection to its arbitrary will. 2. That those who will take his money, without his
6 consent, in the first place, will use it for his further robbery and enslavement, if he presumes to resist their demands in the
7 future. 3. That it is a perfect absurdity to suppose that any body of men would ever take a man's money without his consent,
8 for any such object as they profess to take it for, viz., that of protecting him; for why should they wish to protect him, if he
9 does not wish them to do so? To suppose that they would do so, is just as absurd as it would be to suppose that they would
10 take his money without his consent, for the purpose of buying food or clothing for him, when he did not want it. 4. If a man
11 wants "protection," he is competent to make his own bargains for it; and nobody has any occasion to rob him, in order to
12 "protect" him against his will. 5. That the only security men can have for their political liberty, consists in their keeping
13 their money in their own pockets, until they have assurances, perfectly satisfactory to themselves, that it will be used as
14 they wish it to be used, for their benefit, and not for their injury. 6. That no government, so called, can reasonably be trusted
15 for a moment, or reasonably be supposed to have honest purposes in view, any longer than it depends wholly upon
16 voluntary support.

17 These facts are all so vital and so self-evident, that it cannot reasonably be supposed that any one will voluntarily pay
18 money to a "government," for the purpose of securing its protection, unless he first make an explicit and purely voluntary
19 contract with it for that purpose.

20 It is perfectly evident, therefore, that neither such voting, nor such payment of taxes, as actually takes place, proves
21 anybody's consent, or obligation, to support the Constitution. Consequently we have no evidence at all that the Constitution
22 is binding upon anybody, or that anybody is under any contract or obligation whatever to support it. And nobody is under
23 any obligation to support it.

24 4.11.5.3 Jury Service

25 Jury service is similar to voting and is based on voting, so all the arguments used earlier by Spooner about voting apply
26 equally to jury service. People involve themselves in jury service for the very same reasons as voting, which is to defend
27 their liberties against encroachment by:

- 28 • The "band of tyrants, robbers, and murderers" in "the government"
- 29 • Fellow citizens who would want to violate the liberties and rights of others by using the government as their agent.
30 For instance, they might abuse their elective franchise or voting power to influence or authorize the state or
31 government to plunder the property of others in order to guarantee their economic security and income.

32 Even before government existed, all men had a natural and God-given right to defend their person, their family, their
33 liberty, and their property against encroachment by others, and they did so through force and using violence if necessary.
34 Book I of *The Law of Nations* by Vattel, which our founding fathers used to write our Constitution and which appears on
35 our website at:

36 http://famguardian.org/Publications/LawOfNations/vattel_01.htm#%2018.%20A%20nation%20has%20a%20right%20to%20every%20thing%20necessary%20for%20its%20preservation.
37

38 also confirms the existence of this God-given right of self defense:

39 [§ 18. A nation has a right to every thing necessary for its preservation.](#)

40 *Since then a nation is obliged to preserve itself, it has a right to every thing necessary for its preservation.*
41 *For the Law of Nature gives us a right to every thing without which we cannot fulfil our obligation; otherwise it*
42 *would oblige us to do impossibilities, or rather would contradict itself in prescribing us a duty, and at the same*
43 *time debarring us of the only means of fulfilling it. It will doubtless be here understood, that those means ought*
44 *not to be unjust in themselves, or such as are absolutely forbidden by the Law of Nature.*

1 As it is impossible that it should ever permit the use of such means, — if on a particular occasion no other
 2 present themselves for fulfilling a general obligation, the obligation must, in that particular instance, be looked
 3 on as impossible, and consequently void.

4 Even the Supreme Court agrees with the existence of the natural rights of self-protection:

5 “The individual may stand upon his constitutional rights as a citizen. He is entitled to carry on his private
 6 business in his own way. His power to contract is unlimited. He owes no duty to the state or to his neighbors to
 7 divulge his business, or to open his doors to an investigation, so far as it may tend to criminate him. He owes no
 8 such duty to the state, since he receives nothing therefrom, beyond the protection of his life and property. **His**
 9 **rights are such as existed by the law of the land long antecedent to the organization of the state**, and can only
 10 be taken from him by due process of law, and in accordance with the Constitution. Among his rights are a
 11 refusal to incriminate himself, and the immunity of himself and his property from arrest or seizure except under
 12 a warrant of the law. He owes nothing to the public so long as he does not trespass upon their rights.” [Hale v.
 13 Henkel, 201 U.S. 43 (1906)]

14 Within the early family unit, this role of defending one’s rights usually fell on the man. As mankind civilized, the function
 15 of defending personal liberty and property were delegated to the government, but the sovereignty remained with the people.
 16 At first, the role of the government in defending its citizens was defined verbally, but mankind soon discovered that human
 17 nature being dishonest and covetous and untrustworthy, the people working for government became corrupted and abused
 18 their power for personal benefit. Consequently, the people then chose to correct this problem by defining the role of the
 19 government formally in writing using written constitutions, from which the government was authorized by the constitution
 20 to write statutes and regulations to carry out the sovereign powers delegated to them by the people. The constitution was
 21 like a written contract that could then be enforced in court against government agents who were charged with carrying it
 22 out. But once again, human depravity entered into the picture and the greedy lawyers and politicians writing the statutes
 23 and regulations devised a way to obfuscate and distort the law for their personal gain, and illegally expand their delegated
 24 authority by dolus. Hence, the jury was invented as a check and balance so that bad laws could be nullified by the
 25 sovereign people and so that this conflict of interest by the government could then be eliminated. The people then
 26 separated the Judiciary from the Executive branch of the government in order that this conflict of interest might be
 27 minimized and to make the judges controlling the trials more objective and less biased, but even that solution had defects.
 28 The judges became corrupted because they got their pay and benefits from the tax monies that were illegally collected by
 29 the Executive branch, and the Executive branch used their tax collecting power to threaten, harass, and intimidate the
 30 judges into illegally enforcing the tax laws. This made juries all the more important because they were there not only to
 31 nullify bad laws, but to counteract subtle and often hidden biases on the part of the judge. We talked about many of these
 32 biases and prejudices earlier in section 2.8.13. Thomas Jefferson hinted at these biases when he said:

33 “It is left... to the juries, if they think the permanent judges are under any bias whatever in any cause, to take on
 34 themselves to judge the law as well as the fact. They never exercise this power but when they suspect partiality
 35 in the judges; and by the exercise of this power they have been the firmest bulwarks of English liberty.” --
 36 Thomas Jefferson to Abbe Arnoux, 1789. ME 7:423, Papers 15:283

37 The purpose of juries is therefore to protect us from corrupted and covetous government politicians and judges and to
 38 nullify bad laws that conflict with God’s laws. But the definition of “voluntary” at the beginning of this subsection said
 39 that “voluntary” meant:

40 “**voluntary**. Unconstrained by interference; unimpelled by another’s influence; spontaneous; acting of oneself.
 41 Coker v. State, 199 Ga. 20, 33 S.E.2d 171, 174. Done by design or intention. Proceeding from the free and
 42 unrestrained will of the person. Produced in or by an act of choice. Resulting from free choice, without
 43 compulsion or solicitation. The word, especially in statutes, often implies knowledge of essential facts. Without
 44 valuable consideration; gratuitous, as a voluntary conveyance. Also, having a merely nominal consideration;
 45 as, a voluntary deed.” [Black’s Law Dictionary, 6th Edition, page 1575]

46 Certainly, jury service cannot be said to be “unimpelled by another’s influence” because the very reason we do it is because
 47 of the fear of specific bad people in government and the bad laws they write. Nothing that is done out of fear of a person or
 48 a bad law can be said to be “voluntary”. Here is a confirmation of that conclusion found in the definition of “consent” in
 49 Black’s Law Dictionary:

50 “**Consent**. A concurrence of wills. Voluntarily yielding the will to the proposition of another; acquiescence or
 51 compliance therewith. Agreement; approval; permission; the act or result of coming into harmony or accord.
 52 Consent is an act of reason, accompanied with deliberation, the mind weighing as in a balance the good or evil
 53 on each side. It means voluntary agreement by a person in the possession and exercise of sufficient mental

1 capacity to make an intelligent choice to do something proposed by another. It supposes a physical power to
 2 act, a moral power of acting, and a serious, determined, and free use of these powers. Consent is implied in
 3 every agreement. It is an act unclouded by fraud, duress, or sometimes even mistake.

4 “Willingness in fact that an act or an invasion of an interest shall take place. Restatement, Second, Torts §10A.

5 **As used in the law of rape ‘consent’ means consent of the will,**
 6 **and submission under the influence of fear or terror cannot**
 7 **amount to real consent.** *There must be an exercise of intelligence based on knowledge of its*
 8 *significance and moral quality and there must be a choice between resistance and assent. And if a woman*
 9 *resists to the point where further resistance would be useless or until her resistance is overcome by force or*
 10 *violence, submission thereafter is not ‘consent’.” [Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 305, emphasis*
 11 *added]*

12 Self defense cannot be voluntary unless we consented or volunteered to put ourselves into harms way to begin with, which
 13 no sane man would consider in the first place. Like voting, if we don’t serve on jury duty, then corrupted people in
 14 government will eventually write the laws in such a way as to make us into complete and total slaves. Here is how Thomas
 15 Jefferson describes this situation in the Declaration of Independence and what we should do about it:

16 “But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same Object evinces a design to
 17 reduce them under absolute Despotism, **it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to**
 18 **provide new Guards for their future security.**”

19 Jury service, like voting and the exercise of all other political rights, is defensive and done as a safeguard for our future
 20 security. The exercise of rights cannot be turned into taxable government privileges.. Anything that is defensive is done
 21 for selfish and not altruistic or voluntary reasons. One could then say that by exercising our right to serve on jury duty (and
 22 voting in the process), we are in receipt of “consideration”, which is a fancy legal word for a “benefit”. That benefit is the
 23 absence of threats or coercion or corruption in our government. By exercising our right (not our privilege, but our right) to
 24 act as jurors, we are ensuring a peaceful, orderly society free of corruption and evil, which is probably the most important
 25 aspect of quality of life that we can personally experience in our lifetime. Consequently, the reason we serve on jury duty
 26 is to remain free of government compulsion and to protect our liberties, and for no other reason, and we do so for selfish
 27 reasons and not the magnanimous good of mankind. You could then say we are “compelled to avoid future compulsion
 28 and government corruption”.

29 It would be the grossest distortion for any government servant or judge to then commit fraud by saying that jury service is
 30 “voluntary”, and if it isn’t “voluntary” and “consensual”, then it can’t be a “privilege”. Here is what Black’s Law
 31 Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 1198 says about “privilege” on page 1197-1198:

32 “**privilege.** A particular and peculiar benefit or advantage enjoyed by a person, company, or class, beyond the
 33 common advantages of other citizens. An exceptional or extraordinary power or exemption. A peculiar right,
 34 advantage, exemption, power, franchise, or immunity held by a person or class, not generally possessed by
 35 others.

36 [...]

37 “A privilege may be based upon: (a) the consent of the other affected by the actor’s conduct, or (b) the fact
 38 that its exercise is necessary for the protection of some interest of the actor or of the public which is of such
 39 importance as to justify the harm caused or threatened by its exercise, or (c) the fact that the actor is
 40 performing a function for the proper performance of which freedom of action is essential. Restatement,
 41 Second, Torts, §10.

42 Privileges may be divided into two general categories: (1) consent, and (2) privileges created by law
 43 irrespective of consent. *In general, the latter arise where there is some important and overriding social value*
 44 *in sanctioning defendant’s conduct, despite the fact that it causes plaintiff harm.”*

45 From the above, we must conclude that unless receipt of a “privilege” is consensual, then it cannot be a privilege. And
 46 something cannot be consensual unless it is “voluntary” and done “without valuable consideration” or personal benefit.

47 “**consent.** A concurrence of wills. Voluntarily yielding the will to the proposition of another; acquiescence or
 48 compliance therewith. Agreement; approval; permission; the act or result of coming into harmony or accord.

1 *Consent is an act of reason, accompanied with deliberation, the mind weighing as in a balance the good or evil*
 2 *on each side. It means voluntary agreement by a person in the possession and exercise of sufficient mental*
 3 *capacity to make an intelligent choice to do something proposed by another. It supposes a physical power to*
 4 *act, a moral power of acting, and a serious, determined, and free use of these powers. Consent is implied in*
 5 *every agreement. It is an act unclouded by fraud, duress, or sometimes even mistake."*

6 So in any way you want to look at it, jury service is a compelled necessity of the society we live in and it is involuntary and
 7 nonconsensual. It is a necessary evil at best because of the evil nature of mankind when serving in public office and in
 8 positions of power.

9 4.11.5.4 Citizenship

10 We have already established that the main and most important function of government is public protection, which is
 11 accomplished by preventing and punishing injustice. We established this fact in section 3.3, where we talked about the
 12 Purpose of Law. People in the government will tell you that the reason for becoming a citizen is to qualify for receipt of
 13 that public protection and to pay one's fair share of the costs of supporting it. However, we established earlier in section
 14 4.11.3 on Federal Citizenship that you do not have to be a "citizen" to have civil rights. The purpose of law is to protect
 15 rights and liberties. Therefore, one need not become a citizen to benefit from the protection afforded by government or the
 16 laws that it enacts. Compliance with all law must therefore be voluntary because citizenship itself ideally should be but
 17 seldom is voluntary. Here is an example court cite illustrating our point:

18 *"When a change of government takes place, from a monarchical to a republican government, the old form is*
 19 *dissolved. Those who lived under it, and did not choose to become members of the new, had a right to refuse*
 20 *their allegiance to it, and to retire elsewhere. By being a part of the society subject to the old government, they*
 21 *had not entered into any engagement to become subject to any new form the majority might think proper to*
 22 *adopt. That the majority shall prevail is a rule posterior to the formation of government, and results from it. It*
 23 *is not a rule upon mankind in their natural state. There, every man is independent of all laws, except those*
 24 *prescribed by nature. He is not bound by any institutions formed by his fellowmen without his consent" -Cruden*
 25 *v. Neale, 2 N.C. (1796) 2 S.E. 70*

26 As we stated at the beginning of this chapter and in section 4.8, your civil rights derive not from your citizenship status, but
 27 from where you were born and where you live. Furthermore, most of us will pay our fair share of the costs of supporting
 28 government without being citizens. In fact, very few taxes one might pay are dependent on their status as citizens.
 29 Furthermore, there are very few things we can do, citizen or not, that don't compel us to pay some kind of tax.

30 Why, then, do people become citizens? It defies us. In the next section on "U.S. Nationals", you will learn that state
 31 governments commonly will deprive "nationals of the United States" the right to vote and serve on jury duty unless and
 32 until they become "U.S. citizens" under 8 U.S.C. §1401, but we established in that section and earlier in section 4.11.5 that
 33 these are rights and not privileges. This is so because in our civil society, these mechanisms are the only means available
 34 for us to defend our rights, liberties, and property without resorting to violence and without being compelled to rely on a
 35 corrupt politician to do it for us. Being able to defend oneself from harm is a natural right that cannot be turned into a
 36 privilege that can then be taxed or regulated.

37 *"A right common in every citizen such as the right to own property or to engage in business of a character*
 38 *not requiring regulation CANNOT, however, be taxed as a special franchise by first prohibiting its exercise*
 39 *and then permitting its enjoyment upon the payment of a certain sum of money." [Stevens v. State, 2 Ark. 291;*
 40 *35 Am. Dec. 72, Spring Val. Water Works v. Barber, 99 Cal. 36, 33 Pac. 735, 21 L.R.A. 416. Note 57 L.R.A.*
 41 *416]*

42 *"The individual, unlike the corporation, cannot be taxed for the mere privilege of existing. The corporation is*
 43 *an artificial entity which owes its existence and charter power to the State, but the individual's right to live and*
 44 *own property are natural rights for the enjoyment of which an excise cannot be imposed." [Redfield v. Fisher,*
 45 *292 Oregon 814, 817]*

46 The reason the individual can't be taxed for the privilege of existing is because all privileges must be voluntarily accepted,
 47 and we never made the choice to exist. Life was a gift from God, not a choice or a government "privilege". Why, then, do
 48 governments make voting and serving on jury duty (which incidentally are defensive rather than voluntary actions) into a
 49 "privilege" by forcing you to become a "U.S. citizen" subject to their corrupt jurisdiction? The reason, quite frankly, is
 50 because they want to pull you into the "federal zone" so they can tax you and subject you to their jurisdiction! They do this
 51 because they want to pick your pocket and make you into a feudal government serf, and for no other reason. The federal

1 statutory “U.S. citizen” status under 8 U.S.C. §1401 is simply a legal tool that they use to expand their authority and
 2 political power and jurisdiction over you. The government then adds insult to this injury by saying that receipt of “U.S.
 3 citizenship” is a “privilege” and is done “voluntarily”. Look again at Section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment:

4 *Section 1. All persons born or naturalized in the [federal] United States, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof,*
 5 *are citizens of the United States and of the state wherein they reside. No state shall make or enforce any law*
 6 *which shall abridge the **privileges or immunities of citizens of the United States**;*
 7 *nor shall any state deprive any person of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law; nor deny to any*
 8 *person within its jurisdiction the equal protection of the laws.*

9 We ask you now:

10 *“How can the exercise of a natural right as basic as self defense and the pursuit of self protection be turned*
 11 *into a privilege? How can the government force you to surrender your rights by becoming a second class ‘U.S.*
 12 *citizen’ in order to acquire the ability to defend those rights as a jurist or a voter?”*

13 The answer is, they can’t, but they do it anyway, because the “sheeple”, I mean people, don’t complain. Are you a sheep?
 14 Furthermore, can the acquisition of citizenship under such circumstances rightfully be called “voluntary” or “consensual”?
 15 Let’s look at the definition again:

16 *“voluntary. Unconstrained by interference; unimpelled by another’s influence; spontaneous; acting of oneself.*
 17 *Coker v. State, 199 Ga. 20, 33 S.E.2d 171, 174. Done by design or intention. Proceeding from the free and*
 18 *unrestrained will of the person. Produced in or by an act of choice. Resulting from free choice, without*
 19 *compulsion or solicitation. The word, especially in statutes, often implies knowledge of essential facts. Without*
 20 *valuable consideration; gratuitous, as a voluntary conveyance. Also, having a merely nominal consideration;*
 21 *as, a voluntary deed.” [Black’s Law Dictionary, 6th Edition, page 1575]*

22 And here is the definition of “consent” from Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition:

23 *“consent. A concurrence of wills. Voluntarily yielding the will to the proposition of another; acquiescence or*
 24 *compliance therewith. Agreement; approval; permission; the act or result of coming into harmony or accord.*
 25 *Consent is an act of reason, accompanied with deliberation, the mind weighing as in a balance the good or evil*
 26 *on each side. It means voluntary agreement by a person in the possession and exercise of sufficient mental*
 27 *capacity to make an intelligent choice to do something proposed by another. It supposes a physical power to*
 28 *act, a moral power of acting, and a serious, determined, and free use of these powers. Consent is implied in*
 29 *every agreement. It is an act unclouded by fraud, duress, or sometimes even mistake.”*

30 If the government has applied duress in forcing you to become a statutory “U.S. citizen” under 8 U.S.C. §1401 in order so
 31 you could have the opportunity to protect your God-given rights, which by the way is itself an involuntary function, and at
 32 the same time, has committed fraud by fooling or deceiving you into claiming an incorrect and mistaken status as a “U.S.
 33 citizen”, then clearly, based on the definition of “consensual” above, one cannot claim to have become a citizen by the
 34 requisite consent from a legal perspective.

35 The answer, then, to our previous question of whether the government can force you to become a statutory federal “U.S.
 36 citizen” is a resounding NO, because the government interfered and constrained and threatened the exercise of your natural,
 37 God-given rights if you didn’t provide your fully-informed consent to become a citizen. You were “under the influence” of
 38 government coercion and therefore were acting “involuntarily”. You became a citizen for selfish reasons and the
 39 “consideration” you received in exchange for your consent was government protection of your God-given rights that they
 40 couldn’t lawfully deny you to begin with. Ironically, the government coerced you into paying for something you didn’t
 41 need and that which you already had as a gift from God and nature rather than from your magistrate or Congressman. Once
 42 again, here is how Thomas Jefferson, author of our Declaration of Independence, describes it:

43 *“A free people [claim] their rights as derived from the laws of nature, and not as the gift of their chief*
 44 *magistrate.” --Thomas Jefferson: Rights of British America, 1774. ME 1:209, Papers 1:134*

45 In effect, by exchanging your God-give “rights” for taxable government “privileges”, you sold your soul to Satan and a
 46 corrupted government because you didn’t trust God to protect you and wanted to put an end to government harassment and
 47 discrimination directed at you for not “volunteering” to become a “U.S. citizen”.

1 *"But he who doubts [God's protection?] is condemned if he eats, because he does not eat from faith; for*
 2 *whatever is not from faith [trust in God rather than government] is sin." [Rom. 14:23, Bible, NKJV]*

3 At the point when you became a "U.S. citizen" under federal law found in 8 U.S.C. §1401, you sinned and fell from grace
 4 like Satan did and went to the bottom of the hierarchy of sovereignty that we explained at the beginning of this chapter in
 5 section 4.1. You sinned by volunteering to serve more than one master (the federal and the state governments and God) in
 6 violation of Jesus' words in Luke 16:13. You became unequally yoked with Babylon, the Great Harlot, described in the
 7 book of Revelations. You sold out your soul and the Truth to Satan for 20 pieces of silver, like Judas did to Jesus. You
 8 also lied to the government about your true and legal citizenship status as a "U.S. national" because you ignorantly coveted
 9 government privileges and benefits and "protection" in violation of Exodus 20:16. The price for these sins, it turns out, is
 10 perpetual slavery to a corrupt government "god", who you must then worship and pay homage and tribute to for the rest of
 11 your natural life, not out of choice or consent, but out of fear. Becoming a "U.S. citizen" demoted you from being a
 12 sovereign to a government whore and you had better bend over whenever the IRS comes knocking! Once you admitted you
 13 were a "U.S. citizen" and a government harlot, the burden of proving that you aren't a prostitute fell on you, and any good
 14 lawyer knows that proving a negative is an impossibility, so you have to wear the "taxpayer" sign on you back for as long
 15 as you are a "U.S. citizen". As long as you are wearing that sign, you may as well be standing on a street corner half-naked
 16 begging every government "John" who drives by to pick you up for free and enjoy your company all night, and it's
 17 perfectly legal, because the "Johns" write the laws!

18 *"For our citizenship is in heaven [not earth or "U.S. citizenship"], from which we also eagerly wait for the*
 19 *Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ"--Philippians 3:20*

20 *"Protection draws subjection." Steven Miller*

21 *"Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the*
 22 *yoke of bondage [to the government or the income tax]."*
 23 *[Bible, Galatians 5:1]*

24 *"Now, therefore, you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and members*
 25 *of the household of God." --Ephesians 2:19, Bible, NKJV*

26 *"These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off were assured of them,*
 27 *embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth." --Hebrews 11:13*

28 *"Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul..." --1*
 29 *Peter 2:1*

30 4.11.6 "U.S. Nationals"

31 A third condition of citizenship is one where the individual is a state Citizen and also either a "U.S. national" or a "State
 32 U.S. national". These types of persons are referred to with any of the following synonymous names:

- 33 • "nationals but not citizens of the United States" under [8 U.S.C. §1408](#)
- 34 • "non-citizen U.S. nationals" under [8 U.S.C. §1452](#)
- 35 • American Citizens
- 36 • American Nationals
- 37 • Nonresident Aliens (under the Internal Revenue Code, as defined in [26 U.S.C. §7701\(b\)\(1\)\(B\)](#)).

38 "U.S. nationals" are defined under 8 U.S.C. §1408 and they existed under *The Law of Nations* and international law since
 39 long before the passage of the 14th Amendment to the U.S. Constitution in 1868. A "state U.S. national" is one who derives
 40 his nationality and allegiance to the confederation of states of the Union called the "United States of America" by virtue of
 41 being born in a state of the Union. In terms of protection of our rights, being a "state U.S. national" or a "U.S. national" are
 42 roughly equivalent. The "U.S. national" status, however, has several advantages that the "state U.S. national" status does
 43 not enjoy, as we explained earlier in section 4.11.4:

- 44 1. May collect any Social Security benefits, because the Social Security Program Operations Manual (POM) section [GN](#)
 45 [00303.001](#) states that only "U.S. citizens" and "U.S. nationals" can collect benefits.
- 46 2. May hold a U.S. security clearance, unlike "state U.S. nationals". See SECNAVINST 5510.30A, Appendix I.

1 3. May work for the federal government as a civil servant. See 5 CFR § 338.101.

2 The key difference between a “state U.S. national” and a “U.S. national” is the citizenship status of your parents. Below is
3 a table that summarizes the distinctions using all possible permutations of “state U.S. national” and “U.S. national” status
4 for both you and your parents:

5 **Table 4-15: Citizenship possibilities**

#	Reference	Parent's citizenship status	Your birthplace	Your status
1	8 U.S.C. §1408(1)	Irrelevant	In an outlying possession on or after the date of formal acquisition of such possession	“U.S. national”
2	8 U.S.C. §1408(2)	“U.S. nationals” but not “U.S. citizens” who have resided anywhere in the federal United States prior to your birth	Outside the federal “United States”	“U.S. national”
3	8 U.S.C. §1408(3)	A person of unknown parentage found in an outlying possession of the United States while under the age of five years, until shown, prior to his attaining the age of twenty-one years, not to have been born in such outlying possession	NA	“U.S. national”
4	8 U.S.C. §1408(4)	One parent is a “U.S. national” but not “U.S. citizen” and the other is an “alien”. The “U.S. national” parent has resided somewhere in the federal United States prior to your birth	Outside the federal “United States”	“U.S. national”
5	Law of Nations , Book I, §212	Both parents are “state U.S. nationals” and not “U.S. citizens” or “U.S. nationals”. Neither were either born in the federal zone nor did they reside there during their lifetime.	Inside a state of the union and not on federal property	“state U.S. national”
6	Law of Nations , Book I, §215	Both parents are “U.S. nationals” or “state U.S. nationals”. Neither were either born in the federal zone nor did they reside there during their lifetimes.	Outside the “United States” the country	“state U.S. national” or “U.S. national”
7	Law of Nations , Book I, §62 8 U.S.C. §1481	You started out as a “U.S. citizen” under 8 U.S.C. §1401 and decided to abandon the “citizen” part and retain the “national part”, properly noticed the Secretary of State of your intentions, and obtained a revised passport reflecting your new status.	NA	“U.S. national”

6 Very significant is the fact that [8 U.S.C. §1408](#), which is the only definition of “U.S. National” found in federal statutes,
7 does *not* define *all* possible scenarios whereby a person may be a “U.S. national”. For instance, it does *not* define the
8 condition where both parents are “U.S. nationals”, the birth occurred outside of the *federal* United States, and neither parent
9 ever resided physically inside the *federal* United States. Under *The Law of Nations*, Book I, section 215, this condition
10 always results in the child having the same citizenship as his/her father. The *Law of Nations* was one of the organic
11 documents that the founding fathers used to write our original Constitution and Article 1, Section 8, Clause 10 of that
12 Constitution MANDATES that it be obeyed.

13 *“Article 1, Section 8, Clause 10*

14 *“The Congress shall have Power ...*

15 *“To define and punish Piracies and Felonies committed on the high Seas, and Offences against the Law of*
16 *Nations;”*

17 As you read this section below from *The Law of Nations* that proves item 6 in the above table, keep in mind that states of
18 the Union are considered “foreign countries” with respect to the federal government legislative jurisdiction and police
19 powers (see <http://famguardian.org/Publications/LawOfNations/vattel.htm>).

1 § 215. Children of citizens born in a foreign country.

2 *It is asked whether the children born of citizens in a foreign country are citizens? The laws have decided this*
 3 *question in several countries, and their regulations must be followed.(59) **By the law of nature alone, children***
 4 ***follow the condition of their fathers, and enter into all their rights (§ 212); the place of birth produces no***
 5 ***change in this particular, and cannot, of itself, furnish any reason for taking from a child what nature has***
 6 ***given him; I say "of itself," for, civil or political laws may, for particular reasons, ordain otherwise. But I***
 7 *suppose that the father has not entirely quitted his country in order to settle elsewhere. If he has fixed his abode*
 8 *in a foreign country, he is become a member of another society, at least as a perpetual inhabitant; and his*
 9 *children will be members of it also.*

10 [*The Law of Nations, Book I, Section 215, Vattel*]

11 Here's a U.S. Supreme Court ruling confirming these conclusions:

12 *"Under statute, child born outside United States is not entitled to citizenship unless father has resided in United*
 13 *States before its birth." [Weedin v. Chin Bow, 274 U.S. 657; 47 S.Ct. 772 (1927)]*

14 The reason 8 U.S.C. §1408 doesn't mention this case or condition is because this is the criteria that most Americans born
 15 inside states of the Union will meet and the U.S. government wants these people to falsely believe or presume that they are
 16 "U.S. citizens" who are "subject to" federal statutes and jurisdiction, so they interfere in the determination of their true
 17 status as "U.S. nationals" by removing the means to identify it from federal statutes.

18 How can you be sure you are a "national of the United States" or a "U.S. national" if the authority for being so isn't found
 19 in federal statutes? There are lots of ways, but the easiest way is to consider that you as a person who was born in a state of
 20 the Union and outside the federal "United States" can legally "expatriate" your citizenship. All you need in order to do so
 21 is your original birth certificate and to follow the procedures prescribed in federal law which we explain later in sections
 22 4.11.9 and 8.5.3.13. What exactly are you "expatriating"? The definition of expatriation clarifies this:

23 *"Expatriation is the voluntary renunciation or abandonment of nationality and allegiance." [Perkins v. Elg,*
 24 *[307 U.S. 325](#); 59 S.Ct. 884; 83 L.Ed 1320 (1939)]*

25 "expatriation. *The voluntary act of abandoning or renouncing one's country, [nation] and becoming the citizen*
 26 *or subject of another. [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 576]*

27 You can't abandon your "nationality" unless you had it in the first place, so you must be a "U.S. national"! Here is the
 28 clincher:

29 8 U.S.C. §1101: *Definitions*

30 (a)(21) *The term "national" means a person owing permanent allegiance to a state.*

31 The term "state" above can mean a state of the Union or it can mean a confederation of states called the "United States".
 32 Sneaky, huh? You'll never hear especially a federal lawyer agree with you on this because it destroys their jurisdiction to
 33 impose an income tax on you, but it's true!

34 The rulings of the U.S. Supreme Court also reveal that "citizen of the United States" and "nationality" are equivalent in the
 35 context of the Constitution. Look at the ruling below and notice how they use "nationality" and "citizen of the United
 36 States" interchangeably:

37 *"Whether it was also the rule at common law that the children of British subjects born abroad were themselves*
 38 *British subjects-nationality being attributed to parentage instead of locality-has been variously determined. If*
 39 *this were so, of course the statute of Edw. III. was declaratory, as was the subsequent legislation. But if not,*
 40 *then such children were aliens, and the statute of 7 Anne and subsequent statutes must be regarded as in some*
 41 *sort acts of naturalization. On the other hand, it seems to me that the rule, 'Partus sequitur patrem,' has always*
 42 *applied to children of our citizens born abroad, and that the acts of congress on this subject are clearly*
 43 *declaratory, passed out of abundant caution, to obviate misunderstandings which might arise from the*
 44 *prevalence of the contrary rule elsewhere.*

45 "Section 1993 of the Revised Statutes provides that children so born 'are declared to be citizens of the United
 46 States; but the rights of citizenship shall not descend to children whose fathers never resided in the United

States.' Thus a limitation is prescribed on the passage of citizenship by descent beyond the second generation if then surrendered by permanent nonresidence, and this limitation was contained in all the acts from 1790 down. Section 2172 provides that such children shall 'be considered as citizens thereof.' " [U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark, 169 U.S. 649 (1898)]

If after examining the chart above, you find that your present citizenship status does not meet your needs, you are perfectly entitled to change it and the government can't stop you. We explain later in section 4.11.9 how to abandon any type of citizenship you may find undesirable in order to have the combination of rights and "privileges" that suit your fancy. If you are currently a "state-only" citizen but want to become a "U.S. national" so that you can qualify for Social Security Benefits or a military security clearance, then in most cases, the federal government is more than willing to cooperate with you in becoming one under 8 U.S.C. §1452.

In the following subsections we have an outline of the legal constraints applying to persons who are "U.S. nationals" and who do not claim the status of "U.S. citizens" under federal statutes. The analysis that follows establishes that for U.S. nationals, such persons may in some cases not be allowed to vote in elections without special efforts on their part to maintain their status. They are also not allowed to serve on jury duty without special efforts on their part to maintain their status. These special efforts involve clarifying our citizenship on any government forms we sign to describe ourselves as:

- "U.S. nationals" but not "citizens of the United States" (see <http://www4.law.cornell.edu/uscode/8/1408.htm> and [8 U.S.C. Section 1101\(a\)\(21\)](#) and [8 U.S.C. Section 1101\(a\)\(22\)](#)).
- **Nationals** of the "United States *of America*" (just like our passport says) but *not* citizens of the *federal* "United States"

4.11.6.1 Legal Foundations of "U.S. National" Status

We said in the previous section that Natural Born Sovereign Citizens are technically "U.S.*** nationals", that is: "nationals of the United States *of America*". However, the term "U.S. nationals" as defined in [8 U.S.C. §1408](#) depends a different definition of "U.S." that means the federal zone instead of the country "United States*". We don't cite [all](#) of the components of the definition for "U.S. national" below, but only that part that describes most Americans born inside the 50 Union states and outside the federal "United States***":

8 U.S.C. Sec. 1408. - Nationals but not citizens of the United States at birth

Unless otherwise provided in section [1401](#) of this title, the following shall be nationals, but not citizens, of the United States at birth:

...

(2) A person born outside the United States and its outlying possessions of parents both of whom are nationals, but not citizens, of the United States, and have had a residence in the United States, or one of its outlying possessions prior to the birth of such person;

The key word above is the term "United States". This term is defined in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(38) as follows:

[TITLE 8](#) > [CHAPTER 12](#) > [SUBCHAPTER 1](#) > **Sec. 1101.**

[Sec. 1101. - Definitions](#)

(a)(38) The term "United States", except as otherwise specifically herein provided, when used in a geographical sense, means the continental United States, Alaska, Hawaii, Puerto Rico, Guam, and the Virgin Islands of the United States.

First of all, this definition leaves much to be desired, because it:

1. Doesn't tell us whether this is the only definition of "United States" that is applicable.
2. Gives us no clue as to how to determine whether the term "United States" is being used in a "geographical sense" as described above or in some other undefined sense.

1 The definition also doesn't tell us which of the three definitions of "United States" is being referred to as defined by the
 2 Supreme Court in *Hooven and Allison v. Evatt*, 324 U.S. 652, (1945) and as explained earlier in section 4.6. Since we have
 3 to guess which one they mean, then the law is already vague and confusing, and possibly even "void for vagueness" as we
 4 will explain later in section 5.11. However, in the absence of a clear and unambiguous definition, we must assume that
 5 because this is a federal statute, then by default that the definition used implies *only* the property of the federal government
 6 situated within the federal zone as we explain later in section 5.2.1 and as the Supreme Court revealed in *U.S. v. Spelar*,
 7 338 U.S. 217 at 222 (1949).

8 The legal encyclopedia American Jurisprudence helps us define what is meant by "United States" in the context of
 9 citizenship:

10 *3C Am Jur 2d §2689, Who is born in United States and subject to United States jurisdiction*

11 "A person is born subject to the jurisdiction of the United States, for purposes of acquiring citizenship at birth,
 12 if his or her birth occurs in territory over which the United States is sovereign, even though another
 13 country provides all governmental services within the territory, and the territory is subsequently ceded to the
 14 other country."

15 The key word in the above definition is "territory" in relationship to the sovereignty word. The only places which are
 16 "territories" of the United States government are listed in [Title 48 of the United States Code](#). The states of the union are
 17 NOT territories!

18 "**Territory**: A part of a country separated from the rest, and subject to a particular jurisdiction. Geographical
 19 area under the jurisdiction of another country or sovereign power.

20 A portion of the United States not within the limits of any state, which has not yet been admitted as a state of
 21 the Union, but is organized with a separate legislature, and with executive and judicial powers appointed by the
 22 President."

23 [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 1473]

24 And the rulings of the Supreme Court confirm the above:

25 "A State does not owe its origin to the Government of the United States, in the highest or in any of its
 26 branches. It was in existence before it. It derives its authority from the same pure and sacred source as itself:
 27 The voluntary and deliberate choice of the people...A State is altogether exempt from the jurisdiction of the
 28 Courts of the United States, or from any other exterior authority, unless in the special instances when the
 29 general Government has power derived from the Constitution itself." [*Chisholm v. Georgia*, 2 Dall. (U.S.)
 30 419 (Dall.) (1793)]

31

32 "There is no such thing as a power of inherent sovereignty in the government of the United States, ... In this
 33 country sovereignty resides in the people [living in the states of the Union, since the states created the United
 34 States government and they came before it], and Congress can exercise no power which they have not, by their
 35 Constitution entrusted to it: All else is withheld." [*Juilliard v. Greenman*: [110 U.S. 421](#) (1884)]

36 So what is really meant by "United States" for the two types of citizens found in federal statutes such as 8 U.S.C. §1401
 37 and 8 U.S.C. §1408 is the "sovereignty of the United States", which exists in its fullest, most exclusive, and most "general"
 38 form inside its "territories", and in federal enclaves within the states, or more generally in what we call the "federal zone"
 39 in this book. The ONLY place where the exclusive sovereignty of the United States exists in the context of its "territories"
 40 is under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the Constitution on federal land. Very few of us are born on federal land under
 41 such circumstances, and therefore very few of us technically qualify as "citizens of the United States". By the way, the
 42 federal government does have a very limited sovereignty or "authority" inside the states of the union, but it does not exceed
 43 that of the states, nor is it absolute or unrestrained or exclusive like it is inside the "territories" of the United States listed in
 44 [Title 48 of the United States Code](#).

1 Lets now see if we can confirm the above conclusions with the weasel words that the lawyers in Congress wrote into the
 2 statutes. The key phrase in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(38) above is “*the continental United States*”. The definition of this term is
 3 hidden in the regulations as follows:

4 *[Code of Federal Regulations]*
 5 *[Title 8, Volume 1]*
 6 *[Revised as of January 1, 2002]*
 7 *From the U.S. Government Printing Office via GPO Access*
 8 *[CITE: 8CFR215]*
 9 *TITLE 8--ALIENS AND NATIONALITY CHAPTER 1--IMMIGRATION AND NATURALIZATION SERVICE,*
 10 *DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE*
 11 *PART 215--CONTROLS OF ALIENS DEPARTING FROM THE UNITED STATES*

12 [Section 215.1: Definitions](#)

13
 14
 15 *(f) The term **continental United States** means the District of Columbia and the several [States](#), except Alaska*
 16 *and Hawaii.*

17 The term “States”, which is suspiciously capitalized and is then also defined elsewhere in Title 8 as follows:

18 [8 U.S.C. Sec. 1101\(a\)\(36\)](#): State [naturalization]

19 *The term "State" **includes** the District of Columbia, Puerto Rico, Guam, and the Virgin Islands of the United*
 20 *States.*

21 Do you see the sovereign Union states in the above definition? They aren't there. Note that there are several entities listed
 22 in the above definition of “State”, which collectively are called “several States”. But when Congress really wants to clearly
 23 state the 50 Union states that are “foreign states” relative to them, they have no trouble at all, because here is another
 24 definition of “State” found under Title 40 which refers to easements on Union state property by the federal government:

25 [TITLE 40 > CHAPTER 4 > Sec. 319c.](#)

26 [Sec. 319c.](#) - Definitions for easement provisions

27 *As used in sections [319](#) to [319c](#) of this title -*

28 *(a) The term "State" **means** the [States of the Union](#), the District of Columbia, the Commonwealth of Puerto*
 29 *Rico, and the possessions of the United States.*
 30 *[Emphasis added]*

31 Did you notice that they used the term “**means**” instead of “**includes**” and that they said “States of the **Union**” instead of
 32 “several States” or “50 States”? You can tell they are playing word games and trying to hide their limited jurisdiction
 33 whenever they throw in the word “includes” and do not use the word “Union” in their definition of “State”. As a matter of
 34 fact, you will find out later in section 5.6.17 that there is a big scandal surrounding the use of the word “includes”. That
 35 word is abused as a way to illegally expand the jurisdiction of the federal government beyond its clear Constitutional limits.

36 Moving on, if we then substitute the definition of the term “State” from 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(36) into the definition of
 37 “continental United States” in 8 CFR §215.1, we get:

38 *The term **continental United States** means the District of Columbia, Puerto Rico, Guam, and the Virgin Islands*
 39 *of the United States, except Alaska and Hawaii.*

40 We must then conclude that the “continental United States” means essentially the federal areas within the real (not legally
 41 defined) continental United States. We must also conclude based on the above analysis that:

- 42 1. The term “continental United States” is redundant and unnecessary within the definition of “United States” found
 43 in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(38).
- 44 2. The use of the term “continental United States” is introduced mainly to deceive and confuse the reader about his
 45 true citizenship status as a “U.S. national”.

The above analysis also leaves us with one last nagging question: why do Alaska and Hawaii appear in the definition of “United States” in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(38), since we showed that the *other* “States” mentioned as part of this “United States” are federal “States”? If our hypothesis is correct that the “United States” means “the federal zone” within federal statutes and regulations and “the states of the Union” collectively within the Constitution, then the definition from the regulation above can’t include any part of a Union state that is not a federal enclave. In the case of Alaska and Hawaii, they were only recently admitted as Union states (1950’s). Before that, they were referred to as the Territories of Alaska and Hawaii, which belonged to the “United States”. Note that 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(38) adds the phrase “*of* the United States” after the names of these two former territories and groups them *together* with other federal territories, which to us implies that they are referring to Alaska and Hawaii *when they were territories* rather than Union states. At the time they were federal territories, then they were federal “States”. These conclusions are confirmed by a rule of statutory construction known as “*ejusdem generis*”, which basically says that items of the same class or general type must be grouped together. The other items that Alaska and Hawaii are grouped with are federal territories in the list of enumerated items:

“Ejusdem generis. Of the same kind, class, or nature. In the construction of laws, wills, and other instruments, the “ejusdem generis rule” is, that where general words follow an enumeration of persons or things, by words of a particular and specific meaning, such general words are not to be construed in their widest extent, but are to be held as applying only to persons or things of the same general kind or class as those specifically mentioned. U.S. v. LaBrecque, D.C. N.J., 419 F.Supp. 430, 432. The rule, however, does not necessarily require that the general provision be limited in its scope to the identical things specifically named. Nor does it apply when the context manifests a contrary intention.

Under “ejusdem generis” canon of statutory construction, where general words follow the enumeration of particular classes of things, the general words will be construed as applying only to things of the same general class as those enumerated. Campbell v. Board of Dental Examiners, 53 Cal.App.3d 283, 125 Cal.Rptr. 694, 696.”
[Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 517]

Many freedom lovers allow themselves to be confused by the content of the Fourteenth Amendment so that they do not believe the distinctions we are trying to make here about the differences in meaning of the term “United States” between the Constitution and federal statutes. Here is what section 1 of that Amendment says:

Fourteenth Amendment

“Section 1. All persons born or naturalized in the United States and subject to the jurisdiction thereof, are citizens of the United States and of the State wherein they reside.”

The Supreme Court clarifies exactly what the phrase “subject to the jurisdiction” above means. It means the “political jurisdiction” of the United States and NOT the “legislative jurisdiction”(!):

“This section contemplates two sources of citizenship, and two sources only,—birth and naturalization. The persons declared to be citizens are ‘all persons born or naturalized in the United States, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof.’ The evident meaning of these last words is, not merely subject in some respect or degree to the jurisdiction of the United States, but completely subject to their political jurisdiction, and owing them direct and immediate allegiance. And the words relate to the time of birth in the one case, as they do [169 U.S. 649, 725] to the time of naturalization in the other. Persons not thus subject to the jurisdiction of the United States at the time of birth cannot become so afterwards, except by being naturalized, either individually, as by proceedings under the naturalization acts, or collectively, as by the force of a treaty by which foreign territory is acquired.” [U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark, 169 U.S. 649, 18 S.Ct. 456; 42 L.Ed. 890 (1898)]

“Political jurisdiction” is NOT the same as “legislative jurisdiction”. We described in detail the two political jurisdictions within our country earlier in section 4.7. “Political jurisdiction” implies only the following:

1. Membership in a community (see *Minor v. Happersett*, 88 U.S. 162 (1874))
2. Right to vote.
3. Right to serve on jury duty.

“Legislative jurisdiction”, on the other hand, implies being “completely subject” and subservient to federal laws and all “Acts of Congress”, which only people in the District of Columbia and the territories and possessions of the United States can be. You can be “completely subject to the political jurisdiction” of the United States without being subject in any

1 degree to a specific “Act of Congress” or the Internal Revenue Code, for instance. The final nail is put in the coffin on the
 2 subject of what “subject to the jurisdiction” means in the Fourteenth Amendment, when the Supreme Court further said in
 3 the above case:

4 *“It is impossible to construe the words ‘subject to the jurisdiction thereof,’ in the opening sentence, as less*
 5 *comprehensive than the words ‘within its jurisdiction,’ in the concluding sentence of the same section; or to*
 6 *hold that persons ‘within the jurisdiction’ of one of the states of the Union are not ‘subject to the jurisdiction*
 7 *of the United States.’” [U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark, [169 U.S. 649](#), 18 S.Ct. 456; 42 L.Ed. 890 (1898), emphasis*
 8 *added]*

9 So “subject to the jurisdiction” means “subject to the [political] jurisdiction” of the United States, and the Fourteenth
 10 Amendment definitely includes people born in states of the Union. Another very interesting conclusion reveals itself from
 11 reading the following excerpt from the above case:

12 *And Mr. Justice Miller, delivering the opinion of the court [legislating from the bench, in this case], in*
 13 *analyzing the first clause, observed that “the phrase ‘subject to the jurisdiction thereof’ was intended to exclude*
 14 *from its operation children of ministers, consuls, and citizens or subjects of foreign states, born within the*
 15 *United States.*

16 [U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark, [169 U.S. 649](#), 18 S.Ct. 456; 42 L.Ed. 890 (1898)]

17 When we first read that, an intriguing question popped into our head:

18 *Is “Heaven” a “foreign state” with respect to the United States government and are we God’s “ambassadors”*
 19 *and “ministers” of the Sovereign (“God”) in that “foreign state”?*

20 Based on the way our deceitful and wicked public servants have been acting lately, we think so and here are the scriptures
 21 to back it up!

22 *“For our citizenship is in heaven, from which we also eagerly wait for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ”--*
 23 *Philippians 3:20*

24 *“Now, therefore, you are no longer strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints and members*
 25 *of the household of God.” --Ephesians 2:19, Bible, NKJV*

26 *“These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off were assured of them,*
 27 *embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.” --Hebrews 11:13*

28 *“Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul...” --1*
 29 *Peter 2:1*

30 Furthermore, if you read section 5.2.13 found later, you will *also* find that the 50 Union states are considered “foreign
 31 states” and “foreign countries” with respect to the U.S. government as far as Subtitle A income taxes are concerned:

32 *Foreign government: “The government of the United States of America, as distinguished from the government*
 33 *of the several states.” [Black’s Law Dictionary, 5th Edition]*

34 *Foreign laws: “The laws of a foreign country or sister state.” [Black’s Law Dictionary, 6th Edition, p.647]*

35 *Foreign states: “Nations outside of the United States...Term may also refer to another state; i.e. a sister state.*
 36 *The term ‘foreign nations’, ...should be construed to mean all nations and states other than that in which the*
 37 *action is brought; and hence, one state of the Union is foreign to another, in that sense.” [Black’s Law*
 38 *Dictionary, 6th Edition, p. 648]*

39 Another place you can look to find confirmation of our conclusions is the Department of State Foreign Affairs Manual,
 40 section [7 FAM 1116.1-1](#), available on our website at:

41 <http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Evidence/Citizenship/7FAM1100,1110,1111-DeptOfState.pdf>

42 and also available on the Dept. of State website at:

<http://foia.state.gov/famdir/Fam/fam.asp>

which says in pertinent part:

"d. Prior to January 13, 1941, there was no statutory definition of "the United States" for citizenship purposes. Thus there were varying interpretations. Guidance should be sought from the Department (CA/OCS) when such issues arise." [emphasis added]

If our own government hadn't defined the meaning of the term "United States" up until 1941, then do you think there might have been some confusion over this and that this confusion might be viewed by a reasonable person as deliberate? Can you also see how the ruling in Wong Kim Ark might have been somewhat ambiguous to the average American without a statutory (legal) reference for the terms it was using? Once again, our government likes to confuse people about its jurisdiction in order to grab more of it. Here is how Thomas Jefferson explained it:

*"Contrary to all correct example, [the Federal judiciary] are in the habit of going out of the question before them, to throw an anchor ahead and grapple further hold for future advances of power. **They are then in fact the corps of sappers and miners, steadily working to undermine the independent rights of the States and to consolidate all power in the hands of that government in which they have so important a freehold estate.**" -- Thomas Jefferson: Autobiography, 1821. ME 1:121*

*"We all know that permanent judges acquire an esprit de corps; that, being known, **they are liable to be tempted by bribery; that they are misled by favor, by relationship, by a spirit of party, by a devotion to the executive or legislative;** that it is better to leave a cause to the decision of cross and pile than to that of a judge biased to one side; and that the opinion of twelve honest jurymen gives still a better hope of right than cross and pile does." -- Thomas Jefferson to Abbe Arnoux, 1789. ME 7:423, Papers 15:283*

*"**It is not enough that honest men are appointed judges. All know the influence of interest on the mind of man, and how unconsciously his judgment is warped by that influence. To this bias add that of the esprit de corps, of their peculiar maxim and creed that 'it is the office of a good judge to enlarge his jurisdiction,' and the absence of responsibility, and how can we expect impartial decision between the General government, of which they are themselves so eminent a part, and an individual state from which they have nothing to hope or fear?**" -- Thomas Jefferson: Autobiography, 1821. ME 1:121*

*"At the establishment of our Constitutions, the judiciary bodies were supposed to be the most helpless and harmless members of the government. **Experience, however, soon showed in what way they were to become the most dangerous; that the insufficiency of the means provided for their removal gave them a freehold and irresponsibility in office;** that their decisions, seeming to concern individual suitors only, pass silent and unheeded by the public at large; that these decisions nevertheless become law by precedent, sapping by little and little the foundations of the Constitution and working its change by construction before any one has perceived that that invisible and helpless worm has been busily employed in consuming its substance. In truth, man is not made to be trusted for life if secured against all liability to account." -- Thomas Jefferson to A. Coray, 1823. ME 15:486*

*"I do not charge the judges with wilful and ill-intentioned error; but honest error must be arrested where its toleration leads to public ruin. **As for the safety of society, we commit honest maniacs to Bedlam; so judges should be withdrawn from their bench whose erroneous biases are leading us to dissolution. It may, indeed, injure them in fame or in fortune; but it saves the republic, which is the first and supreme law.**" -- Thomas Jefferson: Autobiography, 1821. ME 1:122*

*"**The original error [was in] establishing a judiciary independent of the nation, and which, from the citadel of the law, can turn its guns on those they were meant to defend, and control and fashion their proceedings to its own will.**" -- Thomas Jefferson to John Wayles Eppes, 1807. FE 9:68*

*"**It is a misnomer to call a government republican in which a branch of the supreme power [the Federal Judiciary] is independent of the nation.**" -- Thomas Jefferson to James Pleasants, 1821. FE 10:198*

*"It is left... to the juries, if they think the permanent judges are under any bias whatever in any cause, to take on themselves to judge the law as well as the fact. **They never exercise this power but when they suspect partiality in the judges; and by the exercise of this power they have been the firmest bulwarks of English liberty.**" -- Thomas Jefferson to Abbe Arnoux, 1789. ME 7:423, Papers 15:283*

With respect to that last remark, keep in mind that NONE of the rulings of Supreme Court cases like Wong Kim Ark have juries, so what do you think the judges are going to try to do?.. expand their power, duhhhh! Another portion of that same document found in [7 FAM 1116.2-1](#) says:

1 "a. Simply stated, "subject to the jurisdiction" of the United States means subject to the laws of the United
2 States." [emphasis added]

3 So what does "subject to the laws of the United States" mean? It means subject to the *exclusive legislative jurisdiction* of
4 the federal government under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the Constitution, which only occurs within the federal zone.
5 It means subject to the U.S. Constitution but *not* most federal statutes or the Internal Revenue Code. We covered this
6 earlier in section 4.8 and again later throughout chapter 5. Here is how we explain the confusion created by 7 FAM 1116.2-
7 1 above in the note we attached to it inside the Acrobat file of it on our website:

8 *This is a distortion. Wong Kim Ark also says: "To be 'completely subject' to the political jurisdiction of the*
9 *United States is to be in no respect or degree subject to the political jurisdiction of any other government."*

10 *If you are subject to a Union state government, then you CANNOT meet the criteria above. That is why a*
11 *"national" is defined in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21) as "a person owing permanent allegiance to a [Union] state"*
12 *and why most natural persons are "U.S. nationals" rather than "U.S. citizens"*

13 Let's now further explore what [7 FAM 1116.2-1](#) means when it says "subject to the laws of the United States". In doing so,
14 we will draw on a very interesting article on our website entitled [Authorities on Jurisdiction of Federal Courts](#) found on our
15 website at:

16 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/LegalGovRef/ChallJurisdiction/AuthoritiesArticle/AuthOnJurisdiction.htm>

17 We start with a cite from Title 18 that helps explain the jurisdiction of "the laws of the United States":

18 [TITLE 18 > PART III > CHAPTER 301 > Sec. 4001.](#)

19 [Sec. 4001. - Limitation on detention; control of prisons](#)

20 **(a)** No citizen shall be imprisoned or otherwise detained by the United States except pursuant to an Act of
21 Congress.

22 Building on this theme, we now add a corroborating citation from the [Federal Rules of Criminal Procedure, Rule 26, Notes](#)
23 [of Advisory Committee on Rules, paragraph 2](#), in the middle,

24 *"On the other hand since all Federal crimes are statutory [see [United States v. Hudson, 11 U.S. 32, 3 L.ed. 259](#)*
25 *(1812)] and all criminal prosecutions in the Federal courts are based on acts of Congress, . . ." [emphasis*
26 *added]*

27 We emphasize the phrase "**Acts of Congress**" above. In order to define the jurisdiction of the Federal courts to conduct
28 criminal prosecutions and how they might apply "the laws of the United States" in any given situation, one would have to
29 find out what the specific definition of "Act of Congress," is. We find such a definition in [Rule 54\(c\) of the Federal Rules](#)
30 [of Criminal Procedure](#) prior to Dec. 2002, wherein is defined "Act of Congress." Rule 54(c) states:

31 *"Act of Congress" includes any act of Congress locally applicable to and in force in the District of Columbia, in*
32 *Puerto Rico, in a territory or in an insular possession."*

33 If you want to examine this rule for yourself, here is the link:

34 [http://www2.law.cornell.edu/cgi-bin/foioci.exe/frcrm/query=\[jump!3A!27district+court!27\]/doc/{@772}?](http://www2.law.cornell.edu/cgi-bin/foioci.exe/frcrm/query=[jump!3A!27district+court!27]/doc/{@772}?)

35 The \$64 question is:

36 *"ON WHICH OF THE FOUR LOCATIONS NAMED IN RULE 54(c) IS THE UNITED STATES DISTRICT*
37 *COURT ASSERTING JURISDICTION WHEN THE U.S. ATTORNEY HAULS YOUR ASS INTO COURT ON*
38 *AN INCOME TAX CRIME?"*

39 **Hint:** everyone knows what and where the District of Columbia is, and everyone knows where Puerto Rico is, and
40 territories and insular possessions are defined in [Title 48 United States Code](#), happy hunting!

1 “U.S. nationals” are also further defined in [8 U.S.C. §1101](#) as follows:

2 (a)(21) The term “national” means a person owing permanent allegiance to a state.

3 (a)(22) The term “national of the United States” means:

4 (A) a citizen of the United States, or

5 (B) a person who, though not a citizen of the United States, owes permanent allegiance to the United
6 States.

7 Note the suspect word “permanent” in the above definition. Below is the definition of “permanent” from the same title
8 found in [8 U.S.C. §1101\(a\)\(31\)](#):

9 (a)(31) The term “permanent” means a relationship of continuing or lasting nature, as distinguished from
10 temporary, but a relationship may be permanent even though it is one that may be dissolved eventually at the
11 instance either of the United States or of the individual, in accordance with law.

12 For those of you who are Christians, you realize that this life is very temporary and that nothing on this earth can be
13 permanent, and especially your life. The bible says that “the wages of sin is death” (Rom. 6:23), and so there is nothing
14 more certain than death, which means there can be nothing physical that is permanent on earth including our very short
15 lives. The only thing permanent is our spirit and not our physical body, which will certainly deteriorate and die. Therefore,
16 there can be no such thing as “permanent allegiance” on our part to anything but God for Christians.

17 When we bring up the above kinds of issues, some of our readers have said that they don’t even like being called “U.S.
18 nationals” as they are defined above, and we agree with them. However, it is a practical reality that you cannot get a
19 passport within our society without being either a “U.S. citizen” or a “U.S. national”, because state governments simply
20 won’t issue passports to those who are state U.S. nationals, which is what most of us are. That was not always true, but it is
21 true now. The compromise we make in this sort of dilemma is to clarify on our passport application that the term “U.S.” as
22 used on our passport application means the “United States of America” and not the federal United States or the federal
23 corporation called the United States government.

24 Now we ask our esteemed readers:

25 “After all the crazy circuitous logic and wild goose chasing that results from listening to the propaganda of the
26 government from its various branches on the definitions of ‘U.S. citizenship’ v. ‘U.S. nationality’, what should a
27 reasonable man conclude about the meanings of these terms? We only have two choices:

28 1. ‘United States’ as used in [8 U.S.C. §1101\(a\)\(38\)](#) means the federal zone and ‘U.S. citizens’ are
29 born in the federal zone under all federal statutes and “acts of Congress”. This implies that most
30 Americans can only be ‘U.S. nationals’

31 2. ‘United States’ as used in [8 U.S.C. §1101\(a\)\(38\)](#) means the entire country and political jurisdictions
32 that are foreign to that of the federal government which are found in the states. This implies that
33 most Americans can only be ‘U.S. citizens’.”

34 We believe the answer is that our system of jurisprudence is based on “innocence until proven guilty”. In this case, the fact
35 in question is: “Are you a U.S. citizen”, and being “not guilty” and having our rights and sovereignty respected by our
36 deceitful government under these circumstances implies being a “U.S. national”. Therefore, at best, we should conclude
37 that the above analysis is correct and clearly explains the foundations of what it means to be a “U.S. national” and why
38 most Americans fit that description. At the very worst, our analysis clearly establishes that federal statutory and case law,
39 at least insofar as “U.S. citizenship” is very vague and very ambiguous and needs further definition. The supreme Court
40 has said that when laws are vague, then they are “void for vagueness”, null, and unenforceable. See the following cases for
41 confirmation of this fact:

42 “A statute which either forbids or requires the doing of an act in terms so vague that men and women of
43 common intelligence must necessarily guess at its meaning and differ as to its application, violates the first
44 essential of due process of law.” [[Connally vs. General Construction Co., 269 U.S. 385 \(1926\)](#)]

45

"It is a basic principle of due process that an enactment [435 U.S. 982, 986] is void for vagueness if its prohibitions are not clearly defined. Vague laws offend several important values. First, because we assume that man is free to steer between lawful and unlawful conduct, we insist that laws give the person of ordinary intelligence a reasonable opportunity to know what is prohibited, so that he may act accordingly. Vague laws may trap the innocent by not providing fair warning. Second, if arbitrary and discriminatory enforcement is to be prevented, laws must provide explicit standards for those who apply them. A vague law impermissibly delegates basic policy matters to policemen, judges, and juries for resolution on an ad hoc and subjective basis, with the attendant dangers of arbitrary and discriminatory application." [Grayned v. City of Rockford, 408 U.S. 104, 108 (1972), emphasis added]

We refer you to the following additional rulings of the U.S. Supreme Court on "void for vagueness" as additional authorities:

- 12 • *Papachristou v. City of Jacksonville*, 405 U.S. 156 (1972)
- 13 • *Cline v. Frink Dairy Co.*, 274 U.S. 445, 47 S. Ct. 681 (1927)
- 14 • *Sewell v. Georgia*, 435 U.S. 982 (1978)

Here is the way one of our readers describes the irrational propaganda and laws the government writes:

"If it doesn't make sense, it's probably because politics is involved!"

Our conclusions then to the matters at our disposal are the following based on the above reasonable analysis:

- 18 • The "United States" defined in Section 1 of the Fourteenth Amendment means the states of the Union while the "United States" appearing in federal statutes in most cases, means the federal zone. For instance, the definition of "United States" relating to citizenship and found in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(38) means the federal zone, as we prove in questions 77 through 82 of our IRS Deposition questions located at: <http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Discovery/Deposition/Section 14.htm>.
- 23 • Most Americans are "U.S. nationals" rather than "U.S. citizens" under all "acts of Congress" and federal statutes. The Internal Revenue code is an "act of Congress" and a federal statute.
- 25 • Our government has deliberately tried to confuse and obfuscate the laws on citizenship to fool the average American into incorrectly declaring that they are "U.S. citizens" in order to be subject to their laws and come under their jurisdiction. See section 4.11.10 for complete details on how they have done it.
- 28 • The courts have not lived up to their role in challenging unconstitutional exercises of power by the other branches of government or in protecting our Constitutional rights. They are on the take like everyone else who works in the federal government and have conspired with the other branches of government in illegally expanding federal jurisdiction.
- 32 • Once the feds used this ruse with words to get Americans under their corrupted jurisdiction as "U.S. citizens" and presumed "taxpayers", our federal "servants" have then made themselves into the "masters" by subjecting sovereign Citizens to their corrupted laws within the federal zone that can disregard the Constitution because the Constitution doesn't apply in these areas. By so doing, they can illegally enforce their income tax laws and abuse their powers to plunder the assets, property, labor, and lives of most Americans in the covetous pursuit of money that the law and the Constitution did not otherwise entitle them to. This act to subvert the operation of the Constitution amounts to an act of war and treason on the sovereignty of Americans and the sovereign states that they live in, punishable under Article III, Clause 3 of the U.S. Constitution with death by execution.

Old (and bad) habits die hard. Even if you don't want to believe any of the foregoing analysis or conclusions and you consequently still stubbornly cling to the false notion that you are a "citizen of the United States" instead of a "U.S. national" or "national of the United States", the fact remains that all "citizens of the United States" are also defined in [8 U.S.C. §1401](#) to include "U.S. national" status. That means that being a privileged "citizen of the United States" is a dual citizenship status while being a "U.S. national" is only a single status (U.S. nationality derived from state birth and citizenship):

[TITLE 8](#) > [CHAPTER 12](#) > [SUBCHAPTER III](#) > [Part I](#) > [Sec. 1401](#).

[Sec. 1401](#). - *Nationals and citizens of United States at birth*

1 The following shall be nationals and citizens of the United States at birth:

2 (a) a person born in the United States, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof;

3 [...]

4 This type of dual status is described in Black's Law Dictionary as follows:

5 Dual citizenship. Citizenship in two different **countries**. Status of citizens of United States who reside
6 within a state; i.e., person who are born or naturalized in the U.S. are citizens of the U.S. and the state wherein
7 they reside. [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 498]

8 You will learn later in section 4.11.10 that the term "citizenship" as used by the courts means "nationality", so dual
9 citizenship means "dual nationality and allegiance".¹²⁹ You see, even the law dictionary says your state is a "country",
10 which means you are a national of that country according to 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21).

11 What can we do to correct our citizenship status and protect our liberties? Well, since you are already a "U.S. national"
12 as a dual national called a "citizen of the United States", you can abandon half of your dual citizenship and we will show
13 you how and why you should do this in section 4.11.9. The door is still therefore wide open for you to correct your status
14 and liberate yourself from the government's chains of slavery, and the law authorizes you to do this. The government also
15 can't stop you from doing this, because here is how one court explained legislation passed by Congress authorizing
16 expatriation only days before the Fourteenth Amendment was ratified which is still in force today:

17 "Almost a century ago, Congress declared that "the right of expatriation [including expatriation from the
18 District of Columbia or "U.S. Inc", the corporation] is a natural and inherent right of all people, indispensable
19 to the enjoyment of the rights of life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness," and decreed that "any declaration,
20 instruction, opinion, order, or decision of any officers of this government which denies, restricts, impairs, or
21 questions the right of expatriation, is hereby declared inconsistent with the fundamental principles of this
22 government." 15 Stat. 223-224 (1868), R.S. § 1999, 8 U.S.C. § 800 (1940).¹³⁰ Although designed to apply
23 especially to the rights of immigrants to shed their foreign nationalities, that Act of Congress "is also broad
24 enough to cover, and does cover, the corresponding natural and inherent right of American citizens to
25 expatriate themselves." *Savorgnan v. United States*, 1950, 338 U.S. 491, 498 note 11, 70 S. Ct. 292, 296, 94 L.
26 Ed. 287.¹³¹ The Supreme Court has held that the Citizenship Act of 1907 and the Nationality Act of 1940 "are to
27 be read in the light of the declaration of policy favoring freedom of expatriation which stands unrepealed." *Id.*,
28 338 U.S. at pages 498-499, 70 S. Ct. at page 296. That same light, I think, illuminates 22 U.S.C.A. § 211a and 8
29 U.S.C.A. § 1185." *Walter Briehl v. John Foster Dulles*, 248 F.2d 561, 583 (1957)

30 You see, our politicians know that citizenship in any political jurisdiction can be regarded as an assault on our liberties, and
31 that sometimes we have to renounce it in order to protect those liberties, so they provided a lawful way to do exactly that.
32 Another reason they have to allow expatriation of any or all aspects of one's citizenship is that if they didn't, they could no
33 longer call citizenship "voluntary", now could they? And if it isn't voluntary, then the whole country becomes one big
34 DESPOTIC TOTALITARIAN SLAVE CAMP and the Declaration of Independence goes into the toilet! Remember what
35 that Declaration said?

36 That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men, deriving their just
37 powers from the consent of the governed, --That whenever any Form of Government
38 becomes destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new
39 Government, laying its foundation on such principles and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall
40 seem most likely to effect their Safety and Happiness." [emphasis added]

41 How can you be "independent" and "sovereign" if you can't even declare or determine your own citizenship status?
42 Citizenship must therefore be voluntary and consensual or the enforcement of all laws based on it becomes unjust, and we
43 made that point very clear earlier in section 4.11.5 when we talked about federal citizenship. If you are a "U.S. citizen" and

¹²⁹ See also *Perkins v. Elg*, 307 U.S. 325 (1939), which defines "expatriation" as the process of abandoning "nationality and allegiance", not citizenship.

¹³⁰ See Carrington, *Political Questions: The Judicial Check on the Executive*, 42 Va.L.Rev. 175 (1956).

¹³¹ 9 Pet. 692, 34 U.S. 692, 699, 9 L. Ed. 276.

1 you have a dual citizenship as we just defined earlier using [8 U.S.C. §1401](#) above, then we will clearly establish later in
 2 4.11.9 that the government cannot unilaterally sever any aspect of your dual citizenship and that it is a permanent contract
 3 which only you [not the government] can revoke any aspect of either by dying or by voluntary choice in a process initiated
 4 by you. Every aspect of your citizenship status must be voluntary or it is unjust and if you want to eliminate or revoke the
 5 federal portion of your citizenship status only and retain the “U.S. national” or “state citizen” status that you already have
 6 as a “U.S. citizen”, then the government cannot lawfully stop you, and if they try to, your citizenship is no longer voluntary
 7 but compelled. Once it is compelled, your compliance with federal law as a SOVERIEGN is no longer voluntary or
 8 consensual, but is based on duress, fraud, extortion, and amounts to slavery in violation of the Thirteenth Amendment to
 9 the U.S Constitution! What are you waiting for and why haven’t you corrected your citizenship status yet?

10 4.11.6.2 Voting as a “U.S. National”

11 The point of reference in the example given below is the California Republic (notice we didn’t say “State of California”,
 12 because that term means federal areas inside California!). The cite below doesn’t define “U.S. citizen” but it’s safe to
 13 conclude that it means a “national of the United States”, and you should specify this on your voter registration document to
 14 remove any possibility for false presumption.

15 CALIFORNIA CONSTITUTION
 16 ARTICLE 2 VOTING, INITIATIVE AND REFERENDUM, AND RECALL

17 SEC. 2. A United States citizen 18 years of age and resident in this State may vote.

18 The situation may be different for other states. If you live in a state other than California, you will need to check the laws of
 19 your specific home state in order to determine whether the prohibition against voting applies to “U.S. nationals” in your
 20 state. If authorities give you a bad time about trying to register to vote without being a federal “U.S. citizen”, then show
 21 them the Declaration of Independence, which says:

22 “We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their
 23 Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of
 24 Happiness.—

25 Emphasize that it doesn’t say “endowed by their government” or “endowed by their federal citizenship” or “endowed by
 26 their registrar of voters”, but instead “endowed by their CREATOR”. The rights to life, liberty, and the pursuit of
 27 happiness certainly include suffrage and the right to own property. Suffrage is necessary in turn to protect personal
 28 property from encroachment by the government and socialistic fellow citizens. These are not “privileges” that result from
 29 federal citizenship. They are rights that result from birth! Thomas Jefferson said so:

30 “A free people [claim] their rights as derived from the laws of nature, and not as the gift of their chief
 31 magistrate.” --Thomas Jefferson: Rights of British America, 1774. ME 1:209, Papers 1:134

32 “Can the liberties of a nation be thought secure when we have removed their only firm basis, a conviction in the
 33 minds of the people that these liberties are of the gift of God? That they are not to be violated but with His
 34 wrath?” --Thomas Jefferson: Notes on Virginia Q.XVIII, 1782. ME 2:227

35 Below is a summary of our research relating to the right to vote as a “U.S. national”:

- 36 1. Some states require that an elector be a "citizen of the United States" or “United States citizen”
- 37 1.1. See voter registration form, available at Post Office
- 38 1.2. This qualification can interfere with the right to vote by a U.S. national .
- 39 1.2.1. Voter registration form exhibits a formal affidavit, signed under penalties of perjury, that voter is a
- 40 “U.S. citizen”
- 41 1.2.1.1. Such an affidavit is admissible evidence in any state or federal court
- 42 1.2.1.2. Federal courts use this affidavit to establish court jurisdiction or “U.S. citizen” status.
- 43 1.2.2. Perjury is punishable by 2 or 3 years in state prison (see warnings on registration form)
- 44 1.2.3. Warnings are in CONSPICUOUS text, which prevents signer from saying he didn't see it

- 1.3. To avoid establishing a false presumption that you are a “citizens of the United States” under federal statutes, you must clarify the status of your citizenship on their voter registration in order to perfect and maintain their sovereign status.
- 1.3.1. Most registration forms were signed in ignorance of the 2 classes of citizenship in America
- 1.3.2. We must claim to be a “national of the United States of America” but not a “citizen of the United States” (refer to 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21) through 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(22) and 8 U.S.C. §1408).
- 1.3.3. With this knowledge, U.S. Nationals and State Citizens elect “to be treated” as “U.S. citizens” under the internal revenue code by ignorantly and incorrectly claiming their citizenship. To avoid this trap, they should clarify their citizenship on their voter registration as outlined in section 9.5.6 of our Tax Freedom Solutions Manual entitled “Voter Registration Affidavit Attachment”.
2. Registering to vote produces material evidence that one is a “U.S. citizen” under federal statutes who is, by definition, in receipt of federal privileges, whereas State Citizens are not.
- 2.1. State Citizens are protected by constitutional limits against direct taxation
- 2.1.1. Direct taxes must be apportioned per Article 1, Section 9, Clause 4 and Article 1, Section 2, Clause 3
- 2.2. Federal citizens are not protected by these same constitutional limits
3. If you are a U.S. National and you live in a state that won’t allow you to register to vote without clarifying your status as a “U.S. National” on the application form, then you should take the following measures in order to avoid jeopardizing their Natural Born state Citizenship status:
- 3.1. Cancel your voter registration to perfect and maintain your sovereign status under the Law.
- 3.2. Litigate to regain your right to vote as a “U.S. national” rather than a “U.S. citizen”.
4. The Fifteenth and the Nineteenth Amendments to the U.S. Constitution only protect the right to vote for those who are “citizens of the United States”. They do NOT protect the right to vote for those persons who are “U.S. nationals”.

4.11.6.3 Serving on Jury Duty as a “U.S. National”

Serving on jury service is not necessarily or exclusively a privilege arising from being a “citizen”. Your state may apply additional criteria to the qualifications.

“To remove the cause of them; to obviate objections to the validity of legislation similar to that contained in the first section of the Civil Rights Act; to prevent the possibility of hostile and discriminating legislation in future by a State against any citizen of the United States, and the enforcement of any such legislation already had; and to [100 U.S. 339, 365] secure to all persons within the jurisdiction of the States the equal protection of the laws,-the first section of the Fourteenth Amendment was adopted. Its first clause declared who are citizens of the United States and of the States. It thus removed from discussion the question, which had previously been debated, and though decided, not settled, by the judgment in the Dred Scott Case, whether descendants of persons brought to this country and sold as slaves were citizens, within the meaning of the Constitution. It also recognized, if it did not create, a national citizenship, as contradistinguished from that of the States. But the privilege or the duty, whichever it may be called, of acting as a juror in the courts of the country, is not an incident of citizenship. Women are citizens; so are the aged above sixty, and children in their minority; yet they are not allowed in Virginia to act as jurors. Though some of these are in all respects qualified for such service, no one will pretend that their exclusion by law from the jury list impairs their rights as citizens.” [Ex Parte State of Virginia, 100 U.S. 339 (1879)]

Below is a summary of our research relating to the right to serve on a jury as a “U.S. national”:

1. Some states and the federal government require that an person who wishes to serve on jury duty must be a “citizen of the United States”. This is especially true in federal courts.
- 1.1. The jury duty disqualification form says that you are disqualified if you are not a “citizen of the United States”. Since state statutes don’t define the meaning of the term “citizen of the United States” or “U.S. citizen”, you can just say that you are and then simply define what you mean on the form itself.
- 1.2. The only way to overcome the built-in presumption that we are “citizens of the United States” on the jury summons is to file an affidavit in response to the summons claiming to be a “national of the United States of America” but not a “citizen of the United States” (refer to 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21) through 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(22) and 8 U.S.C. §1408).
2. Serving on jury duty produces material evidence useful to the state or federal government that one is a federal citizen who is in receipt of government privileges, whereas State Citizens are not in receipt of such privileges.

- 1 3. If you are a Natural Born state Citizens and you live in a state that whose laws won't allow you to serve on jury duty
 2 without committing fraud on the jury summons by claiming that you are a "U.S. citizen" should take the following
 3 measures in order to avoid jeopardizing their Natural Born state Citizenship status:
 4 3.1. Cancel your jury summons to perfect and maintain your sovereign status under the Law.
 5 3.2. Litigate to regain your right to serve on a jury without being a "U.S. citizen" and instead being a "U.S.
 6 national".

7 **4.11.6.4 Summary of Constraints applying to U.S. national status**

8 **1. Right to vote:**

- 9 1.1. U.S. Nationals who claim to be "nationals" but not "citizens" of the "United States" can register to vote
 10 under laws in most states but must be careful how they describe their status on the voter registration application.
 11 1.2. Some state voter registration forms have a formal affidavit by which signer swears, under penalties of perjury,
 12 that s/he is a "citizen of the United States" or a "U.S. citizen".
 13 1.3. Such completed affidavits become admissible evidence and conclusive proof that signer is a "citizen of the
 14 United States" under federal statutes, which is not the same thing as a "U.S. national".

15 **2. Right to serve on jury duty:**

- 16 2.1. U.S. Nationals who claim to be "nationals" but not "citizens" of the "United States" can serve on jury duty
 17 under most state laws. If your state gives you trouble by not allowing you to serve on jury duty as a U.S.
 18 nationals, you are admonished to litigate to regain their voting rights and change state law.
 19 2.2. Some state jury summons forms have a section that allows persons to disqualify themselves from serving on
 20 jury duty if they do not claim to be "citizens of the United States". We should return the summons form with an
 21 affidavit claiming that we want to serve on jury duty and are "U.S. nationals" rather than "citizens" of the United
 22 States. If they then disqualify us from serving on jury duty, we should litigate to regain our right to serve on
 23 juries.
 24 3. The exercise of federal citizenship, including voting and serving on jury duty, is a statutory privilege which can be
 25 created, taxed, regulated and even revoked by Congress! Please reread section 4.3.9 about "Government instituted
 26 slavery using privileges" for clarification on what this means. In effect, the government, through operation of law, has
 27 transformed a right into a taxable privilege, .
 28 4. The exercise of U.S. National Citizenship is an unalienable Right which Congress cannot tax, regulate or revoke under
 29 any circumstances.
 30 5. Such a Right is guaranteed by the U.S. Constitution, which Congress cannot amend without the consent of three-
 31 fourths of the Union States.

32 **4.11.6.5 Rebutted arguments against those who believe people born in the states of the Union are not "U.S. 33 nationals"**

34 A few people have disagreed with our position on the "U.S. national" citizenship status of persons born in states of the
 35 Union. These people have sent us what appear to be contradictory information from websites maintained by the federal
 36 government. We thank them for taking the time to do so and we will devote this section to rebutting all of their incorrect
 37 views. Below are some of the arguments against our position on "U.S. national" citizenship that we have received and
 38 enumerated to facilitate rebuttal. We have boldfaced the relevant portions to make the information easier to spot.

- 39 1. U.S. Supreme Court, *Miller v. Albright*, 523 U.S. 420 (1998), footnote #2:

40 *"2. Nationality and citizenship are not entirely synonymous; one can be a national of the United States and yet*
 41 *not a citizen. 8 U.S.C. § 1101(a)(22). The distinction has little practical impact today, however, for the only*
 42 *remaining noncitizen nationals are residents of American Samoa and Swains Island. See T. Aleinikoff, D.*
 43 *Martin, & H. Motomura, Immigration: Process and Policy 974-975, n. 2 (3d ed. 1995). The provision that a*
 44 *child born abroad out of wedlock to a United States citizen mother gains her nationality has been interpreted to*
 45 *mean that the child gains her citizenship as well; thus, if the mother is not just a United States national, but also*
 46 *a United States citizen, the child is a United States citizen. See 7 Gordon § 93.04[2][b], p. 93-42; id., §*
 47 *93.04[2][d][viii], p. 93-49."*

48 [*Miller v. Albright*, 523 U.S. 420 (1998)]

- 49 2. Volume 7 of the Foreign Affairs Manual (FAM) section 1111.3 published by the Dept. of States at
 50 <http://foia.state.gov/famdir/Fam/fam.asp> says the following about nationals but not citizens of the United States:

c. Historically, Congress, through statutes, granted U.S. nationality, but not citizenship, to persons born or inhabiting territory acquired by the United States through conquest or treaty. At one time or other natives and certain other residents of Puerto Rico, the U.S. Virgin Islands, the Philippines, Guam, and the Panama Canal Zone were U.S. non-citizen nationals.

d. Under current law (the Immigration and Nationality Act of 1952, as amended through October 1994), only persons born in American Samoa and the Swains Islands are U.S. nationals (Secs. 101(a)(29) and 308(1) INA).

3. The Social Security Program Operations Manual System (POMS) at <http://policy.ssa.gov/poms.nsf/poms> says the following:

RS 02001.003 "U.S. Nationals"

Most of the agreements refer to "U.S. nationals."

The term includes both U.S. citizens and persons who, though not citizens, owe permanent allegiance to the United States. As noted in RS 02640.005 D., the only persons who are nationals but not citizens are American Samoans and natives of Swain's Island.

4. The USDA Food Stamp Service, website says at <http://www.fns.usda.gov/fsp/rules/Memo/Support/02/polimgmt.htm>:

Non-citizens who qualify outright

There are some immigrants who are immediately eligible for food stamps without having to meet other immigrant requirements, as long as they meet the normal food stamp requirements:

- **Non-citizen nationals (people born in American Samoa or Swain's Island).**
- American Indians born in Canada.
- Members (born outside the U.S.) of Indian tribes under Section 450b(e) of the Indian Self-Determination and Education Assistance Act.
- Members of Hmong or Highland Laotian tribes that helped the U.S. military during the Vietnam era, and who are legally living in the U.S., and their spouses or surviving spouses and dependent children.

The defects that our detractors fail to realize about the above information are the following points:

1. The term "United States" as used in 8 U.S.C. §1408 means the federal zone based on the definitions provided in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(36), 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(38), and 8 CFR §215.1(f). See our IRS Deposition Questions, section 14, questions 77 through 82 at the following address for more details: <http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Discovery/Deposition/Section 14.htm>
2. The federal government is not authorized under our Constitution or under international law to prescribe the citizenship status of persons who neither reside within nor were born within its territorial jurisdiction. The only thing that federal statutes can address are the status of persons who either reside in, were born in, or resided in the past within the territorial jurisdiction of the United States. People born within states of the Union do not satisfy this requirement and their citizenship status resulting from that birth is determined under state and not federal law. The quote below confirms this, keeping in mind that Title 8 of the U.S. Code qualifies as "legislation":

"While states are not sovereign in true sense of term but only quasi sovereign, yet in respect of all powers reserved to them [under the Constitution] they are supreme and independent of federal government as that government within its sphere is independent of the states."

"It is no longer open to question that the general government, unlike the states, Hammer v. Dagenhart, [247 U.S. 251, 275](#), 38 S.Ct. 529, 3 A.L.R. 649, Ann.Cas.1918E 724, possesses no inherent power in respect of the internal affairs of the states; and emphatically not with regard to legislation." [Carter v. Carter Coal Co., [298 U.S. 238](#), 56 S.Ct. 855 (1936)]

3. The quotes of our detractors above recognize only *one* of the *four* different ways of becoming a "national but not citizen of the United States" described in 8 U.S.C. §1408. They also recognize only *one* of the *three* different definitions of "United States" that a person can be a "national" of, as revealed in Hooven & Allison Co. v. Evatt, [324 U.S. 653](#) (1945).

- 1 4. Information derived from informal publications or advice of employees of federal agencies are *not* admissible in a
 2 court of law as evidence upon which to base a good faith belief. The *only* basis for good-faith belief is a reading of the
 3 actual statute or regulation that implements it. The reason for this is that employees of the government are frequently
 4 wrong, and frequently not only say wrong things, but in many cases the people who said them had no lawful delegated
 5 authority to say such things. See <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Articles/reliance.htm> for an excellent treatise
 6 from an attorney on why this is.
- 7 5. People writing the contradictory information falsely “presume” that the term “citizen” in a general sense that most
 8 Americans use is the same as the term “citizen” as used in the definition of “citizens and nationals of the United States”
 9 found in 8 U.S.C. §1401. In fact, we conclusively prove later in section 5.2.14 that this is emphatically not the case. A
 10 “citizen” as used in the Internal Revenue Code and most federal statutes means a person born in a territory or
 11 possession of the United States, and *not* in a state of the Union. Americans born in states of the Union are a different
 12 type of “citizen”, and we show in section 5.2.14 that these types of people are “U.S. nationals” and not “citizens” or
 13 “U.S. citizens” in the context of any federal statute. We therefore challenge those who make this unwarranted
 14 presumption to provide law and evidence proving us wrong on this point. We request that you read section 4.11.10
 15 **before** you prepare your rebuttal, because it clarifies several important definitions that you might otherwise be inclined
 16 to overlook that may result in misunderstanding.
- 17 6. Whatever citizenship we enjoy we are entitled to abandon. This is our right, as declared both by the Congress and the
 18 Supreme Court. See Revised Statutes, section 1999, page. 350, 1868 and section 4.11.9. “citizens **and** nationals of the
 19 United States” as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1401 have two statuses: “citizen” and “national”. We are entitled to abandon
 20 either of these two. If we abandon nationality, then we automatically lose the “citizen” part, because nationality is
 21 where we obtain our allegiance. But if we abandon the “citizen” part, then we still retain our nationality under 8
 22 U.S.C. §1101(a)(22)(B). This is the approach we advocated earlier in section 4.11.6.1. Because all citizenship must be
 23 consensual, then the government must respect our ability to abandon those types of citizenship we find objectionable.
 24 Consequently, if either you or the government believe that you are a “citizen and national of the United States” under 8
 25 U.S.C. §1401, then you are entitled by law to abandon only the “citizen” portion and retain the “national” portion, and
 26 8 U.S.C. §1452 tells you how to have that choice recognized by the Department of State.

27 Item 2 above is important, because it establishes that the federal government has no authority to write law that prescribes
 28 the citizenship status of persons born *outside* of federal territorial jurisdiction and *within* the states of the Union. The U.S.
 29 Constitution in Article 1, Section 8, Clause 4 empowers Congress to write “an uniform Rule of Naturalization”, but
 30 “naturalization” is only one of *two* ways of acquiring citizenship. Birth is the other way, and the states have exclusive
 31 jurisdiction and legislative authority over the citizenship status of those people who acquire their federal citizenship by
 32 virtue of birth within states of the Union. Here is what the Supreme Court said on this subject:

33 *“The power of naturalization, vested in congress by the constitution, is a power to confer citizenship, not a*
 34 *power to take it away. 'A naturalized citizen,' said Chief Justice Marshall, 'becomes a member of the society,*
 35 *possessing all the rights of a native citizen, and standing, in the view of the constitution, on the footing of a*
 36 *native. **The constitution does not authorize congress to enlarge or abridge those rights. The simple power of***
 37 ***the national legislature is to prescribe a uniform rule of naturalization, and the exercise of this power***
 38 ***exhausts it, so far as respects the individual.**” [U.S. v. Wong Kim Ark, 169 U.S. 649 (1898)]*

39 The rules of comity prescribe whether or how this citizenship is recognized by the federal government, and by reading 8
 40 U.S.C. §1408, it is evident that the federal government chose *not* directly recognize within Title 8 of the U.S.C. the
 41 citizenship status of persons born within states of the Union to parents neither of whom were “U.S. citizens” under 8 U.S.C.
 42 §1401 and neither of whom “resided” inside the federal zone prior to the birth of the child. We suspect that this is because
 43 not only does the Constitution not give them this authority, but more importantly because doing so would spill the beans on
 44 the true citizenship of persons born in states of the Union and result in a mass exodus from the tax system by most
 45 Americans.

46 As we said, there are four ways identified in 8 U.S.C. §1408 that a person may be a “national but not citizen of the United
 47 States” at birth. We have highlighted the section that our detractors are ignoring, and which we quote frequently on our
 48 treatment of the subject of citizenship.

49 [TITLE 8 > CHAPTER 12 > SUBCHAPTER III > Part I > Sec. 1408.](#)

50 *Sec. 1408. - Nationals but not citizens of the United States at birth*

1 Unless otherwise provided in section [1401](#) of this title, the following shall be nationals, but not citizens, of the
2 United States at birth:

3 (1) A person born in an outlying possession of the United States on or after the date of formal acquisition of
4 such possession;

5
6 (2) A person born outside the United States and its outlying possessions of parents both of whom are
7 nationals, but not citizens, of the United States, and have had a residence in the United States, or one of its
8 outlying possessions prior to the birth of such person;

9
10 (3) A person of unknown parentage found in an outlying possession of the United States while under the age of
11 five years, until shown, prior to his attaining the age of twenty-one years, not to have been born in such outlying
12 possession; and

13
14 (4) A person born outside the United States and its outlying possessions of parents one of whom is an alien,
15 and the other a national, but not a citizen, of the United States who, prior to the birth of such person, was
16 physically present in the United States or its outlying possessions for a period or periods totaling not less than
17 seven years in any continuous period of ten years -

18 (A) during which the national parent was not outside the United States or its outlying possessions for a
19 continuous period of more than one year, and

20 (B) at least five years of which were after attaining the age of fourteen years.

21 The proviso of section [1401](#)(g) of this title shall apply to the national parent under this paragraph in the same
22 manner as it applies to the citizen parent under that section

23 Subsections (1), (3), and (4) above deal with persons who are born in outlying possessions of the United States, and
24 Swain's Island and American Samoa would certainly be included within these subsections. These people would be the
25 people who are addressed by the information cited by our detractors from federal websites above. Subsection (2), however,
26 deals with persons who are born *outside* of the *federal* United States (federal zone) to parents who are "U.S. nationals" and
27 who resided at one time in the *federal* United States. Anyone born overseas to American parents is a "non-citizen U.S.
28 national" under this section and this status is one that is not recognized in any of the cites provided by our detractors but is
29 recognized by the law itself. Since states of the Union are outside the *federal* United States and outside the "United States"
30 used in Title 8, then parents born in states of the Union satisfy the requirement for "national but not citizen of the United
31 States" status found in 8 U.S.C. §1408(2).

32 One of the complaints we get from our readers is something like the following:

33 "Let's assume you're right and that 8 U.S.C. §1408(2) prescribes the citizenship status of persons born in a
34 state of the Union. The problem I have with that view is that 'United States' means the federal zone in that
35 section, and subsection (2) requires that the parents must reside within the 'United States' prior to the birth of
36 the child. This means they must have 'resided' in the federal zone before the child was born, and most people
37 don't satisfy that requirement."

38 Let us explain why the above concern is unfounded. According to 8 U.S.C. §1408(2), the parents must also reside in the
39 *federal* United States prior to the birth of the child. We assert that most people born in states of the Union do in fact meet
40 this requirement and we will now explain why. They can meet this requirement by any one of the following ways:

- 41 1. Serving in the military or residing on a military base or occupied territory.
- 42 2. Filing an IRS form 1040 (not a 1040NR, but a 1040). The federal 1040 form says "U.S. individual" at the top left. A
43 "U.S. individual" is defined in 26 CFR §1.1441-1(c)(3) as either an "alien" residing within the federal zone or a
44 "nonresident alien" with income from within the federal zone. Since "nonresident aliens" file the 1040NR form, the
45 only thing that a person who files a 1040 form can be is a "resident alien" as defined in 26 U.S.C. §7701(b) and 26
46 CFR §1.1-1(a)(2)(ii) or a "citizen" residing abroad who attaches a form 2555 to the 1040. See section 5.2.11 for
47 further details on this if you are curious. Consequently, being a "resident alien" qualifies you as a "resident". You are
48 not, in fact a resident because you didn't physically occupy the federal zone for the year covered by the tax return, but
49 if the government is going to treat you as a "resident" by accepting and processing your tax return, then they have an
50 obligation to treat either you or your parents as "residents" in all respects, including those related to citizenship. To do
51 otherwise would be inconsistent and hypocritical.
- 52 3. Spending time in a military hospital.
- 53 4. Visiting federal property or a federal reservation within a state routinely as a contractor working for the federal
54 government.

- 1 5. Working for the federal government on a military reservation or inside of a federal area.
- 2 6. Sleeping in a national park.
- 3 7. Spending time in a federal courthouse.

4 The reason why items 3 through 7 above satisfy the requirement to be a “resident” of the federal United States is because
 5 the term “resident” is nowhere defined in Title 8 of the U.S. Code, and because of the definition of “resident” in Black’s
 6 Law Dictionary:

7 *“Resident. Any person who occupies a dwelling within the State, has a present intent to remain within the State
 8 for a period of time, and manifests the genuineness of that intent by establishing an ongoing physical
 9 presence within the State together with indicia that his presence within the State is something other than
 10 merely transitory in nature.” [Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1309]*

11 The key word in the above is “permanent”, which is defined as it pertains to citizenship in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(31) below:

12 [TITLE 8 > CHAPTER 12 > SUBCHAPTER I > Sec. 1101](#)

13 [Sec. 1101. - Definitions](#)

14 *(31) The term "permanent" means a relationship of continuing or lasting nature, as distinguished from
 15 temporary, but a relationship may be permanent even though it is one that may be dissolved eventually at the
 16 instance either of the United States or of the individual, in accordance with law.*

17 Since Title 8 does not define the term “lasting” or “ongoing” or “transitory”, we referred to the regular dictionary, which
 18 says:

19 *“lasting: existing or continuing a long while: ENDURING.” [Webster’s Ninth Collegiate Dictionary, 1983,
 20 ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 675]*

21 *“ongoing: 1. being actually in process 2: continuously moving forward; GROWING” [Webster’s Ninth
 22 Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 825]*

23 *“transitory: 1: tending to pass away: not persistent 2: of brief duration: TEMPORARY syn see TRANSIENT.”*

24 No period of time is specified in order to meet the criteria for “permanent”, so even if we lived there a day or a few hours,
 25 we were still there “permanently”. The Bible also says in Matt. 6:26-31 that we should not be anxious or presumptuous
 26 about tomorrow and take each day as a new day. The last verse in that sequence says:

27 *“Therefore **do not worry about tomorrow**, for tomorrow will worry about its own trouble.” [Matt. 6:31, Bible,
 28 NKJV]*

29 In fact, we are not allowed to be presumptuous at all, which means we aren’t allowed to assume or intend anything about
 30 the future. Our future is in the hands of a sovereign Lord, and we exist by His good graces alone.

31 *“Come now, you who say, ‘Today or tomorrow we will go to such and such a city, spend a year there, buy and
 32 sell, and make a profit’; whereas you do not know what will happen tomorrow. For what is your life? It is even
 33 a vapor that appears for a little time and then vanishes away. Instead you ought to say, ‘If the Lord wills, we
 34 shall live and do this or that.’ But now you boast in your arrogance. All such boasting is evil.” [James 4:13-
 35 16, Bible, NKJV]*

36 *“But **the person who does anything presumptuously, whether he is native-born or a stranger, that one brings
 37 reproach on the Lord, and he shall be cut off from among his people.**” [Numbers 15:30, Bible, NKJV]*

38 Consequently, the Christian’s definition of “permanent” is anything that relates to what we intend for today only and *does*
 39 *not* include anything that might happen starting tomorrow or at any time in the future beyond tomorrow. Being
 40 presumptuous about the future is “boastful” and “evil”, according to the Bible! The future is uncertain and our lives are
 41 definitely not “permanent” in God’s unlimited sense of eternity. Therefore, wherever we are is where we “intend” to
 42 permanently reside as Christians.

1 Even if you don't like the above analysis of why most Americans born in states of the Union are "nationals but not citizens
2 of the United States" under 8 U.S.C. §1408(2), we still explained above that you have the right to abandon only the
3 "citizen" portion and retain the "national" portion of any imputed dual citizenship status under 8 U.S.C. §1401. We also
4 show you how to have that choice formally recognized by the U.S. Department of State in section 3.5.3.13 of our *Tax*
5 *Freedom Solutions Manual* under the authority of 8 U.S.C. §1452, and we know people who have successfully employed
6 this strategy, so it must be valid.

7 Furthermore, even if you don't want to believe that any of the preceding discussion is valid, we also explained that the
8 federal government cannot directly prescribe the citizenship status of persons born within states of the Union under
9 international law. To illustrate this fact, consider the following extension of a popular metaphor:

10 *"If a tree fell in the forest, and Congress refused to pass a law recognizing that it fell and forced the agencies in*
11 *the executive branch to refuse to acknowledge that it fell because doing so would mean an end to income tax*
12 *revenues, then did it really fall?"*

13 The answer to the above questions is emphatically "yes". We said that the rules of comity prevail in that case the federal
14 government recognizing the citizenship status of those born in states of the Union. But what indeed is their status under
15 federal law? 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21) defines a "national" as:

16 [TITLE 8](#) > [CHAPTER 12](#) > [SUBCHAPTER I](#) > **Sec. 1101.**

17 *Sec. 1101. - Definitions*

18 *(21) The term "national" means a person owing permanent allegiance to a state.*

19 If you were born in a state of the Union, you are a "national of the United States" because the "state" that you have
20 allegiance to is the confederation of states called the "United States". As further confirmation of this fact, if
21 "naturalization" is defined as the process of **conferring** "nationality" under 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(23), and "expatriation" is
22 defined as the process of **abandoning** "nationality and allegiance" by the Supreme Court in *Perkins v. Elg*, 307 U.S. 325
23 (1939), then "nationality" is the key that determines citizenship status. What makes a person a "national" is "allegiance" to
24 a state. The only type of citizenship which carries with it the notion of "allegiance" is that of "U.S. national", as shown in 8
25 U.S.C. §1101(a)(22)(B). You will not find "allegiance" mentioned anywhere in Title 8 in connection with those persons
26 who claim to be "citizens and nationals of the United States" as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1401:

27 [TITLE 8](#) > [CHAPTER 12](#) > [SUBCHAPTER I](#) > **Sec. 1101.**

28 *Sec. 1101. - Definitions*

29 *(a) (22) The term "national of the United States" means*

30 *(A) a citizen of the United States, or*

31 *(B) a person who, though not a citizen of the United States, owes permanent [but not necessarily exclusive]*
32 *allegiance to the United States.*

33 People born in states of the Union can and most often do have allegiance to the confederation of states called the "United
34 States" just as readily as people who were born on federal property, and the federal government under the rules of comity
35 should be willing to recognize that allegiance without demanding that such persons surrender their sovereignty, become tax
36 slaves, and come under the exclusive jurisdiction of federal statutes by pretending to be people who live in the federal zone.
37 Not doing so would be an injury and oppression of their rights, and would be a criminal conspiracy against rights, because
38 remember, people who live inside the federal zone have no rights, by the admission of the Supreme Court in *Downes v.*
39 *Bidwell*, 182 U.S. 244 (1901):

40 [TITLE 18](#) > [PART I](#) > [CHAPTER 13](#) > **Sec. 241.**

41 *Sec. 241. - Conspiracy against rights*

If two or more persons conspire to injure, oppress, threaten, or intimidate any person in any State, Territory, Commonwealth, Possession, or District in the free exercise or enjoyment of any right or privilege secured to him by the Constitution or laws of the United States, or because of his having so exercised the same; or

If two or more persons go in disguise on the highway, or on the premises of another, with intent to prevent or hinder his free exercise or enjoyment of any right or privilege so secured -

They shall be fined under this title or imprisoned not more than ten years, or both; and if death results from the acts committed in violation of this section or if such acts include kidnapping or an attempt to kidnap, aggravated sexual abuse or an attempt to commit aggravated sexual abuse, or an attempt to kill, they shall be fined under this title or imprisoned for any term of years or for life, or both, or may be sentenced to death

It would certainly constitute a conspiracy against rights to force or compel a person to give up their true citizenship status in order to acquire any kind of citizenship recognition from a corrupted federal government. The following ruling by the Supreme Court plainly agrees with these conclusions:

*"It would be a palpable incongruity to strike down an act of state legislation which, by words of express divestment, seeks to strip the citizen of rights guaranteed by the federal Constitution, but to uphold an act by which the same result is accomplished under the guise of a surrender of a right in exchange for a valuable privilege which the state threatens otherwise to withhold. **It is not necessary to challenge the proposition that, as a general rule, the state, having power to deny a privilege altogether, may grant it upon such conditions as it sees fit to impose. But the power of the state in that respect is not unlimited, and one of the limitations is that it may not impose conditions which require the relinquishment of Constitutional rights. If the state may compel the surrender of one constitutional right as a condition of its favor, it may, in like manner, compel a surrender of all. It is inconceivable that guaranties embedded in the Constitution of the United States may thus be manipulated out or existence.**"* [Frost v. Railroad Commission, 271 U.S. 583; 46 S.Ct. 605 (1926)]

Lastly, we will close this section with a list of questions aimed at those who still challenge our position on being a "national of the United States". If you are going to lock horns with us or throw rocks, please start by answering the following questions or your inquiry will be ignored. Remember Abraham Lincoln's famous saying: "He has a right to criticize who has a heart to help.":

1. "Expatriation" is defined in *Perkins v. Elg*, 307 U.S. 325 (1939) as:

"Expatriation is the voluntary renunciation or abandonment of nationality and allegiance." [Perkins v. Elg, 307 U.S. 325; 59 S.Ct. 884; 83 L.Ed 1320 (1939)]

How can you abandon your nationality as a "U.S. national" with the Secretary of the State of the United States under 8 U.S.C. 1481 if you didn't have it to begin with?

2. Naturalization is defined in 8 U.S.C. 1101(a)(23) as:

*(a)(23) The term "naturalization" means the conferring of **nationality** [NOT "citizenship" or "U.S. citizenship", but "nationality", which means "**U.S. national**"] of a state upon a person after birth, by any means whatsoever.*

How can say a person isn't a "national" after they were naturalized, and if they are, what type of national do they become?

3. If the Supreme Court declared that the United States is not a "nation", but a "society" in *Chisholm v. Georgia*:

"By that law the several States and Governments spread over our globe, are considered as forming a society, not a NATION. It has only been by a very few comprehensive minds, such as those of Elizabeth and the Fourth Henry, that this last great idea has been even contemplated. 3rdly. and chiefly, I shall examine the important question before us, by the Constitution of the United States, and the legitimate result of that valuable instrument. "

[Chisholm v. Georgia, 2 Dall. (U.S.) 419, 1 L.Ed. 440 (1794)]

...then what exactly does it mean to be a "national of the United States" within the meaning of the Constitution and not federal law?

4. If a "national" is defined in 8 U.S.C. 1101(a)(21) simply as a person who owes "allegiance", then why can't a person who lives in a state of the union have allegiance to the confederation of states called the "United States", which the Supreme Court said above was a "society" and not a "nation". And what would you call that "society", if it wasn't a "nation"? The Supreme Court said in *Hooven and Allison v. Evatt* that there are three definitions of the term "United States" and one of those definitions includes the following, which is what I claim to be a "national" of:

"It may be merely the name of a sovereign occupying the position analogous to that of other sovereigns in the family of nations." [*Hooven & Allison Co. v. Evatt*, [324 U.S. 653](#) (1945)]

5. How come I can't have allegiance to the "society" called "United States" and define that "society" as being the country and not the OTHER two types of "United States" found in federal statutes, which are synonymous with the "federal zone" and not the country?

6. The federal government has exclusive jurisdiction over the following issues:

6.1. "naturalization", under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 4 of the U.S. Constitution.

6.2. The citizenship status of persons born in its territories or possessions.

However, the federal government has no power to determine citizenship by birth of person born in states of the Union, because the Constitution does not confer upon them that power. All the cases and authorities that detractors of our position like to cite relate ONLY to the above subject matters, which are all governed exclusively by federal law, which does not apply within states of the Union for this subject matter. Please show us a case that involves a person born in a states of the Union and not on a territory or possession in which the person claimed to be a "national", and show us where the court said they weren't. You absolutely won't find such a case!

4.11.7 Rights Lost By Becoming a statutory "U.S. citizen"

A state Citizen has the right to have any gun he/she wishes without being registered. A "U.S. citizen" under 8 U.S.C. §1401 does not. In the District of Columbia, it is a felony to own a handgun unless you are a police officer or a security guard or the hand gun was registered before 1978. The District of Columbia has not been admitted into the Union. Therefore the people of the District of Columbia are not protected by the Second Amendment or any other part of the Bill of Rights. Despite the lack of legal guns in DC, crime is rampant. It is called Murder Capital of the World. This should prove that gun control/victim disarmament laws do not work in America. Across the country, there is an assault on guns. If you are a "U.S.** citizen" and you are using Second Amendment arguments to protect your rights to keep your guns, I believe you are in for a surprise. First by registering gun owners then renaming guns 'Assault Weapons' and 'Handguns', those in power will take away your civil right to bear arms. Of course, they won't tell you that the right to keep and bear arms is a civil right and not a natural right for a U.S. citizens. The Supreme court has ruled that you as an individual have no right to protection by the police. Their only obligation is to protect "society". The real protection for state Citizens to keep their guns is not the Second Amendment but the Ninth Amendment.

A state Citizen has the right to travel on the public easements (public roads) without being registered. A "U.S. citizen" does not. It is a privilege for a foreigner to travel in any of the several states. If you are a US citizen, you are a foreigner in the state. The state legislators can require foreigners and people involved in commerce (chauffeurs, freight haulers) to be licensed, insured, and to have their vehicles registered. When you register your car, you turn over power of attorney to the state. At that point, it becomes a motor vehicle. If it is not registered then it is not a motor vehicle and there are no motor vehicle statutes to break. There are common law rules of the road. If you don't cause an injury to anybody then you can not be tried.

If your car is registered, the state effectively owns your car. The state supplies a sticker to put on your license plate every time you re-register the motor vehicle. Look closely at the sticker on your plate right now. You may be surprised to see that it says "OFFICIAL USE ONLY".(Note: In some states, they do not use stickers on the plate) You may have seen municipal vehicles that have signs on them saying "OFFICIAL USE ONLY" on them but why does yours? You do not own your car. You may have a Certificate of Title but you probably do not have the certificate of origin. You are leasing the state's vehicle by paying the yearly registration fee. Because you are using their equipment, they can make rules up on how it can be used. If you break a rule, such as driving without a seatbelt, you have broken the contract and an administrative procedure will make you pay the penalty. A state Citizen must be able to explain to the police officers why they are not

1 required to have the usual paperwork that most people have. They should carry copies of affidavits and other paperwork in
2 their car. The state Citizen should also be prepared to go to traffic court and explain it to the judge.

3 The right of trial by jury in civil cases, guaranteed by the 7th Amendment (*Walker v. Sauvinet*, 92 U.S. 90 (1875)), and the
4 right to bear arms, guaranteed by the 2nd Amendment (*Presser v. Illinois*, 116 U.S. 252 (1886)), have been distinctly held
5 not to be privileges and immunities of "citizens of the United States" guaranteed by the 14th Amendment against
6 abridgment by the states, and in effect the same decision was made in respect of the guarantee against prosecution, except
7 by indictment of a grand jury, contained in the 5th Amendment (*Hurtado v. California*, 110 U.S. 516 (1884)), and in
8 respect of the right to be confronted with witnesses, contained in the 6th Amendment." *West v. Louisiana*, 194 U.S. 258
9 (1904).

10 The privileges and immunities [civil rights] of the 14th Amendment citizens were derived [taken] from...the Constitution,
11 but are not identical to those referred to in Article IV, sect. 2 of the Constitution [which recognizes the existence of state
12 Citizens who were not citizens of the United States because there was no such animal in 1787]. Plainly spoken, RIGHTS
13 considered to be grants from our creator are clearly different from the "civil rights" that were granted by Congress to its
14 own brand of franchised citizen in the 14th Amendment.

15 *"A 'civil right' is a right given and protected by law [man's law], and a person's enjoyment thereof is regulated*
16 *entirely by law that creates it." Nickell v. Rosenfield, 82 CA 369 (1927), 375, 255 P. 760.*

17 Title 42 of the USC contains the Civil Rights laws. It says "Rights under 42 USCS section 1983 are for citizens of the
18 United States and not of state. *Wadleigh v. Newhall* (1905, CC Cal) 136 F 941."

19 In summary, what we are talking about here is a Master-Servant relationship. Prior to the 14th Amendment, there were
20 state Citizens and non-citizens. State Citizens were the masters in the relationship to government. After the 14th
21 Amendment was declared to be passed, a new class of citizenship was created, which is both privileged and servant
22 [subject] to the creator [the federal government].

23 **4.11.8 How Did We Lose Our Sovereignty and Become "U.S. citizens"?**

24 If every American in the original colonies became a sovereign, how could they lose their sovereignty? The Citizens of each
25 of the several states in the Union were sovereigns. But the people in a federal territory or in the District of Columbia were
26 not sovereigns because the territories and the District of Columbia were not in the Union.

27 *"The 1st section of the 14th article [Fourteenth Amendment], to which our attention is more specifically invited,*
28 *opens with a definition of citizenship—not only citizenship of the United States, but citizenship of the states. No*
29 *such definition was previously found in the Constitution, nor had any attempt been made to define it by act of*
30 *Congress. It had been the occasion of much discussion in the courts, by the executive departments and in the*
31 *public journals. It had been said my eminent judges that no man was a citizen of the United States except as*
32 *he was a citizen of one of the states composing the Union. Those therefore, who had been born and resided*
33 *always in the District of Columbia or in the territories, though within the United States, were not citizens.*
34 *Whether this proposition was sound or not had never been judicially decided." [Slaughter-House Cases, 83*
35 *U.S. (16 Wall.) 36; 21 L.Ed. 395 (1873)]*

36 Congress had/has exclusive legislative control over these areas under Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17 of the U.S.
37 Constitution. The states were governed by a "constitutional republic" while the territories were ruled by a "legislative
38 democracy". In a legislative democracy, the inhabitants have no rights except what Congress gives them because the Bill
39 of Rights do not apply. As a matter of fact, within the federal zone, they have a statutory Bill of Rights instead of
40 Constitutional rights. See [48 U.S.C. §1421b](#). In the constitutional republics of the states, the Citizens have rights given to
41 them by their Creator and Congress is the Citizens servant. This is why Citizens, having left a state to buy or conquer land
42 from the native Americans that was located in federal territories, would apply for statehood as soon as possible.

43 How is it that someone who was born in and has lived in a state on nonfederal land all his/her life can be treated like a
44 citizen of the District of Columbia? There has been a series of steps that Congress has made to convert the state Citizens
45 into statutory "U.S. citizens" under 8 U.S.C. §1401. Over the years, our laws have deliberately been made
46 incomprehensible by the average American in order to put most Americans at the mercy of the legal profession. The 14th

1 Amendment was illegally ratified in 1868 creating a federal citizen who can not question the federal debt.¹³² The Federal
 2 Reserve Act of 1913 turned over our money to a private banking cartel. Social Security created Social Security Districts (or
 3 territories) in which people with SSN's lived. The Buck Act created federal areas inside the states. Then the states rewrote
 4 their income tax laws to pretend like everyone was a "U.S. citizen" who lived in these federal areas. They could legally
 5 impose direct taxes in these areas because those domiciled in the federal zone have no Constitutional rights!

6 In order for the federal government to tax a Citizen of one of the several Union states, it had to create some sort of
 7 contractual nexus. This contractual nexus is the Social Security Number (SSN) and the status of being statutory "citizens of
 8 the United States" 8 U.S.C. §1401. Prior to the 14th Amendment, everyone who was born in any one of the 50 Union states
 9 was a "national of the United States" under the Law of Nations and their citizenship status was nowhere defined in the
 10 Constitution. Following the passage of the 14th Amendment in 1868, these people were called "citizens of the United
 11 States", where "United States" in the context of the Constitution meant the collective states of the Union and excluded the
 12 federal zone. Here is the pertinent part of the Fourteenth Amendment that accomplished this:

13 *Section 1: All persons born or naturalized in the United States, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof, are*
 14 *citizens of the United States and of the state wherein they reside.*

15 Notice the term "citizens of the United States" above, which looks confusingly similar to the same term "citizen of the
 16 United States" used in 8 U.S.C. §1401. The trick is that the term "United States" in federal statutes means the federal zone
 17 while in the Constitution, it means the collective states of the Union. The common man didn't understand this distinction
 18 and the legal profession has, since the passage of the Fourteenth Amendment, done everything in its power to expand this
 19 jurisdiction by, for instance, removing the definition of the term "United States" from legal dictionaries. This scandal is
 20 described later in section 6.10.1. Lawyers and scumbags in our courts and Congress, following the passage of the
 21 Fourteenth Amendment, therefore decided to try to illegally expand their jurisdiction by using this confusion to trick the
 22 people in the states of the Union by making them believe that they were statutory "citizens of the United States" under 8
 23 U.S.C. §1401.

24 After the 14th Amendment was passed, the scumbag Congress gradually changed the immigration and naturalization laws
 25 and especially the government forms that implemented them to expand and enlarge this confusion and deception about
 26 citizenship. When the government naturalized people to become Americans, it still made people "nationals of the United
 27 States" (see 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(23)) but wrote the forms in such a way that they looked like statutory federal "U.S.
 28 citizens". When people asked what they meant by the term "U.S. citizen" on immigration and other government forms,
 29 their questions were deliberately ignored or they were given confusing explanations that didn't clarify these important
 30 distinctions and perpetuated false assumptions and presumptions by the average American. The government did this
 31 because they naturally wanted all of the immigrants to unwittingly but incorrectly believe they were "U.S. citizens" and
 32 "taxpayers" who were the subject to the tax imposed in 26 U.S.C. §1 and who were completely subject to the legislative
 33 jurisdiction of the federal government in a way that they wouldn't be if they were only "U.S. nationals". Most naturalized
 34 persons were not smart enough to figure out this legal ruse or that what they really were as a result of naturalization were
 35 "U.S. nationals" and not "U.S. citizens". After they were fooled into believing they were "U.S. citizens" upon
 36 naturalization, they would subsequently fill out all kinds of government forms that misrepresented their status and created
 37 this same false presumption in the minds of federal judges and other misinformed fellow citizens serving in federal
 38 courtrooms everywhere. If these duped Americans then subsequently figured out the ruse (like we did in the process of
 39 writing this book), they would need to go back and renounce their privileged "U.S. citizen" status under 8 U.S.C. §1401
 40 and correct all the forms they mistakenly filled out to completely escape the jurisdiction of the U.S. government and regain
 41 their sovereign status.

42 There is a lot of confusion about the meaning of the Fourteenth Amendment in the freedom community. The key thing to
 43 notice about Section 1 of the 14th Amendment quoted above is the phrase "and subject to the jurisdiction thereof". Many
 44 people look at that sentence and wrongfully conclude that "subject to the jurisdiction" means the legislative jurisdiction of
 45 the federal government under "acts of Congress" and the U.S. codes. In fact, it does NOT mean this, as the supreme court
 46 has confirmed.

¹³² See 14th Amendment, Section 4, which says "The validity of the public debt of the United States, authorized by law, including debts incurred for payment of pensions and bounties for services in suppressing insurrection or rebellion, shall not be questioned."

"The persons declared to be citizens are ALL PERSONS BORN OR NATURALIZED IN THE UNITED STATES AND SUBJECT TO THE JURISDICTION THEREOF. The evident meaning of these last words is, not merely subject in some respect or degree to the jurisdiction of the United States, **but completely subject to their political jurisdiction, and owing them direct and immediate allegiance.** And the words relate to the time of birth in the one case, as they do to the time of naturalization in the other." [Elk v. Wilkins, 112 U.S. 94 (1884)]

"Allegiance" is what makes a person born in a state of the Union "subject to **the** political jurisdiction", and this allegiance is a characteristic of being a "national of the United States" under 8 U.S.C. §1408 and 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21). Therefore the phrase "subject to **the** jurisdiction" in the Fourteenth Amendment simply means the "political jurisdiction" and not the "legislative jurisdiction". "Political jurisdiction" means only voting and jury service and does not include "legislative jurisdiction". Legislative jurisdiction is defined by where you are domiciled and not by your citizenship status. You can be "completely subject" to the "political jurisdiction" by voting and serving on jury duty in a federal trial *without* being subject to federal legislative jurisdiction described in "acts of Congress" or the U.S. codes.

The legal encyclopedia American Jurisprudence tries to confuse this issue by echoing the words found in the Fourteenth Amendment "subject to the jurisdiction", and using them in describing federal statutory "citizens of the United States" under 8 U.S.C. §1401. They do this in order to try to create a false presumption that this inferior statutory citizenship is equivalent to Fourteenth Amendment "citizen of the United States" status, when in fact it is **not**. The means the scumbag Pharisees use to deceive us is simply to refuse to define or state which of the three definitions or "contexts" of "United States" they are using in their definitions. Below is the definition of "citizen of the United States" from the American Jurisprudence legal encyclopedia to help illustrate this frequent form of deception and confusion within the teachings and doctrine of the Pharisees:

3C Am Jur 2d §2689, Who is born in United States and subject to United States jurisdiction

"A person is born subject to the jurisdiction of the United States, for purposes of acquiring citizenship at birth, if his or her birth occurs in territory over which the United States is sovereign, even though another country provides all governmental services within the territory, and the territory is subsequently ceded to the other country."

Endless but needless arguments over citizenship within the freedom community result from a fundamental misunderstanding of the observations and conclusions in this section. This contention is fostered by the kind of deliberate deception found in legal reference works such as the above. The above confusion is also propagated by other means. For instance, the 1040 form propagates it by requiring you to identify your children as "U.S. citizens" on your tax return in order to claim them as deductions while not defining or clarifying which of the two "citizens of the United States" that they are. People also unwittingly contribute to this confusion by creating a false presumption that they are a "U.S. citizen" under the income tax code simply by saying that they are on their tax forms, and both the state and federal government are more than happy to take your word for it, even if you are wrong, because that is how they manufacture "taxpayers" and illegally expand their jurisdiction!

If people understood the simple distinctions between "political jurisdiction" and "legislative jurisdiction", the arguments and confusion relating to citizenship within the freedom community would cease instantly. If they understood the following, then we could end these foolish arguments and get on with more important issues like prosecuting IRS fraud:

- The term "United States" in the Constitution does not have the same meaning as the term "United States" in federal statutes. In the Constitution, "United States" means states of the Union while in federal statutes relating to citizenship, it means the District of Columbia and territories of the United States.
- Being a Fourteenth Amendment "citizen of the United States" is NOT equivalent to being a "citizen and national of the United States" under 8 U.S.C. §1401.
- Fourteenth Amendment citizenship is equivalent to being a "national of the United States" under 8 U.S.C. §1408.
- There is nothing wrong with being a Fourteenth Amendment "citizen of the United States" and that it doesn't make you subject to the "legislative jurisdiction" of Congress.

Let's go back to the *Elk v. Wilkins* case mentioned above for a moment to illustrate the points we are making here. Here is what the Supreme Court said again:

1 "The persons declared to be citizens are ALL PERSONS BORN OR NATURALIZED IN THE UNITED
 2 STATES AND SUBJECT TO THE JURISDICTION THEREOF. The evident meaning of these last
 3 words is, not merely subject in some respect or degree to the jurisdiction of the United States, but
 4 COMPLETELY SUBJECT to their political jurisdiction, and owing them direct and immediate allegiance.
 5 And the words relate to the time of birth in the one case, as they do to the time of naturalization in the other.
 6 Persons not thus subject to the jurisdiction of the United States at the time of birth cannot become so
 7 afterwards, except by being naturalized, either individually, as by proceedings under the naturalization acts;
 8 or collectively, as by the force of a treaty by which foreign territory is acquired. Indians born within the
 9 territorial limits of the United States, members of, and owing immediate allegiance to, one of the Indiana tribes,
 10 (an alien though dependent power,) although in a geographical sense born in the United States, are no more
 11 'born in the United States and subject to the jurisdiction thereof,' within the meaning of the first section of the
 12 fourteenth amendment, than the children of subjects of any foreign government born within the domain of that
 13 government, or the children born within the United States, of ambassadors or other public ministers of foreign
 14 nations. ." *Elk v. Wilkins, 112 U.S. 94 (1884)*

15 The above case was about an Indian who was born on a reservation and left the reservation and lived in the surrounding
 16 state community to try to become a "citizen of the United States". Indian reservations are considered to be part of the
 17 federal zone and are under trusteeship of the federal government, but at the same time they *do not* participate in the
 18 "political jurisdiction" that includes states of the Union. Indians cannot vote in national elections and they can't serve on a
 19 federal or jury. The Indian in the above case was deprived of the right to vote right after the passage of the 14th
 20 Amendment in 1868 by the registrar of voters in his state, who claimed he wasn't a "citizen of the United States ", even
 21 though he in all other respects met the criteria for being a state citizen, had allegiance to the United States, and admitted he
 22 was "completely subject" to the [political] jurisdiction of the U.S. government in all respects. The U.S. Supreme Court
 23 ruled that Indian reservations are considered foreign territories not part of the United States and akin to foreign
 24 governments, and Indians born on these reservations are not "citizens of the United States" under the Fourteenth
 25 Amendment by virtue of being born on an Indian Reservation. In effect, they were saying that Indian reservations are not
 26 part of the Union of states and are completely separate. Recall that Indian reservations have their own private and
 27 sovereign tribal governments and are not subject to any federal law or state law in most cases. The court in *Elk* said that
 28 Indians born on reservations can only become citizens by naturalization and with the consent of the federal government.
 29 Naturalization, by the way, is statutorily defined as the process of conferring "nationality" and of becoming a "national of
 30 the United States" under 8 U.S.C. §1408. In the case of the plaintiff/appellant, an Indian who never explicitly naturalized,
 31 the court ruled that he had been deprived of no right by the state when he was denied the opportunity to vote by that state.
 32 Recall that the right to vote is was covered by the 15th Amendment, which depended on 14th Amendment citizenship. This
 33 case therefore helps to illustrate that the only context in which "citizen of the United States" is meaningful as far as the
 34 federal government is concerned is in a *political* context that relates to either voting or jury service.

35 Moving beyond the *Elk v. Wilkins* case in 1884, in 1935, the federal government instituted Social Security. The Social
 36 Security Board then created 10 Social Security "Districts." The combination of these "Districts" resulted in a "Federal
 37 Area", a fictional jurisdiction, which covered all of the several states like a clear plastic overlay.

38 In 1939, the federal government instituted the "Public Salary Tax Act of 1939." This Act is a municipal law of the District
 39 of Columbia for taxing all federal government employees and those who live and work in any "Federal Area." Now the
 40 government knows it cannot tax those state Citizens who live and work outside the territorial jurisdiction of Article 1,
 41 Section 8, Clause 2 in the Constitution for the United States of America; also known as the ten square miles of the District
 42 of Columbia and territories and enclaves. So, in 1940, Congress passed the "Buck Act" now found in 4 U.S.C. Sections
 43 105-113. In Section 110(e), this Act authorized any department of the federal government to create a "Federal Area" for
 44 imposition of the "Public Salary Tax Act of 1939." This tax is imposed at 4 U.S.C. §111. The rest of the taxing law is found
 45 in the Internal Revenue Code. The Social Security Board had already created a "Federal Area" overlay. U.S.C. Title 4 is as
 46 follows:

47 TITLE 4 - FLAG AND SEAL, SEAT OF GOVERNMENT, AND THE STATES

48 CHAPTER 4 - THE STATES

49 Sec. 110(d): The term "State" includes any territory or possession of the United States.

50 Sec. 110(e): The term "Federal Area" means any lands or premises held or acquired by or for the use of the
 51 United states or any department, establishment, or agency of the United states; and any federal area, or any
 52 part thereof, which is located within the exterior boundaries of any State, shall be deemed to be a federal area
 53 located within such State.

1 Under the Provisions of Title 4, Section 105, the federal "State" (also known as, "The State of...") is imposing an excise tax.
2 That section states, in pertinent part:

3 *Sec. 105: State, and so forth, taxation affecting Federal areas; sales or use tax.*

4 *(a) No person shall be relieved from the liability for payment of, collection of, or accounting for any sales or*
5 *use tax levied by any State, or any duly constituted taxing authority therein, having jurisdiction to levy such tax,*
6 *on the ground that the sales or use, with respect to which such tax is levied, occurred in whole or in part within*
7 *a Federal area; and such State or taxing authority shall have full jurisdiction to levy such a tax, by reason of*
8 *his residing within a Federal area or receiving income from transactions occurring or services performed in*
9 *such area; and such State or taxing authority shall have full jurisdiction and power to levy and collect such tax*
10 *in any Federal area within such a State to the same extent and with the same effect as though such area was not*
11 *a Federal area.*

12 **NOTE:** Irrespective of what the tax is called, if its purpose is to produce revenue, it is an income tax or a receipts tax under
13 the Buck Act [4 U.S.C. Secs. 105-110]. See *Humble Oil & Refining Co. v. Calvert*, 464 SW 2d. 170 (1971), affd (Tex) 478
14 SW 2d. 926, cert. den. 409 U.S. 967, 34 L.Ed. 2d 234, 93 S.Ct. 293.

15 For purposes of further explanation, a Federal area can include the Social Security areas designated by the Social Security
16 Administration; any public housing that has federal funding; a home that has a federal (or Federal reserve) loan; a road that
17 has federal funding; schools and colleges (public or private) that receive (direct or indirectly) federal funding, and virtually
18 everything that the federal government touches through any type of direct or indirect aid. See *Springfield v. Kenny*, 104
19 N.E. 2d. 65 (1951 app.) This "Federal area" is attached to anyone who has a Social Security number or any personal contact
20 with the federal or State government. (That is, of course, with the exception of those who have been defrauded through the
21 tenets of an Unrevealed Contract to "accept" compelled benefits. Which includes me and perhaps you.) Through this
22 mechanism, the federal government usurped the Sovereignty of the People, as well as the Sovereignty of the several states
23 by creating "Federal areas" within the authority of Article IV, Section 3, Clause 2 in the Constitution for the United States
24 of America which states:

25 *"The Congress shall have Power to dispose of and make all needful Rules and Regulations respecting the*
26 *Territory or other Property belonging to the United States, and nothing in this Constitution shall be so*
27 *construed as to prejudice any claims of the United states, or of any particular State."*

28 Therefore, all U.S. citizens [i.e. citizens of the District of Columbia] residing in one of the states of the Union, are classified
29 as property and franchisees of the federal government, and as an "individual entity." See *Wheeling Steel Corp. v. Fox* 298
30 U.S. 193, 80 L.Ed. 1143, 56 S.Ct. 773 (1936). Under the "Buck Act," 4 U.S.C Secs. 105-113, the federal government has
31 created a "Federal area" within the boundaries of the several states. This area is similar to any territory that the federal
32 government acquires through purchase, conquest or treaty, thereby imposing federal territorial law upon the people in this
33 "Federal area." *Federal territorial law is evidenced by the Executive Branch's Admiralty flag (a federal flag with a gold or*
34 *yellow fringe on it) flying in schools, offices and courtrooms.*

35 To enjoy the freedoms secured by the federal and state constitutions, you must live on the land in one of the states of the
36 Union of several states, not in any "Federal area." Nor can you be involved in any activity that makes you subject to
37 "federal laws." You cannot have a "resident" State driver's license, a motor vehicle registered in your name, a bank account
38 in a federally insured bank, or any other known "contract implied in fact" that would place you in this "Federal area" and
39 thus within the territorial jurisdiction of the municipal laws of Congress. We explain later in section 5.6.12.5 that you can
40 have a Social Security Number and even contribute to and collect benefits as a "U.S. national" without being regarded as
41 living in a federal area, but you need to be very careful to ensure that the Social Security Administration records properly
42 reflect your status as a "U.S. national" rather than a "U.S. citizen" using the process we give in section 3.5.3.13 of our *Tax*
43 *Freedom Solutions Manual* by submitting a corrected SS-5 form.

44 Remember, all acts of Congress are territorial in nature and can only apply within the territorial jurisdiction of Congress.
45 See *American Banana Co. v. United Fruit Co.*, 213 U.S. 347, 356-357 (1909); *U.S. v. Spelar*, 338 U.S. 217, 222, 94 L.Ed. 3
46 (1949). The only exception to this general rule is those persons living abroad who continue to claim they are "citizens of
47 the United States", in which case they can be taxed for their earnings because the benefits of citizenship exist with them no
48 matter where they live.

1 It's not easy to survive without an SSN! Most banks are federally insured. It may be inconvenient to bank at an institution
2 that is not federally insured. There are many things that become a little more difficult to do without a SSN, state driver's
3 licenses, or a ZIP Code.

4 There has been created a fictional federal "State (of) within a state." See *Howard v. Sinking Fund of Louisville*, 344 U.S.
5 624, 73 S.Ct. 465, 476, 97 L.Ed. 617 (1953); *Schwartz v. O'Hara TP School District*, 100 A 2d. 621, 625, 375, Pa. 440.
6 Compare also 31 C.F.R. Parts 51.2 and 52.2, which also identify a fictional State within a state. This fictional "State" is
7 identified by the use of two-letter abbreviations like "PA", "NJ", "AZ", and "DE", etc., as distinguished from the authorized
8 abbreviations for the sovereign States: "Pa.", "N.J.", "Ariz.", and "Del." The fictional States also use ZIP Codes that are
9 within the municipal, exclusive legislative jurisdiction of Congress. The Pennsylvania Commonwealth is one of the several
10 States. The Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, also known as PA, is a subdivision of the District of Columbia. If you accept
11 postal matter sent to PA, and/or with a ZIP Code, the Courts say that this is evidence that you are a federal citizen or a
12 resident. Use of the Zip Code is voluntary. See Domestic Mail Service Regulations, Section 122.32. The Postal service
13 cannot discriminate against the non-use of the ZIP Code. See Postal Reorganization Act, Section 403, (Public Law 91-375).
14 The IRS has adopted the ZIP Code areas as Internal Revenue Districts. See the Federal Register, Volume 51, Number 53,
15 Wednesday March 19, 1986. The acceptance of mail with a ZIP Code is one of the requirements for the IRS to have
16 jurisdiction to send you notices.

17 When you apply for a Social Security Number, you are telling the federal government that you are repudiating your state
18 Citizenship in order to apply for the privileges and benefits of citizenship in the federal Nation. Granting a Social Security
19 number is prima facie evidence that no matter what you were before, you have voluntarily entered into a voyage for profit
20 or gain in negotiable instruments and maritime enterprise. This is the system that has been set up over the years to restrict,
21 control, and destroy our personal and economic liberties. Our legal system is very complicated and you may not understand
22 how it works. I believe that this is intentional.

23 You may also find it disturbing to know how an administrative procedure can remove your children from you. In 1921
24 Congress passed the Sheppard-Towner Maternity Act that created the United States birth "registration" area (see Public
25 Law 97, 67th Congress, Session I, Chapter 135, 1921.) That act allows you to register your children when they are born. If
26 you do so, you will get a copy of the birth certificate. By registering your children, which is voluntary, they become Federal
27 Children. This does several things: Your children become subjects of Congress (they lose their state citizenship). A copy of
28 the birth certificate is sent to the Department of Vital Statistics in the state in which they were born. The original birth
29 certificate is sent to the Department of Commerce in the District of Columbia. It then gets forwarded to an International
30 Monetary Fund (IMF) building in Europe. Your child's future labor and properties are put up as collateral for the public
31 debt.

32 Once a child is registered, a constructive trust is formed. The parent(s) usually become the trustee (the person managing
33 the assets of the trust), the child becomes an asset of the trust, and the state becomes the principal beneficiary of the trust.
34 See The Uniform Trustees' Powers Act (ORS 128.005(1)). If the beneficiary does not believe the trustee is managing the
35 assets of the trust optimally, the beneficiary can go through an administrative procedure to change trustees. This is the way
36 that bureaucrats can take children away from their parents if the bureaucrat does not like the way the child is cared for. You
37 may say that there is nothing wrong with this. If a parent is neglecting a child, then the state should remove the child from
38 the parents custody. Under common law a child can still be removed from the parent but it takes twelve jurors from that
39 county to do so. Theoretically, a bureaucrat could remove your children from you, if you disagree with some unrelated
40 administrative procedure, such as home schooling the child. This is another way the government can intimidate citizens
41 who question its authority. With all this in mind, the statement that the President says every few months: "Our children are
42 our most valuable asset." takes on a different meaning. That is - your children are their assets.

43 When the government communicates with corporations it spells the name of the corporation in all capital letters. If the
44 government refers to you with your name in all capital letters, it actually means to treat you like a corporation. A
45 corporation is a privileged status created by government. It has no rights. The government gives it privileges and the
46 corporation must follow the rules of its creator. I am not a corporation! A state Citizen should challenge the government's
47 assertion that he/she is a corporation. This applies to both postal matter and court documents.

48 We gave the federal government the right to regulate commerce. Since the government has started usurping our
49 sovereignty, our language has been subtly modified to include commercial terms. Most people do not realize or care that

1 they are using commercial terms but the courts do. If you describe your actions in commercial terms in a court, the judge
2 will take silent notice of your status as being regulatable by the federal government. In the following examples, the
3 commercial terms are all in upper case letters: instead of a birthing room, you are now born in a DELIVERY room. Instead
4 of traveling in your car, you are DRIVING or OPERATING a MOTOR VEHICLE in TRAFFIC and you don't have guests
5 in your car, you have PASSENGERS. Instead of a nativity you have a DATE OF BIRTH. You are not a worker but an
6 EMPLOYEE. You don't own a house but a piece of REAL ESTATE.

7 To summarize this section, we lose our sovereignty and create false “presumptions” that we are a statutory “U.S. citizen”
8 under 8 U.S.C. §1401 and under the exclusive legislative jurisdiction of Congress in any one of the following ways:

1 Table 4-16 : Ways We Become a statutory U.S. citizen under 8 U.S.C. §1401

#	Factor that causes false presumption of 8 U.S.C. §1401 “U.S. citizen” status	Applicable law(s)	Place of birth	Parent 1	Parent 2	Law quoted
1	Requesting a Social Security Number and claiming on the SS-5 form that we are a “U.S. citizen instead of an “American Citizen”	26 CFR § 301.6109-1(g)	NA	NA	NA	(g) Special rules for taxpayer identifying numbers issued to foreign persons--(1) General rule--(i) Social security number. <u>A social security number is generally identified in the records and database of the Internal Revenue Service as a number belonging to a U.S. citizen or resident alien individual. A person may establish a different status for the number by providing proof of foreign status with the Internal Revenue Service</u> under such procedures as the Internal Revenue Service shall prescribe, including the use of a form as the Internal Revenue Service may specify. Upon accepting an individual as a nonresident alien individual, the Internal Revenue Service will assign this status to the individual's social security number.
2	Receiving a jury duty summons and not responding properly. In some states, one must claim to be a “citizen of the United States” in order to serve on jury duty. In many cases, we can still claim our proper citizenship by responding with an affidavit asserting that we are “nationals of the United States” or “American Citizens” rather than “citizens of the United States”.	NA	NA	NA	NA	NA
3	Trying to get a Driver’s license, which requires that we have a valid Social Security Number in most states. For such cases, it is prudent to establish a fictitious business name that is the same as your real name, and then apply to the IRS for a Taxpayer Identification Number (TIN) that has the same format as an SSN, and	NA	NA	NA	NA	NA

#	Factor that causes false presumption of 8 U.S.C. §1401 "U.S. citizen" status	Applicable law(s)	Place of birth	Parent 1	Parent 2	Law quoted
	using that. Then cancel your business so there isn't any record pointing back to you in the state's databases. The same tactic is useful for bank accounts.					
4	Registering to vote and claiming to be a "U.S. citizen" without clarifying that you are not a "14 th Amendment" citizen, but instead are a "U.S. national" or "U.S.A citizen"	State law	NA	NA	NA	NA
5	Having your parents claim you as tax deductions on their tax return, which requires them to declare that you are a "U.S. citizen" in order to get the tax deduction	NA	NA	NA	NA	NA
6	Being born on other than federal land to parents who are "U.S. citizens".	8 U.S.C. §1401 (c)	Nonfederal areas of 50 Union states or foreign countries.	U.S.** citizen	U.S.** citizen	(c) a person born outside of the United States and its outlying possessions of parents both of whom are citizens of the United States and one of whom has had a residence in the United States or one of its outlying possessions, prior to the birth of such person;
7	Being born on other than federal land and having one parent who is a "U.S. citizen" who was present in the U.S.A. for one year prior to birth, and the other parent being a national of the U.S. but not a citizen.	8 U.S.C. §1401 (d)	Nonfederal areas of 50 Union states or foreign countries.	U.S.** citizen present in U.S.** for one year prior to birth	National but not a citizen	(d) a person born outside of the United States and its outlying possessions of parents one of whom is a citizen of the United States who has been physically present in the United States or one of its outlying possessions for a continuous period of one year prior to the birth of such person, and the other of whom is a national, but not a citizen of the United States;
8	Being born in a possession of the U.S.** of parents, one of whom is a "U.S. citizen" present in the U.S.* or outlying possession for one year or more.	8 U.S.C. §1401 (e)	U.S.** possession	U.S.** citizen present in U.S.** for one year prior to birth		(e) a person born in an outlying possession of the United States of parents one of whom is a citizen of the United States who has been physically present in the United States or one of its outlying possessions for a continuous period

#	Factor that causes false presumption of 8 U.S.C. §1401 "U.S. citizen" status	Applicable law(s)	Place of birth	Parent 1	Parent 2	Law quoted
						of one year at any time prior to the birth of such person;
9	Being born of unknown parentage but found in the U.S.A. while under five, until shown prior to 21 that is not born in the U.S.*.	8 U.S.C. §1401 (f)	Unknown	Unknown	Unknown	(f) a person of unknown parentage found in the United States while under the age of five years, until shown, prior to his attaining the age of twenty-one years, not to have been born in the United States;
10	Born on other than federal land with one alien parent	8 U.S.C. §1401 (g)	Foreign country.			(g) a person born outside the geographical limits of the United States and its outlying possessions of parents one of whom is an alien, and the other a citizen of the United States who, prior to the birth of such person, was physically present in the United States or its outlying possessions for a period or periods totaling not less than five years, at least two of which were after attaining the age of fourteen years
11	Born before May 24, 1935	8 U.S.C. §1401 (h)	Nonfederal areas of 50 Union states or foreign countries.	Alien father	U.S.** citizen who lived in U.S.*. prior to birth	(h) a person born before noon (Eastern Standard Time) May 24, 1934, outside the limits and jurisdiction of the United States of an alien father and a mother who is a citizen of the United States who, prior to the birth of such person, had resided in the United States.

1 4.11.9 Expatriation

2 "Expatriation is the voluntary renunciation or abandonment of nationality and allegiance." *Perkins v. Elg*,
 3 1939, 307 U.S. 325, 59 S.Ct. 884, 83 L.Ed. 1320. *In order to be relieved of the duties of allegiance, consent of*
 4 *the sovereign is required. Mackenzie v. Hare, 1915, 239 U.S. 299, 36 S.Ct. 106, 60 L.Ed. 297. Congress has*
 5 *provided that the right of expatriation is a natural and inherent right of all people, and has further made a*
 6 *legislative declaration as to what acts shall amount to an exercise of such right." [Tomoya Kawakita v. United*
 7 *States, 190 F.2d 506 (1951)]*

8 Expatriation is the process of eliminating one's nationality [e.g. "U.S. National"] but not necessarily one's "U.S. citizen"
 9 status under federal statutes. You would never learn this by reading any legal dictionary we could find, because the
 10 government simply doesn't want you to know this! Here is the definition from the most popular legal dictionary:

11 "expatriation. *The voluntary act of abandoning or renouncing one's country, and becoming the citizen or*
 12 *subject of another.*" [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 576]

13 Notice they didn't say a word about "nationality" and "allegiance" in the above definition because the lawyers who wrote
 14 this don't want their "tax slaves" to know how to escape the federal plantation! The chains that bind the slaves to the
 15 plantation are deceitful "words of art" found in the laws and doctrines of the Pharisees that keep people from learning the
 16 truth. The Bible warned us this would happen and we shouldn't be surprised:

17 *Then Jesus said to them, "Take heed and beware of the leaven [teachings, laws, doctrine, and publications] of*
 18 *the Pharisees [lawyers] and the Sadducees." ...How is it you do not understand that I did no speak to you*
 19 *concerning bread?—but to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the Sadducees." Then they understood*
 20 *that He did not tell them to beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine [legal dictionaries, laws, and*
 21 *teachings] of the Pharisees and Sadducees. [Matt. 16:6,11,12; Bible, NKJV]*

22 The courts have ruled that expatriation is a natural right essential to the protection of one's liberty:

23 *"Almost a century ago, Congress declared that "the right of expatriation [including expatriation from the*
 24 *District of Columbia or "U.S. Inc", the corporation] is a natural and inherent right of all people, indispensable*
 25 *to the enjoyment of the rights of life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness," and decreed that "any declaration,*
 26 *instruction, opinion, order, or decision of any officers of this government which denies, restricts, impairs, or*
 27 *questions the right of expatriation, is hereby declared inconsistent with the fundamental principles of this*
 28 *government." 15 Stat. 223-224 (1868), R.S. § 1999, 8 U.S.C. § 800 (1940).¹³³ Although designed to apply*
 29 *especially to the rights of immigrants to shed their foreign nationalities, that Act of Congress "is also broad*
 30 *enough to cover, and does cover, the corresponding natural and inherent right of American citizens to*
 31 *expatriate themselves." Savorgnan v. United States, 1950, 338 U.S. 491, 498 note 11, 70 S. Ct. 292, 296, 94 L.*
 32 *Ed. 287.¹³⁴ The Supreme Court has held that the Citizenship Act of 1907 and the Nationality Act of 1940 "are to*
 33 *be read in the light of the declaration of policy favoring freedom of expatriation which stands unrepealed." Id.,*
 34 *338 U.S. at pages 498-499, 70 S. Ct. at page 296. That same light, I think, illuminates 22 U.S.C.A. § 211a and 8*
 35 *U.S.C.A. § 1185." [Walter Briehl v. John Foster Dulles, 248 F2d 561, 583 (1957)]*

36 As we stated earlier in section 4.11, your citizenship/nationality status is voluntary according to the supreme Court¹³⁵,
 37 which means that any type of citizenship or nationality status you may have may be voluntarily abandoned or renounced by
 38 you at any time without the permission of anyone in the government, as long as you follow the prescribed procedures in
 39 place if there are any. The U.S. supreme Court has also said that the citizenship "contract" is a one way contract. Once the
 40 government makes this contract with you, they cannot renege on it and take away your citizenship or nationality because
 41 otherwise they could use this ability to politically persecute you and exile you, as so many other countries do throughout
 42 the world to their dissenters. Only you can therefore initiate the process of losing your privileged "U.S. citizenship" status
 43 as a voluntary act not under compulsion.

44 *"In our country the people are sovereign and the Government cannot sever its relationship to the people by*
 45 *taking away their citizenship. Our Constitution governs us and we must never forget that our Constitution*
 46 *limits the Government to those powers specifically granted or those that are necessary and proper to carry out*
 47 *the specifically granted ones. The Constitution, of course, grants Congress no express power to strip people of*

¹³³ See Carrington, Political Questions: The Judicial Check on the Executive, 42 Va.L.Rev. 175 (1956).

¹³⁴ 9 Pet. 692, 34 U.S. 692, 699, 9 L. Ed. 276.

¹³⁵ See United States v. Cruikshank, 92 U.S. 542 (1875)

1 their citizenship, whether in the exercise of the implied power to regulate foreign affairs or in the exercise of
2 any specifically granted power.

3 [...]

4 “The entire legislative history of the 1868 Act makes it abundantly clear that there was a strong feeling in the
5 Congress that the only way the citizenship it conferred could be lost was by the voluntary renunciation or
6 abandonment by the citizen himself. And this was the unequivocal statement of the Court in the case of *United*
7 *States v. Wong Kim Ark*, **Error! Bookmark not defined.**” [*Afroyim v. Rusk*, 387 U.S. 253; 87 S.Ct. 1660
8 (1967)]

9 Because all “U.S. citizens” are also “U.S. nationals” under 8 U.S.C. §1401 (see beginning), then if you are a privileged
10 “U.S. citizen”, you actually have *two* types of statutory citizenship or nationality that you can renounce or surrender
11 voluntarily. [Title 8, Chapter 12, Subchapter III, Part III](#) define the rules for expatriating your *nationality*, but conspicuously
12 say *nothing* about how to eliminating *only* one’s privileged “U.S. citizen” status without removing your “U.S. national”
13 status. Knowing what we know now about our covetous politicians and how they try to use your privileged “U.S. citizen”
14 status as a justification to have jurisdiction over you and control and tax you, does it then surprise you that that the Master
15 won’t tell the slaves how to loose their chains?

16 You will find that there is a lot of confusion in the patriot community over the distinctions between “U.S. citizen” and
17 “U.S. national” and “state U.S. national” status, and the government likes to add as much to this confusion as they can so
18 they can keep you from gaining your freedom. It is quite common for people to try to tell you that you should renounce
19 your nationality to become a “state citizen” to regain your sovereignty and stop paying income taxes and they will try to
20 sell you an “expatriation” package for upwards of \$2,500 that will eliminate your nationality. However, you don’t always
21 need to eliminate your “U.S. national” status in order to *not* be a federal “U.S. citizen” under federal statutes and this point
22 is so very important that we repeat it in several places in this book. For example, Eddie Kahn (<http://www.eddiekahn.com>)
23 will try to sell you an expatriation package for \$495 that he says will eliminate your *nationality*, but you don’t want to do
24 this if you work for the government or the military and hold a security clearance. Doing this can be *disastrous* because you
25 can’t hold a federal security clearance *without* being either a “U.S. citizen” or a “U.S. national”! If you are an officer in the
26 U.S. military, you also must forfeit your commission (10 U.S.C. §532(a)(1)) and your retirement benefits (see Chapter 6 of
27 DOD 7000.14-R, Volume 7B, "Military Pay Policy and Procedures for Retired Pay." Chapter 6 is "Foreign Citizenship
28 after Retirement.") if you renounce your “U.S. citizen” status! Because some people confuse “U.S. citizen” status with
29 “U.S. national” status, they therefore get themselves in a heap of trouble. Another way they get themselves in trouble is [26](#)
30 [U.S.C. §877](#) establishes a penalty for “Expatriation to avoid tax”, and remember that expatriation, in that context means
31 loss of *nationality* and not loss of “U.S. citizen” status. The government can’t penalize you for surrendering your “U.S.
32 citizen” status under this section but they definitely try to penalize you for losing your nationality! Watch out because you
33 don’t want to make more trouble for yourself!

34 If you want to have your liberties back, the only way you will get them back is to abandon or renounce your privileged
35 federal “U.S. citizen” status under 8 U.S.C. §1401, and the federal government will give you *absolutely no help* and no law
36 or administrative procedure that tells you how to do this because they don’t quite frankly want you doing it! The only
37 reason the federal government might think you have this status to begin with is because of incorrect “presumptions” that
38 bias your rights, and these presumptions in most cases are documented in the paperwork they maintain about you. Whether
39 you change or amend government records from a federal “U.S. citizen” under 8 U.S.C. §1401 to being either a “U.S.
40 national” under 8 U.S.C. §1408 or a “state U.S. national” depends on your needs and is up to you. We give you a detailed
41 procedure in section 3.5.3.13 of our *Tax Freedom Solutions Manual* for eliminating your “U.S. citizen” status but not your
42 “U.S. national” status. If you want to expatriate your “nationality” instead of abandon your “U.S. citizen” status, the
43 procedure is the same but the document is slightly different. It was difficult to develop this procedure because as we just
44 pointed out, the government gives you absolutely no help, no administrative procedure, no regulations, and no laws that tell
45 you how to do this for obvious reasons. We have a sample document in section 9.7.9 of our *Tax Freedom Solutions*
46 *Manual* for abandoning or renouncing your privileged “U.S. citizen” under 8 U.S.C. §1401. We don’t provide forms or
47 procedures for expatriating your “nationality” or “U.S. national” status under 8 U.S.C. §1408 because we have never had an
48 occasion to do it and we don’t recommend it to anyone.

49 When you renounce your privileged “U.S. citizen” status to become a nonprivileged “U.S. national”, you must keep the
50 following very important considerations in mind:

1. Before you institute the process of correcting government records to eliminate false presumptions of federal “U.S. citizen” status under 8 U.S.C. §1401, you should read and understand this chapter completely, so the government can’t pull any fast ones on you during the process.
2. Ensure that you have evidence and documentation you can use in court if you ever need it of every step you take in the renunciation process. You may need it later if you ever end up in court. For instance, everything you send should be notarized with a proof of service and you should keep the original copy and send the copy to the government. Original documents are easier to get admitted into evidence in court than are photocopies, and this will become very important in the future if you ever have to litigate over your citizenship status.
3. Be careful! The government will go fishing for any excuse they can to call you an 8 U.S.C. §1401 federal “U.S. citizen” because that is how they draw you into their jurisdictional spider web and suck your blood dry. You should never admit to ever having been a “U.S. citizen” either verbally or in writing, and every piece of paper they show either you or a court claiming or indicating that you are a “U.S. citizen” should be rebutted as being mistaken, fraudulent, and submitted under duress. For instance, if they pull out an old passport application in which you claimed to be a “U.S. CITIZEN”, then you should correct them by saying you are a “U.S. national” and say that you were mistaken and misinformed at the time. Then show them your renunciation document and your birth certificate clearly showing that you were not born on federal land. If you don’t rebut such evidence or offer counter-evidence, then the court and the jury will erroneously assume that you agree with your opponent that you are a “U.S. citizen”, which would be a disaster. Shift the burden of proving that you are a “U.S. citizen” to them when you can. Insist that NOTHING be presumed and everything be proven so that your due process rights under the Fifth and Sixth Amendments are respected.
4. You must abandon your 8 U.S.C. §1401 federal “U.S. citizen” status completely voluntarily and without any kind of duress or compulsion. This means you can’t be doing it for financial reasons, for instance, to avoid taxes because you are in a bind, or the courts will not honor your renunciation. Never admit to being under financial duress in renouncing citizenship, even if you indeed are.
5. You should never tell the government you are renouncing your “nationality” in order to avoid paying taxes, because then they may try to incorrectly apply 26 U.S.C. §877 in order to try penalize you by forcing you to pay taxes for a ten year period after you renounce your “U.S. citizenship”.
6. You aren’t obligated to explain to anyone why you renounced your citizenship but if you get backed into a corner by an itinerant judge, for instance, into telling people why you did it, you should always say that you did it in order to protect and preserve your liberties by making yourself a nonprivileged person. Remind them that you can’t be a sovereign individual if you are receiving government privileges and that personal sovereignty is your goal.
7. You should emphasize to every government representative during the renunciation process that you are not eliminating your “U.S. national” status or your allegiance to the “United States”, but your “U.S. citizen” status
8. Don’t let any government agent try to talk you out of the renunciation process or try to confuse you by saying that they don’t have any procedures to do it so it must not be authorized. They will try to do this because they don’t want you doing it or because, more often, they are just plain ignorant of the law, which is why they are government slaves to begin with. Of course it is authorized because the courts said you could do it in our cite above from *Briehl* and they even said why you can do it: to protect your liberties. Remember that you can’t have liberty or live in a free country if citizenship status isn’t voluntary, and just tell them you don’t want to volunteer to be a “U.S. citizen” and want to only be a “U.S. national”, and because all “U.S. citizens” are also “U.S. nationals”, they can’t take away your national status and you don’t want to lose that.
9. Because the extortionists in the federal government don’t want to give you your freedom, they are likely to resist correcting your citizenship status to that of a “U.S. national”. Because of this, they are likely to drag their feet, conveniently lose your correspondence, and delay providing you your “Certificate of non-Citizen National Status” under 8 U.S.C. §1452. You may therefore need to use a third party notary to help you and serve them with a Notice of Default with a Proof of Service after the time period for responding to your 8 U.S.C. §1452 request has expired.
10. We recommend using our citizenship abandonment/amendment procedure found in section 3.5.3.13 of our *Tax Freedom Solutions Manual* to ensure that you accomplish all the necessary steps properly.
11. We don’t have a paralegal we can recommend to help you with your citizenship amendment process as documented in this book. You will just have to be resourceful and locate your own. Please don’t call us to ask about this either because we not only won’t help you, but we will ask you why you didn’t follow our directions.

4.11.10 How the Government Has Obfuscated the Citizenship Issue to Fool us into Falsely Admitting to be “U.S. citizens” under the Internal Revenue Code

1 This section builds on the content of section 4.11.3.7 earlier, where we talked about definitions of U.S. citizenship terms.
 2 We state throughout this book that the definitions of terms used are *extremely* important, and that when the government
 3 wants to usurp additional jurisdiction beyond what the Constitution authorizes, it starts by confusing and obfuscating the
 4 definition of key terms. The courts then use this confusion and uncertainty to stretch their interpretation of legislation in
 5 order to expand government jurisdiction, in what amounts to “judge-made law”. This in turn transforms our government of
 6 “laws” into a government of “men” in violation of the intent of the Constitution (see *Marbury v. Madison*, 5 U.S. 137
 7 (1803)). You will see in this section how this very process has been accomplished with the citizenship issue. The purpose
 8 of this section is therefore to:

- 9 • Provide definitions of the key and more common terms used both by the Federal judiciary courts and the
 Legislative branch in Title 8 so that you will no longer be deceived.
- 11 • Show you how the government and the legal profession have obfuscated key citizenship terms over the years to
 12 expand their jurisdiction and control over Americans beyond what the Constitution authorizes.

13 As expected, we found no authoritative legal publications that explain *how* the government and the law profession have
 14 obfuscated citizenship definitions so as usual, we had to study several cases on citizenship, read Title 8 (“Aliens and
 15 Nationality”) of the U.S. Code repeatedly, and visit the law library repeatedly in order to completely decipher their
 16 deception on our own. The basic deception results from the following:

- 17 1. **The differences in meaning of the term “United States” between the U.S. Constitution and federal statutes.** The
 18 term “United States” in the Constitution means “United States” *the country*, while in federal statutes, the term “United
 19 States” means the *federal zone*.
- 20 2. **Differences between citizenship definitions found in Title 8, the Aliens and Nationality Code, and those found in**
 21 **Title 26, the Internal Revenue Code.** The term “nonresident alien” as used in Title 26, for instance, does *not* appear
 22 anywhere in Title 8 but is the equivalent of the term “U.S. national” found in 8 U.S.C. §1408.
- 23 3. **Differences between statutory citizenship definitions and the language of the courts.** The language of the courts is
 24 *independent* from the statutory definition so that it is difficult to correlate the term the courts are using and the related
 25 statutory definition. We will include in this section separate definitions for the statutes and the courts to make these
 26 distinctions clear in your mind.

27 We will start off by showing that no authoritative definition of the term “citizen of the United States” existed before the
 28 Fourteenth Amendment was ratified in 1868. This was revealed in the *Slaughter-House Cases*, 83 U.S. (16 Wall.) 36; 21
 29 L.Ed. 394 (1873):

30 *“The 1st clause of the 14th article was primarily intended to confer citizenship of the United States and*
 31 *citizenship of the states, and it recognizes the distinction between citizenship of a state and citizenship of the*
 32 *United States by those definitions.*

33 *“The 1st section of the 14th article, to which our attention is more specifically invited, opens with a definition of*
 34 *citizenship—not only citizenship of the United States, but citizenship of the states. No such definition was*
 35 *previously found in the Constitution, nor had any attempt been made to define it by act of Congress. It had*
 36 *been the occasion of much discussion in the courts, by the executive departments and in the public journals.*
 37 *It had been said by eminent judges that no man was a citizen of the United States except as he was a citizen*
 38 *of one of the state comprising the Union. Those, therefore, who had been born and resided always in the*
 39 *District of Columbia or in the territories, though within the United States, were not citizens.”*

40 [...]

41 *“To remove this difficulty primarily, and to establish a clear and comprehensive definition of citizenship*
 42 *which should declare what should constitute citizenship of the United States and also citizenship of a state,*
 43 *the 1st clause of the 1st section [of the Fourteenth Amendment] was framed:*

44 *‘All persons born or naturalized in the United States and subject to the jurisdiction thereof are citizens of the*
 45 *United States and of the state wherein they reside.’*

46 *“The first observation we have to make on this clause is that it puts at rest both the questions which we stated to*
 47 *have been the subject of differences of opinion. It declares that persons may be citizens of the United States*
 48 *without regard to their citizenship of a particular state, and it overturns the Dred Scott decision by making all*
 49 *persons born within the United States and subject to its jurisdiction citizens of the United States. That its main*
 50 *purpose was to establish the citizenship of the negro can admit of no doubt. The phrase ‘subject to its*

jurisdiction” was intended to exclude from its operation children of ministers, consuls and citizens or subjects of foreign states born within the United States.”

“The next observation is more important in view of the arguments of counsel in the present case. **It is that the distinction between citizenship of the United States and citizenship of a state is clearly recognized and established. Not only may a man be a citizen of the United States without being a citizen of a state, but an important element is necessary to convert the former into the latter. He must reside within the state to make him a citizen of it but it is only necessary that he should be born or naturalized in the United States to be a citizen of the Union.**

It is quite clear, then, that there is a citizenship of the United States, and a citizenship of a state, which are distinct from each other and which depend upon different characteristics or circumstances of the individual.”

[Slaughter-House Cases, 83 U.S. (16 Wall.) 36; 21 L.Ed. 394 (1873)]

A careful reading of *Boyd v. Nebraska*, 143 U.S. 135 (1892) helps clarify the true meaning of the term “citizen of the United States” in the context of the U.S. Constitution and the rulings of the U.S. Supreme Court. It shows that a “citizen of the United States” is indeed a “national of the United States” in the context of federal statutes only:

“Mr. Justice Story, in his *Commentaries on the Constitution*, says: **‘Every citizen of a state is ipso facto a citizen of the [143 U.S. 135, 159] United States.’** Section 1693. And this is the view expressed by Mr. Rawle in his work on the Constitution. Chapter 9, pp. 85, 86. Mr. Justice CURTIS, in *Dred Scott v. Sandford*, 19 How. 393, 576, expressed the opinion that under the constitution of the United States **‘every free person, born on the soil of a state, who is a citizen of that state by force of its constitution or laws, is also a citizen of the United States.’** And Mr. Justice SWAYNE, in *The Slaughter-House Cases*, 16 Wall. 36, 126, declared that **‘a citizen of a state is ipso facto a citizen of the United States.’** But in *Dred Scott v. Sandford*, 19 How. 393, 404, Mr. Chief Justice TENNEY, delivering the opinion of the court, said: ‘The words ‘people of the United States’ and ‘citizens,’ are synonymous terms, and mean the same thing. They both describe the political body who, according to our republican institutions, form the sovereignty, and who hold the power and conduct the government through their representatives. They are what we familiarly call the ‘sovereign people,’ and every citizen is one of this people, and a constituent member of this sovereignty. ... **In discussing this question, we must not confound the rights of citizenship which a state may confer within its own limits and the rights of citizenship as a member of the Union.** It does not by any means follow, because he has all the rights and privileges of a citizen of a state, that he must be a citizen of the United States. He may have all of the rights and privileges of the citizen of a state, and yet not be entitled to the rights and privileges of a citizen in any other state; for, previous to the adoption of the constitution of the United States, every state had the undoubted right to confer on whomsoever it pleased the character of citizen, and to endow him with all its rights. But this character, of course, was confined to the boundaries of the state, and gave him no rights or privileges in other states beyond those secured to him by the laws of nations and the comity of states. Nor have the several states surrendered the power of conferring these rights and privileges by adopting the constitution of the United States. Each state may still confer them upon an alien, or any one it thinks proper, or upon any class or description of persons; yet he would not be a citizen in the sense in [143 U.S. 135, 160] which that word is used in the constitution of the United States, nor entitled to sue as such in one of its courts, nor to the privileges and immunities of a citizen in the other states. The rights which he would acquire would be restricted to the state which gave them. The constitution has conferred on congress the right to establish a uniform rule of naturalization, and this right is evidently exclusive, and has always been held by this court to be so. Consequently no state, since the adoption of the constitution, can, by naturalizing an alien, invest him with the rights and privileges secured to a citizen of a state under the federal government, although, so far as the state alone was concerned, he would undoubtedly be entitled to the rights of a citizen, and clothed with all the rights and immunities which the constitution and laws of the state attached to that character.’ “ [Boyd v. Nebraska, 143 U.S. 135 (1892)]

Notice above that the term “citizen of the United States” and “rights of citizenship as a member of the Union” are described synonymously. Therefore, a “citizen of the United States” under the Fourteenth Amendment, section 1 and a “national of the United States” under 8 U.S.C. §1408 and 8 U.S.C. §1452 are synonymous. As you will see in the following cite, people who were born in a state of the Union always were “citizens of the United States” by the definition of the U.S. Supreme Court, which made them “nationals of the United States” under federal statutes. What the Fourteenth Amendment did was extend the privileges and immunities of “nationals of the United States” (defined under federal statutes) to those persons who were born in the District of Columbia and other federal territories. The cite below helps confirm this:

“The 1st section of the 14th article [Fourteenth Amendment], to which our attention is more specifically invited, opens with a definition of citizenship—not only citizenship of the United States, but citizenship of the states. **No such definition was previously found in the Constitution, nor had any attempt been made to define it by act of Congress.** It had been the occasion of much discussion in the courts, by the executive departments and in the public journals. **It had been said my eminent judges that no man was a citizen of the United States except as he was a citizen of one of the states composing the Union. Those therefore, who had been born and resided always in the District of Columbia or in the territories, though within the United States, were not citizens.**

1
2

Whether this proposition was sound or not had never been judicially decided.” [Slaughter-House Cases, 83 U.S. (16 Wall.) 36; 21 L.Ed. 395 (1873)]

3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11

We explained earlier in section 4.11.3.5 that the federal courts and especially the Supreme Court have done their best to confuse citizenship terms and the citizenship issue so that most Americans would be unable to distinguish between “U.S. national” and “U.S. citizen” status found in federal statutes. This deliberate confusion has then been exploited by collusion of the Executive Branch, who have used their immigration and naturalization forms and publication and their ignorant clerk employees to deceive the average American into thinking they are “U.S. citizens” in the context of federal statutes. Based on our careful reading of various citizenship cases mainly from the U.S. Supreme Court, Title 8 of the U.S. Code, Title 26 of the U.S. Code, as well as Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, below are some citizenship terms commonly used by the court and their correct and unambiguous meaning in relation to the statutes found in Title 8, which is the Aliens and Nationality Code:

1 Table 4-17: Citizenship terms

#	Term	Context	Meaning	Authorities	Notes
1	“nation”	Everywhere	In the context of the United States of America, a state of the union. The federal government and all of its possessions and territories are <i>not</i> collectively a “nation”. The “country” called the “United States” is a “nation”, but our federal government and its territories and possessions are <i>not</i> collectively a “nation”.	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. <i>Chisholm v. Georgia</i>, 2 Dall. (U.S.) 419, 1 L.Ed. 440 (1793) 2. Black’s Law Dictionary, revised Fourth Edition, 1968, p. 1176 under “National Government”. 3. <i>Hooven and Allison Co. v. Evatt</i>, 324 U.S. 652 (1945). 	The “United States of America” is a “federation” and not a “nation”. Consequently, our government is called a “federal government” rather than a “national government”. See section 4.6 for further explanation.
2	“U.S. National” or “non-citizen U.S. National”	Everywhere	“U.S. National” is a person born abroad, or in one of the 50 union states and not in the federal zone or an outlying possession or territory of the United States. All “U.S. nationals” owe their permanent allegiance to the “United States” under 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(22). Usually, either one or both of their parents are also “U.S. Nationals”.	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. 8 U.S.C. §1408. 2. 8 U.S.C. §1452. 3. 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(22). 4. 3C Am Jur 2d §2732-2752: Noncitizen nationality 	We could find no mention of the term “U.S. national” by the Supreme Court. We were told that this term was first introduced into federal statutes in the 1930’s.
3	“naturalization”	Everywhere	The process of conferring nationality and “ U.S. national ” status <i>only</i> , but not “U.S. citizen” status.	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(23): “The term “naturalization” means the conferring of nationality [NOT “citizenship” or “U.S. citizenship”, but “nationality”, which means “U.S. national”] of a state [of the union] upon a person after birth, by any means whatsoever.” 2. Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, page 1063 under “naturalization”. 	The U.S. Citizenship and Immigration Services (USCIS) is responsible for naturalization in the United States of America. Their “Application for naturalization”, Form N-400, only uses the term “U.S. citizen” and <i>never</i> mentions “U.S. national”. On this form, the term “U.S. citizen” must therefore mean “U.S. national” in the context of this form based on the definition of “naturalization”, but you can’t tell because the form doesn’t refer to a definition of what “U.S. citizen” means.
4	“expatriation”	Everywhere	“The voluntary renunciation or abandonment of nationality [not “U.S. citizenship” or “citizen of the United States” status] and allegiance.”	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. <i>Perkins v. Elg</i>, 307 U.S. 325, 59 S.Ct. 884, 83 L.Ed. 1320 (1939) 2. 8 U.S.C. §1401. 3. 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(22). 	Renouncing one’s “citizen of the United States” status and reverting to a “U.S. national” is not “expatriation”, because both “citizens of the United States” and “U.S. nationals” are “nationals of the United States” under 8 U.S.C. §1401 and 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(22).
5	“citizenship”	Everywhere	General term referring collectively to “nationals” of a political jurisdiction if no other context is given. This is consistent with the “innocent until proven guilty”	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. <i>Perkins v. Elg</i>, 307 U.S. 325, 59 S.Ct. 884, 83 L.Ed. 1320 (1939) 2. 8 U.S.C.A. §1401, Notes. See note 1 below. 3. <i>Slaughter-House Cases</i>, 83 U.S. (16 Wall.) 36; 	<i>Perkins v. Elg</i> , 307 U.S. 325 (1939) says: “ To cause a loss of citizenship in the absence of treaty or statute having that effect, there must be a voluntary action and such action cannot be

#	Term	Context	Meaning	Authorities	Notes
			presumptions that form the basis of our system of jurisprudence.	21 L.Ed. 394 (1873) 4. 3C Am Jur 2d §2732-2752 : Noncitizen nationality	<p>attributed to an infant whose removal to another country is beyond his control and who during minority is incapable of a binding choice. By the Act of July 27, 1868, Congress declared that "the right of expatriation is a natural and inherent right of all people". Expatriation is the voluntary renunciation or abandonment of nationality and allegiance. This implies that "loss of citizenship" and "expatriation", which is "loss of nationality" are equivalent.</p> <p><i>Slaughter-House Cases</i>, 83 U.S. 36 (1873) says: "The next observation is more important in view of the arguments of counsel in the present case. It is that the distinction between citizenship of the United States and citizenship of a state is clearly recognized and established [by the Fourteenth Amendment]. Not only may a man be a citizen of the United States without being a citizen of a state, but an important element is necessary to convert the former into the latter. <u>He must reside within the state to make him a citizen of it but it is not necessary that he should be born or naturalized in the [country] United States to be a citizen of the Union.</u></p> <p>"It is quite clear, then, that there is a citizenship [nationality] of the United States, and a citizenship [nationality] of a state, which are distinct from each other and which depend upon different characteristics or circumstances of the individual."</p>
6	"citizen" used <i>alone</i> and without the term "U.S." in front or "of the United States" after it	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> U.S. Constitution U.S. Supreme Court rulings 	A "national of the United States" in the context of federal statutes or a "citizen of the United States" in the context of the Constitution or state statutes unless specifically identified otherwise.	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> See <i>Minor v. Happersett</i>, 88 U.S. 162 (1874): <u>Citizen is now more commonly employed, however, and as it has been considered better suited to the description of one living under a republican government, it was adopted by nearly all of the States upon their separation from Great Britain, and</u> 	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> To figure this out, you have to look up federal court cases that use the terms "expatriation" and "naturalization" along with the term "citizen" and use the context to prove the meaning to yourself. In 26 CFR § 1.1-1, the term "citizen" as used

#	Term	Context	Meaning	Authorities	Notes
				<p><u>was afterwards adopted in the Articles of Confederation and in the Constitution of the United States. When used in this sense it is understood as conveying the idea of membership of a nation, and nothing more.</u>" [Minor v. Happersett, 88 U.S. 162 (1874)]</p> <p>2. See also Boyd v. Nebraska, 143 U.S. 135 (1892), which says: "The words 'people of the United States' and 'citizens,' are synonymous terms, and mean the same thing. They both describe the political body who, according to our republican institutions, form the sovereignty, and who hold the power and conduct the government through their representatives. They are what we familiarly call the 'sovereign people,' and every citizen is one of this people, and a constituent member of this sovereignty. ..." [Boyd v. State of Nebraska, 143 U.S. 135 (1892)]</p>	<p>means "U.S. citizen" rather than "U.S. national". The opposite is true of Title 8 of the U.S.C. and most federal court rulings. This is because of the definition of "United States" within Subtitle A of the Internal Revenue Code, which means the <u>federal zone only</u>.</p>
7	"citizen" used <u>alone</u> and without the term "U.S." in front or "of the United States" after it	State statutes	A national of a state of the Union.	<u>Law of Nations</u> , Vattel, Section 212.	Because states are "nations" under the law of nations and have police powers and exclusive legislative jurisdiction within their borders, then virtually all of their legislation is directed toward their own citizens exclusively. See section 4.9 earlier for further details on "police powers".
8	"citizen" used <u>alone</u> and without the term "U.S." in front or "of the United States" after it	Federal statutes including Title 26, the Internal Revenue Code and Title 8, Aliens and Nationality	Not defined anywhere in Title 8.	1. Defined in 26 CFR § 31.3121(e)-1. See Note 2.	This term is <u>never defined</u> anywhere in Title 8 but it is defined in 26 CFR § 31.3121(e)-1. You will see it most often on government passport applications, voter registration, and applications for naturalization. These forms <u>also</u> don't define the meaning of the term nor do they equate it to either "U.S. national" or "citizen of the United States". The person filling out the form therefore <u>must</u> define it himself on the form to eliminate the ambiguity or be presumed incorrectly to be a "citizen of the United States" under section 1 of the 14 th Amendment.
9	"United States citizenship"	Everywhere	The status of being a "U.S. national". Note that the term "U.S. citizen" looks similar	See "citizenship".	Same as "citizenship".

#	Term	Context	Meaning	Authorities	Notes
			but not identical and is <i>not</i> the same as this term, and this is especially true on federal forms.		
10	"citizens of the United States"	Everywhere	A collection of people who are "U.S. nationals" and who in most cases are not a "citizen of the United States" or a "U.S. citizen" under "acts of Congress" or federal statutes unless at some point after becoming "U.S. nationals", they incorrectly declared their states to be a "citizen of the United States".	See "citizenship".	Note that the definition of "citizen of the United States" and "citizens of the United States" are different.
11	"citizen of the United States"	Federal statutes	Person born in the <u>federal</u> United States in a federal <u>territory</u> over which the U.S. government is sovereign. States of the union are <i>not</i> territories or classified as "territory" of the federal government because they created the federal government. Instead, the states and the people in those states are sovereign over the federal government and that government is their <u>servant</u> , not their master. Not necessarily equivalent to "U.S. citizen" because this term is never defined anywhere in Title 8 or Title 26.	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 8 U.S.C.A. §1401. 3C AmJur.2d §2689 ("U.S. citizen"). 26 CFR § 31.3121(e)-1. United States v. Wong Kim Ark, 169 U.S. 649; 18 S.Ct. 456; 42 L.Ed. 890 (1898) Cunard S.S. Co. v. Mellon, 262 U.S. 100; 43 S.Ct. 504 (1923) 	Term "United States" in federal statutes is defined as federal zone so a "citizen of the United States" is a citizen of the federal zone only. According to the U.S. Supreme Court in the <i>Slaughter-House Cases</i> , 83 U.S. (16 Wall.) 36; 21 L.Ed. 394 (1873), this term was <i>not</i> defined before the ratification of the Fourteenth Amendment in 1868. Section 1 of the 14 th Amendment established the circumstances under which a person was a "citizen of the United States". Note that the terms "citizens of the United States" and "citizen of the United States" are nowhere made equivalent in Title 8, and we define "citizens of the United States" above differently.
12	"citizen of the United States"	State statutes U.S. Supreme Court Constitution	A "U.S. National" or "national of the United States" as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(21), 8 U.S.C. §1408 and 8 U.S.C. §1452.	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 8 U.S.C.A. §1408(2). <i>Slaughter-House Cases</i>, 83 U.S. (16 Wall.) 36; 21 L.Ed. 394 (1873) 3C Am Jur 2d §2732-2752: Noncitizen nationality 	8 U.S.C.A. §1401 notes indicates: " <i>The basis of citizenship in the United States is the English doctrine under which <u>nationality</u> meant birth within allegiance to the king.</i> "
13	"citizen of the Union"	Everywhere	A "national of the United States" or a "U.S. national"	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <i>Slaughter-House Cases</i>, 83 U.S. (16 Wall.) 36; 21 L.Ed. 394 (1873) 	" <i>Slaughter-House Cases</i> , 83 U.S. 36 (1873) says: "The next observation is more important in view of the arguments of counsel in the present case. It is that the distinction between citizenship of the United States and citizenship of a state is clearly recognized and established [by the Fourteenth Amendment]. Not only may a man be a citizen of the United States without being a

#	Term	Context	Meaning	Authorities	Notes
					citizen of a state, but an important element is necessary to convert the former into the latter. <u>He must reside within the state to make him a citizen of it but it is not necessary that he should be born or naturalized in the [country] United States to be a citizen of the Union.</u>
14	“U.S. citizen”	Title 26: Internal Revenue Code (which is a federal statute or “act of Congress)	Not defined anywhere in Title 8 that we could find. Defined in 26 CFR § 31.3121(e)-1, and there it means a resident of a territory or possession of the United States (federal zone).	1. Defined in 26 CFR § 31.3121(e)-1. See Note 2.	This term is <u>never defined</u> anywhere in Title 8 but it is defined in 26 CFR § 31.3121(e)-1. You will see it most often on government passport applications, voter registration, and applications for naturalization. These forms <u>also</u> don’t define the meaning of the term nor do they equate it to either “U.S. national” or “citizen of the United States”. The person filling out the form therefore <u>must</u> define it himself on the form to eliminate the ambiguity or be presumed incorrectly to be a “citizen of the United States” under section 1 of the 14 th Amendment.

1

NOTES FROM THE ABOVE TABLE:

1. 8 U.S.C.A. §1401 under “Notes”, says the following:

“The right of citizenship, as distinguished from alienage, is a national right or condition, and it pertains to the confederated sovereignty, the United States, and not to the individual states. *Lynch v. Clarke*, N.Y.1844, 1 Sandf.Ch. 583”

“By ‘citizen of the state’ is meant a citizen of the United States whose domicile is in such state. *Prowd v. Gore*, 1922, 207 P. 490, 57 Cal.App. 458”

“One who becomes citizen of United States by reason of birth retains it, even though by law of another country he is also citizen of it.”

“The basis of citizenship in the United States is the English doctrine under which **nationality** meant birth within allegiance to the king.”

2. 26 CFR § 31.3121(e)-1 defines “U.S. citizen” as follows:

[26 CFR 31.3121\(e\)-1 State, United States, and citizen.](#)

(b)...The term ‘citizen of the United States’ includes a citizen of the Commonwealth of Puerto Rico or the Virgin Islands, and, effective January 1, 1961, a citizen of Guam or American Samoa.

We put the term “U.S. citizen” last in the above table because we would now like to expand upon it. We surveyed the election laws of all 50 states to determine which states require persons to be either “U.S. citizens” or “citizen of the United States” in order to vote. The results of our study are found on our website below at:

<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/LawAndGovt/Citizenship/PoliticalRightsvCitizenshipByState.htm>

If you look through all the state statutes on voting above, you will find that only California, Indiana, Texas, Virginia, and Wisconsin require you to be either a “U.S. citizen” or a “United States citizen” in order to vote, and *none* of these five states even define in their election code what these terms mean! 26 other states require you to be a “citizen of the United States” and don’t define that term in their election code either! This means that a total of 31 of the 50 states positively require some type of citizenship related to the term “United States” in order to be eligible to vote and none of them define what it means. Because none of the state election laws define the term, then the legal dictionary definition applies. We looked in Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition and found no definition for either “U.S. citizen” or “citizen of the United States”. Therefore, we must rely *only* on the common definition rather than any legal definition. We then looked for “U.S. citizen” or “citizen of the United States” in Webster’s Dictionary and they weren’t defined there either. Then we looked for the term “citizen” and found the following interesting definition in Webster’s:

“**citizen**. **1:** an inhabitant of a city or town; esp: one entitled to the rights and privileges of a freeman. **2 a:** a member of a state **b:** a native or naturalized person who owes allegiance to a government and is entitled to protection from it **3:** a civilian as distinguished from a specialized servant of the state—citizenry

syn CITIZEN, SUBJECT, NATIONAL mean a person owing allegiance to and entitled to the protection of a sovereign state. **CITIZEN is preferred for one owing allegiance to a state in which sovereign power is retained by the people and sharing in the political rights of those people; SUBJECT implies allegiance to a personal sovereign such as a monarch; NATIONAL designates one who may claim the protection of a state and applies esp. to one living or traveling outside that state.”**

[Webster’s Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 243]

Note in the above that the key to being a citizen under definition (b) is the requirement for allegiance. The only federal citizenship status that uses the term “allegiance” is that of a “national” or “U.S. national” as defined in 8 U.S.C.

1 §1101(a)(21) and 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(22)(B) respectively. Consequently, we are *forced* to conclude that the generic term
2 “citizen” and the statutory definition of “U.S. national” in 8 U.S.C. §1408 are equivalent.

3 We also looked up the term “citizen” in Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition and found the following:

4 *“citizen. One who, under the [Constitution](#) and laws of the [United States](#), or of a particular state, is a member of*
5 *the political community, **owing allegiance and being entitled to the enjoyment of full civil rights**. All persons*
6 *born or naturalized in the United States, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof, are citizens of the United States*
7 *and of the state wherein they reside. [U.S. Const., 14th Amend.](#) See [Citizenship](#).*

8 *“Citizens” are members of a political community who, in their associated capacity, have established or*
9 *submitted themselves to the dominion of a government for the promotion of their general welfare and the*
10 *protection of their individual as well as collective rights. [Herriott v. City of Seattle](#), 81 Wash.2d 48, 500 P.2d*
11 *101, 109.*

12 *The term may include or apply to children of alien parents from in United States, [Von Schwertmer v. Piper](#),*
13 *D.C.Md., 23 F.2d 862, 863; [U.S. v. Minoru Yasui](#), D.C.Or., 48 F.Supp. 40, 54; children of American citizens*
14 *born outside United States, [Haaland v. Attorney General of United States](#), D.C.Md., 42 F.Supp. 13, 22; [Indians,](#)*
15 *[United States v. Hester](#), C.C.A.Okl., 137 F.2d 145, 147; [National Banks, American Surety Co. v. Bank of](#)*
16 *[California](#), C.C.A.Or., 133 F.2d 160, 162; nonresident who has qualified as administratrix of estate of deceased*
17 *resident, [Hunt v. Noll](#), C.C.A.Tenn., 112 F.2d 288, 289. However, neither the United States nor a state is a*
18 *citizen for purposes of diversity jurisdiction. [Jizemerjian v. Dept of Air Force](#), 457 F.Supp. 820. On the other*
19 *hand, municipalities and other local governments are deemed to be citizens. [Rieser v. District of Columbia](#),*
20 *563 F.2d 462. A corporation is not a citizen for purposes of privileges and immunities clause of the Fourteenth*
21 *Amendment. [D.D.B. Realty Corp. v. Merrill](#), 232 F.Supp. 629, 637.*

22 *Under diversity statute [[28 U.S.C. §1332](#)], which mirrors [U.S. Const, Article III](#)’s diversity clause, a person is a*
23 *“citizen of a state” if he or she is a citizen of the United States and a domiciliary of a state of the United States.*
24 *[Gibbons v. Udaras na Gaeltachta](#), D.C.N.Y., 549 F.Supp. 1094, 1116.*

25 [*Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 244*]

26 So the key requirement to be a “citizen” is to “owe allegiance” to a political community according to Black’s Law
27 Dictionary. Under [26 U.S.C. §1101\(a\)\(21\)](#) and [26 U.S.C. §1101\(a\)\(22\)\(B\)](#), one can “owe allegiance” to the “United
28 States” as a political community *only* by being a “U.S. national” *without* being a “U.S. citizen” or a “citizen of the United
29 States” as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1401. Therefore, we must conclude once again, that “citizen of the United States” status
30 under federal statutes, is a political *privilege* that few people are born into and most acquire by mistake or fraud or both.
31 Most of us are “U.S. nationals” by birth and we *volunteer* to become “citizens of the United States” under 8 U.S.C. §1401
32 by lying at worst or committing a mistake at best when we fill out government forms. That process of misrepresenting our
33 citizenship status is how we “volunteer” to become “U.S. citizens” subject to federal statutes, and of course our covetous
34 government is more than willing to overlook the mistake because that is how they manufacture “taxpayers” and make
35 people “subject” to their corrupt laws. Remember, however, what the term “subject” means from Webster’s above under
36 the definition of the term “citizen”:

37 *“SUBJECT implies allegiance to a personal sovereign such as a **monarch**.”*

38 [*Webster’s Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 243*]

39 Therefore, to be “subject” to the federal government’s legislation and statutes and “Acts of Congress” is to be *subservient*
40 to them, which means that you voluntarily gave up your sovereignty and recognized that they have now become your
41 “monarch” and you are their “servant”. You have turned the Natural Order and hierarchy of sovereignty described in
42 section 4.1 upside down and made yourself into a *voluntary slave*, which violates of the Thirteenth Amendment if your
43 consent in so doing was not fully informed and the government didn’t apprise you of the rights that you were voluntarily
44 giving up by becoming a “citizen of the United States”.

45 *“Waivers of Constitutional rights not only must be voluntary, but must be knowing, intelligent acts done with*
46 *sufficient awareness of the relevant circumstances and likely consequences.”*

47 [*Brady v. U.S., [397 U.S. 742](#) (1970)*]

In conclusion, because there isn't even a common definition of "citizen of the United States" or "U.S. citizen" in the standard dictionary, then the definition of "U.S. citizen" in all the state statutes and on all government forms is up to us! Therefore, once again, whenever you fill out any kind of form that specifies either "U.S. citizen" or "citizen of the United States", you should be very careful to clarify that it means "U.S. National" under 8 U.S.C. §1408 and 8 U.S.C. §1452 or you will be "presumed" to be a federal citizen and a "citizen of the United States" under 8 U.S.C. §1401, and this is one of the biggest injuries to your rights that you could ever inflict. Watch out folks! Here is the definition we recommend that you use on any government form that uses these terms that makes the meaning perfectly clear and unambiguous:

"U.S. citizen" or "citizen of the United States": A "U.S. National" defined in 8 U.S.C. §1408 and 8 U.S.C. §1452 who owes their permanent allegiance to the confederation of states called the "United States". Someone who was not born in the federal "United States" as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1101(a)(38). See sections 4.11.6 and 4.11.12 of the Great IRS Hoax book available for free downloading at:

<http://famguardian.org/Publications/GreatIRSHoax/GreatIRSHoax.htm>

4.11.11 Duties and Responsibilities of Citizens

So far, we have talked a lot about the "rights" of the various citizens, but what about the responsibilities and duties? What are the obligations of being a citizen? That's the subject of this section.

The main responsibility of any good citizen is to enforce the laws of the federal Constitution upon our state and federal governments. As they say:

"The price of freedom is eternal vigilance."

Eternal vigilance for the citizen must take many forms. Here are a few:

1. Obey all government laws that do not conflict with God's laws and/or our conscience while disobeying government laws that conflict, so that:
 - 1.1. We don't offend God or our moral beliefs by violating His laws.
 - 1.2. We don't hurt our fellow citizens or burden our government in prosecuting or punishing us for our crimes.
2. Taking complete and personal responsibility for defending our own life, liberty, property, and family as best that we can from encroachments by other citizens or especially the government. This will minimize the burden on government of defending us.
3. Taking personal responsibility for completely supporting ourselves so that we never become a burden to either the government or our fellow citizens who support the government:

"Make it your ambition to lead a quiet life, to mind your own business and to work with your hands, just as we told you, so that your daily life may win the respect of outsiders and so that you will not be dependent on anybody." [1 Thess. 4:9-12, Bible, NIV]

4. Recognizing that government is force and that force and charity are fundamentally incompatible.

"Government is not reason. It is not eloquence. It is a force, like fire: a dangerous servant and a terrible master" [George Washington]

Therefore, good citizens will:

- 4.1. Vote in such a way that we elect people into public office who do not allow government to involve itself in charity or social welfare programs.
- 4.2. Involve themselves in church and charitable causes, and giving to the needy, so that we don't get so selfish that government HAS to step in and take over the job of charity that we refuse to do.
- 4.3. Try to keep the tax rates down so that people have maximal control over their own labor and property.
- 4.4. Refuse to pay money to the government in "taxes" that will be used to support anything but the government, because this amounts to an abuse of the tax system. The legal definition of "taxes" demands that they may only be used to support the government, and not private citizens or private enterprises or private fortunes such as the federal reserve:

1 "To lay with one hand the power of government on the property of the citizen, and with the other to bestow it on
 2 favored individuals.. is none the less robbery because it is done under the forms of law and is called taxation.
 3 This is not legislation. It is a decree under legislative forms." *Loan Association v. Topeka*, 20 Wall. 655,
 4 (1874)

5 "A tax, in the general understanding of the term and as used in the constitution, signifies an exaction for the
 6 support of the government. **The word [tax] has never thought to connote the**
 7 **expropriation of money from one group for the benefit of another.**"
 8 [U.S. v. Butler, 297 U.S. 1 \(1936\)](#)

- 9 5. Being self-governing within our own families, so that we do not become subject to any type of government jurisdiction
 10 or laws in our normal everyday affairs. This will minimize the size and power of the government so that they don't
 11 become oppressive and don't have to become our "parens patriae" or parent. Our free Family Constitution describes
 12 how to do this at:

13 <http://famguardian.org/Publications/FamilyConst/FamilyConst.htm>

- 14 6. Continually educating oneself so that we cannot be deceived or controlled by government, or are unable to support
 15 ourselves and have to depend on government.

16 "The price of eternal vigilance is eternal education."

17 "Knowledge will forever govern ignorance; and a people who mean to be their own governors must arm
 18 themselves with the power which knowledge gives." -- James Madison (Letter to W.T. Barry, August 4, 1822)

- 19 7. Enforcing the U.S. Constitution upon the state and federal governments, and especially the Bill of Rights.
 20 7.1. Amendments 1 through 10 and 13 establish several rights that the federal government may not invade.
 21 7.2. The Fourteenth Amendment says the states may also not violate these rights either.
 22 8. The way citizens enforce the U.S. Constitution against the federal and state governments are as follows:
 23 8.1. Voting consistently in elections and picking the candidates who are honorable and will follow the Constitution
 24 and honor their promises. (the Ballot Box)

25 "A share in the sovereignty of the state, which is exercised by the citizens at large, in voting at elections is one
 26 of the most important rights of the subject, and in a republic ought to stand foremost in the estimation of the
 27 law." [Alexander Hamilton, *The Papers of Alexander Hamilton*, Harold C. Syrett, ed. (New York, Columbia
 28 University Press, 1962), Vol III, pp. 544-545.]

- 29 8.2. If candidates get elected who are not honorable, serving enthusiastically as a juror to nullify the bad laws they
 30 write. (the Jury Box)
 31 8.3. If jury nullification doesn't work, defend your property against government tyranny using your right to own
 32 firearms (the Cartridge Box)
 33 9. Making sure that our government doesn't become fiscally irresponsible and load us down with debt, and later use that
 34 as a justification to oppressively tax us:

35 "Funding I consider as limited, rightfully, to a redemption of the debt within the lives of a majority of the
 36 generation contracting it; every generation coming equally, by the laws of the Creator of the world, to the free
 37 possession of the earth He made for their subsistence, unincumbered by their predecessors, who, like them,
 38 were but tenants for life." --Thomas Jefferson to John Taylor, 1816. ME 15:18

39 "[The natural right to be free of the debts of a previous generation is] a salutary curb on the spirit of war and
 40 indebtedment, which, since the modern theory of the perpetuation of debt, has drenched the earth with blood, and
 41 crushed its inhabitants under burdens ever accumulating." --Thomas Jefferson to John Wayles Eppes, 1813. ME
 42 13:272

43 "We believe--or we act as if we believed--that although an individual father cannot alienate the labor of his son,
 44 the aggregate body of fathers may alienate the labor of all their sons, of their posterity, in the aggregate, and
 45 oblige them to pay for all the enterprises, just or unjust, profitable or ruinous, into which our vices, our
 46 passions or our personal interests may lead us. But I trust that this proposition needs only to be looked at by an
 47 American to be seen in its true point of view, and that we shall all consider ourselves unauthorized to saddle
 48 posterity with our debts, and morally bound to pay them ourselves; and consequently within what may be
 49 deemed the period of a generation, or the life of the majority." --Thomas Jefferson to John Wayles Eppes, 1813.
 50 ME 13:357

"It is incumbent on every generation to pay its own debts as it goes. A principle which if acted on would save one-half the wars of the world." --Thomas Jefferson to A. L. C. Destutt de Tracy, 1820. FE 10:175

To preserve [the] independence [of the people,] we must not let our rulers load us with perpetual debt. We must make our election between economy and liberty, or profusion and servitude. If we run into such debts as that we must be taxed in our meat and in our drink, in our necessities and our comforts, in our labors and our amusements, for our callings and our creeds, as the people of England are, our people, like them, must come to labor sixteen hours in the twenty-four, give the earnings of fifteen of these to the government for their debts and daily expenses, and the sixteenth being insufficient to afford us bread, we must live, as they now do, on oatmeal and potatoes, have no time to think, no means of calling the mismanagers to account, but be glad to obtain subsistence by hiring ourselves to rivet their chains on the necks of our fellow-sufferers." --Thomas Jefferson to Samuel Kercheval, 1816. ME 15:39

10. Watching what our government does like a hawk and:

- 10.1. Publicizing violations of the Constitution whenever you see them. This is what we do in Chapter 6 of this book by showing the history of how our civil servants have corrupted and debased our de jure government to make an unlawful de facto government.
- 10.2. Prosecuting specific wrongdoers working in government who violate the Constitutional rights of individuals using a Bivens action or a civil rights or discrimination lawsuit.

In America, the Republic, we most assuredly have separation of church and state, the First Amendment and the last paragraph, last sentence, of Article VI of the federal Constitution ensure this.

"Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof" [U.S. Constitution, First Amendment]

"...no religious Test shall ever be required as a Qualification to any Office or public Trust under the United States." [U.S. Constitution, Article VI]

A good government, however, is one whose laws do not conflict in any way with God's laws so that it does not expect citizens to violate their religious beliefs in order to obey its laws. Citizens do not enforce God's law directly on anyone but perhaps themselves, individually, and perhaps also within their own families, if they are believers. Nor do Constitutional governments enforce God's law directly on anyone or anything. No one in America, the Republic, is required to belong to any religious organization, or even believe if any God, to be a good person and a good citizen.

Governments are not ruled by God nor God's law but by the Law of the federal and state Constitutions. In fact, the Constitution is the only law that government has to obey and was established exclusively to obey. It says that right in the Constitution itself:

"**This Constitution**, and the Laws of the United States which shall be made in Pursuance thereof; and all Treaties made, or which shall be made, under the Authority of the United States, **shall be the supreme Law of the Land; and the Judges in every State shall be bound thereby, any Thing in the Constitution or Laws of any state to the Contrary notwithstanding.**" [U.S. Constitution, Article VI, Section 2]

The federal and state Constitutions express the will of the sovereign people as individuals ("We The People") and delegate specific but not exclusive authority to the federal and state governments. Any act by specific public servants in the government that is not authorized by either the federal or state Constitutions is an *illegal* act and good citizens will conscientiously prosecute government officials privately for such illegal acts if they injure the rights of anyone.

"**Unlawful.** That which is contrary to, prohibited, or unauthorized by law. That which is not lawful. The acting contrary to, or in defiance of the law; **disobeying or disregarding the law.** **Term is equivalent to "without excuse or justification."** State v. Noble, 90 N.M. 360, 563 P.2d 1153, 1157. While necessarily not implying the element of criminality, it is broad enough to include it." [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth, p. 1536]

When such an injury or violation of law occurs, the remedy is not to sue "the government", but to sue the public official personally because he was not acting under the authority of law and was abusing his public office for personal gain to the injury of sovereign citizens.

God and His law may be enforced against natural persons primarily and we ought to avoid applying them to the government in order to promote separation of church and state. However, when a government servant violates his authority

1 delegated through the Constitution and has thereby acted as a private individual to injure a fellow citizen, then we as the
 2 sovereigns sitting on a jury can and should apply God's moral laws or our conscience to determine how to punish the errant
 3 public servant and thereby protect our fellow aggrieved citizen. In exercising their duties as jurors, sovereign citizens may
 4 completely ignore all Supreme Court decisions and question the righteousness of any legislation and disregard any they feel
 5 unjust.

6 When we apply God's laws and/or our conscience as jurors, we should do so with much discretion by *not* publicizing
 7 exactly how or why we are doing this, but simply quietly do our best based on our behavior and our decision to ensure that
 8 a just result occurs that is consistent with our conscience and with God's moral laws. Remember that jurors do not have to
 9 explain or justify to a judge why they arrived at a decision. The only time that jurors might be called upon to explain their
 10 decision is to fellow jurors during deliberations. We shouldn't thump the Bible or get pious or become a missionary as a
 11 jurist, but simply talk about what is right and wrong in a generic sense.

12 *"But our rulers can have no authority over such natural rights, only as we have submitted to them. The rights of*
 13 *conscience we never submitted, we could not submit. We are answerable for them to our God. The legitimate*
 14 *powers of government extend to such acts as are injurious to others." -- Thomas Jefferson in "Notes on*
 15 *Virginia".*

16 Good citizens are constantly aware that government is a "business", or more properly, a "corporation" (see 28 U.S.C.
 17 §3002(15)(A)), and they know that the sinful and selfish tendency of those in government is to get into every business
 18 except the constitutional purpose of its creation, so they watch their government like a hawk.

19 *"Nothing is more essential to the establishment of manners in a State than that all persons employed in places*
 20 *of power and trust be men of unexceptionable characters. The public cannot be too curious concerning the*
 21 *character of public men." [Samuel Adams, The Writings of Samuel Adams, Harry Alonzo Cushing, editor*
 22 *(New York: G.P. Putnam's Sons, 1907), Vol. III, p. 236-237]*

23 *"Experience should teach us to be most on our guard to protect liberty when the Government's purposes are*
 24 *beneficent. Men born to freedom are naturally alert to repel invasion of their liberty by evil-minded rulers. The*
 25 *greatest dangers to liberty lurk in insidious encroachment by men of zeal, well-meaning but without*
 26 *understanding." [Justice Louis D. Brandeis, dissenting, Olmstead v. United States, 277 US 479 (1928)]*

27 The reason to be a citizen is to have liberty, which is simply freedom with personal responsibility. People who are free
 28 MUST govern and support themselves entirely and can be beholden to no man. In America, unlike in Europe, the "state"
 29 consists of the people and not some king or dictator who rules over them, and they govern themselves through their elected
 30 representatives.

31 *"State. A people permanently occupying a fixed territory bound together by common-law habits and custom*
 32 *into one body politic exercising, through the medium of an organized government, independent sovereignty*
 33 *and control over all persons and things within its boundaries, capable of making war and peace and of*
 34 *entering into international relations with other communities of the globe. United States v. Kusche, D.C.Cal., 56*
 35 *F.Supp. 201 207, 208. The organization of social life which exercises sovereign power in behalf of the people.*
 36 *Delany v. Moralitis, C.C.A.Md., 136 F.2d 129, 130. In its largest sense, a "state" is a body politic or a society*
 37 *of men. Beagle v. Motor Vehicle Acc. Indemnification Corp., 44 Misc.2d 636, 254 N.Y.S.2d 763, 765. A body*
 38 *of people occupying a definite territory and politically organized under one government. State ex re. Maisano*
 39 *v. Mitchell, 155 Conn. 256, 231 A.2d 539, 542. A territorial unit with a distinct general body of law.*
 40 *Restatement, Second, Conflicts, §3. Term may refer either to body politic of a nation (e.g. United States) or to*
 41 *an individual government unit of such nation (e.g. California)." [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p.*
 42 *1407]*

43 In our constitutional Republic, citizens as their own governors protect each other from government abuse and abuse by
 44 other citizens using legislation (laws) and the courts. In particular, citizens protect each other from government abuse when
 45 serving on a jury and when voting for a candidate. Christians cannot correctly disregard the duties of citizenship, such as
 46 voting and jury service, and at the same time obey Christ's command to love your neighbor, because the purpose of being a
 47 good citizen is to protect your neighbor from abuse by the government and other fellow citizens.

48 The only constitutional reason citizens vote for, or elect, any candidate to public office is with the understanding that the
 49 candidate will honor the oath of office. They do this in the name of preserving their liberty. The voter cannot
 50 rightly/correctly demand or "will" the candidate to do anything else simply because it is a Law of the Constitution the oath
 51 be taken before entering the office elected to as found in Article VI of the federal Constitution, last paragraph:

1 *"The Senators and Representatives before mentioned, and the Members of the several State Legislatures, and*
 2 *all executive and judicial Officers, both of the United States and of the several States, shall be bound by Oath or*
 3 *Affirmation, to support this Constitution; but no religious Test shall ever be required as a Qualification to any*
 4 *Office or public Trust under the United States." [U.S. Constitution, Article VI]*

5 This oath is also found in Article II, Section 1 of the Constitution:

6 *"*
 7 *Before he enter on the Execution of his Office, he shall take the following Oath or Affirmation: -- "I do*
 8 *solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will faithfully execute the Office of President of the United States, and will to*
 9 *the best of my Ability, preserve, protect and defend the Constitution of the United States." [U.S. Constitution,*
Article II, Section 1]

10 New citizens pledge allegiance to the Constitution when they are naturalized, and rightly so. See immigrant oath to become
 11 an American. The process of naturalization, in fact, is defined as the process of conferring nationality, which is then
 12 defined as someone who has allegiance:

13 [TITLE 8](#) > [CHAPTER 12](#) > [SUBCHAPTER I](#) > **Sec. 1101.**

14 *Sec. 1101. - Definitions*

15 **(a)** *As used in this chapter -*

16 *(23) The term "**naturalization**" means the conferring of nationality of a state upon a person after birth, by*
 17 *any means whatsoever.*

19 [TITLE 8](#) > [CHAPTER 12](#) > [SUBCHAPTER I](#) > **Sec. 1101.**

20 *Sec. 1101. - Definitions*

21 **(a)** *As used in this chapter -*

22 *(21) The term "**national**" means a person owing permanent allegiance to a state.*

23 As a matter of fact the definition of an American is a "citizen of the United States" under the Fourteenth Amendment,
 24 Section 1 and a "national of the United States" under 8 U.S.C. §1408 and 8 U.S.C. §1452 who pledges allegiance to the
 25 Constitution, and renounces any allegiance to any foreign country and or any King of any country. His duty as a citizen is
 26 the same as that of the Constitution, which is to promote the "general welfare":

27 *"We the People of the United States, in Order to form a more perfect Union, establish Justice, insure domestic*
 28 *Tranquillity, provide for the common defence, promote the general Welfare, and secure the Blessings of Liberty*
 29 *to ourselves and our Posterity, do ordain and establish this Constitution for the United States of America. "*
 30 *[Preamble to the Constitution]*

31 The above phrase means exactly what it says, "the general welfare, ...of the UNITED STATES", where "State" means the
 32 collection of people within a territory. It does not mean the government of that region, because that government may not be
 33 obeying the Constitution and to obey tyrants who are in violation of the Constitution is to commit treason.

34 Also in the body of the Constitution at Article I, Section 8 says; "general Welfare of the United States". "Welfare" in this
 35 case does **NOT** mean charity or socialism by any means. The Constitution, in fact, does *not* authorize the government to
 36 involve itself in any insurance or welfare program such as Medicare, Social Security, Food stamps, or any other program.
 37 Such programs are anathema to the legislative intent of the Constitution and result in government *dependence*, not personal
 38 sovereignty. The purpose of the Constitution is to ensure a separation of powers and the sovereignty of the people as
 39 individuals. Sovereignty and government-dependency are mutually exclusive. The original Articles of Confederation that
 40 preceded the Constitution, in fact, said that freeloaders were not entitled to the privileges and immunities of citizens!

41 *"The better to secure and perpetuate mutual friendship and intercourse among the people of the different States*
 42 *in this Union, the free inhabitants of each of these States, **paupers, vagabonds and fugitives***

1 **from justice excepted**, shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of free citizens in the
 2 **several States**; and the people of each state shall have free ingress and regress to and from any other State, and
 3 shall enjoy therein all the privileges of trade and commerce, subject to the same duties, impositions and
 4 restrictions as the inhabitants thereof respectively, provided that such restriction shall not extend so far as to
 5 prevent the removal of property imported into any state, to any other state of which the Owner is an inhabitant;
 6 provided also that no imposition, duties or restriction shall be laid by any state, on the property of the United
 7 States, or either of them.” [Article IV, Articles of Confederation]

8 Here is the definition of “paupers and vagabonds”:

9 **“Vagabond.** A vagrant or homeless wanderer **without means of honest livelihood.** *Neering v. Illinois Cent. R.*
 10 *Co.*, 383 Ill. 366, 50 N.E.2d 497, 502. One who wanders from place to place, having no fixed dwelling, or, if
 11 he has one, not abiding in it; a wanderer, especially such a person who is lazy and generally worthless without
 12 means of honest livelihood.” [Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1548]

13
 14 **“Vagrant.** At common law, wandering or going about from place to place by idle person who had **no lawful or**
 15 **visible means of support and who subsisted on charity and did not work, though able to do so.** *State v.*
 16 *Harlowe*, 174 Wash. 227, 24 P.2d 601. A general term, including, in English law, the several classes of idle
 17 and disorderly persons, rogues, and vagabonds, and incorrigible rogues. One who wanders from place to
 18 place; an idle wander, specifically, one who has no settled habitation, nor any fixed income or livelihood. A
 19 vagabond; a tramp. A person able to work who spends his time in idleness or immorality, having no property
 20 to support him and without some visible and known means of fair, honest, and reputable livelihood. *State v.*
 21 *Oldham*, 224 N.C. 415, 30 S.E.2d 318, 319. One who is apt to become a public charge through his own
 22 laziness. *People, on Complaint of McDonough, v. Gesino, Sp.Sess.*, 22 N.Y.S.2d 284, 285. See Vagabond;
 23 Vagrancy.” [Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1548]

24 Therefore, those who must draw from the government through charity or socialist welfare programs cannot have the rights
 25 or privileges of citizenship under the original Articles of Confederation, and that is exactly what happens to those who
 26 participate in our present Social Security or the government’s tax system.

27 **4.11.12 Citizenship Summary**

28 Having thoroughly covered all aspects of citizenship in this section, we will now summarize what we have learned by
 29 showing you how to practically apply it. Based on the previous section, we emphasize again the following important facts:

- 30 1. A “citizen of the United States” in the context of the Constitution and the rulings of the Supreme Court is equivalent to
 31 a “U.S. national” or “non-citizen U.S. national” in federal statutes, as defined in 8 U.S.C. §1408 and 8 U.S.C. §1452.
 32 2. A “U.S. citizen” in the context of federal statutes is equivalent to a “citizen and national of the United States” as
 33 defined in 8 U.S.C. §1401.
 34 3. All persons who are “U.S. nationals” under Title 8 of the U.S. Code are the equivalent of “nonresident aliens” as
 35 defined under 26 U.S.C. §7701(b)(1)(B), which is the tax code.

36 We will also summarize our findings using a table to help you understand the types of citizenship and how they relate to
 37 where you were born or naturalized. Choose the place you were born on the left and then go across the row to the columns
 38 that indicate “Yes”. The “Yes” columns indicate a type of citizenship that you have the right to choose under federal and
 39 state law. If more than one column indicates “Yes”, then you have multiple choices of which type of citizen you want to
 40 be.

1 **Table 4-18: Citizenship status based on place of birth or naturalization**

#	Place where born	Reference(s)	"U.S. citizen" (see 8 U.S.C. §1401)	"U.S. national" (see 8 U.S.C. §§1408, 1452)	"state U.S. national"	Notes
1	Federal zone:	Section 4.8	NA	NA	NA	
1.1	Federal enclave within a state	Sections 4.11.4, 4.11.6.1	No	Yes	No	You can choose to be either a "non-citizen U.S. national" or a "state U.S. national"
1.2	District of Columbia	8 U.S.C. §1401 (a)	Yes	No	No	
1.3	Federal territories	1. 8 U.S.C. §1401 (a) 2. 48 U.S.C.	Yes	No	No	Includes Puerto Rico, Guam, and the Virgin Islands.
1.4	Federal possessions	1. 8 U.S.C. §1408(1) 2. 48 U.S.C.	No	Yes	No	Includes American Samoa and Swain's Island.
2	State of the Union (outside of federal enclave)	1. 8 U.S.C. §1408(2) 2. 40 U.S.C. §255 3. <i>Law of Nations, Book I</i> , section 215	No	Yes	Yes	You can choose to be either a "non-citizen U.S. national" or a "state U.S. national"
3	Foreign country	1. 8 U.S.C. §1408(2) 2. <i>Law of Nations, Book I</i> , section 215	No	Yes (if either or both parents are "U.S. nationals")	Yes (if either or both parents are "state U.S. nationals")	Under the doctrine of " <i>jus sanguinis</i> ", an American, either or both of whose parents are "nationals of the United States" who is born in a foreign country is treated as a "U.S. national" or "national of the United States"

2 **NOTES:**

- 3 1. Throughout this book, the terms "U.S. national" and "non-citizen U.S. national" are used interchangeably.
- 4 2. The table above makes the simplifying assumption that at least one of your parents have the same citizenship status as you.
- 5 3. In practice, the law requires that at least one of your parents must have the same citizenship status as the one you choose.
- 6 4. In most cases, "non-citizen U.S. National" status and "State U.S. national" status are equivalent from a legal perspective.

7 You can also change your citizenship based on domicile and intent to be other than what you were born with. For instance, if you were born as a "U.S. citizen", you can
8 choose to be a "non-citizen U.S. national". Recall that the state you are a citizen of can also change based on your domicile and intent. For instance, if you were born in
9 California but you later move to Texas, and if you meet the Texas requirements for residency and live there with the *intent* to become a Texas national/citizen, then at
10 that point, you become a Texas national.

11 Another important thing to remember is that your residency can change your citizenship status as a "U.S. citizen".¹³⁶ If you were born in a federal territory like Puerto
12 Rico, which is "subject to **it's** jurisdiction" (federal zone), then you are a "U.S. citizen" under 8 U.S.C. §1401 and 26 CFR § 1.1-1(c). Because all "U.S. citizens" under

¹³⁶ See Sharon v. Hill, 26 F.337 (1885).

- 1 8 U.S.C. §1401 are also “nationals of the United States”, you can leave Puerto Rico and move to a state of the Union and become naturalized there and forfeit your
2 Puerto Rican citizenship. At the point that you move from a U.S. territory to a state of the Union and become naturalized in your new state, you can forfeit your “U.S.
3 citizen” status and revert to being “non-citizen U.S. national” or a “state national”.
- 4 We would like to close this section by summarizing the privileges and rights that go with each of the three citizenship statuses described in section 4.11 and following.
5 This table is also repeated later in section 3.5.3.13 of our *Tax Freedom Solutions Manual*.

1 **Table 4-19: Rights and privileges associated with each citizenship alternative**

#	Description	Section(s) where discussed	Applicable laws and regulations	“U.S. citizen”	“U.S. national”	“state U.S. national”
1	Can hold a U.S. security clearance?	5.6.12.5	SECNAVINST 5510.30A , Appendix I, page I-1	Yes	Yes	Yes
2	Can collect Social Security benefits?	5.6.12.5	Social Security Program Operations Manual (POM) section GN 00303.001 Social Security Program Operations Manual (POM) section GN 00303.001 (Local PDF, in case SSA removes this section to HIDE the truth and obstruct justice. Click here for details)	Yes	Yes	Yes
3	Can vote?	4.12.6.2	Voting laws in most states	Yes	Yes	Yes
4	Can serve on jury duty?	4.12.6.3	Jury service laws in most states	Yes	Yes	Yes
5	Must register for the military draft/Selective Service System?		See http://www.sss.gov/FSwho.htm	Yes	Yes	No
6	Can serve in U.S. military?		32 CFR § 1602.3(b)(1)	Yes	Yes	Yes
7	Can serve as officer in U.S. military?	4.12.3	10 U.S.C. §532	Yes	No	No
8	Can collect U.S. military retirement benefits?	3.5.3.13 of Tax Freedom Solutions Manual	Chapter 6 of DOD 7000.14-R, Volume 7B	Yes	Yes	Yes
9	Can get a U.S. passport?	3.5.3.13 of Tax Freedom Solutions Manual		Yes	Yes	Yes
10	Can hold a position in the civil service of the United States?		5 CFR §331.101	Yes	Yes	Yes

2 Finally, we’ve prepared a table showing the relationship between your “citizenship status” under Title 8 of the U.S. Code
 3 and your “tax status” under Title 26 of the U.S. Code.

4 **Table 4-20: “Citizenship status” vs. “Income tax status”**

Citizenship status	Where born	Defined in	Tax Status under 26 U.S.C./Internal Revenue Code		
			“Citizen” (defined in 26 CFR 1.1-1)	“Nonresident alien” (defined in 26 U.S.C. §7701(b)(1)(B))	“Alien/Resident” (defined in 26 CFR §1.1441-1(c)(3)(i) and 26 CFR §1.1-1(a)(2)(ii))
“U.S. citizen”	District of Columbia, Puerto Rico, Guam, Virgin Islands	8 U.S.C. §1401	Yes (only pay income tax abroad with IRS Forms 1040/2555. See Cook v. Tait, 265 U.S. 47 (1924))	No	No
“U.S. national ¹³⁷ ”	State of the Union; American Samoa; Swain’s Island; or abroad to U.S. national parents under 8 U.S.C. §1408(2)	8 U.S.C. §1408 8 U.S.C. §1452	No (see 26 U.S.C. §7701(b)(1)(B))	Yes (see IRS form 1040NR for proof)	No

¹³⁷ Also called a “non-citizen U.S. national”

Citizenship status	Where born	Defined in	Tax Status under 26 U.S.C./Internal Revenue Code		
			"Citizen" (defined in 26 CFR 1.1-1)	"Nonresident alien" (defined in 26 U.S.C. §7701(b)(1)(B))	"Alien/Resident" (defined in 26 CFR §1.1441-1(c)(3)(i) and 26 CFR §1.1-1(a)(2)(ii))
"state U.S. national"	State of the Union	8 U.S.C. §1408(2)8 U.S.C. §1452Fourteenth Amendment, Section 1	No	Yes	No
"Foreign national"	Foreign country	None	No	Yes (if living outside the federal United States/federal zone)	Yes

1 If we are a person born in a state of the Union, then what is the most accurate and unambiguous way to describe our
2 citizenship status and our rights? Below is what we recommend, and we have stated it several ways to make it as
3 unambiguous as possible. You are:

- 4 1. A "citizen of the United States" under the Fourteenth Amendment.
- 5 2. Not a "citizen of the United States" under federal statutes such as 8 U.S.C. §1401, because this is a person born only in
6 the District of Columbia, Puerto Rico, Guam, and the Virgin Islands.
- 7 3. A "non-citizen U.S. National" under 8 U.S.C. §1408 and 8 U.S.C. §1452.
- 8 4. A "national" of the state you were born in. Being a "national" simply means that you owe allegiance to your state. For
9 instance, if you were born in California, you are a "California national", because the states of the Union are treated as
10 independent nations by our constitution.
- 11 5. "subject to **the** jurisdiction" of the confederation of states called **the** "United States", but not necessarily to the
12 jurisdiction of federal statutes or "acts of Congress". The term "subject to the jurisdiction" simply means the **political**,
13 but not necessarily **legislative** jurisdiction.
- 14 6. Not subject to federal government legislative jurisdiction under most "acts of Congress" so long as you are domiciled
15 in a state of the Union and not living on federal territory ceded by the state to the federal government.
- 16 7. A sovereign individual whose rights are protected from federal encroachment by the Constitution and from State
17 encroachment by the Fourteenth Amendment and your state constitution.

18 If you would like to know more about correcting your citizenship status, we invite you to read and study section 3.5.3.13 of
19 our [Tax Freedom Solutions Manual](#).

20 **4.12 Two of You**

21 I suspect that on the day of your birth your parents gave you a name, and whatever that name is (we'll use mine to
22 illustrate), was spelled something like this: "Christopher Mark Hansen". Notice how it is spelled in both upper and lower
23 case.

24 This is my given name, and it is the one to which I respond to, in all matters concerning me, as a Creature of God with
25 Rights from God and as a Sovereign Citizen of the Republic of Illinois, one of the several States of the Union of States (The
26 united States of America).

27 I realize that seems like a mouth full. However, it is no less important than the Declaration of Independence, the U.S.
28 Constitution, or the Bill of Rights. Since this country was founded on the premise of individual freedom as espoused by
29 these very documents, it is up to us individually to continually remind ourselves of just who we are, and what are our
30 responsibilities to ourselves. Should we forget who we are (and most of us have), then we fall prey to those who would
31 misuse their power to rule over us. These documents guarantee our Rights. Only you can use them.

32 The other thing that happened when you were born is that the state and federal government also made an artificial or
33 corporate you in their databases under the Uniform Commercial Code.

1 While this may not seem obvious to you at the moment it is nonetheless significant, and has been used to trick, mislead, and
 2 confuse us all into doing things as Sovereign Citizens we surely would not have done had we only known these differences.
 3 This has been going on now for about 65 years, since Roosevelt and his “New Deals”.

4 What the government did was to create what is called a fictitious corporate “person”. Remember the interpretation of the
 5 Fourteenth Amendment and how the word “person” was placed in quotation marks? Well here it is.

6 The Secretary of State in each state maintains a listing of business and individual names upon which commercial liens can
 7 be registered under the Uniform Commercial Code. If your name is found in the state’s UCC database as a person who is
 8 either owed money or owes money, then the state is referring to the fictitious you rather than the natural you. This is the
 9 corporate you under commercial law. There are rules of precedence under the UCC whereby the first person to register a
 10 claim under your name in the UCC database will be reimbursed first. Some people will register a lien on their own name,
 11 claiming full rights to all their own property and assets, in order that if a third party tries to use the State’s UCC system and
 12 the courts to put a lien on them, then they can’t collect in the courts because the person already has a superceding lien under
 13 his own name on his own property. This is called “UCC redemption”.

14 Take a look at any paper money you might have, notice at the very top it reads, “Federal Reserve Note”. So, what is a
 15 NOTE? It is a promise to pay. It is not currency with intrinsic value that can be traded for gold or silver, which is the only
 16 currency the government was authorized. It is a debit and the ultimate owner of the note is the holder of the debt. In this
 17 case, the holder of the debt is those who own the Federal Reserve, not even the Federal Government, much less you and
 18 me.

19 It might help to think of this artificial or corporate “person” as your shadow. It follows you wherever you go, but
 20 sometimes, the things you do are actually meant for your shadow, not you. Yet, you answer to these things as though it
 21 were you, and in doing so, you have neglected to protect and reserve your Rights as a sovereign “Citizen”. There is a simple
 22 way to reverse this process and to avoid any further misunderstandings in the future as you shall soon discover.

23 **4.13 Contracts**

24 Article 1, Section 10 of the U.S. Constitution says:

25 *No State shall...pass any Bill of Attainder, ex post facto Law, or Law impairing the Obligation of Contracts, or*
 26 *grant any Title of Nobility.*

27 This clause is important, as it establishes the foundation of how to protect one’s assets from taxes and government seizure
 28 using trusts.

29 The Uniform Commercial Code (UCC) recognizes that it is possible for anyone of us to be commercially coerced into
 30 signing a contract that we would not sign had we true free agency. The UCC provides that if we sign a contract under such
 31 adverse conditions, and if we do so “without prejudice” or “under protest,” then we preserve all our rights. You can read
 32 the UCC for yourself at the following address:

33 <http://www.law.cornell.edu/ucc/ucc.table.html>

34 **The Uniform Commercial Code, Section 1-207, states:** Performance or Acceptance Under Reservation of Rights

35 *“A party who with explicit reservation of rights performs or promises performance or assents to performance in*
 36 *a manner demanded or offered by the other party does not thereby prejudice the rights reserved. Such words as*
 37 *‘without prejudice,’ ‘under protest’ or the like are sufficient.”*

38 If it is necessary to assert your rights in court, when the point is raised, here is a suggested testimony to offer when
 39 explaining what you meant when you claimed “without prejudice”:

40 *“It indicates I have exercised the remedy provided for me in the Uniform Commercial Code by which I might*
 41 *reserve the Common Law Right not to be compelled to perform under any contract that I have not entered*
 42 *knowingly, voluntarily, and intentionally. And furthermore, that notifies all administrative agencies of*

1 government that I do not accept the liability associated with the compelled benefits of any unrevealed
2 commercial agreement.”

3 The Uniform Commercial Code is Admiralty Law, which has come on shore. The “without prejudice” clause is the window
4 which enables one to assert their 7th Amendment guarantee of access to the Common Law.

5 Some people are putting the words, “without prejudice” on everything they sign, above their signature. E.g. they are putting
6 it on applications for driver's license, tax returns, voter registration, bank checks, gun purchases, etc. According to
7 Anderson's UCC annotated, you can only reserve those rights which you have. Whenever you sign anything you will give
8 to the government, it's a good idea to be explicit about your domicile/citizenship (capitalize Citizenship). It's a good idea
9 to capitalize the word “Citizen” and to deny any presumption of Fourteenth Amendment citizenship.

10 4.14 Our Rights

11 “Statesmen, my dear Sir, may plan and speculate for liberty, but it is Religion and Morality alone, which can
12 establish the Principles upon which Freedom can securely stand.

13 “The only foundation of a free Constitution is pure Virtue, and if this cannot be inspired into our People in a
14 greater Measure, than they have it now, they may change their Rulers and the forms of Government, but they
15 will not obtain a lasting liberty.” [John Adams, June 21, 1776]
16

17 “The smallest minority on earth is the individual. Those who deny individual rights, cannot claim to be
18 defenders of minorities.” -Ayn Rand

19 Based on the above discussion, we now proceed to define and explain our rights in detail.

20 4.14.1 No forced participation in Labor Unions or Occupational Licenses

21 “Among these unalienable rights, as proclaimed in that great document, is the right of men to pursue their
22 happiness, by which is meant the right to pursue any lawful business or vocation, in any manner not
23 inconsistent with the equal rights of others, which may increase their prosperity or develop their faculties, so as
24 to give to them their highest enjoyment. The common business and callings of life, the ordinary trades and
25 pursuits, which are innocuous in themselves, and have been followed in all communities from time immemorial,
26 must therefore be free in this country to all alike upon the same conditions. The right to pursue them, without let
27 or hindrance, except that which is applied to all persons of the same age, sex, and condition, is a distinguishing
28 privilege of citizens of the United States, and an essential element of that freedom which they claim as their
29 birthright. It has been well said that ‘THE PROPERTY WHICH EVERY MAN HAS IN HIS OWN LABOR, AS IT
30 IS THE ORIGINAL FOUNDATION OF ALL OTHER PROPERTY, SO IT IS THE MOST SACRED AND
31 INVOLABLE. The patrimony of the poor man lies in the strength and dexterity of his own hands, and to hinder
32 his employing this strength and dexterity in what manner he thinks proper, without injury to his neighbor, is a
33 plain violation of this most sacred property. It is a manifest encroachment upon the just liberty both of the
34 workman and of those who might be disposed to employ him. . . The right to follow any of the common
35 occupations of life is an inalienable right, it was formulated as such under the phrase ‘pursuit of happiness’ in
36 the declaration of independence, which commenced with the fundamental proposition that ‘all men are created
37 equal; that they are endowed by their Creator with certain inalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty,
38 and the pursuit of happiness.’ This right is a large ingredient in the civil liberty of the citizen. To deny it to all
39 but a few favored individuals, by investing the latter with a monopoly, is to invade one of the fundamental
40 privileges of the citizen, contrary not only to common right, but, as I think, to the express words of the
41 constitution. It is what no legislature has a right to do; and no contract to that end can be binding on
42 subsequent legislatures. . .” BUTCHERS' UNION CO. v. CRESCENT CITY CO., 111 U.S. 746 (1884)

43 The supreme Court, in the above finding, makes it very clear that granting a monopoly to a few favored individuals or a
44 government organization over the right to pursue certain occupations violates our fundamental civil liberties and the
45 constitution. This has the following implications, when you think about it:

- 46 1. The government should not and may not restrict entrance into certain occupations of individuals by laws requiring
47 licenses, or by restricting who may obtain a license.
- 48 2. The government should not and may not allow labor unions who have a majority in any given employer to compel
49 workers at that employer to join the union or be discriminated against because they won't join.

50 4.14.2 Property Rights

"Men are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights, -life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness;' and to 'secure, ' not grant or create, these rights, governments are instituted. That property which a man has honestly acquired he retains full control of, subject to these limitations: First, that he shall not use it to his neighbor's injury, and that does not mean that he must use it for his neighbor's benefit; second, that if the devotes it to a public use, he gives to the public a right to control that use; and third, that whenever the public needs require, the public may take it upon payment of due compensation." *Budd v. People of State of New York*, 143 U.S. 517 (1892)

4.14.3 No IRS Taxes

In the IRS 1040 Tax Guide Kit, it asks, "who is required to file a 1040 form?" The IRS's answer states, "all citizens of the United States no matter where they are located". Here then is how the IRS defines the United States:

TITLE 26, Subtitle F, CHAPTER 79, Sec. 7701(a)(9):

United States: The term "United States" when used in a geographical sense includes only the States and the District of Columbia.

TITLE 26, Subtitle F, CHAPTER 79, Sec. 7701(a)(10)

State: The term "State" shall be construed to include the District of Columbia, where such construction is necessary to carry out provisions of this title.

Substituting the definition for the term State into the definition for United States we arrive at what can only be described as a totally different meaning than what you and I have thought all along.

The term "United States" when used in a geographical sense includes only the District of Columbia and the District of Columbia. [emphasis added to illustrate substitution]

If you weren't born in the District of Columbia then you are not a "citizen of the United States" and you are not required to file an IRS 1040 Tax Return.

However, remember the part that said, "no matter where they are located." If you have ever declared yourself to be a "citizen of the United States" (that legislative entity - a Fourteenth Amendment "person" - a federal corporation), usually under penalty of perjury, then you are and you must file an IRS 1040 Tax Return (see SOLUTIONS).

4.14.4 No Gun Control

Bill of Rights - Article II (Second Amendment)

A well regulated Militia, being necessary to the security of a free state, the right of the people to keep and bear arms, shall not be infringed. [Underlines added]

We all know that the Militia is the People and every State Constitution I have read so states this. It is also clear that the Second Amendment is not a Right of the State. It states that this Right is merely "... necessary to the security of a free state, ..."

Further, it is often stated that the Bill of Rights limits the Federal Government in its attempts to govern (rule) the States and the People. It should be noted however, that the mere title is self explanatory "Bill of Rights". These articles of Rights (Amendments) are Rights of the People and/or the States. By implication, yes, they are limits of the Federal Government, including the State Governments in certain cases. The Second Amendment is one of those Rights, which limits both Federal and State Governments. Note it states "... the Right of the People ..." this is clearly not a Right of the State and is therefore a limit of the State as well as the Federal Government.

So, how is it that our various levels of government can pass what seems to be unconstitutional laws and get away with it in the courts?

One day, while searching for further insight into the laws, which we have come to accept as governing our access and use of arms (and our lives), I made a startling discovery, while rereading portions of the United States Code (USC) pertaining

1 to The Gun Control Act of 1968 (Public Law 90-618) (GCA), I noticed for the first time a table of definitions. The table
2 included a definition for the term "interstate or foreign commerce," which in turn describes the geographic boundaries for
3 which the GCA has jurisdiction. The following is the pertinent text: (If you have a FFL, see your Federal Firearms
4 Guidebook)

5 *US Code: Title 18, Section 921(a)(2) - Definitions:*

6 *The term "interstate or foreign commerce" includes commerce between any place in a State and any place*
7 *outside of that State, or within any possession of the United States (not including the Canal Zone) or the District*
8 *of Columbia, but such term does not include commerce between places within the same State but through any*
9 *place outside of that State.*

10 *The term "State" includes the District of Columbia, the Commonwealth of Puerto Rico, and the possessions of*
11 *the United States (not including the Canal Zone).*

12 The geographic boundaries of the United States are clearly described in the Constitution as the District of Columbia, its
13 possessions and territories:

14 *Article 1, Section 8, Clause 17*

15 *To exercise exclusive Legislation in all Cases whatsoever, over such District (not exceeding ten Miles square)*
16 *as may, by Cession of particular States, and the acceptance of Congress, become the Seat of the Government of*
17 *the United States, and to exercise like Authority over all Places purchased by the Consent of the Legislature of*
18 *the State in which the Same shall be, for the Erection of Forts, Magazines, Arsenals, dock-Yards, and other*
19 *needful Buildings;--And*

20 Note: the term, United States, is a noun, a proper name and title, describing the Federal (Central) Government, a separate
21 corporate entity, housed in the District of Columbia and is the offspring of the "We the People..."

22 However, in the above 921(a)(2) definition, the USC, in effect, has redefined the United States to only include the District
23 of Columbia, the Commonwealth of Puerto Rico, and the possessions of the United States. What happened to the
24 "Territories" (Guam, Virgin Islands, the Northern Mariana Islands, the American Samoa, etc.)? By this self-proclaimed-
25 redefinition, the "Territories" have, in effect, become the "any place outside that state" and as such satisfies the term
26 "foreign commerce".

27 Leaving the term "interstate commerce" to mean the District of Columbia, the Commonwealth of Puerto Rico and the
28 possessions.

29 As we then substitute the definition for the term "State" from the second sentence and the term "Territories", into the first
30 sentence, the passage then reads:

31 *The term "interstate or foreign commerce" includes commerce between any place in the District of Columbia,*
32 *the Commonwealth of Puerto Rico, and the possessions of the United States (not including the Canal Zone) and*
33 *the Territories of that District of Columbia, the Commonwealth of Puerto Rico, and the possessions of the*
34 *United States (not including the Canal Zone), or within any possession of the United States (not including the*
35 *Canal Zone) or the District of Columbia, but such term does not include commerce between places within the*
36 *same District of Columbia, the Commonwealth of Puerto Rico, and the possessions of the United States (not*
37 *including the Canal Zone) but through the Territories of that District of Columbia, the Commonwealth of*
38 *Puerto Rico, and the possessions of the United States (not including the Canal Zone). [emphasis added to*
39 *illustrate substitution]*

40 At first, this seems nonsensical. Nevertheless, note that nowhere is Iowa, Illinois, Indiana or any one of the other several
41 States mentioned (the reason for this overt omission I leave to the reader). However, at this point, it is safe to assume that
42 you are as surprised as I to discover that the Gun Control Act of 1968 applies only to the District of Columbia, the
43 possessions and territories of the United States, and not to any one of the several States.

44 To further demonstrate that the Federal Government, purposely and knowingly redefines ordinary words, consider another
45 definition found in CFR 27. This is the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms (BATF) section on the IMPORTATION
46 OF ARMS, AMMUNITION AND IMPLEMENTS OF WAR:

1 Title 27, Chapter I, Part 47, Section 47.11, Subpart B-Meaning of items

2 United States. When used in the geographical sense, includes the several States, the Commonwealth of Puerto
3 Rico, the insular possessions of the United States, the District of Columbia, and any territory over which the
4 United States exercises any powers of administration, legislation, and jurisdiction. [underline added]

5 Clearly, the Federal Government recognizes the several States as a separate entity, as it should and as is enumerate in the
6 Constitution. However, in this instance the term United States is being used in a collective sense, because this section of the
7 CFR is talking about the importation of arms from foreign countries, not the use or sale of *firearms* within the several
8 States.

9 Notice the use of the term "Arms" in the title of this Chapter of the BATF Code. In other definitions and codes
10 they use the term "Firearm". There is a legal distinction between the term "Arms" as used in the Second
11 Amendment and the term "Firearm" which infers a Federal privilege.

12 If Congress wanted to apply these various Codes and Acts to all the several States and the People, they need only include
13 the statement "several States and the People." But, this they did not do, because to do so would be in clear violation of the
14 intended restrictions of the Constitution of the United States of America.

15 At this point, you might ask, how is it that the Federal Government can claim jurisdiction over me? With respect to
16 firearms, the process was as simple as writing "Yes" when answering the question "are you a citizen of the United States?"
17 when completing form 4473 (9)(L) (the "yellow sheet") when purchasing a firearm from a Federally licensed dealer. Note
18 however, that it is not required to answer "yes" on the 4473 form. You can answer "no" and still purchase the gun. Read the
19 box at the bottom of the front page, it DOES NOT mention item (9)(L) as having to be answered "yes or no" to purchase a
20 firearm.

21 Recall the definition for the United States as examined earlier. Were you born in the District of Columbia, the
22 Commonwealth of Puerto Rico, or any of the Possessions or Territories of the United States? If not, you have just asserted
23 your own United States citizenship by answering "Yes" to the question on form 4473. Now that you have legally declared
24 yourself a citizen of the United States, and have signed the document, you have accepted its "terms and conditions", which
25 includes the entire USC and the CFR and are now subject to the jurisdiction of the Federal Government.

26 Were you ever curious about why, as individuals, we can buy and sell firearms between each other without completing a
27 form 4473? Well, the answer is that the 4473 form is a requirement only of the dealer who holds a Federal Firearms
28 License, not the People. The Federal Government has no authority over a sovereign Citizen and must rely on our ignorance
29 and complicity to persuade and trick us to complete the form. Ironically, the dealer is not required to do so either, nor is he
30 required to have an FFL, but has also been misled and influenced by the practice of redefining commonly used words. Once
31 again, the Federal Codes only applies to the United States (the District of Columbia, the possessions and territories) and to
32 the federal citizens thereof (no matter where they are located), not the several States or the People.

33 While the Constitution does enumerate congressional power and authority to the United States to govern itself [Article 1,
34 Section 8, Clause 17], it has no exclusive legislative authority over the several States or the People thereof.

35 However, the Constitution also states that, "No State shall enter into any...law impairing the Obligation of Contracts...".
36 By asserting United States citizenship on form 4473 and signing it, we enter into a private contract with the Federal
37 Government and agree to the terms and conditions of that contract. A contract being an agreement between two or more
38 people and their signatures, serve both to affirm the contract and to obligate them to the terms, conditions and performances
39 therein.

40 Article 1, Section 10

41 No State shall enter into any Treaty, Alliance, or Confederation; grant Letters of Marque and Reprisal; coin
42 Money; emit Bills of Credit; make any Thing but gold and silver Coin a Tender in Payment of Debts; pass any
43 Bill of Attainder, ex post facto Law, or Law impairing the Obligation of Contracts, or grant any Title of
44 Nobility. [underlines added]

1 Again, we are not doing the right thing when we sign these documents in our involvement with the government. We need to
 2 protect our Rights under the Constitution according to the laws which govern them. Once we enter them without reserving
 3 our Rights we have lost them (See SOLUTIONS).

4 One last thought for our FFL Dealer friends out there, moving a few pages over we find:

5 *BATF Title 27 Part 178 - Commerce in Firearms and Ammunition*

6 *Subpart D - Licenses*

7 *§178.41 - General.*

8 *(a) "Each person intending to engage in business as an importer or manufacturer of firearms or ammunition,*
 9 *or a dealer in firearms shall, before the commencing such business, obtain the license required by this subpart*
 10 *for the business to be operated..." [Underlines added]*

11 Remember the article on the term "person"? That's right, if you are not a Fourteenth Amendment "citizen of the United
 12 States", a "person", then you weren't required to get an FFL.

13 *"The supreme power in America cannot enforce unjust laws by the sword; because the body of the people are*
 14 *armed, and constitute a force superior to any band of regular troops that can be, on any pretense, raised in the*
 15 *United States."*

16 *"Before a standing army can rule, the people must be disarmed; as they are in almost every kingdom in Europe.*
 17 *The supreme power in America cannot enforce unjust laws by the sword; because the whole body of the people*
 18 *are armed, and constitute a force superior to any band of regular troops that can be, on any pretense, raised in*
 19 *the United States. A military force, at the command of Congress, can execute no laws, but such as the people*
 20 *perceive to be just and constitutional; for they will possess the power, and jealousy will instantly inspire the*
 21 *inclination, to resist the execution of a law which appears to them unjust and oppressive." [Noah Webster]*

22 **FOR THE RECORD**

24 In 1929, the Soviet Union established gun control. From 1929 to 1953, approximately 20 million dissidents, unable to
 25 defend themselves, were rounded up and exterminated.

26 In 1911, Turkey established gun control. From 1915 to 1917, 1.5 million Armenians, unable to defend themselves, were
 27 rounded up and exterminated.

28 In 1928, Germany established gun control. From 1939 to 1945, 13 million Jews, gypsies, homosexuals, the mentally ill, and
 29 others, who were unable to defend themselves, were rounded up and exterminated.

30 In 1935, China established gun control. From 1948 to 1952, 20 million political dissidents were unable to defend
 31 themselves and were rounded up and exterminated.

32 In 1964, Guatemala established gun control. From 1964 to 1981, 100,000 Mayan Indians, unable to defend themselves,
 33 were rounded up and exterminated.

34 In 1970, Uganda established gun control. From 1971 to 1979, 300,000 Christians, unable to defend themselves, were
 35 rounded up and exterminated.

36 In 1956, Cambodia established gun control. From 1975 to 1977, one million "educated" people, unable to defend
 37 themselves, were rounded up and exterminated.

38 That places total victims who lost their lives—because they were unable to defend their liberty—at approximately 56
 39 million in the 20th century.

40 **4.14.5 Motor Vehicle Driving**

**DESPITE ACTIONS OF POLICE AND LOCAL COURTS,
HIGHER COURTS HAVE RULED THAT AMERICAN CITIZENS
HAVE A RIGHT TO TRAVEL WITHOUT STATE PERMITS**

By
Jack McLamb

6 (from Aid & Abet Newsletter)

7 For years professionals within the criminal justice system have acted on the belief that traveling by motor vehicle was a
8 privilege that was given to a citizen only after approval by their state government in the form of a permit or license to drive.
9 In other words, the individual must be granted the privilege before his use of the state highways was considered legal.
10 Legislators, police officers, and court officials are becoming aware that there are court decisions that disprove the belief
11 that driving is a privilege and therefore requires government approval in the form of a license. Presented here are some of
12 these cases:

13 **CASE #1:** "The use of the highway for the purpose of travel and transportation is not a mere privilege, but a common
14 fundamental right of which the public and individuals cannot rightfully be deprived." *Chicago Motor Coach v. Chicago*,
15 169 NE 221.

16 **CASE #2:** "The right of the citizen to travel upon the public highways and to transport his property thereon, either by
17 carriage or by automobile, is not a mere privilege which a city may prohibit or permit at will, but a common law right
18 which he has under the right to life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness." *Thompson v. Smith*, 154 SE 579. It could not be
19 stated more directly or conclusively that citizens of the states have a common law right to travel, without approval or
20 restriction (license), and that this right is protected under the U.S Constitution.

21 **CASE #3:** "The right to travel is a part of the liberty of which the citizen cannot be deprived without due process of law
22 under the Fifth Amendment." *Kent v. Dulles*, 357 US 116, 125 (1958). **CASE #4:** "The right to travel is a well-established
23 common right that does not owe its existence to the federal government. It is recognized by the courts as a natural right."
24 *Schactman v. Dulles* 96 App DC 287, 225 F2d 938, at 941.

25 As hard as it is for those of us in law enforcement to believe, there is no room for speculation in these court decisions.
26 American citizens do indeed have the inalienable right to use the roadways unrestricted in any manner as long as they are
27 not damaging or violating property or rights of others. Government -- in requiring the people to obtain drivers licenses, and
28 accepting vehicle inspections and DUI/DWI roadblocks without question -- is restricting, and therefore violating, the
29 people's common law right to travel.

30 Is this a new legal interpretation on this subject? Apparently not. This means that the beliefs and opinions our state
31 legislators, the courts, and those in law enforcement have acted upon for years have been in error. Researchers armed with
32 actual facts state that case law is overwhelming in determining that to restrict the movement of the individual in the free
33 exercise of his right to travel is a serious breach of those freedoms secured by the U.S. Constitution and most state
34 constitutions. That means it is unlawful. The revelation that the American Citizen has always had the inalienable right to
35 travel raises profound questions for those who are involved in making and enforcing state laws. The first of such questions
36 may very well be this: If the states have been enforcing laws that are unconstitutional on their face, it would seem that there
37 must be some way that a state can legally put restrictions -- such as licensing requirements, mandatory insurance, vehicle
38 registration, vehicle inspections to name just a few -- on a Citizen's constitutionally protected rights. Is that so?

39 For the answer, let us look, once again, to the U.S. courts for a determination of this very issue. In *Hertado v. California*,
40 110 US 516 (1884), the U.S Supreme Court states very plainly: "The state cannot diminish rights of the people." And in
41 *Bennett v. Boggs*, 1 Baldw 60, "Statutes that violate the plain and obvious principles of common right and common reason
42 are null and void." Would we not say that these judicial decisions are straight to the point -- that there is no lawful method
43 for government to put restrictions or limitations on rights belonging to the people? Other cases are even more straight
44 forward:

45 "The assertion of federal rights, when plainly and reasonably made, is not to be defeated under the name of local practice."
46 *Davis v. Wechsler*, 263 US 22, at 24 (1923) "Where rights secured by the Constitution are involved, there can be no rule

1 making or legislation which would abrogate them." *Miranda v. Arizona*, 384 U.S. 436, 491 (1966). "The claim and exercise
2 of a constitutional right cannot be converted into a crime." *Miller v. US*, 230 F 486, at 489. There can be no sanction or
3 penalty imposed upon one because of this exercise of constitutional rights." *Sherer v. Cullen*, 481 F 946. We could go on,
4 quoting court decision after court decision; however, the Constitution itself answers our question - Can a government
5 legally put restrictions on the rights of the American people at anytime, for any reason? The answer is found in Article Six
6 of the U.S. Constitution:

7 *"This Constitution, and the Laws of the United States which shall be made in Pursuance thereof;...shall be the*
8 *supreme Law of the Land; and the Judges in every State shall be bound thereby, any Thing in the Constitution*
9 *or laws of any State to the Contrary not one word withstanding."*

10 In the same Article, it says just who within our government that is bound by this Supreme Law:

11 *"The Senators and Representatives before mentioned, and the Members of the several State Legislatures, and*
12 *all executive and judicial Officers, both of the United States and of the several States, shall be bound by Oath or*
13 *Affirmation, to support this Constitution..."*

14 Here's an interesting question. Is ignorance of these laws an excuse for such acts by officials? If we are to follow the letter
15 of the law, (as we are sworn to do), this places officials who involve themselves in such unlawful acts in an unfavorable
16 legal situation. For it is a felony and federal crime to violate or deprive citizens of their constitutionally protected rights.
17 Our system of law dictates that there are only two ways to legally remove a right belonging to the people. These are (1) by
18 lawfully amending the constitution, or (2) by a person knowingly waiving a particular right. Some of the confusion on our
19 present system has arisen because many millions of people have waived their right to travel unrestricted and volunteered
20 into the jurisdiction of the state. Those who have knowingly given up these rights are now legally regulated by state law
21 and must acquire the proper permits and registrations. There are basically two groups of people in this category: (1)
22 Citizens who involve themselves in commerce upon the highways of the state. Here is what the courts have said about this:

23 *"...For while a citizen has the right to travel upon the public highways and to transport his property thereon,*
24 *that right does not extend to the use of the highways...as a place for private gain. For the latter purpose, no*
25 *person has a vested right to use the highways of this state, but it is a privilege...which the (state) may grant or*
26 *withhold at its discretion..."[State v. Johnson, 245 P 1073]*

27 There are many court cases that confirm and point out the difference between the right of the citizen to travel and a
28 government privilege and there are numerous other court decisions that spell out the jurisdiction issue in these two
29 distinctly different activities.

30 However, because of space restrictions, we will leave it to officers to research it further for themselves. (2) The second
31 group of citizens that is legally under the jurisdiction of the state are those citizens who have voluntarily and knowingly
32 waived their right to travel unregulated and unrestricted by requesting placement under such jurisdiction through the
33 acquisition of a state driver's license, vehicle registration, mandatory insurance, etc. (In other words, by contract.) We
34 should remember what makes this legal and not a violation of the common law right to travel is that they knowingly
35 volunteer by contract to waive their rights. If they were forced, coerced or unknowingly placed under the state's powers, the
36 courts have said it is a clear violation of their rights. This in itself raises a very interesting question. What percentage of the
37 people in each state have applied for and received licenses, registrations and obtained insurance after erroneously being
38 advised by their government that it was mandatory?

39 Many of our courts, attorneys and police officials are just becoming informed about this important issue and the difference
40 between privileges and rights. We can assume that the majority of those Americans carrying state licenses and vehicle
41 registrations have no knowledge of the rights they waived in obeying laws such as these that the U.S. Constitution clearly
42 states are unlawful, i.e. laws of no effect - laws that are not laws at all. An area of serious consideration for every police
43 officer is to understand that the most important law in our land which he has taken an oath to protect, defend, and enforce,
44 is not state laws and city or county ordinances, but the law that supersedes all other laws -- the U.S. Constitution. If laws in
45 a particular state or local community conflict with the supreme law of our nation, there is no question that the officer's duty
46 is to uphold the U.S. Constitution. Every police officer should keep the following U.S. court ruling -- discussed earlier -- in
47 mind before issuing citations concerning licensing, registration, and insurance:

1 "The claim and exercise of a constitutional right cannot be converted into a crime." [Miller v. US, 230 F 486,
2 489]

3 And as we have seen, traveling freely, going about one's daily activities, is the exercise of a most basic right. Some of our
4 readers, upon reading this book, have attempted to avoid surrendering their rights in obtaining driver's licenses. Below is
5 an email one of our readers sent on this subject, so you know what you are up against. It reveals the extreme lengths to
6 which our corrupt government "servants" will go to impinge on our God-given rights:

7 Hi Chris,

8 Thought I'd let you know what happened to a friend of mine here in Indiana. While attempting to renew
9 his driver's license, he wanted to "reserve his rights" by signing the license with "all rights reserved UCC 1-
10 207". He was flatly denied being able to do this by the BMV. At this point I haven't heard what the outcome of
11 this is. I just found it incredible that they would deny someone the right to reserve their rights. Like everything
12 else, when dealing with banks, or any other "rights abusers", the only recourse seems to be the courts. Too bad
13 we must always have to fight and be inconvenienced to the extreme just to have what should normally come to
14 us.

15 Ken

16 **4.14.6 No Marriage Licenses**¹³⁸

17 "Marriage is the only sport in which the trapped animal has to buy the license."

18 Every year thousands of people amble down to their local county courthouse and obtain a marriage license from the State in
19 order to marry their future spouse. They do this unquestioningly. They do it possibly because their pastor or their parents
20 have told them to go get one, and besides, "everybody else gets one." This section attempts to answer the question - *why*
21 *should we not get one?*

22 The contents of this section are actually an abbreviated version of a much larger 85 page free book on our website entitled
23 Sovereign Christian Marriage, which you can download at:

24 <http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/Forms/Marriage/SovChristianMarriage.pdf>

25 This book is a very detailed and authoritative study into state marriage law and licensing. It documents why God created
26 marriage and what he intended it to be, and then shows how the our government has corrupted and destroyed and perverted
27 its true and noble and Godly purpose.

28 **4.14.6.1 Reason #1: The definition of a "license" demands that we *NOT* obtain one to marry.**

29 Black's Law Dictionary defines "license" as,

30 "The permission by competent authority to do an act which without such permission, would be illegal."

31 We need to ask ourselves- why should it be illegal to marry without the State's permission? More importantly, why should
32 we *need* the State's permission to participate in something which God instituted (Gen. 2:18-24)? We should not need the
33 State's permission to marry nor should we grovel before state officials to seek it. What if you apply and the State says "no"?
34 You must understand that the authority to license implies the power to prohibit. A license by definition "confers a right" to
35 do something. The State cannot grant the right to marry. It is a God-given right. Likewise, there isn't a state in the union
36 that can or does prohibit marriage either.

37 One might say that there is *one* thing that the marriage license *does* allow which would otherwise be illegal, and that one
38 thing is the right of one greedy and selfish spouse to hide community property under the care of someone else, drag the
39 other spouse into court, and then make false allegations (lies) of domestic abuse to engender court sympathy. Is this the

¹³⁸ This section is an excerpt from a book entitled Family Constitution, available for free download from our website at
<http://famguardian.org/>.

1 only kind of thing you want to license by giving the state control over your marriage? These vindictive spouses then have
2 their spouse kicked out of his or her own house based on the unwarranted presumption of domestic violence and then use
3 the legal system to vindictively destroy them financially by enslaving that spouse financially to their lawyer (family law
4 attorneys cost about \$225/hour). Then they use the court to legally steal all the remaining unhidden assets by dividing
5 separate property and the appreciation on that separate property in half. This process sets a very bad example for the
6 children, creates fear and anxiety in both spouses, and enriches family law attorneys and the spouses for lying about each
7 other to gain a financial and legal advantage, but accomplishes no good whatsoever.

8 Another interesting outcome of divorce is that the anxiety and fear it creates in spouses who have gone through it has the
9 effect of preventing people from ever being willing to marry again in order to avoid a very painful repetition of this kind of
10 insane experience. These divorced spouses who don't remarry then are encouraged to seek means other than marriage to
11 get their sexual and emotional needs met. The only option available to them is then to fornicate and live in sin without a
12 commitment or a marriage license. The media and our worldly culture promotes this stereotypical lifestyle, so they get
13 trapped in it and end up unhappy, feeling guilty, and defensive and combative over their choice of lifestyle. Fornication as a
14 cure for not getting married is worse than the disease (of divorce) from a biblical perspective, especially for any illegitimate
15 children and abortions (murder) that might result from such a choice of sinful lifestyle, because the bible says fornication is
16 a sin.

17 If these discouraged divorcees do take the chance and get remarried, the divorce rate is actually higher for second marriages
18 than it is for first marriages! First marriages end in divorce approximately 55% of the time in California. Second marriages
19 end in divorce 60% of the time! To make things worse, who wants to raise someone else's children and not have any of
20 their own? That is why we say that people don't learn anything from divorce after they have their first one. They don't use
21 that experience as a way to grow spiritually and become less selfish and prideful. Instead, they just get more selfish,
22 arrogant, and argumentative because they are more adept at playing the litigation game and using marriage to gain financial
23 advantage. Marriage for them then turns into another "career" they use to extort money out of their more wealthy spouse.
24 How can we say that people more often than not use marriage to gain financial advantage and that their inordinate focus on
25 money is at the root of the divorce problem? Because statistics point to the fact that the number one cause of arguments
26 and divorce is related to arguments over money in the marriage! The number two cause of arguments and divorce is related
27 to sex, and they probably argue about that, I'm guessing, because men like sex more than women, so men feel unfulfilled in
28 marriage when they marry a spouse who won't submit in the biblical sense.

29 We don't want to paint such a gloomy picture here, but we're trying to use the truth to emphasize that your character and
30 that of the person you marry is the most important predictor of whether the two of you will stay married, and that character
31 has to be based on a shared faith and strong and equal commitment to godly principles if your relationship is to survive the
32 test of time!

33 **4.14.6.2 Reason #2: When you marry with a marriage license, you grant the State jurisdiction over your** 34 **marriage.**

35 When you marry with a marriage license, your marriage is a creature of the State. It is a corporation of the State! As a
36 matter of fact, most states treat married spouses as the equivalent of business partners with a fiduciary duty towards each
37 other insofar as property and custody issues are concerned. Therefore, they have jurisdiction over your marriage including
38 the *fruit* of your marriage. What is the fruit of your marriage? Your children and every piece of property you own. There is
39 plenty of case law in American jurisprudence which declares this to be true.

40 In 1993, parents were upset here in Wisconsin because a test was being administered to their children in the government
41 schools which was very invasive of the family's privacy. When parents complained, they were shocked by the school
42 bureaucrats who informed them that their children were required to take the test by law and that they would *have* to take the
43 test because they (the government school) had jurisdiction over their children. When parents asked the bureaucrats what
44 gave them jurisdiction, the bureaucrats answered, "your marriage license and their birth certificates." Judicially, and in
45 increasing fashion, practically, your state marriage license has far-reaching implications.

46 **4.14.6.3 Reason #3: When you marry with a marriage license, you place yourself under a body of law which is** 47 **immoral.**

1 By obtaining a marriage license, you place yourself under the jurisdiction of Family Court which is governed by unbiblical
 2 and immoral laws. *Under these laws, you can divorce for any reason.* Often, the
 3 courts side with the spouse who is in rebellion to God, and castigate the spouse who remains faithful by ordering him or her
 4 not to speak about the Bible or other matters of faith when present with the children, even if those matters of faith promote
 5 continuance and strengthening of the marriage.

6 Ministers cannot in good conscience perform a marriage which would place people under this immoral body of laws. They
 7 also cannot marry someone with a marriage license because to do so they have to act as an agent of the State, and this
 8 violates the law regarding separation of church and state! The minister would have to sign the marriage license, and then
 9 have to mail it into the State. Given the State's demand to usurp the place of God and family regarding marriage, and given
 10 it's unbiblical, immoral laws to govern marriage, it would be an act of treason for ministers to do so.

11 **4.14.6.4 Reason #4: The marriage license invades and removes God-given parental authority.**

12 When you read the Bible, you see that God intended for children to have their father's blessing regarding whom they
 13 married. Daughters were to be *given* in marriage *by their fathers* (Deut. 22:16; Exodus 22:17; I Cor. 7:38). We have a
 14 vestige of this in our culture today in that the father takes his daughter to the front of the altar and the minister asks, "Who
 15 *gives* this woman to be married to this man?"

16 Historically, there was no requirement to obtain a marriage license in colonial America. When you read the laws of the
 17 colonies and then the states, you see only two requirements for marriage. First, you had to obtain your parents permission to
 18 marry, and second, you had to post public notice of the marriage 5-15 days before the ceremony.

19 Notice you had to obtain your *parents permission*. Back then you saw godly government displayed in that the State
 20 recognized the parents authority by demanding that the parents permission be obtained. Today, the all-encompassing
 21 ungodly State demands that *their* permission be obtained to marry.

22 By issuing marriage licenses, the State is saying, "You don't need your parents permission, you need *our* permission." If
 23 parents are opposed to their child's marrying a certain person and refuse to give their permission, the child can do an end
 24 run around the parents authority by obtaining the State's permission, and marry anyway. This is an invasion and removal of
 25 God-given parental authority by the State.

26 **4.14.6.5 Reason #5: When you marry with a marriage license, you are like a polygamist.**

27 From the State's point of view, when you marry with a marriage license, you are not just marrying your spouse, but you are
 28 also marrying the State.

29 The most blatant declaration of this fact that I have ever found is a brochure entitled "With This Ring I Thee Wed." It is
 30 found in county courthouses across Ohio where people go to obtain their marriage licenses. It is published by the Ohio
 31 State Bar Association. The opening paragraph under the subtitle "Marriage Vows" states, "*Actually, when you repeat your
 32 marriage vows you enter into a legal contract. There are three parties to that contract. 1.You; 2. Your husband or wife, as
 33 the case may be; and 3. the State of Ohio.*"

34 You see, the State and the lawyers know that when you marry with a marriage license, you are not just marrying your
 35 spouse, you are marrying the State! You are like a polygamist! You are not just making a vow to your spouse, but you are
 36 making a vow to the State *and* your spouse. You are also giving undue jurisdiction to the State.

37 **4.14.6.6 When Does the State Have Jurisdiction Over a Marriage?**

38 God intended the State to have jurisdiction over a marriage for two reasons - 1). in the case of divorce, and 2). when crimes
 39 are committed i.e., adultery, bigamy. etc. Unfortunately, the State now allows divorce for any reason, and it does not
 40 prosecute for adultery.

1 In either case, divorce or crime, a marriage license is *not* necessary for the courts to determine whether a marriage existed
 2 or not. What is needed are witnesses. This is why you have a best man and a maid of honor. They should sign the marriage
 3 certificate in your family Bible, and the wedding day guest book should be kept.

4 Marriage was instituted by God, therefore it is a God-given right. According to Scripture, it is to be governed by the family,
 5 and the State only has jurisdiction in the cases of divorce or crime.

6 **4.14.6.7 History of Marriage Licenses in America**

7 George Washington was married *without* a marriage license. Abraham Lincoln was married *without* a marriage license. So,
 8 how did we come to this place in America where marriage licenses are issued?

9 Historically, all the states in America had laws outlawing the marriage of blacks and whites. In the mid-1800's, certain
 10 states began allowing interracial marriages or miscegenation as long as those marrying received a license from the state. In
 11 other words they had to receive *permission to do an act which without such permission would have been illegal*.

12 Blacks Law Dictionary points to this historical fact when it defines "marriage license" as, "*A license or permission granted*
 13 *by public authority to persons who intend to intermarry.*" "Intermarry" is defined in Black's Law Dictionary as,
 14 "*Miscegenation; mixed or interracial marriages.*"

15 Give the State an inch and they will take a 100 miles (or as one elderly woman once said to me "10,000 miles.") Not long
 16 after these licenses were issued, some states began requiring *all* people who marry to obtain a marriage license. In 1923, the
 17 Federal Government established the Uniform Marriage and Marriage License Act (they later established the Uniform
 18 Marriage and Divorce Act). By 1929, every state in the Union had adopted marriage license laws.

19 **4.14.6.8 What Should We Do?**

20 Christian couples should not be marrying with State marriage licenses, nor should ministers be marrying people with State
 21 marriage licenses. Some have said, "If someone is married without a marriage license, then they aren't really married."
 22 Given the fact that states may soon legalize same-sex marriages, we need to ask ourselves, "If a man and a man marry *with*
 23 a State marriage license, and a man and woman marry *without* a State marriage license - *who's really married?* Is it the two
 24 men *with* a marriage license, or the man and woman *without* a marriage license? In reality, this contention that people are
 25 not really married unless they obtain a marriage license simply reveals how Statist we are in our thinking. We need to think
 26 biblically.

27 You should not have to obtain a license from the State to marry someone anymore than you should have to obtain a license
 28 from the State to be a parent, which some in academic and legislative circles are currently pushing to be made law.

29 When I marry a couple, I always buy them a Family Bible which contains birth and death records, and a marriage
 30 certificate. We record the marriage in the Family Bible. What's recorded in a Family Bible will stand up as legal evidence
 31 in any court of law in America. Both George Washington and Abraham Lincoln were married without a marriage license.
 32 They simply recorded their marriages in their Family Bibles. So should we.

33 (Pastor Trewhella has been marrying couples without marriage licenses for ten years. Many other pastors also refuse to
 34 marry couples with State marriage licenses.

35 This section is not comprehensive in scope. Rather, the purpose of this section is to make you think and give you a starting
 36 point to do further study of your own. **If you would like an audio sermon regarding this matter, just send a gift of at**
 37 **least five dollars in cash to: Mercy Seat Christian Church, 10240 W. National Ave. PMB #129 Milwaukee, Wisconsin**
 38 **53227.**

39 **4.14.7 Church Rights**

40 **A Church With "Tax Exemption" is not a "Tax-Exempt" Church!**

1 By Art Fisher

2 During the recent Senate hearings on Senate Bill 557 (the so-called "Civil Rights Restoration Act"), it was noted that Sen.
3 Kennedy and other supporters consistently referred to "religious or church organizations", whereas opponents spoke of
4 defending "religious freedom" and "rights" of the church. The term "organizations" may be the key to understanding
5 governmental meddling in the affairs of the church.

6 A "religious or church organization" is a CORPORATION that functions in a legal capacity, doing business as a church.
7 The IRS is fully aware of this distinction, and their publications reinforce that status. Nowhere do they define "tax exempt
8 churches" -- they always refer to religious or church "organizations". Surely Congress, in writing the tax law, understands
9 this distinction as well!

10 A church that voluntarily initiates an application to the state for corporate status expects "limited liability" and "tax
11 exemption" It in turn owes to the state its right to exist and prosper. It is obvious that its legal status and that of its
12 "flock" has been drastically altered.

13 Churches do NOT have rights granted by the Constitution. They enjoy INALIENABLE rights granted by God, which are
14 secured by the Constitution. Incorporated churches, in contrast, are artificial entities which may have such "privileges and
15 immunities" as are granted by the state.

16 The U.S. Supreme Court well understands the artificial status of corporations:

17 1.) A corporation is a creature of the state. It is presumed to be incorporated for the benefit of the public. It
18 receives certain special privileges and franchises ... Its powers are limited by law. It's rights to act as a corporation
19 are only preserved to it so long as it obeys the laws of its creation. [*Wilson v. U.S.*, 221 U.S. 382 (1911)]

20 2.) Corporations are not citizens... The term citizen... applies only to natural persons... not to artificial persons
21 created by the legislature... [*Paul v. Virginia*, 8 Wall 168,17] [see also, *Opinion Field*, 16 Wall 36, 99]

22 3.) Whenever a corporation makes a contract it is the contract of the legal entity... The only rights it can claim are
23 the rights which are given to it in that character, and not the rights which belong to its members as citizens of a
24 state. [*Bank of Augusta v. Earle*, 13 Pet 586]

25 According to IRS Publication 557, the instruction manual for organizations seeking recognition of tax exemption under
26 Section 501(c)(3); in order to be an "organization" in the legal sense, it is necessary to incorporate.

27 Black's Law Dictionary, 5th Ed. defines "organization" as:

28 *"... a corporation or governmental subdivision or agency, business trust, partnership or association, two or
29 more persons having a joint or common interest, or any other legal or commercial entity." UCC 1- 201(2B).*

30 Notice ALL of the entities in this definition are government franchised, and therefore under the jurisdiction of the Uniform
31 Commercial Code. The definition shows that a corporation (even if it functions as a church) is recognized by law as
32 commercial and public; an incorporated church is legally interpreted as a commercial, public entity. Didn't Christ say that
33 His house was NOT to be a house of merchandise? John 2:16.

34 Most states will not "permit" exempt status until a church applies for and obtains an IRS 501(c)(3) status ruling. This
35 means, of course, that the church must willingly incorporate and submit itself to state jurisdiction.

36 IRS Publication 557 Sec. 508(c) provides that churches are not REQUIRED to apply for recognition of section 501(c)(3)
37 status in order to be exempt from federal taxation or to receive tax-deductible contributions. The IRS fundamentally has no
38 authority!

39 This would raise many ethical questions: Why are the churches of today almost always found to be incorporated? Why
40 would the churches elect to place themselves under such jurisdiction; to find regulation under governmental franchise
41 preferable to their own Divine Law?

1 Are they not in fact serving two masters?

2 [Edited from "CBA Bulletin", Aug. 1988]

3 **4.15 Sources of government authority to interfere with your rights**

4 Now that we know what our rights are, we must then clearly understand the specific circumstances under which the
5 government has lawful authority to interfere with the exercise of those rights and the source from which the authority
6 derives. Recall from section 3.3 when we talked about "The Purpose of Law" that we established the only legitimate
7 purpose of either law or government is public protection which consists in preventing and punishing injustice. Injustice
8 occurs when public health, safety, morals, peace, or order are adversely affected or injured. Below is a succinct table
9 summarizing the only circumstances under which the government can lawfully and properly assert jurisdiction to deny you
10 your rights as described in this chapter:

11 **Table 4-21: Legitimate reasons to impinge on rights**

#	Legitimate Reason for interfering with rights	Source of authority
1	Issue of public health	Common law
2	Issue of public safety	Common law
3	Issue of public morality	Common law
4	Adversely affects interstate commerce	Article 1, Section 8, Clause 3 of the United States Constitution

12 The content of this section is very important, because we can use it as a basis for many different types of lawsuits, and
13 especially those involving regulating and licensing of certain trades and industries. We can, for instance, file a lawsuit
14 against the government if we are prosecuted or fined for not getting a license to practice in a given field if the government's
15 laws:

- 16 1. Violate the rights of persons in the field regulated.
- 17 2. Do not provide evidence that the trade or business would be injurious to public health if not licensed or regulated.
- 18 3. Charge more in licensing fees than is required to administrate the regulation of the field or endeavor.

19 **4.16 A Citizens Guide to Jury Duty**

20 *"People have not yet discovered they have been disenfranchised. Even lawyers can't stand to admit it. In any*
21 *nation in which people's rights have been subordinated to the rights of the few, in any totalitarian nation, the*
22 *first institution to be dismantled is the jury. I was, I am, afraid"* Gerry Spence

23 Fully Informed Jury Association, P.O. Box 59, Helmsville, Montana, 59403, Tel (406) 793-5550. <http://www.fija.org/>

24
25 Did you know that you qualify for another, much more powerful vote than the one which you cast on election day? This
26 opportunity comes when you are selected for jury duty, a position of honor for over 700 years. The principle of a Common
27 Law Jury or Trial by the Country was first established on June 15, 1215 at Runnymede, England when King John signed
28 the Magna Carta, or Great Charter of our Liberties. It created the basis for our Constitutional, system of Justice.

29 **4.16.1 Jury Power in the System of Checks and Balances:**

30 *"The law itself is on trial, quite as much as the cause which is to be decided."*
31 *HARLAN F. STONE, The Common Law in the United States, 50 Harv. L. Rev. 4*
32 *(1936).*

33 In a Constitutional system of justice, such as ours, there is a judicial body with more power than Congress, the President, or
34 even the Supreme Court. Yes, the trial jury protected under our Constitution has more power than all these government
35 officials. This is because it has the final veto power over all "acts of the legislature" that may come to be called "laws".

1 In fact, the power of jury nullification predates our Constitution. In November of 1734, a printer named John Peter Zenger
 2 was arrested for seditious libel against his Majesty's government. At that time, a law of the Colony of New York forbid any
 3 publication without prior government approval. Freedom of the press was not enjoyed by the early colonialists! Zenger,
 4 however, defied this censorship and published articles strongly critical of New York colonial rule. When brought to trial in
 5 August of 1735, Zenger admitted publishing the offending articles, but argued that the truth of the facts stated justified their
 6 publication. The judge instructed the jury that truth is not justification for libel. Rather, truth makes the libel more vicious,
 7 for public unrest is more likely to follow true, rather than false claims of bad governance. And since the defendant had
 8 admitted to the "fact" of publication, only a question of "law" remained.

9 Then, as now, the judge said the "issue of law" was for the court to determine, and he instructed the jury to find the
 10 defendant guilty. It took only ten minutes for the jury to disregard the judge's instructions on the law and find Zenger NOT
 11 GUILTY. That is the power of the jury at work; the power to decide the issues of law under which the defendant is charged,
 12 as well as the facts. In our system of checks and balances, the jury is our final check, the people's last safeguard against
 13 unjust law and tyranny.

14 **4.16.2 A Jury's Rights, Powers, and Duties:**

15 But does the jury's power to veto bad laws exist under our Constitution? It certainly does! At the time the Constitution was
 16 written, the definition of the term "jury" referred to a group of citizens empowered to judge both the law and the evidence
 17 in the case before it. Then, in the February term of 1794, the Supreme Court conducted a jury trial in the case of the state of
 18 Georgia vs. Brailsford (3 Dall 1). The instructions to the jury in the first jury trial before the Supreme Court of the United
 19 States illustrate the true power of the jury. Chief Justice John Jay said:

20 *"It is presumed, that juries are the best judges of facts; it is, on the other hand, presumed that courts are the*
 21 *best judges of law. But still both objects are within your power of decision." (emphasis added) "...you have a*
 22 *right to take it upon yourselves to judge of both, and to determine the law as well as the fact in controversy".*

23 So you see, in an American courtroom there are in a sense twelve judges in attendance, not just one. And they are there
 24 with the power to review the "law" as well as the "facts"! Actually, the "judge" is there to conduct the proceedings in an
 25 orderly fashion and maintain the safety of all parties involved.

26 As recently as 1972, the U.S. Court of Appeals for the District of Columbia said that the jury has an " unreviewable and
 27 irreversible power... to acquit in disregard of the instructions on the law given by the trial judge.... (U.S. v. Dougherty, 473
 28 F 2d 1113, 1139 (1972))

29 Or as this same truth was stated in a earlier decision by the United States Court of Appeals for the District of Maryland:
 30 "We recognize, as appellants urge, the undisputed power of the jury to acquit, even if its verdict is contrary to the law as
 31 given by the judge, and contrary to the evidence. This is a power that must exist as long as we adhere to the general verdict
 32 in criminal cases, for the courts cannot search the minds of the jurors to find the basis upon which they judge. If the jury
 33 feels that the law under which the defendant is accused, is unjust, or that exigent circumstances justified the actions of the
 34 accused, or for any reason which appeals to their logic of passion, the jury has the power to acquit, and the courts must
 35 abide by that decision." (U.S. v. Moylan, 417 F 2d 1002, 1006 (1969)).

36 YOU, as a juror armed with the knowledge of the purpose of a jury trial, and the knowledge of what your Rights, powers,
 37 and duties really are, can with your single vote of not guilty nullify or invalidate any law involved in that case. Because a
 38 jury's guilty decision must be unanimous, it takes only one vote to effectively nullify a bad "act of the legislature". Your
 39 one vote can "hang" a jury; and although it won't be an acquittal, at least the defendant will not be convicted of violating an
 40 unjust or unconstitutional law.

41 The government cannot deprive anyone of "Liberty", without your consent! If you feel the statute involved in any criminal
 42 case being tried before you is unfair, or that it infringes upon the defendant's God-given inalienable or Constitutional rights,
 43 you can affirm that the offending statute is really no law at all and that the violation of it is no crime; for no man is bound to
 44 obey an unjust command. In other words, if the defendant has disobeyed some man-made criminal statute, and the statute is
 45 unjust, the defendant has in substance, committed no crime. Jurors, having ruled then on the justice of the law involved and

1 finding it opposed in whole or in part to their own natural concept of what is basically right, are bound to hold for the
2 acquittal of said defendant.

3 It is your responsibility to insist that your vote of not guilty be respected by all other members of the jury. For you are not
4 there as a fool, merely to agree with the majority, but as a qualified judge in your right to see that justice is done.
5 Regardless of the pressures or abuse that may be applied to you by any or all members of the jury with whom you may in
6 good conscience disagree, you can await the reading of the verdict secure in the knowledge you have voted your conscience
7 and convictions, not those of someone else. So you see, as a juror, you are one of a panel of twelve judges with the
8 responsibility of protecting all innocent Americans from unjust laws.

9 **4.16.3 Jurors Must Know Their Rights:**

10 You must know your rights! Because, once selected for jury duty, nobody will inform you of your power to judge both law
11 and fact. In fact, the judge's instructions to the jury may be to the contrary. Another quote from US vs Dougherty (cited
12 earlier):

13 *The fact that there is widespread existence of the jury's prerogative, and approval of its existence as a*
14 *necessary counter to case-hardened judges and arbitrary prosecutors, does not establish as an imperative that*
15 *the jury must be informed by the judge of that power".*

16 Look at that quote again. the court ruled jurors have the right to decide the law, but they don't have to be told about it. It
17 may sound hypocritical, but the Dougherty decision conforms to an 1895 Supreme Court decision that held the same thing.
18 In *Sparf v. US* (156 US 51), the court ruled that although juries have the right to ignore a judge's instructions on the law,
19 they don't have to be made aware of the right to do so. Is this Supreme Court ruling as unfair as it appears on the surface? It
20 may be, but the logic behind such a decision is plain enough.

21 In our Constitutional Republic (note I didn't say democracy) the people have granted certain limited powers to government,
22 preserving and retaining their God-given inalienable rights. So, if it is indeed the juror's right to decide the law, then the
23 citizens should know what their rights are. They need not be told by the courts. After all, the Constitution makes us the
24 masters of the public servants. Should a servant have to tell a master what his rights are? Of course not, it's our
25 responsibility to know what our rights are! The idea that juries are to judge only the "facts" is absurd and contrary to
26 historical fact and law. Are juries present only as mere pawns to rubber stamp tyrannical acts of the government? We The
27 People wrote the supreme law of the land, the Constitution, to "secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our
28 posterity." Who better to decide the fairness of the laws, or whether the laws conform to the Constitution?

29 **4.16.4 Our Defense - Jury Power:**

30 Sometime in the future, you may be called upon to sit in judgment of a sincere individual being prosecuted (persecuted?)
31 for trying to exercise his or her Rights, or trying to defend the Constitution. If so, remember that in 1804, Samuel Chase,
32 Supreme Court Justice and signer of the Declaration of Independence said: "The jury has the Right to judge both the law
33 and the facts". And also keep in mind that "either we all hang together, or we most assuredly will all hang separately".

34 You now understand how the average American can help keep in check the power of government and bring to a halt the
35 enforcement of tyrannical laws. Unfortunately, very few people know or understand this power which they as Americans
36 possess to nullify oppressive acts of the legislature.

37 America, the Constitution and your individual rights are under attack! Will you defend them? READ THE
38 CONSTITUTION, KNOW YOUR RIGHTS! Remember, if you don't know what your Rights are, you haven't got any!

39 **4.17 The Buck Act of 1940 (4 U.S.C. Sections 105-111)**

40 This section documents how the Federal Government has deceitfully tried to get jurisdiction over sovereign Americans and
41 everything they own using a piece of legislation called the Buck Act, found in [4 U.S.C. Sections 105-111](#).

42 **4.17.1 The united States of America**

1 The united States of America includes the 50 sovereign and independent states of who are freely and voluntarily associated
 2 together in a union. It does *NOT* include the "District of Columbia," which was created by the **Constitution** of the
 3 Union as the legal home or "seat" of the "federal" government. That government was intended to be a "servant" to the
 4 Union states, not their "Master!"

5 In order for the Federal Government to tax an American of one of the several states of the Union, they had to create a
 6 contractual nexus. This contractual nexus is a combination of "Social Security" and their status as an "employee", which is
 7 a code word for an elected or appointed officer of the United States Government. The Federal government always does
 8 everything according to principles of law.

9 In 1935, the federal government instituted Social Security. The Social Security Board then, created 10 Social Security
 10 Districts creating a "Federal Area" which covered the several states like an overlay.

11 In 1939, the federal government instituted the "Public Salary Tax Act of 1939," which is a municipal law of the District of
 12 Columbia, taxing all Federal and State government employees and those who live and work in any "Federal area."

13 Now, the federal government knows it cannot tax those nationals of the United States who live and work outside the
 14 territorial jurisdiction of Article I, Section 8, Clause 17 (1:8:17), or Article IV, Section 3, Clause 2 (4:3:2) of the U.S.
 15 Constitution. So in 1940, Congress passed the "Buck Act" 4 U.S.C.S. 105-111. In Section 110(e), this Act allowed any
 16 department of the federal government to create a "Federal Area" for imposition of the Public Salary Tax Act of 1939, the
 17 imposition of this tax is at 4 U.S.C.S. section 111, and the rest of the taxing law is in Title 26, The Internal Revenue Code.
 18 The Social Security Board had already created an overlay of a "Federal Area."

19 As a result, our sneaky federal government created Federal "States" within its tax legislation which are exactly "look like"
 20 but in fact aren't the same as states of the Union. These pseudo federal "States" occupy the same territory and boundaries,
 21 but whose names are capitalized versions of the Sovereign States, and in fact only encompass a very small subset of the
 22 land within the states of the Union. This land is referred to as "federal areas" or "federal enclaves".

23 (Remember that Proper Names and Proper Nouns in the English language have only the first letter Capitalized.) For
 24 example, the Federal "State" of ILLINOIS is overlaid upon the *Sovereign* state of Illinois. Further, it is designated by the
 25 Federal abbreviation of "IL", instead of the Sovereign State abbreviation of "Ill." So too is Arizona designated "AZ" instead
 26 of the lawful abbreviation of "Ariz.", "CA" instead of "Calif.", etc. If you use a two-letter CAPITALIZED abbreviation,
 27 you are declaring that the location is under the jurisdiction of the "federal" government instead of the powers of the
 28 "Sovereign" state.

29 As a result of creating these "shadow" federal "States", the Federal government assumes that every area is a "Federal Area,"
 30 and that the Citizens therein are "U.S. citizens" under "acts of Congress" and federal statutes.

31 *TITLE 4 - FLAG AND SEAL, SEAT OF GOVERNMENT, AND THE STATES*

32 *CHAPTER 4 - THE STATES*

33 *4 U.S.C.S. section 110(d).*

34 "The term 'State' includes any Territory or possession of the United States."

35 *4 U.S.C.S. section 110(e).*

36 "The term Federal area means any lands or premises held or acquired by or for the use of the United States or
 37 any department, establishment, or agency of the United States; any federal area, or any part thereof, which is
 38 located within the exterior boundaries of any State, shall be deemed to be a Federal area located within such
 39 State."

40 There is no reasonable doubt that the federal "State" is imposing directly an excise tax under the provisions of 4 U.S.C.S. §
 41 105 which states in pertinent part:

42 *"Section 105. State and so forth, taxation affecting Federal areas; sales and use tax"*

1 "(a) No person shall be relieved from liability for payment of, collection of, or accounting for any sales or use
2 tax levied by any State, or by any duly constituted taxing authority therein, having jurisdiction to levy such tax,
3 on the ground that the sale or use, with respect to which tax is levied, occurred in whole or in part within a
4 Federal area; and such State or taxing authority shall have full jurisdiction and power to levy and collect any
5 such tax in any Federal area, within such State to the same extent and with the same effect as though such area
6 was not a Federal area."

7 "Irrespective of what tax is called by state law, if its purpose is to produce revenue, it is income tax or receipts
8 tax under the Buck Act [4 U.S.C.S. sections 105-110]." [*Humble Oil & Refining Co. v. Calvert*, (1971) 464
9 SW2d. 170, *aff'd* (Tex) 478 SW2d. 926, *cert. den.* 409 U.S. 967, 3;4 L.Ed2d. 234, 93 S.Ct. 293]

10 Thus, the question comes up, what is a "Federal area?" A "Federal area" is any area designated by any agency, department,
11 or establishment of the federal government. This includes the Social Security areas designated by the Social Security
12 Administration, any public housing area that has federal funding, a home that has a federal bank loan, a road that has
13 federal funding, and almost everything that the federal government touches though any type of aid. Springfield v. Kenny,
14 (1951 App.) 104 NE2d. 65.

15 This "Federal area" attaches to anyone who has a social security number or any personal contact with the federal or state
16 governments. When you fill out a W-4 withholding form, which is entitled "Employee Withholding Certificate", you
17 identify yourself as an elected or appointed federal "employee" as defined in 26 U.S.C. §3401(c) and voluntarily establish
18 federal jurisdiction over your property and person. Thus, the federal government has usurped Sovereignty of the People
19 and state Sovereignty by creating these federal areas within the boundaries of the states under the authority of the Federal
20 Constitution, Article IV, Section 3, Clause 2 (4:3:2), which states:

21 "2. The Congress shall have power to dispose of and make all needful rules and regulations respecting the
22 territory or other property belonging to the United States, and nothing in this Constitution shall be so construed
23 as to prejudice any claims of the United States, or of any particular State."

24 **4.17.2 The "SHADOW" States of the Buck Act**

25 Therefore, the "U.S. citizens" [citizens of the District of Columbia] under federal statutes and "acts of Congress" who
26 reside in one of the states of the union, are classified as "**property**" and franchises of the federal government as an
27 "**individual entity**" Wheeling Steel Corp. v. Fox, 298 U.S. 193, 80 L.Ed. 1143, 56 S.Ct. 773. Under the "Buck Act" 4
28 U.S.C.S. sections 105-111, the federal government has created a "Federal area" within the boundaries of all the states. This
29 area is similar to any territory that the federal government acquires through purchase or conquest, thereby imposing federal
30 territorial law upon those in this "Federal area." Some people believe that federal territorial law is evidenced by the
31 Executive Branch's yellow fringed merchant law flag (see Federal Courts for an explanation) flying in schools, offices and
32 all courtrooms. We do not agree with this conclusion and neither do the federal courts.

33 To avoid federal jurisdiction, you must live on land in one of the states in the Union of states, not in any "**Federal State**" or
34 "**Federal area**", nor can you be involved in any activity that would make you subject to "*acts of Congress*" or federal
35 statutes. You must be very careful on all government forms you fill out that ask if you are a "U.S. citizen" to clarify exactly
36 what that means so that you aren't confused with persons who come under the jurisdiction of federal statutes. You cannot
37 have a valid **Social Security Number**, a [federal zone] "*resident*" driver's license, or a motor vehicle registered in your
38 name. You cannot have a "*federal*" bank account, a Federal Register Account Number relating to Individual persons [SSN],
39 (see **Executive Order Number 9397**, November 1943), or any other known "*contract implied in fact*" that would place you
40 within any "**Federal area**" and thus within the territorial jurisdiction of the municipal laws of Congress. Remember, all
41 **Acts** of Congress are territorial in nature and only apply within the territorial jurisdiction of Congress. (See *American*
42 *Banana Co. v. United Fruit Co.*, 213 U.S. 347, 356-357 (1909); *U.S. v. Spelar*, 338 U.S. 217, 222, 94 L.Ed. 3, 70 S.Ct. 10
43 (1949); *New York Central R.R. Co. v. Chisholm*, 268 U.S. 29, 31-32, 69 L.Ed. 828, 45 S.Ct. 402 (1925).).

44 **There has been created a fictional "Federal State within a state"**. See *Howard v. Sinking Fund of Louisville*, 344 U.S.
45 624, 73 S.Ct. 465, 476, 97 L.Ed. 617 (1953); *Schwartz v. O'Hara TP. School Dist.*, 100 A. 2d. 621, 625, 375 Pa. 440.
46 (Compare also 31 C.F.R. Parts 51.2 and 52.2, which also identify a fictional State within a state.)

47 This entire scheme was accomplished by passage of the "*Buck Act*", (4 U.S.C.S. Secs. 105-111), to implement the
48 application of the "*Public Salary Tax Act*" of 1939 to workers within the private sector. This subjects all private sector

1 workers (who have a Social Security number) to all state and federal laws "within this State", a "fictional Federal area"
 2 overlaying the land in California and in all other states in the Union. In California, this is established by *California Form*
 3 *590, Revenue and Taxation*. All you have to do is to state that you live in California. This establishes that you do not live in
 4 a "Federal area" and that you are exempt from the *Public Salary Tax Act* of 1939 and also from the *California Income Tax*
 5 for residents who live "in this State".

6 The following definition is used throughout the several states in the application of their municipal laws which require some
 7 form of contract for proper application. This definition is also included in all the codes of **California, Nevada, Arizona,**
 8 **Utah and New York:**

9 *"In this State" or "in the State" means within the exterior limits of the State ... and includes all territories within*
 10 *such limits owned or ceded to the United States of America."*

11 This definition concurs with the "**Buck Act**" (supra) which states:

12 *TITLE 4 - FLAG AND SEAL, SEAT OF GOVERNMENT, AND THE STATES*

13 *CHAPTER 4 - THE STATES*

14 *"110(d) The term "State" includes any Territory or possession of the United States."*

15 *"110(e) The term "Federal area" means any lands or premises held or acquired by or for the use of the United*
 16 *States or any department, establishment, or agency of the United States; and any Federal area, or any part*
 17 *thereof, which is located within the exterior boundaries of any State, shall be deemed to be a Federal area*
 18 *located within such State."*

19 Then some of the states enacted legislation giving themselves what is called "concurrent jurisdiction" over lands ceded to
 20 the federal government. Here is an example from the California Statutes:

21 *California Government Code,*
 22 *Section 119: Territorial Jurisdiction*

23 *119. Exclusive jurisdiction shall be and the same is hereby ceded to the United States over and within all of the*
 24 *territory which is now or may hereafter be included in those several tracts of land in the State of California set*
 25 *aside and dedicated for park purposes by the United States as "Kings Canyon National Park"; saving however*
 26 *to the State of California the right to serve civil or criminal process within the limits of the aforesaid park in*
 27 *suits or prosecutions for or on account of rights acquired, obligations incurred, or crimes committed in said*
 28 *State outside of said park; and saving further to the said State the right to tax persons and corporations, their*
 29 *franchises and property on the lands included in said park, and the right to fix and collect license fees for*
 30 *fishing in said park; and saving also to the persons residing in said park now or hereafter the right to vote at*
 31 *all elections held within the county or counties in which said park is situate. The jurisdiction granted by this*
 32 *section shall not vest until the United States through the proper officer notifies the State of California that it*
 33 *assumes police jurisdiction over said park.*

34 Then, to really lock down their control, the federal government created an artificial PERSON to whom they could address
 35 all of their demands. This person is YOUR NAME IN ALL CAPITAL LETTERS! Whenever you receive a letter from the
 36 government addressed in ALL CAPITAL LETTERS (such as "JOHN SMITH" instead of the proper English language
 37 "John Smith") they are addressing a legal fiction, a "straw man," whom they assume they OWN.

38 Since they are going on the assumption that they OWN this "straw man" (which they actually do not -- and you can learn
 39 how you can take TITLE to this "straw man") they assume that whatever money comes in to the property ("straw man")
 40 belongs to the master (government).

41 What you are experiencing is an unprecedented **GRAB** for power by the "federal" government! In fact, Agents of the
 42 "federal" government have NO jurisdiction within the borders of these separate and sovereign united States, or over the
 43 "straw man" -- unless you give it to them!

44 **4.18 Conflicts of Law: Violations of God's Laws by Man's Laws**

1 We started off this chapter in section 4.1 by saying that God and His Law must take precedence at all times over man's vain
 2 laws, and we mentioned in section 3.2 that when there is a conflict between man's (god's) law and God's law, we should
 3 disobey man's law. We would be remiss if we did not point out at least a few of the conflicts between these two laws in
 4 order to give you concrete examples of what we mean. We will therefore list a few violations of God's laws by man's laws
 5 in the table below:

6 **Table 4-22: Violations of God's laws by Man's laws**

#	Subject	Further details found in	God's law	Man's law or court ruling
1	Socialism	This book in section: 1.9.2: Socialism is incompatible with Christianity	1 Thess. 2:9, 1 Thess 4:12, Prov. 10:26; Prov. 20:4, Prov. 21:25, Eph. 4:28, Acts 14:22, Luke 19:26, 2 Cor. 11:9, 2 Cor. 7:2, Prov. 13:4	All court rulings in favor of Subtitles A through C income taxes or Social Security Taxes
2	Citizenship	This book in section: 4.11 Citizenship	Philippians 3:20 Ephesians 2:19 Hebrews 11:13 1 Peter 2:1	8 U.S.C. §1401: When judges or any government official lies by saying that a sovereign State citizen is a "U.S. citizen" or that they were born in the "United States", which is a lie 8 CFR §215.1: When judges interpret "State" to mean "Union State", which is a fraud.
3	Divorce	Family Constitution , section 4.14	Mark 10:1-12	Various state laws allowing it and even rewarding women financially for it.
4	Abortion	Family Constitution , section 8.3.1	Exodus 20:13 Prov. 31:8	<i>Roe v. Wade</i> , 410 U.S. 113 (1973)
5	Income tax	This book in: Chapter 5 mainly	Matt. 4:10 1 Cor. 7:23	Federal law says that natural persons do not owe Subtitles A through C income taxes but can volunteer. Judges, on the other hand, refuse to recognize this and by so doing, make slaves of men.
6	Homosexuality	Family Constitution , section 8.3.7	Eph. 5:3-5 Lev. 18:22	Laws prohibiting discrimination on the basis of sexual orientation.
7	Prayer in the schools	Family Constitution , section 9.2	Matt. 19:14 Matt. 18:6-10	<i>McCullum v. Board of Education</i> , 333 U.S. 203 (1948) <i>Engel v. Vitale</i> , 370 U.S. 431 (1962) <i>Abington Sch. Dist. v. Schempp</i> , 374 U.S. 203 (1963) <i>Lemon v. Kurtzman</i> , 403 U.S. 602 (1971) <i>Wallace v. Jaffree</i> , 472 U.S. 38 (1985) <i>Edwards v. Aguillard</i> , 482 U.S. 38 (1985) <i>Board of Educ. v. Mergens</i> , 496 U.S. 226 (1990)
8	Marriage licenses	This book in section 4.14.6 No Marriage Licenses	1. Bible <i>only</i> permits divorce because of sexual immorality (Matt. 5:31-32), death of spouse (Rom. 7:2-3), unequally yoked (1 Cor. 7:15). 2. When you get a marriage license, you are a polygamist because the state is a party to the marriage also.	State laws permit divorce for <u>any</u> reason.

#	Subject	Further details found in	God's law	Man's law or court ruling
9	Federal judges	This book in sections: 2.8.13 Judicial Tyranny 6.6 Judicial Conspiracy to Protect the Income Tax	Exodus 23:8	Federal judges and other government servants are bribed by sanctions they impose and by the income taxes that they illegally enforce upon sovereign Americans.
10	Gun control	This book in section: 4.14.4 No Gun Control	Prov. 21:7: You can't do justice unless you can defend yourself!	Gun control laws
11	Church tax exemptions	4.14.7 Church Rights	Churches ask for tax exempt status and thereby become government franchises and government becomes their "god".	IRS Publication 557, Section 501(c) says churches are not required to obtain tax exempt status. Only charitable organizations need to do this.
12	Women's liberation	Website: Family Ministries and Feminism	Prov. 31:3 Eph. 5:22-25	1. Women in the military. 2. Abuse of domestic violence laws by women as a offensive weapon against men.
13	Federal reserve (debt)	This book in sections: 2.8.9 Paper Money 2.8.10 Federal Reserve	Pro. 22:7 Borrower [government] is servant to lender Rom. 13:8: Owe nothing to anyone except love. Deut. 15:6, Deut. 28:12: Can't borrow Deut. 23:19-20: Can't charge interest Prov. 6:1-5, 11:15, 17:8: Don't be surety for debt	Federal reserve created by the Federal Reserve Act of 1913. This was an act of Treason, because it unconstitutionally delegated public health and morals to a private consortium of banks and put our government in servitude to that consortium.
14	Deception	This book in section: 2.8.1: Deception: The religion of SATAN and our government 2.8.4: Propaganda and political warfare	John 8:44, Prov. 13:5, James 1:26, Prov. 14:3, Prov. 12:17-22, Prov. 16:18-19, 2 Tim. 3:1-9, 2 Thess. 2:3-17, Col. 2:8, Col. 3:9, Psalms 52, 2 Tim. 2:15-17	1. Treasonous actions of our courts to protect and encourage lies about the income tax committed by the executive branch, thus obstructing of justice. 2. Government propaganda and political warfare.
15	Presumption	This book in section: 2.8.2: Presumption 5.6.14: Guilty Until Proven Innocent: False Presumptions of Liability Based on Treacherous Definitions 8.4.6: The Law of Presumption	Psalms 19:12-13, Numbers 15:30	1. 26 CFR §301.6109-1(g) 2. Assumptions by court s that we are all "U.S. citizens" until we prove we are NOT. 3. Bull v. United States, 295 U.S. 247 (1935) 4. 26 U.S.C. §7491.

NOTES:

- Most of the conflicts in law in our present system have occurred because of judicial corruption rather than actual law. In effect, the federal judiciary has become an ongoing "constitutional convention", and has taken upon itself to "legislate from the bench" to undermine the sovereignty of the states and the people. This trend was predicted by Thomas Jefferson as we revealed earlier in section 2.8.13.
- Refer to the respective references in column 3 above for more details on the exact conflicts in each of the laws mentioned.
- All references to the *Family Constitution* above relate to the document found at the following web address on our website:

<http://famguardian.org/Publications/FamilyConst/FamilyConst.htm>

Not surprisingly, most of the subjects listed in the table above are subjects to which we have devoted an area on the home page of our website (<http://famguardian.org/>). We have 28 areas on our website home page devoted to situations or subjects in which there is a conflict between man's law and God's law. In each area, we try to explain the conflict and suggest ways to reform that will make man's law for that subject area once again in harmony with God's law.

4.19 How Do We Assert our First Amendment Rights and How Does the Government Undermine Them?

"The Supreme Court ruled in 1892 that 'this is a religious nation.' [Footnoted, and quoting from Church of the Holy Trinity v. U.S. (1892) (143 U.S. 457, 470, 12 S.Ct. 511).] It reiterated this holding, more recently (1951), when it stated: 'We are a religious people whose institutions presuppose a supreme being.'" [Footnoted, and quoting from Zorach v. Clauson (1951) (343 U.S. 306, 313, 72 S.Ct. 679).] U.S. Code Congressional and Administrative News, Vol. 2, pp. 1671-3646, 83rd Congress, Second Session, 1954.

Much of this book is based on the assertion of First Amendment Rights. If you want to assert your First Amendment rights to freedom of religion, you must do so properly within the limits prescribed by the courts. We will show in this section how to lawfully assert a First Amendment right and how the government can justify undermining or negating it.

Here is the basis for asserting a First Amendment right to freedom of religion:

1. The religious belief need not be reasonable or rational, necessarily. The cite below establishes this:

"Reasonableness of religious beliefs of an individual has no bearing on this right to "religious liberty" guaranteed by state and federal Constitutions, so long as individual's acts or refusal to act are not directly harmful to the public." Bolling v. Superior Court For Clallam County, 133 P.2d 803 (1943)

2. You should be careful not to directly incite violence or lawlessness when you speak, because this type of free speech may not be protected:

"These later decisions have fashioned the principle that the constitutional guarantees of free speech and free press do not permit a State to forbid or proscribe advocacy of the use of force or of law violation except where such advocacy is directed to inciting or producing imminent lawless action and is likely to incite or produce such action. As we said in Noto v. United States, 367 U.S. 290, 297-298, 6 L.Ed.2d 836, 841, 81 S.Ct 1517 (1961), 'the mere abstract teaching...of the moral propriety or even moral necessity for a resort of force and violence, is not the same as preparing a group for violent action and steeling it to such action.' See also Herndon v. Lowry, 310 U.S. 242, 259-2612, 81 L.Ed. 1066, 1075, 1076, 57 S.Ct. 732 (1937); Bond v. Floyd, 385 U.S. 116, 134. L.Ed. 2d 235, 246, 87 S.Ct. 339 (1966). A statute which fails to draw this distinction impermissibly intrudes upon the freedoms guaranteed by the First and Fourteenth Amendments. It sweeps within its condemnation speech which our Constitution has immunized from governmental control." Brandenburg v. Ohio, 395 U.S. 444; 89 S.Ct. 1827; 23 L.Ed.2d 430 (1969)

3. The right of individuals to freely practice their religious beliefs does not encompass the right to use government to that end:

*"Violation of free exercise clause of the First Amendment is predicated on coercion. **Right of individuals to freely practice their religious beliefs does not encompass right to use government to that end.**"*

"Very purpose of religion clauses of First Amendment was to insure that sensitive issues of individual religious beliefs would be beyond majority control."

"This court must, of course, follow the decisions of the Supreme Court, but much has been written by the Court concerning the 'establishment of religion' since the decision on Zorach; and, 'there are occasional situations in which subsequent Supreme Court opinions have so eroded an older case, without explicitly overruling it, as to warrant a subordinate court in pursuing what it conceives to be a clearly defined new lead from the Supreme Court to a conclusion inconsistent with an older Supreme Court case.'"

"In the face of establishment clause challenges the court has upheld Sunday Closing Laws, McGowan v. Maryland, 366 U.S. 420, 81 S.Ct. 1101, 6 L.Ed.2d 393 (1961); the loaning of books on secular subjects to students attending sectarian school, Board of Education v. Allen, 392 U.S. 236, 88 S.Ct. 1923, 20 L.Ed.2d 1060 (1968)" Smith v. Smith, 391 F.Supp. 443 (1975)

4. So long as faith is religiously based at the time it is asserted, it doesn't matter where the faith originates:

1 "So long as one's faith is religiously based at time it is asserted, it does not matter, for free exercise clause
2 purposes, whether that faith derives from revelation, study, upbringing, gradual evolution or some source that
3 appears entirely incomprehensible and constitution protection cannot be denied simply because early
4 experience has left one particularly open to current religious beliefs." Callahan v. Woods, 658 F.2d 679
5 (1981)

- 6 5. Once a bona fide First Amendment issue is joined, burden that must be shouldered by the government to defend a
7 regulation with impact on that religious action is a heavy one, and the standard is that a "compelling state interest must
8 be demonstrated."

9 "Once bona fide First Amendment issue is joined, burden that must be shouldered by government to defend a
10 regulation with impact on religious actions is a heavy one, and basic standards is that a compelling state
11 interest must be demonstrated." Stevens v. Berger, 428 F.Supp. 896 (1977)

12 Along the lines of that last item, we think it is important before you sue the government for First Amendment violations to
13 anticipate and identify each of the "compelling public interests" you expect the state to assert in the case at hand and to
14 disprove each one in advance using evidence, in your initial pleading. This will immunize yourself from losing your case
15 when you go to trial and make the burden of proof even greater for the government.

16 Probably the most common area where people assert their First Amendment rights is in the area of refusing to accept or
17 give or use Social Security Numbers or to pay Social Security taxes. The most famous case along these lines was *U.S. v.*
18 *Lee*, 455 U.S. 252 (1982), in which an Amish farmer and carpenter claimed that it was against his religious beliefs to be
19 forced to pay Social Security taxes to the government, because he thought it was a personal responsibility within the family
20 to support yourself and your parents, as we advocate in this book. Here is what the U.S. supreme Court said in denying him
21 the free exercise of his religious rights:

22 *The District Court held the statutes requiring appellee to pay social security and unemployment insurance*
23 *taxes unconstitutional as applied.* 497 F.Supp. 180 (1980). *The court noted that the Amish believe it sinful*
24 *not to provide for their own elderly and needy and therefore are religiously opposed to the national social*
25 *security system.* 3 *The court also accepted appellee's contention that the Amish religion not only prohibits the*
26 *acceptance of social security benefits, but also bars all contributions by Amish to the social security system.*
27 *The District Court observed that in light of their beliefs, Congress has accommodated self-employed Amish*
28 *and self-employed members of other religious groups with similar beliefs by providing exemptions from*
29 *social security taxes.* 26 U.S.C. 1402(g). 4 *The Court's holding was based on both [455 U.S. 252, 256] the*
30 *exemption statute for the self-employed and the First Amendment; appellee and others "who fall within the*
31 *carefully circumscribed definition provided in 1402(g) are relieved from paying the employer's share of [social*
32 *security taxes] as it is an unconstitutional infringement upon the free exercise of their religion."* 5 *497 F.Supp.,*
33 *at 184.*

34 *Direct appeal from the judgment of the District Court was taken pursuant to 28 U.S.C. 1252.*

35 *The exemption provided by 1402(g) is available only to self-employed individuals and does not apply to*
36 *employers or employees. Consequently, appellee and his employees are not within the express provisions of*
37 *1402(g). Thus any exemption from payment of the employer's share of social security taxes must come from a*
38 *constitutionally required exemption.*

39 *The preliminary inquiry in determining the existence of a constitutionally required exemption is whether the*
40 *payment [455 U.S. 252, 257] of social security taxes and the receipt of benefits interferes with the free exercise*
41 *rights of the Amish. The Amish believe that there is a religiously based obligation to provide for their fellow*
42 *members the kind of assistance contemplated by the social security system. Although the Government does not*
43 *challenge the sincerity of this belief, the Government does contend that payment of social security taxes will not*
44 *threaten the integrity of the Amish religious belief or observance. It is not within "the judicial function and*
45 *judicial competence," however, to determine whether appellee or the Government has the proper interpretation*
46 *of the Amish faith; "[c]ourts are not arbiters of scriptural interpretation." Thomas v. Review Bd. of Indiana*
47 *Employment Security Div., 450 U.S. 707, 716 (1981). 6 We therefore accept appellee's contention that both*
48 *payment and receipt of social security benefits is forbidden by the Amish faith. Because the payment of the taxes*
49 *or receipt of benefits violates Amish religious beliefs, compulsory participation in the social security system*
50 *interferes with their free exercise rights.*

51 *The conclusion that there is a conflict between the Amish faith and the obligations imposed by the social*
52 *security system is only the beginning, however, and not the end of the inquiry. Not all burdens on religion*
53 *are unconstitutional.* See, e. g., *Prince v. Massachusetts*, 321 U.S. 158 (1944); *Reynolds v. United States*, 98
54 *U.S. 145* (1879). The state may justify a limitation on religious liberty by showing that it is essential to
55 accomplish an overriding governmental interest. [455 U.S. 252, 258] *Thomas, supra*; *Wisconsin v. Yoder*, 406
56 *U.S. 205* (1972); *Gillette v. United States*, 401 U.S. 437 (1971); *Sherbert v. Verner*, 374 U.S. 398 (1963).

1 *Because the social security system is nationwide, the governmental interest is apparent. **The social***
 2 ***security system in the United States serves the public interest** by*
 3 *providing a comprehensive insurance system with a variety of benefits available to all participants, with costs*
 4 *shared by employers and employees. **7** The social security system is by far the largest domestic governmental*
 5 *program in the United States today, distributing approximately \$11 billion monthly to 36 million Americans. **8***
 6 *The design of the system requires support by mandatory contributions from covered employers and employees.*
 7 *This mandatory participation is indispensable to the fiscal vitality of the social security system. "[W]idespread*
 8 *individual voluntary coverage under social security . . . would undermine the soundness of the social security*
 9 *program." S. Rep. No. 404, 89th Cong., 1st Sess., pt. 1, p. 116 (1965). Moreover, a comprehensive national*
 10 *social security system providing for voluntary participation would be almost a contradiction in terms and*
 11 *difficult, if not impossible, to administer. Thus, the Government's interest in assuring [455 U.S. 252, 259]*
 12 *mandatory and continuous participation in and contribution to the social security system is very high. **9***

13 *The remaining inquiry is whether accommodating the Amish belief will unduly interfere with fulfillment of*
 14 *the governmental interest. In Braunfeld v. Brown, 366 U.S. 599, 605 (1961), this Court noted that "to make*
 15 *accommodation between the religious action and an exercise of state authority is a particularly delicate task .*
 16 *. . . because resolution in favor of the State results in the choice to the individual of either abandoning his*
 17 *religious principle or facing . . . prosecution." The difficulty in attempting to accommodate religious beliefs in*
 18 *the area of taxation is that "we are a cosmopolitan nation made up of people of almost every conceivable*
 19 *religious preference." Braunfeld, supra, at 606. The Court has long recognized that balance must be struck*
 20 *between the values of the comprehensive social security system, which rests on a complex of actuarial factors,*
 21 *and the consequences of allowing religiously based exemptions. **To maintain an organized society that***
 22 ***guarantees religious freedom to a great variety of faiths requires that some religious practices yield to the***
 23 ***common good. Religious beliefs can be accommodated, see, e. g., Thomas, supra; Sherbert, supra, but there***
 24 ***is a point at which accommodation would "radically restrict the operating latitude of the legislature."***
 25 ***Braunfeld, supra, at 606. **10*****

26 *Unlike the situation presented in Wisconsin v. Yoder, supra, it would be difficult to accommodate the*
 27 *comprehensive [455 U.S. 252, 260] social security system with myriad exceptions flowing from a wide variety*
 28 *of religious beliefs. The obligation to pay the social security tax initially is not fundamentally different from the*
 29 *obligation to pay income taxes; the difference - in theory at least - is that the social security tax revenues are*
 30 *segregated for use only in furtherance of the statutory program. There is no principled way, however, for*
 31 *purposes of this case, to distinguish between general taxes and those imposed under the Social Security Act. **If,***
 32 ***for example, a religious adherent believes war is a sin, and if a certain percentage of the federal budget can***
 33 ***be identified as devoted to war-related activities, such individuals would have a similarly valid claim to be***
 34 ***exempt from paying that percentage of the income tax. The tax system could not function if denominations***
 35 ***were allowed to challenge the tax system because tax payments were spent in a manner that violates their***
 36 ***religious belief. See, e. g., Lull v. Commissioner, 602 F.2d 1166 (CA4 1979), cert. denied, 444 U.S. 1014***
 37 ***(1980); Autenrieth v. Cullen, 418 F.2d 586 (CA9 1969), cert. denied, 397 U.S. 1036 (1970). **Because*****
 38 ***the broad public interest in maintaining a sound tax system is***
 39 ***of such a high order, religious belief in conflict with the***
 40 ***payment of taxes affords no basis for resisting the tax.***

41 *Congress has accommodated, to the extent compatible with a comprehensive national program, the practices*
 42 *of those who believe it a violation of their faith to participate in the social security system. In 1402(g)*
 43 *Congress granted an exemption, on religious grounds, to self-employed Amish and others. **11** Confining the*
 44 *1402(g) exemption to the self-employed [455 U.S. 252, 261] provided for a narrow category which was readily*
 45 *identifiable. Self-employed persons in a religious community having its own "welfare" system are*
 46 *distinguishable from the generality of wage earners employed by others.*

47 *Congress and the courts have been sensitive to the needs flowing from the Free Exercise Clause, but every*
 48 *person cannot be shielded from all the burdens incident to exercising every aspect of the right to practice*
 49 *religious beliefs. When followers of a particular sect enter into commercial activity as a matter of choice, the*
 50 *limits they accept on their own conduct as a matter of conscience and faith are not to be superimposed on the*
 51 *statutory schemes which are binding on others in that activity. **Granting an exemption from social security***
 52 ***taxes to an employer operates to impose the employer's religious faith on the employees.** Congress drew a line*
 53 *in 1402(g), exempting the self-employed Amish but not all persons working for an Amish employer. The tax*
 54 *imposed on employers to support the social security system must be uniformly applicable to all, except as*
 55 *Congress provides explicitly otherwise. **12***

56 *Accordingly, the judgment of the District Court is reversed, and the case is remanded for proceedings*
 57 *consistent with this opinion.*

58 *[U.S. v. Lee, 455 U.S. 252 (1982)]*

1 Basically, what the court said is that “the public interest” or “government interest” outweighs our religious rights and that
 2 the government can deprive us of our individual life, liberty, and property in the name of the “political correctness” or
 3 “public interest” or “majority vote”, all of which are synonymous. This is just a fancy way to say that the majority or
 4 collective is sovereign over and above the individual, and that our republican government based on individual rights no
 5 longer exists because it has been replaced by a monolithic, gargantuan, totalitarian socialist democracy as we clearly
 6 described in section 4.7. In making this treasonous ruling, the Supreme Court has negated the whole basis of law, which is
 7 to prevent harm and has thereby transformed the function of law into promoting the “perceived” good decided by majority
 8 vote, which is the essence of socialism. I would most certainly hope that the highest court in this, the greatest nation on
 9 earth, doesn’t mean to imply that the fraud, waste, and abuse represented by the grossly mismanaged Social Security
 10 program as extensively documented earlier in section 2.9 successfully serves the “public interest” as a whole, because we
 11 have found no evidence whatsoever of that. If it had, then why does our own government continue to talk about privatizing
 12 social security? Granted, it would be political suicide for any politician in this country to advocate an end to the most
 13 massive entitlement system fraud and extortion program in the history of the planet, but that is a matter of the private
 14 interests of individual politicians rather than public interest.

15 *“The government that robs Peter to pay Paul can always depend on the support of Paul [the older people who*
 16 *have no income because they never bothered to save for their own retirement].”*
 17 *George Bernard Shaw*

18 **Are we simply rewarding the abuse of individual elective franchise (the right to vote or the sovereign power of**
 19 **Congressional office) as a legal mandate to government officials (an unconstitutional and unlawful abuse of power)**
 20 **to rob a minority group of employed individuals at the point of a gun and force them into slavery to subsidize older**
 21 **people who don’t want to work? Are we enticing and encouraging older people to vote the first politician into office**
 22 **who will promise them a new social(ist) security benefit increase? This is clearly a distortion of the original intent of**
 23 **Congress and a conflict of interest. It also happens to be highly illegal under federal law, 18 U.S.C. §597. Here is**
 24 **what that section says:**

25 *TITLE 18 > PART I > CHAPTER 29 > Sec. 591. > Sec. 597.*

26 [Sec. 597. - Expenditures to influence voting](#)

27 *Whoever makes or offers to make an expenditure to any person, either to vote or withhold his vote, or to vote*
 28 *for or against any candidate; and*

29 *Whoever solicits, accepts, or receives any such expenditure in consideration of his vote or the withholding of*
 30 *his vote -*

31 *Shall be fined under this title or imprisoned not more than one year, or both; and if the violation was willful,*
 32 *shall be fined under this title or imprisoned not more than two years, or both*

33 Even the bible agrees that this kind of scandal is not to be tolerated or allowed:

34 *“Thou shalt not steal.” Exodus 20:15*

35 But my, how quickly things change. Only 100 years before, that very same Supreme Court said the following, which is
 36 completely opposite of the ruling in the *Lee* case:

37 *“To lay with one hand the power of government on the property of the citizen, and with the other to bestow it on*
 38 *favored individuals.. is none the less robbery because it is done under the forms of law and is called taxation.*
 39 *This is not legislation. It is a decree under legislative forms.” [Loan Association v. Topeka, 20 Wall. 655*
 40 *(1874)]*

41 I therefore have some questions for the chief justice communists who made this ruling:

- 42 • How can robbery done in the name of taxation be in the public interest?
- 43 • How can organized crime, racketeering, and robbery implemented through Social Security and on that large a
 44 scale ever be in the “public interest”?
- 45 • How can punishing people who work for the sake of people who don’t work be in the “public interest”?

- 1 • How can stealing people’s money and forcing them to allow the government to manage it rather than taking
2 responsibility for their own retirement ever be in the “public interest”? Doesn’t such an approach presume that
3 people are incapable or incompetent at managing and saving for their own retirement and “government”
4 paternalistically knows what’s best for people better than they do? This cannot be in a country where the people
5 are the sovereigns, can it?
- 6 • Exactly what aspect of the effectively mandatory Social Security System is in the public interest?
- 7 • If the government rules against Microsoft for having a monopoly, how about IT’S monopoly in the retirement
8 insurance business? Isn’t it time to privatize this beast too and let people manage their own retirement savings
9 plan?
- 10 • How can the justices who ruled on this issue call themselves free of conflict of interest if it would mean political
11 suicide for most politicians to end the socialist security program?

12 **The government will lie by saying that the program is “voluntary”, but since they provide no way to quit the**
13 **program or have your money refunded or your social security number rescinded, and because many employers**
14 **won’t hire you without a number, the program is, for all intents and purposes, mandatory. Consequently, the whole**
15 **Social Security system is based on fraud and duress and a false promise: it’s a mandatory program that they**
16 **“pretend” is voluntary so that politicians who want to force us to participate don’t look like the tyrants and**
17 **dictators that they really are. It’s the “politically correct” way to be a tyrant dictator!**

18 **The ruling from *U.S. v. Lee* above therefore directly contradicts the very purpose why the founders gave us a Bill of**
19 **Rights to begin with and why the Constitution guarantees us a “Republican Form of Government”, as we described**
20 **earlier in section 4.5:**

21 *“The very purpose of the Bill of Rights was to withdraw certain subjects from the vicissitudes of political*
22 *controversy, to place them beyond the reach of majorities and officials and to establish them as legal principles*
23 *to be applied by the courts. One’s right to life, liberty, and property, to free speech, a free press, freedom of*
24 *worship and assembly, and other fundamental rights may not be submitted to vote; they depend on the*
25 *outcome of no elections, for Congressional statutes or laws either, as was the case above!” West Virginia*
26 *State Board of Education v. Barnette, 319 U.S. 624; 63 S.Ct. 1178 (1943)*

27 Based on the *Lee* precedent, however, it wouldn’t surprise me to see the communist judges in the Supreme Court rule in the
28 not too distant future that:

29 *“It is in the ‘public interest’ and ‘government interest’ to eliminate the Bill of Rights and the Thirteenth*
30 *Amendment and thereby force people into government slavery using a mandatory direct tax on wages, because*
31 *it we don’t, the financial solvency of our country would be threatened. Maintaining the full faith and credit of*
32 *the United States in the presence of massive debt to a private corporation called the Federal Reserve is more*
33 *important than having individual rights. Furthermore, people with rights are just too defiant and difficult to*
34 *govern economically or efficiently, so we have decided that all you idiots out there who are ignorant wards of*
35 *the state anyway don’t need rights anymore because we (the government) know better than you what is in your*
36 *best interests. Now shut up, boy, or we’ll whoop you with 40 lashes and send you to bed without dinner or a*
37 *paycheck because we’ll seize it all to pay for the next Congressional pay raise and Social Security cost of*
38 *living increase.”*

39 Does this sound like a chicken little, sky is falling triage-dominated mandate to overlook abuses of the government as we
40 predicted would happen earlier in section 2.8.12? Who is the servant and who is the master (sovereign) here? Your
41 government would have you believe that you are the Master, but this too is a LIE and simply can’t be the case based on the
42 way our government is presently behaving as evidenced by the above ruling of a communist Supreme Court.

43 **4.20 The Solution**

44 In conclusion, one must understand that this is all a matter of perspective. Since the Federal Government has little direct
45 authority over the several States or the People, we then must be the ones to initiate these contracts. They then assume we
46 are truly “citizens of the United States” (or “residents / aliens of the State”) not only because we answered “YES” on these
47 government application forms, but because we **DID NOT** reserve any of our Rights as Sovereign Citizens to the contrary
48 under our Constitutional Rights to Common Law.

49 Here is what the court has stated happens to us when we sign-up for any Federal Program (benefit or privilege).

1 *"Anyone who partakes of the benefits or privileges of a given statute, or anyone who even places himself into a*
 2 *position where he may avail himself of those benefits at will, cannot reach constitutional grounds to redress*
 3 *grievances in the courts against the given statute." [Ashwander v. T.V.A., 297 U.S. 288, 346, 56 S. Ct. 466, 482,*
 4 *80 L.Ed. 688, (1938)] [underlines added]*

5 Since these applications are actually contracts we must invoke our Rights under the Uniform Commercial Code (UCC). The
 6 UCC is statute law regulating contracts dealing in commerce (remember, the Federal Government gets what little authority
 7 it does have over the several States and the People from the Commerce Clause of the Constitution [Article 1, Section 8,
 8 Clause 3]). Now that all the courts are Admiralty Courts and under Federal Jurisdiction, Common Law has been placed "in
 9 harmony with" the UCC.

10 In the ANDERSON version of the Uniform Commercial Code (Lawyers Cooperative Publishing Co.), it states the
 11 following:

12 *"The Code is complimentary to the Common Law, WHICH REMAINS IN FORCE, except where displaced by*
 13 *the code. A statute should be construed in harmony with the Common Law, unless there is a clear legislative*
 14 *intent to abrogate the Common Law." [UCC 1-103.6]*

15 Here then is what one should do in order to reserve their Rights under the Constitution and the Seventh Amendment.

16 Uniform Commercial Code, Section 1-207

17 Performance or Acceptance Under Reservation of Rights

18 *"A party who with explicit reservation of rights performs or promises performance or assents to performance in*
 19 *a manner demanded or offered by the other party does not thereby prejudice the rights reserved. Such words as*
 20 *'without prejudice,' 'under protest' or the like are sufficient." [underlines added]*

21 The "without prejudice" clause is the means which enables one to assert his Seventh Amendment guarantee of access to the
 22 Common Law and the Constitution.

23 Bill of Rights - Article VII (Seventh Amendment)

24 *In Suits at common law, where the value in controversy shall exceed twenty dollars, the right of trial by jury*
 25 *shall be preserved, and no fact tried by a jury shall be otherwise re-examined in any Court of the United States,*
 26 *than according to the rules of the common law.*

27 What this all means is this, whenever you sign any legal document, whether it is dealing with the Federal Government,
 28 State Government, BATF, IRS, Social Security, Drivers License Bureau, Voter Registration or anything to do with Federal
 29 Reserve Notes, etc. (in any way, shape or manner), over your signature you must write: "Without Prejudice" UCC 1-207 or
 30 "under Protest" or the like, e.g. "with reservation of rights".

31 By the way, a true sovereign Citizen of any one of the several States is actually a non-resident alien to the United States.
 32 Guess who isn't required to file an IRS 1040 Income Tax Returns? You guessed it, non-resident aliens. Why? Because, we
 33 are foreign to the United States. We were not born in the District of Columbia and we are not residents of the District of
 34 Columbia.

35 Volume 20 of "Corpus Juris Secundum" at 1758 states:

36 *"The United States Government is a foreign corporation with respect to a state." [N.Y. v. re Merriam 36 N.E.*
 37 *505; 141 N.Y. 479; affirmed 16 S.Ct. 1073; 41 L. Ed. 287] [underlines added]*

38 However, there are certain conditions and circumstances whereupon a non-resident alien might be required to file a 1040-
 39 NR tax return. Generally, compensation for ones labor, which is not INCOME, is simply a fair trade for his Life. It is
 40 unconstitutional to tax a man's Life, but it is not unconstitutional to tax a Federal citizen's life, for such a person has no
 41 Constitutional Protection. Rather, income is profit or gain of principle received by a privileged corporation.

1 For those who have already decided, through their own research and understanding of the limits the Constitution imposes of
2 the Federal Government, it is at this point we hear about them getting into trouble with the Federal Government,
3 particularly the IRS. Of course, this then leads to the fear we all have and our reluctance to pursue the matter ourselves.

4 It is absolutely crucial to know and understand that one must rescind and revoke **ALL** signatures and powers of attorney
5 that one might have **EVER** committed to with the Federal Government in their **LIFE TIME**. For example, if the first IRS
6 1040 tax return you ever filed was in 1960, then you must notify the IRS that you are revoking your signature on **ALL** 1040
7 tax returns starting in 1960 to the present. The same then would be true in regards to the BATF and all of those 4473 forms
8 you've signed since 1968.

9 In this way **ONLY**, can one deal with any level of Government and still retain access to the Constitution, The Bill of Rights
10 and to Common Law as sovereign Citizens of the united States.